



**DELHI UNIVERSITY**  
**LIBRARY**

**DÉLHI UNIVERSITY LIBRARY**

Cl No. 0:2773x

FS. 4

Ac. No. 12837

Date of release for loan  
29 JUN 1967

This book should be returned on or before the date last stamped below. An overdue charge of 05 nP. will be charged for each day the book is kept overtime

---



BEN  
JONSON



**Oxford University Press**

*London      Edinburgh      Glasgow      Leipzig*

*New York      Toronto      Melbourne      Capetown*

*Bombay      Calcutta      Madras      Shanghai*

**Humphr y Milford Publisher to the UNIVERSITY**





# BEN J O N S O N

*Edited by* C. H. HERFORD  
*and* PERCY SIMPSON

---

VOLUME IV

---

*Cynthia's Revels*  
*Poetaster*  
*Sejanus*  
*Eastward Ho*

---

. O X F O R D  
At the Clarendon Press  
1932

*Printed in England*  
*At the OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS*  
*By John Johnson*  
*Printer to the University*

## P R E F A C E

**I**N preparing the present volume the editor has received much valuable help. The Henry E. Huntington Library kindly supplied a photostat of its copy of the First Quarto of *Cynthia's Revels*, and gave permission to reproduce the unique leaf containing the dedication to Camden; thanks are due to Mr. Max Farrand, director of research at the Huntington Library. Dr. George P. Winship kindly answered inquiries about the White copy of this play at Harvard and sent photostats of some of the pages. The Kemble copy of the First Quarto of *Eastward Ho* was collated at Chatsworth by permission of the late Duke of Devonshire; the Britwell copy was collated by permission of Mr. Sydney Christie Miller; the copy in the library at Worcester College, Oxford, was collated by permission of the librarian, Mr. C. H. Wilkinson. My heaviest debt, however, is to Mr. T. J. Wise, who deposited in Bodley for my use his copies of the Quartos of the first three plays and of the First Quarto of *Eastward Ho*. These generous helpers have enabled me to work out the textual problems with a completeness which I scarcely expected to attain.

Mrs. Simpson has again helped in the work of collation. For corrections of errors in the third

volume I am indebted to Dr. W. W. Greg and Mr. A. K. McIlwraith.

I must again record my appreciation of the skill with which the printers of the Clarendon Press have threaded their way through the tangle of the critical apparatus.

P. S.

Oriel College, Oxford.

1 November 1931.

# CONTENTS

	PAGE
In Memoriam : CHARLES HAROLD HERFORD .	xi
THE TEXT : Introductory Notes . . . .	xiv
CYNTHIA'S REVELS . . . . .	I
POETASTER . . . . .	185
SEJANUS HIS FALL . . . . .	327
Appendix XI. Jonson's Historical Notes in the Quarto . . . . .	472
EASTWARD HO . . . . .	487
Corrections to Volume III . . . . .	620
Additional Notes to Volume III . . . . .	620



# LIST OF FACSIMILES

## VOLUME IV

### THE ENGRAVED TITLE-PAGE OF THE 1616

FOLIO . . . . . *Frontispiece*

### CYNTHIA'S REVELS.

The title-page of the Quarto, 1601 . . . . . *page 25*

The title-page of the 1616 Folio, with  
ornamental border . . . . . *between pages 26, 27*

The plain title-page of the 1616 Folio . . . . . *page 27*

The title-page of the 1640 Folio . . . . . *page 29*

The dedication to Camden in the Huntington copy of  
the Quarto . . . . . *page 31*

### POETASTER :

The title-page of the Quarto, 1602 . . . . . *page 197*

The title-page of the 1616 Folio, with  
ornamental border . . . . . *between pages 197, 198*

The plain title-page of the 1616 Folio . . . . . *page 198*

The title-page of the 1640 Folio . . . . . *page 199*

### SEJANUS HIS FALL.

The title-page of the Quarto, 1605 . . . . . *page 345*

The title-page of the 1616 Folio . . . . . *page 346*

The title-page of the 1640 Folio . . . . . *page 347*

The title-page of Mr. T. J. Wise's copy of the Quarto *page 348*

### EASTWARD HO.

A 4 verso of the First Quarto . . . . . *page 508*

C verso of the First Quarto . . . . . *page 509*

C 2 of the First Quarto . . . . . *page 510*

The original state of E 3 verso in the First Quarto *page 511*

The cancel of E 3 verso in the First Quarto . . . . . *page 512*

The original state of E 4 in the First Quarto . . . . . *page 513*

The cancel of E 4 in the First Quarto . . . . . *page 514*

The title-page of the First Quarto . . . . . *facing page 515*

---

## *List of Facsimiles*

---

ix

The Prologue in the First Quarto . . . .	<i>page</i> 515
The title-page of the Second Quarto . . . .	<i>page</i> 516
The Prologue in the Second Quarto . . . .	<i>page</i> 517
The title-page of the Third Quarto . . . .	<i>page</i> 518
The Prologue in the Third Quarto . . . .	<i>page</i> 519
A 2 of the First Quarto . . . . .	<i>page</i> 520
A 2 of the Second Quarto . . . . .	<i>page</i> 521



IN MEMORIAM  
CHARLES HAROLD HERFORD

WHILE this volume was in the press, the senior editor, Professor C. H. Herford, passed away on 25 April 1931. As long ago as 1902 the Delegates of the Clarendon Press invited him to edit Jonson for their series of the Dramatists; the formal agreement was made on 21 November. Herford felt unequal to the task of preparing the text, and early in the next year he made on behalf of the Delegates proposals to the surviving editor, who had been working twelve years on Jonson, to co-operate with him and to undertake the text and the commentary. These proposals were sanctioned by the Delegates on 10 July 1903. Slowly, very slowly, the enterprise matured, and the first two volumes, mainly the work of Herford, appeared in 1925. The fact that he completed his share of the allotted task makes it possible now to form some estimate of what he achieved for the study and understanding of Jonson.

Collaboration is beset with difficulties: rarely in the history of scholarship can two minds have worked together so sympathetically. A close understanding existed between us; it grew into a warm friendship. Since we joined forces in 1903 some two hundred letters have passed between us, discussing every conceivable aspect of Jonson's life and work. At first we differed on some grave problems—Jonson's authorship of *The Case is Altered* and of the additions to *The Spanish Tragedy*: we ended in complete agreement. We decided that, if points of difference remained, I was at liberty in the later volumes, and more particularly in the commentary, to record my dissent. Actually such points will be few and unimportant, and when it falls to me to weigh the evidence finally, some even of these may

disappear. The only real difficulty that the collaboration brought for Herford was the slow progress of his colleague, who lost himself in a jungle of research. But even on that difficulty, which was serious, the sternest words that Herford ever permitted himself to utter were a protest against 'your impossible standard of perfection'.

His critical estimate of Jonson was the consummation of his work in the field of Elizabethan literature. The ideal he set before himself was, first and foremost, to understand Jonson's aims; then, and not till then, to sum up Jonson's achievement and to depict the man as he lived and moved in contemporary London. Jonson's society and the sympathetic picture of 'The Last Phase' stand out with a clearness which no other critic has attained. Robert Bridges once said to me, 'I'm afraid I don't like Jonson'. That has too often, but perhaps not unnaturally, been the attitude of critics. Herford did like him; what is more, he knew him. He recognized fully Jonson's limitations; but through them, and above them, he clearly divined the artist and the man. The strength of Herford's survey lies in its discernment. Now that it falls to me to sift Jonson's writings piecemeal in producing the text and incidentally to revise the commentary, I turn more and more to Herford's introductions for help and guidance. I never turn in vain, and I realize acutely what it means to me that I shall not take a problem to him any more.

His critical range was marvellous: he knew all the literature of Europe. He was a scholar to the finger-tips; but he was more. To accuracy and knowledge he added fine and far-sighted appreciation and the 'wide and luminous view'. Dante, Goethe, Ibsen, and the Greeks were as familiar to him as Wordsworth was or Browning. In these last years he said to me one day, 'I am reading the Greek tragedians again'; he used to get up in the morning and read them before breakfast, and I vividly recall his talks about the exquisite lyrics of the *Hippolytus* and the magnificent close of the *Prometheus*. To come in frequent

contact with such a mind, to enter into its keenness and zest, to note

The critic clearness of an eye  
That saw through all the Muses' walk,

was an unforgettable experience. To know him—and I may add without hyperbole, to love him—was a liberal education. Life is poorer now he is gone.

Failing eyesight troubled him at the last, and he was under the shadow of a great bereavement; but his mental powers were undimmed to the end, and he drew unfailingly on his vast stores of knowledge.

*Πρῶτον γῆρας σε καὶ οὐ κατὰ νοῦσος ἀμαυρὴ  
ἔσβησεν, εὐνήθης δ' ὕπνον ὀφειλόμενον  
ἄκρα μεριμνήσας.*

A life spent in 'pondering high things'—that is his truest epitaph.

P. S.

30 April 1931.

## THE TEXT: INTRODUCTORY NOTES

THE authoritative text for the Jonson plays printed in this volume is the Folio of 1616. It has been collated with the earlier Quartos and the Folio of 1640, and with the chief later texts. The following copies of the 1616 Folio have been collated: two copies in the British Museum, viz. the copy on large paper in the Grenville collection and the copy with press-mark C. 39. k 9, two copies in Bodley, viz. the Douce copy (Douce I. 302) and the copy with press-mark A.A 83. Art.; the copy in the library of Oriel College; and two copies in the possession of the editor. Full use has been made of Professor Bang's reprint in the *Materialien zur Kunde des älteren englischen Dramas*. Jonson himself read the proofs of this copy; all corrections that we have been able to trace are recorded in the critical apparatus.

This Folio was reprinted, with a few changes of reading, in 1640. Two copies of the 1640 Folio in the British Museum, with press-marks C. 28 m 12 and 79. l. 3, and two copies belonging to the editor—one on large paper—have been collated.

The Quartos are fully discussed in the textual introduction to the plays.

To ensure an accurate text every available copy has been collated for those plays which were printed for the first time in Quarto and revised by Jonson in the Folio of 1616. The former were printed from Jonson's manuscript, the latter from Quarto texts worked over by him for printer's copy. But the Folio of 1640 is in a different position: it is authoritative only for the plays from *Bartholomew Fair* onwards, which were printed in it for the first time. It has not therefore been judged necessary to collate a large number of copies for the text of these earlier plays, which is substantially a reprint.

An ample collation of the Quarto readings has been printed to show how rigorously Jonson scanned every detail of his final text. But every jot and tittle of variation is not

recorded. To do so would have swelled the critical apparatus, already large, to twice its size, with no gain to the reader. On the same principle no attempt has been made to secure a full list of the stupid blunders of the Third Quarto of *Eastward Ho*; it is a poor reprint of the Second Quarto. Such errors as the editor happened to detect have been recorded, and they sufficiently attest its worthlessness.

The following symbols and abbreviations are used in the critical apparatus for *Cynthia's Revels*, *Poetaster*, and *Sejanus*:

*F*1 = the Folio of 1616.

*F*2 = the Folio of 1640.

*Ff* = readings common to the Folios of 1616 and 1640.

*F*3 = the Folio of 1692.

*Q* = the Quarto (*Cynthia's Revels*, 1601; *Poetaster*, 1602; *Sejanus*, 1605).

*W* = Whalley's edition of 1756.

*G* = Gifford's edition of 1816.

*om.* = an earlier reading omitted for a later text.

*not in Q* = a new reading first found in the 1616 Folio.

*corr. Q* or *corr. F* is a formula used to indicate author's or printer's corrections, the earlier reading being indicated by *Q originally* or *F originally*.

In stage-directions *add Q* indicates a brief direction such as 'Exit' printed at the end of a speech and ranged with the last words: a stage-direction centred in the text and taking up a line by itself is indicated by 'After . . .' and the line number of the end of the preceding speech. See volume in, p. xiv.

Words inserted in the text are enclosed in conical brackets, as in *Sejanus* ii. 267, 'You shall disarm (them) first, and they (in night . . .'

Words wrongly inserted in the text are enclosed in square brackets to show that they should be deleted: these signs of careless printing are confined to *Eastward Ho*. An example is in the stage direction after II. ii. 10 '[*Securitie following.*]' : he is on the stage already.



*Eastward Ho*

For this play the following abbreviations are used in the critical apparatus :

*Q1* = the First Quarto of 1605.

*Q2* = the Second Quarto of 1605.

*Q3* = the Third Quarto of 1605.

*Qq* = a reading common to all the Quartos.

*B* = A. H. Bullen's edition in *The Works of John Marston*, vol. iii, 1887.

*S* = the edition of the play by Professor Felix E. Schelling, 1904.

It is instructive to compare the printing of the *Eastward Ho* Quartos with the texts which Jonson himself sent to press. They are hastily and carelessly printed, and in the use of capital letters, italic type, and punctuation they follow a different system from that which Jonson finally adopted in the 1616 Folio. Blunders in typography have been corrected, but the system has been preserved. Only such changes have been made as would have been made by a careful 'corrector' in a seventeenth-century printing-house. Thus in 1. ii 'girt<r>ed' is raised to the dignity of a capital letter ; the punctuation of 1. i. 23-6 'my mother's a Gentlewoman : and my father a Iustice of Peace, and of *Quorum*, and tho I am a yonger brother and a prentise yet I hope I am my fathers sonne : ' is simplified by printing 'Gentlewoman,' '*Quorum* : ' 'prentise,' ; and the type of v. i. 25-6, '*Hunger they say breakes stone wals.*' is adjusted by printing 'they say' in roman and inserting commas after '*Hunger*' and 'say'. This is elementary proof-correcting, and, as Chapman would have said, it makes the text 'per-vial' to the reader.

Gifford's scene-numbering and scene-locations for the plays of Jonson and Bullen's scene-locations for *Eastward Ho* have been recorded in the critical apparatus.

---

**CYNTHIA'S REVELS**

---



## THE TEXT

*Cynthia's Revels, or The Fountaine of Self-love* was first printed in quarto in 1601. The publisher was Walter Burre, in whose name it is entered on the Stationers' Register in the following form :

23 maij

walter Burre. Entred for his Coppye vnder the handes of  
master Pasfeyld and master warden whyte  
A booke called Narcissus the fountaine of  
self love. vj<sup>d</sup>

Arber, *Transcript*, III, 185.

The title in the Quarto is *The Fountaine of Self-love. Or Cynthias Revels*, and the running-title is 'CYNTHIAS Reuells', except on B 2 verso, B 3, and B 4 verso, which have 'The Fountaine of Self-love'. In the Bodleian copy cancel slips substituting 'CYNTHIAS Reuells' have been pasted over this head-line on B 2 verso and B 4 verso; the Huntington copy also has the cancel slip on B 2 verso, but it has been removed from the other two pages. The confused form in which the title is entered on the Register cannot have come from Jonson; Narcissus is not even a character in the play. Burre must have made the entry before he received the manuscript. On the stage the title was *Cynthia's Revels* from the first, as is clear from the Induction, where one of the children points to it in the theatre.<sup>1</sup>

The collation of the Quarto, A to L in fours with two leaves of M, is in detail: title-page, A. 'The number and names of the Actors,' A verso. 'Prælude', A 2 to A 4 verso. 'Prologus', B. The text of the play, B verso to M 2. 'Epilogus', M 2 verso. F 2 is misprinted E 2 in the Dyce copy. Normally there are thirty-six lines to the page, but D 3 verso and D 4 have thirty-seven, giving a crowded page. In the Huntington copy the last line of D 4 has been shorn off by the binder.

<sup>1</sup> See lines 40-1.

The presswork of the Quarto is very bad; a blemish which strikes the eye on page after page is the crooked printing. Wrong founts are frequent, especially in the punctuation. The text was much corrected while passing through the press. Five copies have been collated for the present edition—the British Museum copy with shelf-mark C. 34. d. 1 (marked A in the following list), the Bodleian copy, Malone 193 (marked B); the Dyce copy at South Kensington (marked C); Mr. T. J. Wise's copy (marked D); and the Henry E. Huntington copy at San Marino, California (marked E), the last from a photostat kindly supplied by the Library. The Huntington copy came from the Kemble collection, formerly at Chatsworth; it has the Roxburghe arms stamped on the back of the second leaf, and is, presumably, the copy marked no. 5221 in the Roxburghe Sale Catalogue of 1812. A unique feature of this copy is the leaf of dedication to William Camden inserted between A 1 and A 2; it is a remarkable tribute of Jonson's affection for his old schoolmaster. A facsimile of this precedes the text. It is very clumsily printed, especially in the division of the names 'CAM-DENVN', 'BRITAN-NIÆ'. Jonson evidently sent in the inscription for this special copy after the text was printed off, and saw no proof of it. He must have spelt Camden's christian name 'GVLIELMVM', and the periods after '*Optimum*' and '*Ionsonius*' should be commas. It is a duty to Jonson's memory to print a sound text here.

GVLIELMVM CAMDENVN,  
 Britanniae Phœbum,  
 Musarumque suarum Parentem Optimum,  
 hic cum illis  
 Benjamin Ionsonius,  
 Alumnus olim, æternum Amicus  
 iuuenari voluit.

*Hor.—Non ego te meis  
 Chartis inornatum silebo.*

The terse Latin is alive with personal feeling. 'A pupil once, a friend for ever' is a beautiful touch, and so is the subtle suggestion underlying the quotation from Horace, 'I will not be silent about you, so that you are unadorned with a poem of mine.'<sup>1</sup> Camden was already *ornatus*: this was designed as an additional honour, and the pledge was nobly redeemed when Jonson wrote the stately fourteenth *Epigram*:

CAMDEN, most reuerend head, to whom I owe  
All that I am in arts, all that I know.  
(How nothing's that ?)

The choice of the word 'iuvenari' too is suggestive. Jonson took it from the *Ars Poetica* of Horace (l. 246), a passage discussing the language of the satyric drama—  
'ne . . . nimium teneris iuvenentur versibus'—which he himself translated later,

reherse  
Their youthful tricks in over-wanton verse.

The 'Parens Optimus', absorbed in historical study and antiquarian research, is invited to indulge in youthful indiscretion by reading his pupil's play—'desipere in loco', if we may cap Jonson's quotation by another from the poet Camden had taught him to appreciate.

The five copies of the Quarto that have been collated supply a copious amount of variants, which show Jonson's scrupulous care in ensuring the correctness of his text. He must have harried the printer beyond measure. The corrections involve such minutiae as setting right wrong-fount colons and marks of interrogation. It has been found necessary to annotate the list page by page. Two states of correction appear, but a caution must be added about them. In testing the readings, what appears to be the corrected form has been placed in the second column: for this purpose the reading adopted by the Folio is significant. But from

<sup>1</sup> *Odes*, iv. ix. 30, 31.

time to time, when a correction was made, the type may have been disturbed, and so such details as a sound spelling may have been hastily reset in a less correct form. For example, in III. v. 4, the Dyce copy prints 'enterd sir'; the other copies 'enter'd Sir'. Elsewhere on this page (F 3 verso) the Dyce copy corrects the capital of 'Sir' to lower case. But the insertion of the apostrophe in 'enter'd' is normally a correction, and it would have been accepted here as such if the Folio had not reproduced the reading in the form 'enterd, sir'. It is possible that in correcting 'Sir' the printer disturbed the last letters of an original spelling 'enter'd' and reset hurriedly in a form which Jonson would not have sanctioned. There is, therefore, an element of conjecture in the order of the variants here presented, but, with this proviso, they are offered as substantially sound. Some sympathy will be felt for the afflicted printer, whom we have not succeeded in identifying.

Corrections in the outer forme of C.<sup>1</sup>

Sig C 1 iii	25	garbe, B	garbe, A, C, D, E
	27	illterate, B	illterate, A, C, D, E
	31	Trauaile: B, D	Trauaile, A, C, E
		gesture, B, D	gesture; A, C, E
	38	resi-  ded, and A, C, E	resided,   and B, D

This page was twice corrected: once to make the semi-colons uniform, as they are in the Folio; and, secondly, to adjust the original spacing of the Quarto in lines 37-9, which were printed at first:

score and eightene Princes Courts , where I haue resided, and bin there fortunate in the *Amours* of three hundred,

The last syllable of 'resided' was moved up to the line above.

Sig C 2 <sup>v</sup> 1 iv.	68	satisfed B, D	satisfied A, C, E
	69	and A, C, E	& B, D
	73	Asot, A, C, E	Asot. B, D
	74	il'e A, C, E	il'e B, D

<sup>1</sup> In the critical apparatus all changes of reading, spelling, and punctuation are recorded, but not the corrections of wrong fount or the adjustments of the spacing.

Sig. C 2 <sup>v</sup>	1. iv. 80	inuentiſ, . . . see : B, D	inuentiōn ; . . . see : A, C, E
	81	<i>Italian</i> B, D	<i>Italian</i> A, C, E
	83	would B, D	should A, C, E
	96	well, Or B, D	well Or A, C, E
	98	lifetime B, D	life time A, C, E
	103	himselfe B, D	him selfe A, C, E

Here again there are two states. The A, C, E group is obviously more correct. The correction 'should' in line 83 is accepted by the Folio: the 'would' of the Quarto was inadvertently duplicated from the line above—'that would indifferently expresse my languages'—the first 'would' being printed above the second. But this group has too obvious errors, 'Asot,' in line 73 and 'il'e' in line 74. In line 69 the substitution of the ampersand adjusts the spacing of the end of a line, 'what my father was, and'.

Sig. C 3	1 iv. 110	Ssr B, D	Sir A, C, E
	120	humour A, C	humor B, D, E
	123	our B, D	your A, C, E
	140	els B, D	els. A, C, E
	141	only B, D	onely, A, C, E
	142	virendi B, D	vi rendi A, C, E

A, C, E agree in their corrections of this page, except in line 120. Jonson at this date spelt 'humor', not 'humour', because of its Latin derivation; this spelling is found in the Quartos of *Every Man in his Humour* and *Every Man out of his Humour* in the titles and, usually, in the text. Moreover, in line 111 of this page all five copies print 'the humor of mine eye'. Probably Jonson made the spelling uniform after the rest of the page had been corrected.

C 3 verso has only one correction :

Sig C 3 <sup>v</sup>	1. iv. 147	alltimes B, D	all times, A, C, E
Sig C 4 <sup>v</sup>	1 v 35	flesh ? B, D	flesh. A, C, E
	38	(ike B, D	like A, C, E
	51	Inspight B, D	In spight A, C, E
	54	themselves . B, D	themselves . A, C, E
	56	once B, D	once, A, C, E <sup>1</sup>
	59	auoyde it B, D	auoy de it . A, C, E

<sup>1</sup> The comma is not clearly printed.



There are some curiosities of printing on this page. The wrong-fount italic note of interrogation after 'flesh' in line 35 was picked out, but the substitute for it appears to be a period followed by an apostrophe! The Folio, by the by, prints a wrong-fount italic mark of exclamation. In line 38 Jonson must have written 'Floates (like a dead drown'd body)', but the Quarto dropped the second bracket, and when the absurd '(ike' was corrected, did not restore the parenthesis; the Folio prints the words without brackets.

There is one correction on D 4 :

II III 88    mouth, *A, B, C*                    mouth *D*<sup>1</sup>

The whole of sheet F is heavily corrected with minute attention to details of spelling, punctuation, and spacing.

Corrections of the outer forme.

Sig F	III	II	22	passion, <i>C</i>	passion <sup>1</sup> <i>A, B, D, E</i>
			23	Envy <i>A, B, D, E</i>	Enue <i>C</i>
			28	Iests <i>C</i>	Iests <i>A, B, D, E</i>
			30	Vshers; <i>A, B, D, E</i>	Vshers, <i>C</i>
			31	Presence. <i>A, B, D, E</i>	Presence <i>C</i>
				they, .    their <i>A, B,</i>	they    the <i>1r C</i>
				<i>D, E</i>	
			34	gentile Society <i>A, B,</i>	gentile Societie <i>C</i>
				<i>D, E</i>	
			44	resolu'd, <i>A, B, D, E</i>	resolu'd <i>C</i>
			45	Sparke ? <i>A, B, D, E</i>	Sparke ? <i>C</i>
			46	Marry <i>A, B, D, E</i>	Marie <i>C</i>
			47	euery <i>A, B, D, E</i>	euerie <i>C</i>
			48	Courtly <i>A, B, D, E</i>	Courthe <i>C</i>
			49	any <i>A, B, D, E</i>	anie <i>C</i>
			50	done <i>A, B, D, E</i>	done, <i>C</i>
			51	publique, <i>A, B, D, E</i>	publique, <i>C</i>
				slightly <i>A, B, D, E</i>	slightlie <i>C</i>
			53	any <i>A, B, D, E</i>	anie <i>C</i>
			54	insuspect <i>A, B, D, E</i>	in suspect <i>C</i>
			55	meanes <i>C</i>	meanes : <i>A, B, D, E</i>
			56	hea-[r'st <i>A, B, D, E</i>	hea-  rest <i>C</i>
				receiud <i>A, B, D, E</i>	receu'd <i>C</i>
			57	extraordina-  ry <i>A, B,</i>	extraordina-  rie <i>C</i>
				<i>D, E</i>	

<sup>1</sup> The line is cut off in *E*.

Sig. F	III ii	58	parti-  culerly A, B, D, E	parti-  cularhe C
			waye A, B, D, E	waie C
		59	himselſe C	himselſe . A, B, D, E
		60	dos A, B, D, E	dos, C
	catchword		1's A, B, D, E	is C

With a few exceptions, the readings of the Dyce copy ('C') are corrections. The insertion of the apostrophe to mark the silent *e* in the last syllable of the past participle, 'resolu'd', 'receiu'd', speaks for itself: it is what we should expect of Jonson. He must also be responsible for changing the '-y' of final syllables to '-ie' in the author's corrections of the Folio text of the Induction to *Every Man out of his Humour* 'peremptory' was altered to 'peremptorie' (l. 74) and 'deformity' to 'deformitie' (l. 120) in Jonson's own proof-reading.<sup>1</sup> This preference for the '-ie' termination may be tested from the Induction to *Cynthia's Revels*, in which the Folio changes to '-ie' the following spellings of the Quarto—'trechery' (l. 25), 'Enuy' (l. 30), 'Auditory' (ll. 37, 201), 'Countrey' (l. 43), 'Mercury' (l. 46), 'any' (l. 47), 'pretty' (l. 52), 'Money' (ll. 73, 76, 117), 'Apoplexy' (l. 84), 'Society' (ll. 87, 173), 'Inventory' (l. 105), 'Memory' (l. 108), 'euery' (l. 181), 'Company' (l. 183), 'cary' (l. 188), 'necessary' (l. 191), 'twenty' (l. 212), 'Capacity' (l. 215), 'Corky' (l. 216)—retaining only eight of the '-y' spellings.<sup>2</sup> The printer is probably responsible for 'gentle' in the correction on III. ii. 34; the Folio prints 'gentile societie'. The Quarto elsewhere spells 'gentile'. The older English form was 'gentil' or 'gentyl', but Jonson is more likely to have been influenced by the Latin *gentilis*. The last correction of the Dyce copy is instructive: Jonson had put a comma after 'dos', the last word on this page, but the printer at first worked it into the catchword as an apostrophe in the middle of 'i's'.

A few points of punctuation were overlooked in the first

<sup>1</sup> See vol. III, pp. 415-16. These occur in verse, so there is no question of the printer manipulating the spelling in order to adjust the spacing.

<sup>2</sup> Namely, 'Mercury' (ll. 49, 55, 57), 'folly' (ll. 60, 74), 'rarely' (l. 111), 'quickly' (l. 198), 'desperately' (l. 204).

reading: two wrong-fount colons were afterwards detected in III. ii. 55, 60, and in III. ii. 22, 28, 'passion,' and 'Iests:' were corrected to the form in which they appear in the Folio, 'passion!', 'Iests.'

Sig. F 2 <sup>v</sup> III. iv. 19	himselfe, A, B, D, E	himselfe: C, E
42	<i>Proteus</i> . A, B, D, E	<i>Proteus</i> : C
43	vary A, B, D, E	varie C
44	any A, B, D, E	anie C
45	Houers C	Houers A, B, D, E
47	deuided A, B, D, E	diuided C
48	eyther A, B, D, E	either C
50	body A, B, D, E	bodie C
51	truly A, B, D, E	trule C
52	<i>mensas</i> C	<i>mensas</i> . A, B, D, E
54	nothing, C	nothing. A, B, D, E
63	away A, B, D, E	awaie C
66	Action A, B, D, E	action C
67	Playes A, B, D, E	Plaies C
	paps C	paps, A, B, D, E
70	Fanne A, B, D, E	Fanne C
71	onely A, B, D, E	onele C

The Dyce copy again gives the first state of the corrections; it is consistent in eliminating *y* spellings, though Jonson may have written 'Playes' in line 67 and 'eyther' in line 48. In the Folio text of the Induction to *Every Man out of his Humour* he corrected 'either' to 'eyther' in line 130. Of the four corrections made subsequently, 'Houers', in line 45, and 'paps', in line 67, are needed; 'nothing' in line 54 is reproduced in the Folio; and '*Proteus*' with roman colon, in line 42, corresponds to '*mensas*:', in line 52.

Sig. F 3 III. iv. 74	sixth A, B, D, E	sixt C
	Rest. A, B, D, E	Rest; C
75	Eye A, B, D, E	Eie C
77	fifth A, B, D, E	fift C
78	sixth A, B, D, E	sixt C
	lim A, B, D, E	limbe C
81	place A, B, D, E	place: C
82	down A, B, D, E	downe C
85	commonst A, B, D, E	common'st C
87	<i>Criticus</i> : C	<i>Criticus</i> . A, B, D, E
89	<i>Cynthiaes</i> C	<i>Cynthias</i> A, B, D, E

Sig F 3	III. IV 90	Denty A, B, D, E	Dentie C
	92	howers A, B, D, E	houres C
	93	honord C	honor'd A, B, D, E
	95	sweet C	sweet, A, B, D, E
		choyse A, B, D, E	choice C
	96	serious C	serious, A, B, D, E
	98	Desierd C	Desier'd A, B, D, E
	99	Cynthia C	Cynthia : A, B, D, E
	101	Louers C	louers A, B, D, E
	105	worth C	worth, A, B, D, E
		choyse A, B, D, E	choise C
	106	Reguard A, B, D, E	Regard C
		pursew A, B, D, E	pursue C
	109	vowe A, B, D, E	vow C
		thee C	thee, A, B, D, E

So far in this sheet the Dyce copy has maintained a superiority over the other copies. Here it is clear that the latter in a number of lines, especially where the punctuation is concerned, yield the sounder reading. The commas inserted in lines 95, 96, 105, and 109 are clearly Jonson's corrections 'Sixt', 'fift', 'choice', 'regard', and 'pursue' are the spellings of the Folio. 'Houres' for 'howers' in line 92 is also Jonson's correction, to mark the monosyllabic pronunciation: he made this alteration in the Folio text of the Induction to *Every Man out of his Humour*, at line 34, 'Yet, hourelly they persist, grow ranke in sinne'. The change of 'lim' to 'limbe' is less certain: 'lim' and 'lym' are the oldest forms of the word, but 'limme' and 'limbe' are sixteenth- and seventeenth-century spellings. The Folio spells 'limme' in this passage. The spellings 'reguard' and 'regard' in line 106 are not easy to determine. Here, and in two other passages (II. iii. 1, v. vi. 70), the Quarto has *gu*, the Folio *g*, but in Act v, scenes ii and iii, where the Folio is the only text, it prints 'reguard' six times.

Sig F 4 <sup>v</sup>	III. V. 75	Cart C	Court A, B, D, E
	76	laterally A, B, D, E	laterallie C
	77	coulored cheeks A, B, D, E	coloured cheeks : C
	78	dye of her hayre A, B, D, E	dye of her haire C

Sig. F 4 <sup>v</sup> III v.	79	you, <i>A, B, D, E</i>	you, <i>C</i>
	81	plyant body <i>A, B, D, E</i>	pliant bodie <i>C</i>
	82	proorde <i>C</i>	proude <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	83	exceedingly <i>A, B, D, E</i>	exceedinglie <i>C</i>
	86	Ladie, <i>A, B, D, E</i>	Ladie <i>C</i>
	88	houde <i>C</i>	holde <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	90	No <i>C</i>	No, <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	91	Courtly <i>A, B, D, E</i>	Courthe <i>C</i>
	92, 93	pretty Commodity <i>A, B, D, E</i>	prettie Commoditie <i>C</i>
	100	any <i>A, B, D, E</i>	anie <i>C</i>
	103	pursewd <i>A, B, D, E</i>	pursude <i>C</i>
	105	alone <i>A, B, D, E</i>	alone ? <i>C</i>
	106	Sir <i>A, B, D, E</i>	sir <i>C</i>
	107	appoyntment <i>Bright</i> <i>C</i>	appointment <i>bright</i> <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	110	than <i>C</i>	then <i>A, B, D, E</i>

This is a difficult page, but some corrections of the spelling—'coloured', 'proude', 'holde', 'pursude', and 'then', are authorized by the Folio. 'Pursewd' is archaic; 'then' for 'than' was Jonson's accepted form. 'Coloured' is confirmed by the change from the Quarto 'coullor' to 'colour' in the Folio at 1. iii. 29, and in eight other passages. 'Colour' is nearer to the Latin form. The '-y' and '-ie' terminations are printed in the Folio 'laterally', 'pliant bodie', 'exceedingly', 'ladie', 'courtly', 'pretty commoditie', 'any'; the Folio also has 'die' and 'haire'. In the matter of punctuation the Dyce copy is wrong in line 90 ('No') and right in line 105 ('alone?'); in line 79 'you,' is probably the second state, the printer taking out the wrong-fount period and miscorrecting. While it is unsafe to dogmatize about all the alterations quoted above, it is certain that the page was twice corrected.

#### Corrections of the inner forme of F.

Sig F <sup>v</sup> III ii	61	ha me <i>C</i>	ha'me <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	63	guilty <i>A, B, D, E</i>	guiltie <i>C</i>
	64	hart <i>A, B, D, E</i>	heart <i>C</i>
	64	shifts, <i>C</i>	shifts, <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	65	any <i>A, B, D, E</i>	anie <i>C</i>
III. iii.	8	euery <i>A, B, D, E</i>	euerie <i>C</i>

Sig F <sup>v</sup> III iii	9	Eares ? A, B, D, E	cares ? C
	14	thee A, B, D, E	thee C
	16	disprauid C	disprauid A, B, D, E
	18	censurd C	censur'd A, B, D, E
		me ? A, B, D, E	me ? C
		Chrestus C	Chrestus, A, B, D, E
	20	cald C	cal'd A, B, D, E
	21	Actions A, B, D, E	actions C
	22	hearing A, B, D, E	hearing C
	23	Anaides A, B, D, E	Anaides C
	24	stir'd A, B, D, E	stir'd C
	25	Reueler C	Reueller A, B, D, E

In this page the two states of correction are obvious.

Sig F 2 This signature, which follows III iv 12 is misprinted E 2 in C.

III iii	28	take C	talke A, B, D, E
	32	whol'd C	who ld A, B, D, E
		angry A, B, D, E	angrie C
	34	affect C	affects A, B, D, E
	36	carry A, B, D, E	carrie C
	38	sweete C	sweet A, B, D, E
	40	thats C	that's A, B, D, E
	41	to C	To A, B, D, E
		Patience A, B, D, E	patience C
	42	to C	To A, B, D, E
		ayme A, B, D, E	aime C
	43	their C	Their A, B, D, E
		Enuy's A, B, D, E	Enui's C
	44	that C	That A, B, D, E
III iv	1	day A, B, D, E	daie C
	2	friends ? A, B, D, E	friends ? C
	3	honord C	honor'd A, B, D, E
	4	the C	The A, B, D, E
		fashioned C	fashion'd A, B, D, E
	5	diffusd C	diffus'd A, B, D, E
	6	pyed A, B, D, E	ped C
	7	rime C	Time A, B, D, E
	9	Memory A, B, D, E	Memorie C
	11	that C	That A, B, D, E
		thrifty Roome A, B, D, E	thrifthe Roome C
	12	prowd C	proud A, B, D, E

The Quarto is printed in a type approximating to modern pica: the printer's stock of T's failed him, so he fell back on small pica for these at the beginning of seven lines. Of

the '-y' and '-ie' spellings, the Folio has on the one hand 'aime', 'Enui's', 'memorie', 'thriftie'; and on the other hand 'day' and 'pyed'. In III. iii. 34 the Folio reads 'affects'.

Sig F 3 <sup>v</sup>	III. v. 1	discloake C	dis-cloake A, B, D, E
	2	Taylor, A, B, D, E	Taylor, C
	3	vpon A, B, D, E	vppon C
	4	enter'd Sir A, B, D, E	enterd sir C
		Stay A, B, D, E	Stay, C
	6	pleasde C	pleas'd A, B, D, E
	8	her A, B, D, E	her, C
	9	supposde C	suppos'd A, B, D, E
		Passion hath A, B, D, E	passion hath   C
	10	Face? A, B, D, E	face · C
		two,   and A, B, D, E	two, and   C
	12	terror; A, B, D, E	terror, C
	14	Sir A, B, D, E	sir C
		god A, B, D, E	God C
		Here A, B, D, E	Heere C
	15	you  say A, B, D, E	you say   C
		selfe? A, B, D, E	selfe C
	17	spy A, B, D, E	spie C
		off? A, B, D, E	off C
	19	stifle, A, B, D, E	stifle C
	21	Sir, trembling A, B, D, E	sir, trembling, C
	24	her) A, B, D, E	her; C
	27	agaime, A, B, D, E	agaime. C
		be A, B, D, E	be, C
	30	Ahcandro's Daughter A, B, D, E	Ahcandroes daughter C
	32	been A, B, D, E	bin C

The peculiarity of this page is the printer's scrupulous care to adjust the spacing of the words in the lines. The hyphen in 'dis-cloake'; the double p in 'vppon', in line 3, when the semicolon after 'Taylor' had been changed to a comma; the taking over of 'hath' at the end of line 9, when 'supposde' had been shortened and the capital letter in 'Passion' changed to lower case, involving a further adjustment of the next line; the shortening of the crowded line 14,

*Asot.* Yes Sir (pray god I can light on it) Here I come in to you

by carrying over the word 'you' and then putting in an extra *e* in 'Heere'; and the spelling *Alicandroes* to compensate for changing the first letter of 'Daughter' to lower case—all these retouchings show a care for the look of a page as a whole sadly lacking in the general printing of the Quarto. The corrections are in the Folio, except the spellings 'vppon', 'Heere', and 'bin'; the comma after 'trembling' in line 21, where the Folio has a colon; and the parenthesis in line 24, where the words 'or by what other title you please to remember her' are fully bracketed. The half-erroneous, half-corrected 'enterd sir' in line 4 has been already noticed.<sup>1</sup> In 14 'God' for 'god' is probably a printer's miscorrection: 'god' is a frequent spelling in the Folio, as if the lower-case initial toned down the appeal to the deity in a merely vulgar oath.<sup>2</sup>

Sig F 4	III v. 35	History A, B, D, E	His <sup>t</sup> orie C
	38	Melancholy A, B, D, E	Melanchohe C
	40	so ? A, B, D, E	so ? C
		My C	My A, B, D, E
	42	choyse, A, B, D, E	choise C
	43	Musique A, B, D, E	Musicke C
	44	thoughts, A, B, D, E	thoughts C
44.	48	Beauty, A, B, D, E	Beaute. C
	45	prerty A, B, D, E	pretie C
	49	then C	then, A, B, D, E
49.	50	shall coyly A, B, D, E	shal coilie C
	50	recoyle A, B, D, E	recole C
	51	-inforce C	-enforce A, B, D, E
		Lady A, B, D, E	Ladie C
	52	courshy A, B, D, E	courshe C
	53	with-all A, B, D, E	withall C
		hir C	her A, B, D, E
		onely A, B, D, E	onehe C
	58	Act A, B, D, E	act C
	60	Musique A, B, D, E	Musicke C
	61	Beds, and  A, B, D, E	Beds,   and C
	63	Sir A, B, D, E	sir C
	66	ŷ A, B, D, E	I C
		you are  A, B, D, E	you   are C
		only A, B, D, E	onely C

<sup>1</sup> See page 6.

<sup>2</sup> In this passage the Folio reads 'love'.



Sig. F 4 III. v	66, 67	<i>vn- aparaised</i> A, B, D, E	<i>vnappareled</i> C
	68	<i>Vn- paraleid</i> A, B, D, E	<i>Vnparaleid</i> C
	69	<i>Vn- paraleid</i> A, B, D, E	<i>Vnparaleid</i> C
	71	<i>kingdome</i> A, B, D, E	<i>Kingdome</i> C
	72	now; put A, B, D, E	now, putte C
	74	ther'after A, B, D, E	thereafter C
		vpon A, B, D, E	vppon C
	75	<i>Nymph</i> A, B, D, E	<i>Nymph</i> C

Here the Dyce copy is the more fully corrected, but it is impossible to accept all its readings. Did Jonson spell '-inforce' or '-enforce' in line 51? In the Folio he shows a marked preference for the prefix 'en-' in such words as 'enflame', 'encrease', 'enforme'. But the texts are inconsistent thus in the Induction, line 54, the Quarto has 'informe', the Folio 'enforme'; in line 80 the Quarto 'encreases', the Folio 'increases'; in I. i. 47 the Quarto 'inforste', the Folio 'enforc'd'; in I. iv. 41 both texts have 'enforme'. The printer, of course, often interfered with an author's spelling, but when, as in line 51, we are confronted with a correction, it must be an intervention of the author to retrieve his own spelling, and we must decide in favour of the form for which he shows a preference.

For the change of '*Musique*' to '*Musicke*' in line 43, compare 'Phisique' (Quarto) with 'physicke' (Folio) in II. i. 50, and 'politique' (Quarto) with 'politike' (Folio) in II. ii. 42. Three lines, 61, 66, and 74, are adjusted on this page.

A few variants are found in the remaining sheets.

Sig G <sup>v</sup>	IV. 1	25	seru nt A, E	servant B, C, D
A wrong-fount <i>a</i> has been inserted for the correction				
Sig G 3 <sup>v</sup>	IV. II.	10	He )B, C, D	Hedon) A, E
Sig H 4	IV III.	330	zscending B	ascending A, C, D, E
Sig K 3	V VII	7	ieturne A, B, C, D	returne E
Sig L 2 <sup>v</sup>	V. x.	88	Your wes C	Your Arrowes A, B, D, E
		96	Dotard C, E	dotard A, B, D
110-12 were originally printed in B, C, D as follows:				

*Mer Aretes fauour makes any They daunce the 3. strains.*  
 one shot prooffe against thee *Cupid*  
 I pray thee light Hony-Bee, remember thou art not now in

*In A, E the lines were rearranged so as to correspond with the printing of the stage-direction 'They daunce the 2. straine' at l. 94*

*Mer. Arctes fauour makes any one shot prooffe against thee Cupid.*

*They daunce the 3 straine.*

*A space of one line is left before the text is resumed with 'I pray thee light Hony-bee, ...'*

The Quarto was reprinted in 1908 in Professor Bang's *Materialien zur Kunde des alteren englischen Dramas*, vol. xxii, by W. Bang and L. Krebs; the reprint is very careful. 'Moria;' in the scene heading of Act II, scene iv, should be 'Moria', and 'twine' in iv. iii. 217 should be 'turne': they are noticed here because they have been taken for printer's errors in the Bodleian copy.

The Folio text of 1616 is a revision and expansion of the Quarto, a corrected copy of which was sent to the printer. The Quarto probably gives the text of the Court performance of 6 January 1601, as F. G. Fleay first suggested.<sup>1</sup> The Folio changes are of two kinds. Insertions are made to strengthen the phrasing, to work out an idea more completely, or to make the situation clearer; these changes are purely literary. There are also additions, especially in the fourth and fifth Acts, extending to whole scenes, which are a sustained satire on the Court. 'The knot of spiders', who filled the Court with their cobwebs, were handled trenchantly enough in the shortened version. But even Jonson had to put some curb on his censoriousness before such an audience: he not only suppressed a considerable portion of this satire at the Court performance of 1601, but he judged it politic not to print it in the text which appeared later in the year. He kept the manuscript, however, and drew upon it for the revision.

The bracketed words in the following passages, taken from the Folio text, will serve as examples of Jonson's minute retouching. In i. iv. 106-13 Asotus and Amorphus solve

<sup>1</sup> *Biographical Chronicle*, i, p. 362 Cf Chambers, *Elizabethan Stage*, iii, p. 364.

a social problem. Crites will not introduce them, so how are they to know one another?

A s o. Would I had but once spoke to him, and then—  
 <Hee comes to me.>

A m o. 'Tis a most curious, and neatly-wrought band, this same, as I haue seene, sir.

A s o. O god, sir.

A m o. You forgiue the humour of mine eye, in observing it.

<C r i. His eye waters after it, it seemes.>

In III. ii. 28 foll. Hedon is angry that the Court ushers allow a scholar, 'a piece of serge, or *perpetuana*', to intrude among courtiers clad in silk. In the Folio, Anaides makes an exception: 'Vnlesse 't were *Lent*, *Ember weekes*, or *Fasting dayes*, when the place is most penuriously emptie of all other good outsides.' In III. v. 78-9, a reference to a lover's swearing by his lady's 'iuorie teeth', a 'white, and innocent oth', the Folio interjects a parenthesis, '(though they be ebonie)'. In IV. v. 120-3 foll., the page Morus wheedles the spendthrift Asotus: 'Would I might neuer stirre, but you are a fine man in these clothes. <Master, shall I haue 'hem, when you haue done with them?> A s o. As for that, M o r u s, thou shalt see more hereafter.' Here the guarded hint of the Quarto, 'Would I might neuer stirre, but you are in gay clothes,' is certainly neater, but for Morus, the son of Folly personified, and himself 'the Fool', it is, perhaps, less suitable. But the dialogue of Arete and Crites, anatomizing fantastic Court types in Act III, scene iv, is the most finished example of literary revision in the play; it is hopelessly undramatic, but in its crisp clear-cut portraiture it is a verse counterpart of the prose paragraphs of description prefixed to *Every Man out of his Humour*.<sup>1</sup> Here is a specimen:

There stands a *Neophyte* glazing of his face,  
 <Pruning his clothes, perfuming of his haire,>  
 Against his idoll enters; and repeates

<sup>1</sup> See vol. III, pp. 423-7.

- (Like an vnperfect *prologue*, at third musike)  
 His part of speeches, and confederate iests,  
 In passion to himselfe. Another swears  
 His *Scene* of courtship ouer; <bids, beleue him,  
 • Twentie times, ere they will; anon,> doth seeme<sup>1</sup>  
 As he would kisse away his hand in kindnesse;  
 <Then walkes of melancholike, and stands wreath'd,  
 • As he were pinn'd vp to the arras, thus.>

In this scene lines 22 to 41 are found only in the Folio and were probably written for it. Stroke by stroke Jonson adds to the effect, and the picture of the 'mincing marmoset, made all of clothes, and face', who

dares not smile

Beyond a point, for feare t'vnstarch his looke,  
 who has 'trauell'd to make legs', suggests the withering and concentrated power of Jonson's mature period. But, of course, this may be a stage shortening.

A similar criticism applies to the first of the longer additions in the Folio, Act III, scene i, lines 32-75. Here too the sarcasm is literary rather than dramatic. It is advice to a courtier how to exploit men of letters, to pick up their scraps of good talk, 'a new *phrase*, or an acute jest', and quote them as original.

A s o. But I shall neuer vtter it perfectly, sir.

A m o. No matter, let it come lame. In ordinary talke you shall play it away, as you doe your light crownes at *primero*: It will passe.

A long addition in Act IV, scene i, lines 136-214, satirizes Court ladies. No man with an atom of tact would have thought of having this delivered in their presence. But it is an integral part of the play. It ends with Phantaste's wild flight of fancy explaining what she would do and what she would be if she could have her wishes gratified; she would 'haue a booke made of all this, which I would call the Booke of Humours, and euery night reade a little piece, ere I slept, and laugh at it'. The book is to treat of the effects of love 'inwardly' in all temperaments and types of character, and

<sup>1</sup> The Quarto reads 'and then seemes'.

also outwardly by rival displays of foppery and folly among the lovers. Earlier in the play *Phantaste* is the only character who escapes dissection. Mercury hits off the male characters, and Cupid the female, in lucid epigrammatic notices which anticipate the formal Character Sketches of the Theophrastans.<sup>1</sup> Cupid actually begins a description of *Phantaste*, but Mercury cuts him short at once, 'Her very name speakes her, let her passe'.<sup>2</sup> Jonson thought self-revelation a sounder method of unfolding this type of character. But it was prudent to forgo the exposition at Court. The ominous first motto of the Quarto title-page, 'Quod non dant Proceres, dabit Histrio', might be freely paraphrased, 'You can say things at the Blackfriars that you cannot say at Whitehall'.<sup>3</sup>

The largest insertions of the Folio are the detailed exposure of what passed for witty amusements at Court—the game of 'A thing done' and the fiasco of Asotus playing his prize at courtship. The first is a lengthy addition to Act IV, scene III; the second occupies the whole of the first four scenes of the fifth act.<sup>4</sup> The game of 'Substantives and Adjectives', which preceded 'A thing done', would satisfy the most exacting connoisseur in fatuity—it is a pity Jonson did not stop at this in his final recension. But could he have gone further at a Court-performance? Courtiers would be present who were proficient at this kind of amusement, in a form, we may hope, a shade or two less silly than it assumes in Jonson's caricature.<sup>5</sup> But for a despised scholar<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See vol. 1, pp 374-5 Mercury describes Hedon (II i 40-69), Anaides (II ii 77-103), Amorphus, and incidentally Asotus (II iii 81-118), Cupid describes Argurion (ib., 164-85), Moria (II iv 11-28), and Philautia (ib., 35-47). Contrasted with these is the idealized portrait of Crites (II iii 123-45) <sup>2</sup> II iv 99-102.

<sup>3</sup> In a similar spirit the second motto, 'Haud tamen inuideas vati, quem pulpita pascunt', might read as an afterthought, 'though the Blackfriars too has its unpleasant moments'.

<sup>4</sup> Two inserted passages in Act IV, scene V, lines 76-100, and 142-51, are preparatory to this.

<sup>5</sup> Compare the satire on the elaborate preparation for compliments in Act II, scene II.

<sup>6</sup> See Induction, 85-7, 'a retired scholler there, you would not wish a thing to be better contemn'd of a societie of gallants, then it is', V iv. 25-6, 'he is a scholer . . . You may disgrace him here, with

to depict it as silly would be insufferable. On the other hand, it is incredible that, when Jonson in later life was preparing the Folio for the press, he laboriously composed as an historic afterthought a ponderous reinforcement of his original plan.

A slight confirmation of this view is to be found in the form in which 'A thing done' is printed in the Folio. Usually in this text Jonson rigidly prunes the capital letters and the italic type so lavishly used in the Quarto. The context offers a good illustration from the two texts of the game of substantives and adjectives (iv. iii. 88-159): the only epithet consistently italicized in the Folio is '*Pythagorically*'; in seventeenth-century printing this is a normal usage for an adjective derived from a person's name. But in the Folio text of 'A thing done' (ibid., 160-94) the catch-words, '*Who did it?*' and so forth, and the sub-title, 'the *Crab*', are all italicized. The printer's copy here corresponds with that which was used for the Quarto, it suggests that Jonson was filling in a gap from his old manuscript of 1601.

Two omissions from the Quarto text are, for different reasons, significant.<sup>1</sup> Describing the personification of shamelessness, Anaides, Jonson wrote originally, 'he has two essential parts of the Courtier, *Pride* and *Ignorance* (I meane of such a Courtier, who is (indeed) but the *Zani* to an exact Courtier) mary, the rest come somewhat after the *Ordinary* Gallant. Tis *Impudence* itself *Anaides*' (ii. ii. 77-9). He shortened this in the Folio: 'he has two essential parts of the courtier, pride, and ignorance; mary, the rest come somewhat after the ordinarie gallant. Tis *impudence* it selfe, A N A I D E S.' Later in the play Jonson did recognize the existence of

The better race in court  
That haue the true nobilitie, call'd vertue—  
(v. i. 30-1)

authoritie', ib., 68-73 'This hath discountenanc'd our *Scholars*, most richly . . . make it knowne how bitter a thing it is, not to bee look't on in court'.

<sup>1</sup> The 'Beggars rime' which opens Act II, scene v, is shortened for the Quarto version; it reads more like a popular song than an original composition of Jonson.

but this scene was not in the Quarto. We may infer from Dekker's racy thrust in *Satiro-mastix* (I 3 verso) —'thy sputtering chappes yelpe, that Arrogance, and Impudence, and Ignorance, are the essentiall parts of a Courtier'—that the insult went home; and, when once the words were quoted against him, Jonson, always impervious to criticism, retained the taunt and withdrew the qualification.

The other omission wrecks the grammar of iv. iii. 274-5. In the Folio the words '(retyring my selfe into a bay-window) the beauteous ladie ANNABELL . . .' have no construction: the Quarto reads '(retiring my selfe into a Bay-window) I encountred the Lady *Annabel*'. Either the omission is accidental, or Jonson began to retouch the passage—he inserted the epithet 'beauteous', for example—and did not complete the revision.

The Folio text was carefully reprinted by Professor W. Bang in two sections of the seventh volume of the *Materialien zur Kunde des älteren englischen Dramas*, issued at Louvain in 1905 and 1908. Dr. Alexander C. Judson also reprinted the Folio in *Yale Studies in English*, vol. xlv, in 1912. His text is extremely accurate, and he discusses fully the changes and additions made in the Folio when Jonson revised the text. He argues that the large additions were a later revision by Jonson of his original Quarto text. In preparing his edition, Dr. Judson used the copy in the Yale University library, and collated with it a copy belonging to Professor William Lyon Phelps and Professor Bang's text and collations.<sup>1</sup> He printed a list of the variant readings of these copies, and in his own edition used the corrected sheets. He notes that the Folio text occasionally exhibits two states of correction, and sees Jonson's own hand in the minute and systematic improvements.

<sup>1</sup> Professor Phelps's copy is important in preserving the first state of R verso (p. 194 of the Folio) and R 6 (p. 203), and of S verso (p. 206), and S 6 (p. 215)—the only copy recorded which does this—and of V 3 (p. 233) and V 4 verso (p. 236), Y 3 (p. 258) and Y 4 (p. 259)—which are also preserved in Professor Bang's copy and in a copy belonging to the present editor.

The Folio of 1640 reprints the text of the 1616 Folio, usually from the corrected sheets.<sup>1</sup> It has a few errors: 'render' for 'tender' in i. iii. 32; 'blushing' for 'blushingly' in ii. ii. 36; 'an' for 'and' in ii. ii. 66; 'as' for 'of' in iii. iv. 64; 'continence' for 'conniue' in v. xi. 64. On the other hand there are occasional traces of a revised punctuation. In i. i. 42 'So H E R C V L E S might challenge prioritie of vs both' a Jonsonian comma is inserted in the 1640 text after 'H E R C V L E S'. An exact parallel to this is given by the Quarto text of v. xi. 38, 'Yeares, are beneath the Sphears', where the 1616 text drops the comma. The 1640 text also makes a freer use of the semicolon where it is more logical than the comma. A good example is Argurion's comment on Asotus, 'In good faith, I like the citizens sonne there, A s o t v s, mee thinkes, none of hem all come neere him' (iv. i. 91-3). Argurion is speaking deliberately, so the substitution of a semicolon for the comma after 'A s o t v s' is justified.

<sup>1</sup> The two exceptions are the text of iv. iii. 242-352 (pp. 227-8 of the First Folio) and v. vii. 24-viii. 47 (pp. 258-9).





THE  
FOUNTAIN  
OF SELFE-LOVE.

or  
CYNTHIAS  
REVELS.

As it hath beene sundry times  
*privately acted in the Black-*  
Friars by the Children  
of her Maiesties  
Chappell.

Written by BEN: IONSON.

Quod non dant Proceres, dabit Histrio.  
Haud tamen inuideas vati, quem pulpita pascunt.

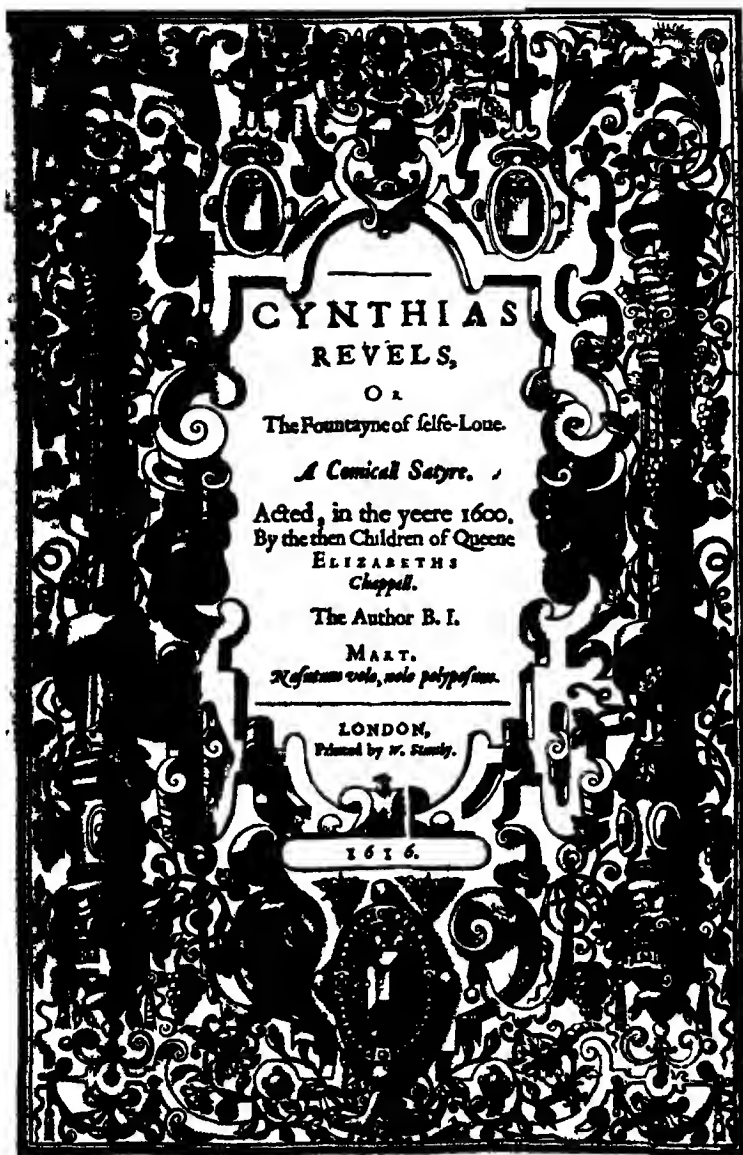
---

---

Imprinted at London for *Walter Burre*, and are to be  
*sold at his shop in Pauls Church-yard, at the signe*  
of the Flower de-Luce and Crowne, 1601.

The title-page of the Quarto.





Title-page of the 1616 Folio, with ornamental border



CYNTHIAS  
REVELS,  
OR

The Fountayne of selfe-Loue.

*A Comickall Satyre.*

Acted, in the yeere 1600. By the then  
Children of Queene ELIZABETHS  
C H A P P E R,

The Author B. I.

M A R T.

*Nefarium volo, nolo polypsum.*

---

L O N D O N,  
Printed by WILLIAM STANSBY.

---

M. DC. XVI.

The plain title-page of the 1616 Folio.  
In l. 4 'selfe-Loue' is a correction of 'selfe-loue'.



# CYNTHIAS REVELS.

OR  
THE FOVNTAINE OF  
SELFE-LOVE.

A Comickall Satyre.

First Acted in the yeere 1600. By the then  
Children of Queen ELIZABETHS Chappell.  
With the allowance of the Master  
of REVELLS.

The Author B. I.

MARY.  
*Nasutum volo, nolo polyposum.*



LONDON,  
Printed by RICHARD BISHOP.

M. DC. XL.

The title-page of the 1640 Folio.





**GVILIELMVM, CAM-  
DENVM BRITAN-  
NIÆ Phœbum, Musarumque  
*Suarum Parentem Optimum.***

**Hic cum illis  
*Beniamin Ionsonius.*  
Alumnus olim, æternum Amicus  
iuuenari voluit.**

*Hor.* — Non Ego te meis  
Chartis inornatum filebo.

Dedication to Camden inserted in the Huntington copy  
of the Quarto.



# TO THE SPECIALL FOVNTAINE OF MANNERS:

The Court.

*THou art a bountifull, and braue spring: and  
waterest all the noble plants of this Iland. In  
thee, the whole Kingdome dresseth it selfe, and is  
ambitious to vse thee as her glasse. Beware, then,  
thou render mens figures truly, and teach them no lesse  
to hate their deformities, then to loue their formes: 10  
For, to grace, there should come reuerence; and no  
man can call that louely, which is not also venerable.  
It is not pould'ring, perfuming, and euery day  
smelling of the taylor, that conuerteth to a beautiful  
obiect: but a mind, shining through any sute, which 15  
needes no false light either of riches, or honors to helpe  
it. Such shalt thou find some here, euen in the raigne  
of CYNTHIA (a CRITES, and an ARETE.)  
Now, vnder thy PHÆBUS, it will be thy prouince  
to make more: Except thou desirest to haue thy source 20  
mixe with the Spring of selfe-Loue, and so wilt draw  
vpon thee as welcome a discovery of thy dayes, as  
was then made of her nights.*

Thy seruant, but not slaue,

BEN. IONSON. 25

DEDICATION Not in Q 3 MANNERS ] MANNERS, F2 10 then]  
than F2 13 pould'ring] Pould'ring F3 16 honors] honours, F2

# The Persons of the Play.

## CYNTHIA.

	MERCURY.		CUPID.	
	HESPERVS.		ECHO.	
	CRITES.		ARETE.	
5	AMORPHVS.		PHANTASTE.	15
	ASOTVS.		ARGVRION.	
	HEDON.		PHILAVTIA.	
	ANAIDES.		MORIA.	
	MORPHIDES.		COS.	
10	PROSAITES.		GELAIA.	20
	MORVS.			

PHRONESIS.	} Mutes.
THAVMA.	
TIME.	

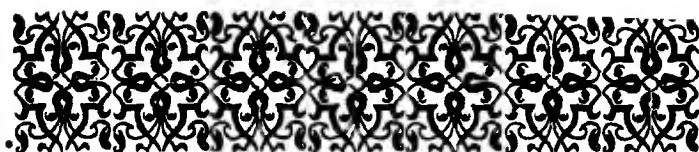
---

## THE SCENE.

## GARGAPHIE.

---

THE PERSONS OF THE PLAY ] The number and names of the Actors. Q  
 (which prefixes numerals to the names of 22 actors, thus ' 1 Cynthia ').  
 4 CRITES] 6. Criticus Q 9 MORPHIDES not in Q 23 TIME]  
 22. TIME Q THE SCENE. GARGAPHIE. not in Q After The  
 Scene Fa inserts the Actor-list given in FI at the end of the play.



# CYNTHIAS REVELS.

*After the second sounding.*

## INDUCTION.

BY THREE OF THE CHILDREN.

**P**Ray you away; why fellowes? Gods so? what doe you meane?

2. Mary that you shall not speake the *Prologue*, sir.

3. Why? doe you hope to speake it?

2. I, and I thinke I haue most right to it: I am sure I studied it first.

3. That's all one, if the Authour thinke I can speake it better.

1. I pleade possession of the cloake: Gentles, your suffrages I pray you.

¶ Why *Children*, are you not asham'd? come in there. 10 *Withr*

3. Shd, I'le play nothing i' the Play: vnlesse I speake it.

1. Why, will you stand to most voices of the gentlemen? let that decide it.

3. O no, sir gallant; you presume to haue the start of vs there, and that makes you offer so prodigally. 15

1. No, would I were whipt, if I had any such thought: trie it by lots either.

2. Faith, I dare tempt my fortune in a greater venter then this. 20

Title] CYNTHIAS REVELS ] AD LECTOREM. ] Nasutum volo, non polyposum. Q *After the second sounding* Not in Q INDUCTION] Præludrum Q Induction. ] The Stage G By .. CHILDREN] Enter three of the Children Q: *Enter three of the Children struggling.* G 1-224 Q prints in italics. 1 Pray] 1 Pray Q fellowes] Children Q 3 Mary] Marry F2 Prologue.] Prologue Q 7 Authour] Author Q, F2 9 Gentles.] Gentles F3 10 I pray you] for Gods sake Q 11 ¶ Why] Why Q 13 Why.] Why? Q 16 prodigally] bountifully Q 19-20 venter then] venture than F2

3. Well said, resolute *Iacke*, I am content too : so wee draw first. Make the cuts.

1. But will you not snatch my cloake, while I am stooping ?

25 3<sup>a</sup> No, we scorne treacherie.

2. Which cut shall speake it ?

3. The shortest.

1 Agreed. Draw The shortest is come to the shortest. *Fortune* was not altogether blind in this. Now, 30 sir, I hope I shall goe forward without your enuie

2. A spite of all mischicuous lucke ! I was once plucking at the other

3. Stay, *Iacke* : Shd, I'll doe somewhat now afore I goe in, though it be nothing but to reuenge my selfe on the 35 Authour : since I speake not his *Prologue*. Ile goe tell all the argument of his play aforehand, and so stale his inuention to the auditorie before it come forth.

*At the  
breaches  
in this  
speech  
following,  
the other  
two inter-  
rupt him,  
still.*

1. O, doe not so.

2. By no meanes.

3. First, the title of his play is CYNTHIAS *Reuells*, as any man (that hath hope to bee saued by his booke) can witnesse, the *Scene*, GARGAPHIE : which I doe vehemently suspect for some fustian countrie, but let that vanish. Here, is the court of CYNTHIA, whither hee brings 45 CVPID (trauailing on foot) resolu'd to turne page. By the way, CVPID meetes with MERCVRIE, (as that's a thing to be noted, take anie of our play-bookes without a CVPID, or a MERCVRV in it, and burne it for an heretique in *Poetrie*)—Pray thee let me alone. MER- 50 CVRY, he (in the nature of a conjurer) raises vp ECCHO, who weepes ouer her loue, or Daffodill, NARCISSVS,

Ind 28 Agreed. Draw The] *Agreed Draw.—The Q* 29–30 Now, sir] *Now Children Q* 34 on] of *Q* 35 Authour ] Author, *Q* Author : *F2* 37 forth] *forth Q* 38 stage-dir two] two Boyes *Q* *hm, still*] him *Q* 40 3] 3 Child [*Advancing to the front of the Stage*] *G* 41 saued] *sau'd Q* 42 GARGAPHIE] GARGAPHIA *Q* 43 countrie.] *Countriey* . *Q* country, *F2* 44 Here.] *Here Q* CYNTHIA.] *Cynthia* . *Q* 45 trauailing] travelling *F2* page] *Page : Q* 49 alone] *alone : Q* 50 he] *he, Q* conjurer] *Coniurer Q* ECCHO] *Echo : Q*

a little; sings; curses the spring wherein the prettie  
 foolish gentleman melted himselfe away: and ther's an  
 end of her.—Now I am to informe you, that CVPID,  
 and, MERCURY doe both become pages. CVPID 55  
 attends on PHILAVTIA, or *selfe-Loue*, a court-ladie:  
 MERCURY followes HEDON, the *voluptuous*, and a  
 courtier; one that rankes himselfe euen with ANAIDES,  
 or the *impudent*, a gallant, (and that's my part :) one that  
 keepes *laughter*, GELAI A the daughter of *folly*, (a wench 60  
 in boyes attire) to waite on him—These, in the court,  
 meet with AMORPHVS, or the *deformed*; a trauailer  
 that hath drunke of the fountaine, and there tels the  
 wonders of the water. They presently dispatch away their  
 pages with bottles to fetch of it, and themselues goe to 65  
 visite the ladies. But I should haue told you—(Looke,  
 these emets put me out here) that with this AMORPHVS,  
 there comes along a citizens heire, ASOTVS, or the  
*prodigall*, who (in imitation of the traueller, who hath the  
*whetstone* following him) entertaines the *begger*, to be his 70  
 attendant—Now, the *Nymphs* who are mistresses to  
 these gallants, are PHILAVTIA, *selfe-Loue*; PHAN-  
 TASTE, a *light wittnesse*, ARGVRION, *monie*; and  
 their *Guardian*, mother MORIA, or mistresse *folly* —

I Pray thee no more.

75

3. There CVPID strikes *monie* in loue with the *prodigall*,  
 makes her dote vpon him, giue him iewels, bracelets,  
 carkenets, &c. all which hee (most ingeniously) departs  
 withall, to be made knowne to the other ladies and gallants ;

Ind 54 Now] Now, Q informe] *enforme* Q 55 pages ] *Pages* Q  
 57 *voluptuous*, and a] *voluptuous* Q 59 *impudent*, a] *impudent* Q  
 one that] a *Fellow* that Q 60 *laughter*, GELAI A] \**Laughter* Q (with  
 marginal note ' \*Gelaia ' ) *folly*,] \**Folly* Q (with marginal note  
 ' \*Moria. ' ) 62 *deformed*,] *Deformed*, Q trauailer] traveller F2  
 64 water ] Water, Q 66 ladies ] *Ladies* Q (Looke,] *Looke*, Q  
 67 here)] *here* Q 69 who hath] *that hath* Q 70 *whetstone*  
 \**Whetstone*, Q (with marginal note ' \*Cos. ' ) *begger*] \**Begger* Q (with  
 marginal note ' \*Prosaites ' ) 72 *selfe*-] *Self*- F3 73 ARGVRION,]  
 Argurion, Q: ARGVRION F1 ARGVRION F2 74 MORIA, ] MORIA F2  
 75 i ] 2 Q 76 *prodigall*,] *Prodigall*, Q 78 hee (most ingeniously)]  
 (he most ingeniously) Q. (hee most ingeniously F1: hee most in-  
 geniously F2 79 withall,] *withall*, Q withall) F1. withall F2



80 and in the heat of this, increases his traine with the *foole*  
to follow him, aswell as the *begger*.—By this time, your  
*begger* begins to waite close, who is return'd with the rest  
of his fellow bottle-men.—There they all drinke, saue  
A R G V R I O N, who is falne into a sodaine apoplexie.—

35 1. Stop his mouth.

3. And then, there's a retired scholler there, you would  
not wish a thing to be better condemn'd of a societie of  
gallants, then it is. and hee applies his seruice (good  
gentleman) to the ladie A R E T E, or *vertue*, a poore *Nymph*  
90 of C Y N T H I A S traine, that's scarce able to buy her selfe  
a gowne, you shall see her play in a blacke robe anon: A  
creature, that (I assure you) is no lesse scorn'd, then  
himselfe. Where am I now? at a stand?

2. Come, leaue at last, yet.

95 3. O, the night is come, ('twas somewhat darke, mee  
thought) and C Y N T H I A intends to come forth: (That  
helps it a little yet) All the courtiers must prouide for  
*reuells*; they conclude vpon a *Masque*, the deuice of which,  
is—(what, will you rauish mee?) that each of these vices,  
100 being to appeare before C Y N T H I A, would seeme other  
then indeed they are. and therefore assume the most  
neighbouring vertues as their masking habites —(I'lde  
crie, a rape, but that you are children.)

2. Come, wee'le haue no more of this anticipation: to  
105 giue them the inuentorie of their cates aforehand, were the  
discipline of a tauerne, and not fitting this presence.

1. Tut, this was but to shew vs the happinesse of his  
memorie. I thought at first, he would haue plaid the  
ignorant critique with euerie thing, along as he had gone,  
110 I expected some such deuice.

Ind 80 increases] *encreases* Q *foole*] \*Foole Q (with marginal note  
'\*Morus.') 84 sodaine] sudden F2 86 scholler] \*Scholler Q (with  
marginal note ' \*Criticus ') 88, 92, 101 then] than F2 88 seruice]  
service Q 89 vertue] Virtue Q 94 last,] last Q 95 'twas Q  
t'was Ff 96 (That] That Q 97 yet)] yet. Q 99 (what,  
what Q mee?)] me? Q 102 vertues] Virtues Q (I'lde] I'd Q  
103 children.]] Children. Q 108 memorie.] Memory. Q 109 thing,  
thing Q gone,] gone; Q: gone, F2

3. O, you shall see me doe that, rarely, lend me thy cloake.

1. Soft, sir, you'le speake my *Prologue* in it.

3. No, would I might neuer stirre then.

2., Lend it him, lend it him.

1. Well, you haue sworne.

115

3. I haue. Now, sir, suppose I am one of your gentile auditors, that am come in (hauing paid my monie at the doore, with much adoe) and here I take my place, and sit downe : I haue my three sorts of tabacco in my pocket, my light by me, and thus I beginne. By this light, I wonder 120 that any man is so mad, to come to see these rascally *Tits* *At the breaches he takes his tabacco.* play here—They doe act like so manie *wrens*, or *pismires*—not the fift part of a good face amongst them all—And then their *musicke* is abominable—able to stretch a mans eares worse then tenne—pillories, and their ditties 125 —most lamentable things, like the pittifull fellows that make them—Poets. By this vapour, and 'twere not for tabacco—I thinke—the verie stench of 'hem would poison mee, I should not dare to come in at their gates—A man were better visit fiftene jailes,—or a dozen or two 130 of hospitals—then once aduenture to come neere them. How is't ? Well ?

1. Excellent : giue mee my cloake.

3. Stay ; you shall see me doe another now : but a more sober, or better-gather'd gallant ; that is (as it may bee 135 thought) some friend, or wel-wisher to the house : And here I enter.

1. What ? vpon the stage, too ?

2. Yes : and I step forth like one of the children, and aske you, Would you haue a stoole, sir ?

140

3. A stoole, boy ?

Ind 111 that, rarely,] *that rarely*, Q: that, rarely, F2 112 it.]  
 11? Q 114 him.] *him* Q 115 sworne] *sworne*? Q 116 Now,  
 sr.] *Now Sir*; Q gentile] *genteel* G 118 doore,] *Doore* Q 120 me,]  
 me, Q By this light] *By Gods so* Q 121 Stage-direction not in Q.  
 123 fift] *fifth* Q fifth F2 124 abominable] *abominable* Q 125,  
 131 then] *than* F2 127 By this vapour] *By Gods lid* Q and] *an' F2*  
 130 jailes,] *Iayles* Q 138 stage,] *Stage* Q 139 forth] *foorth* Q  
 139-40 aske you,] *aske you*; Q 140 a not in Q. 140, 141 stoole,] *Stoole* Q

2. I, sir, if youle giue me six pence, Ile fetch you one.

3. For what I pray thee ? what shall I doe with it ?

2. O lord, sir ! will you betraie your ignorance so much ?  
145 why throne your selfe in state on the stage, as other gentle-  
men vse, sir.

3. Away, wagge ; what, would'st thou make an imple-  
ment of me ? Slid the boy takes me for a piece of *perspectiue*  
(I hold my life) or some silke cortaine, come to hang the  
150 stage here ! sir cracke, I am none of your fresh pictures,  
that vse to beautifie the decaied dead arras, in a publike  
theatre.

2. Tis a signe, sir, you put not that confidence in your good  
clothes, and your better face, that a gentleman should doe,  
155 sir. But I pray you sir, let mee bee a suter to you, that you  
will quit our stage then, and take a place, the play is in-  
stantly to beginne.

3. Most willingly, my good wag . but I would speake with  
your Authour, where's he ?

160 2. Not this way, I assure you, sir wee are not so offici-  
ously befriended by him, as to haue his presence in the tiring-  
house, to prompt vs aloud, stampe at the booke-holder,  
swear for our properties, curse the poore tire-man, raile  
the musicke out of tune, and sweat for euerie veniall trespassse  
165 we commit, as some Authour would, if he had such fine  
engles as we. Well, tis but our hard fortune.

3. Nay, cracke, be not dis-heartned.

2. Not I, sir ; but if you please to conferre with our  
Author, by attorney, you may, sir : our proper selfe here,  
170 stands for him.

3. Troth, I haue no such serious affaire to negotiate with  
him, but what may verie safely bee turn'd vpon thy trust.

Ind. 142 I,] *I* Q 144 lord,] *God* Q 145 why] *why*, Q 146  
vse,] *vse* Q 147 Away,] *Away* Q what,] *what* Q 148 *perspectiue*] *Prospectiue* Q  
149 cortaine] *Curtine* Q. curtain *F2* 150 here!] *here* Q  
151 cracke,] *Cracke* Q 153 signe,] *signe* Q 154 doe,] *do* Q  
155 you,] *you* Q 158 willingly,] *willingly* Q 159, 165 Authour] *Author* Q  
160 you, sir ] *you Sir*, Q 164 musicke] *Musique* Q  
165 Authour] *Author F2* 166 engles] *Ingles* Q we ] *we* Q  
167 Nay, cracke,] *Nay Crack* Q 168 I,] *I* Q 169 may] *may* Q 172  
trust.] *trust* . Q

It is in the generall behalfe of this faire societie here, that  
 I am to speake, at least the more iudicious part of it, which  
 seemes much distasted with the immodest and obscene 175  
 writing of manie, in their playes. Besides, they could wish,  
 your *Poets* would leaue to bee promoters of other mens  
 iests, and to way-lay all the stale *apothegmes*, or olde bookes,  
 they can heare of (in print, or otherwise) to farce their  
*Scenes* withall That they would not so penuriously gleane 180  
 wit, from euerie laundresse, or hackney-man, or deriue their  
 best grace (with seruile imitation) from common stages, or  
 obseruation of the companie they conuerse with; as if their  
 inuention liu'd wholly vpon another mans trencher. Againe,  
 that feeding their friends with nothing of their owne, but 185  
 what they haue twice or thrice cook'd, they should not  
 wantonly giue out, how soone they had drest it; nor how  
 manie coaches came to carrie away the broken-meat, besides  
 hobbie-horses, and foot-cloth nags.

2. So, sir, this is all the reformation you seeke? 190

3. It is: doe not you thinke it necessarie to be practiz'd,  
 my little wag?

2. Yes, where any such ill-habited custome is receiu'd.

3. O (I had almost forgot it too) they say, the *umbræ*, or  
 ghosts of some three or foure playes, departed a dozen 195  
 yeeres since, haue bin seene walking on your stage heere:  
 take heed, boy, if your house bee haunted with such *hob-*  
*goblins*, 'twill fright away all your spectators quickly.

2. Good, sir, but what will you say now, if a *Poet* (vn-  
 toucht with any breath of this disease) find the tokens vpon 200  
 you, that are of the auditorie? As some one ciuet-wit  
 among you, that knowes no other learning, then the price

Ind 174 speake,] *speake*; Q it,] *it*. Q 177 promoters] Pro-  
 mooters Q 178 iests,] *iests*, Q 180 withall] *withall* Q  
 181 laundresse] *Landresse* Q -man,] *-man*, Q 184 Againe,]  
*Againe*, Q 186 twice] *twise*, Q cook'd,] *Cook'd* Q, which should  
 haue printed '(but what' 190 So,] *So* Q 191 practiz'd] *practis'd* Q  
 193 Yes, where] *Yes, where there is* Q custome is] *Custome* Q 194  
 O (I] *O, I* Q too,] *too* Q 196 bin] *been* Q. beene *Fa* 197 heed,]  
*heed* Q 198 'twill] *t'will* *Fr* 199 Good, sir, but] *Good Sir*.  
 But Q Good, sir, but *Fa* 200 the tokens] *Gods Tokens* Q 202,  
 203, 207, then] *than* *Fa*

of satten and vellets ; nor other perfection, then the wearing  
 of a neat sute ; and yet will censure as desperately as the  
 205 most profess'd *critique* in the house : presuming, his clothes  
 should beare him out in't. Another (whom it hath pleas'd  
 nature to furnish with more beard, then braine) prunes his  
 mustaccio, lisps, and (with some score of affected othes)  
 sweares downe all that sit about him ; *That the old Hiero-*  
 210 *nimo*, (as it was first acted) *was the onely best, and iudiciously*  
*pend play of Europe*. A third great-bellied juggler talkes of  
 twentie yeeres since, and when M O N S I E V R was heere,  
 and would enforce all wits to bee of that fashion, because  
 his doublet is still so. A fourth miscals all by the name of  
 215 fustian, that his grounded capacitie cannot aspire to. A fift,  
 only shakes his bottle-head, and out of his corkie braine,  
 squeezezeth out a pittiful-learned face, and is silent.

3. By my faith, *lacke*, you haue put mee downe : I would  
 I knew how to get off with any indifferent grace. Heere,  
 220 take your cloke, and promise some satisfaction in your  
*Prologue*, or (I'le be sworne) wee haue marr'd all.

2. Tut, feare not, chuld, this wil neuer distaste a true  
 sense : Be not out, and good enough. I would thou hadst  
 some sugar-candied, to sweeten thy mouth.

Ind. 203 vellets] Veluets Q velvets Fz 205 presuming,] pre-  
 suming Fz 208 mustaccio, lisps,] Mustaccio, *lisps*, Q othes] *Oathes*  
 Q oaths Fz 210, 211 *iudiciously pend*] *Iudiciously-pend* Q 211  
 juggler] *Jugler* Q 212 heere,] *here*, Q 213 wits] *Witte* Q 215  
 to] 100 Q fift,] *fifth* Q 219 grace] *Grace* 1 Q 221 Exit. *add* Q  
 222 not, chuld,] not Sall. Q 224 sugar-candied] *Sugar Candyed* Q  
 Exit *add* Q

*The third sounding.*

PROLOGVE.

IF gracious silence, sweet attention,  
 I Quicke sight, and quicker apprehension,  
 (The lights of iudgements throne) shine any where ;  
 Our doubtfull authour hopes this is their sphere.  
 And therefore opens he himselfe to those ; 5  
 To other weaker beames, his labours close :  
 As loth to prostitute their virgin straine,  
 To eu'rie vulgar, and adult'rate braine.  
 In this alone, his M v s e her sweetnesse hath,  
 Shee shunnes the print of any beaten path ; 10  
 And proues new wayes to come to learned eares :  
 Pied ignorance she neither loues, nor feares.  
 Nor hunts she after popular applause,  
 Or fomie praise, that drops from common iawes :  
 The garland that she weares, their hands must twine, 15  
 Who can both censure, vnderstand, define  
 What merit is : Then cast those piercing raies,  
 Round as a crowne, in stead of honour'd bayes,  
 About his *poesie* ; which (he knowes) affoords  
 Words, aboue action : matter, aboue words. 20

*The third sounding.* not in Q. PROLOGVE] Prologus Q 1-20 Q  
*prints in italic* 4 authour hopes] author hopes, Q Author hopes  
 F2 sphere] Sphere Q 6 labours] labors Q 8 eu'rie] euery Q  
 adult'rate] adulterate Q braine] braine, F2 11 proues] prooues Q  
 18 honour'd] honor'd Q 19 affoords] affords F2 After 20  
 Exit Q

## Act 1. Scene 1.

CVPID, MERCVRIE.

W<sup>H</sup>o goes there?

MER. Tis I, blind archer.

CVP. Who? MERCVRIE?

MER. I.

5 CVP. Farewell.

MER. Stay, CVPID.

CVP. Not in your companie, HERMES, except your hands were riuerted at your backe.

MER. Why so, my little rouer?

10 CVP. Because I know, you ha' not a finger, but is as long as my quier (cousin MERCVRIE) when you please to extend it

MER. Whence deriue you this speech, boy?

CVP. O! tis your best politie to be ignorant. You did  
15 neuer steale MARS his sword out of the sheath, you? nor NEPTVNES trident? nor APOLLOES bow? no, not you? Alas, your palmes (I VPITER knowes) they are as tender as the foot of a foundred nagge, or a ladies face new *mercuried*, the'ile touch nothing.

20 MER. Goe too (infant) you'le be daring still.

CVP. Daring? O IANVS! what a word is there? why, my light fether-heel'd couss', what are you? any more then my vncl e LOVES pandar, a lacquey, that runnes on errands for him, and can whisper a light message to a loose  
25 wench with some round volubilitie, wait mannerly at a

I. 1. Act 1. Scene 1.] *Actus Primus, Scena prima.* Q ACT I SCENE I. |  
*A Grove and Fountain* | *Enter Cupid, and Mercury with his caduceus, on*  
*different sides* G CVPID.] Cupid Q 6 Stay.] Stay Q 7 companie,]  
 company Q 9 so.] so Q 11 quier] quier, Q MERCVRIE)]  
 Mercurie.) Q 13 speech.] speach Q 14 politie] policie Q ignor-  
 ant You] Ignorant. you Q 15 sheath.] sheath, Q 16 trident ?]  
 Trident, Q APOLLOES] APOLLO'S F2 bow ?] Bowe, Q 19  
*mercuried,*] *Mercuried,* Q the'ile] theyle Q they'le F2 (cf.  
 I. 1. 88). 22 couss'] *Cousse* Q: Couz F3 you ?] you, Q then]  
 than F2 25 mannerly not in Q.

table with a trencher, and warble vpon a crowde a little, fill  
 \*out *nectar*, when *Ganimed's* away, one that sweeps the *Gods*  
 drinking roome euery morning, and sets the cushions in  
 order againe, which they threw one at anothers head ouer-  
 night, can brush the carpets, call the stooles againe to their 30  
 places, play the cryer of the court with an audible voice,  
 and take state of a *President* vpon you at wrestlings, plead-  
 ings, negotiations, &c. Here's the catalogue o' your imploi-  
 ments now. O no, I erre, you haue the marshalling of all the  
 ghosts too, that passe the *stygian* ferrie, and I suspect you 35  
 for a share with the old sculler there, if the truth were  
 known; but let that scape. One other peculiar vertue you  
 possesse, in lifting, or *lieger-du-maine*, (which few of the  
 house of heau'n haue else besides) I must confesse. But  
 (mee thinkes) that should not make you put that extreme 40  
 distance twixt your selfe and others, that we should be said  
 to ouerdare in speaking to your nimble *deutie*? So H E R -  
 c u l e s might challenge prioritie of vs both, because he  
 can throw the barre farther, or lift more ioyn'd stooles at  
 the armes end, then we. If this might carry it, then wee 45  
 who haue made the whole bodie of diuinitie tremble at the  
 twang of our bow, and enforc'd S A T V R N I V S himselfe  
 to lay by his curl'd front, thunder, and three-fork'd fires, and  
 put on a masking sute, too light for a reueller of eightene,  
 to be seene in—

50

M E R. How now! my dancing braggart in *decimo-sexto*!  
 charme your skipping tongue, or I'll—

C V P. What? vse the vertue of your snakie tip-staffe  
*there vpon vs?*

M E R. No, boy, but the smart vigor of my palme about 55

1 1 26 little,] little. Q 26-7 fill away, not in Q. fill] and fill  
 G 29-30 ouer-night,] ouernight? Q 30-3 can brush. . &c. not in Q  
 33 o' your] of all your Q 34 erre,] erre Q 35 ferrie,] ferry, Q  
 37 scape One] scape one Q 38 -maine,] -mains Q 39 confesse ]  
 confesse, Q 40 put that extreme] set such an extream Q 41  
 twixt] 'twixt F<sub>2</sub> 42 *deutie*?] *Deity* Q H E R C V L E S] H E R C U L E S, F<sub>2</sub>  
 43 prioritie] a priority Q 45 then] than F<sub>2</sub> it,] it, Q 46  
 who] (who Q 47 enforc'd] inforste Q 48 three-fork'd fires] three  
 fork'd-fiers Q 51 now!] now Q -sexto!] *sexto*? Q 52 tongue]  
 toung Q (40 80) 55 smart] stretcht Q my palme] mine arme Q



your eares. You haue forgot since I tooke your heeles vp into aire (on the very houre I was borne) in sight of all the bench of *deities*, when the siluer roofe of the *Olympian* palace rung againe with applause of the fact.

- 60 CVP. O no, I remember it freshly, and by a particular instance; for my mother VENVS (at the same time) but stoopt to imbrace you, and (to speake by *metaphore*) you borrowed a girdle of hers, as you did IOVES scepter (while hee was laughing) and would haue done his thunder too, but  
65 that 'twas too hot for your itching fingers.

MER. Tis well, sir.

- CVP. I heard, you but look't in at VULCANS forge the other day, and intreated a paire of his new tongs along with you, for companie. Tis ioy on you (yfaith) that you  
70 will keepe your hook'd tallons in practice with any thing. S'light, now you are on earth, wee shall haue you filch spoones and candle-sticks, rather then faile. pray IOVE the perfum'd courtiers keepe their casting-bottles, pick-toothes, and shittle-cocks from you; or our more ordinarie  
75 gallants their tabacco-boxes, for I am strangely iealous of your nailes

- MER. Ne're trust me, CVPID, but you are turn'd a most acute gallant of late, the edge of my wit is cleere taken off with the fine and subtile stroke of your thin-ground  
80 tongue, you fight with too poinant a phrase, for me to deale with.

- CVP. O HERMES, your craft cannot make me confident. I know my owne steele to bee almost spent, and therefore intreate my peace with you, in time you are too  
85 cunning for mee to incounter at length, and I thinke it my safest ward to close.

MER. Well, for once, I'le suffer you to winne vpon mee,

1 1. 56 eares. You] eares; you Q 57 houre] hower Q 59  
applause] the applause Q 62 stoopt] stoupt Q 64 done] doone Q  
65 that 'twas] that, twas Q 72 then] than F2 74 you:] you, Q  
78 cleere] cleane F2 82-3 confident.] confident, Q 84 you,]  
you Q 85 incounter] encounter F2 87 winne vpon me] come  
within me Q

wagge, but vse not these straines too often, they'le stretch  
my patience. Whither might you march, now ?

C V P. Faith (to recouer thy good thoughts) I'le discover 90  
my whole proiect. The Huntresse, and Queene of these  
groues, D I A N A (in regard of some black and enuious  
slanders hourelly breath'd against her, for her diuine iustice  
on A C T E O N, as shee pretends) hath here in the vale of  
*Gargaphy*, proclaim'd a solemne reuells, which (her god-head 95  
put off) shee will descend to grace, with the full and royall  
expençe of one of her cleerest moones. In which time, it  
shall bee lawfull for all sorts of ingenuous persons, to visit  
her palace, to court her N Y M P H E S, to exercise all varietie  
of generous and noble pastimes, as well to intimate how farre 100  
shee treads such malicious imputations beneath her, as  
also to shew how cleere her beauties are from the least  
wrinkle of austerity, they may be charg'd with.

M E R. But, what is all this to C V P I D ?

C V P. Here doe I meane to put off the title of a god, and 105  
take the habite of a page, in which disguise (during the  
*interim* of these reuells) I will get to follow some one of  
D I A N A E S maides, where (if my bow hold, and my shafts  
flie but with halfe the willingnesse, and aime they are  
directed) I doubt not, but I shall really redeeme the minutes 110  
I haue lost, by their so long and ouer-nice proscription of  
my *deutie*, from their court.

M E R. Pursue it (diuine C V P I D) it will be rare.

C V P. But will H E R M E S second me ?

M E R. I am now to put in act, an especiaall designement 115  
from my father I o v e, but that perform'd, I am for any  
fresh action that offers it selfe.

C V P. Well, then we part.

M E R. Farewell, good wag.

1 1. 89 Whither] Whether Q 93 hourelly] howerly Q diuine]  
deuine Q 94 ACTEON.] Actison Q 95-6 (her . off) not in Q  
96 will descend to grace] will grace Q 98 ingenuous] ingenious W  
101 malicious] malitious Q 104 But.] But Q 108 DIANAES]  
DIANA's F2 109 willingnesse.] willingnesse Q 111 lost.] lost Q  
114 me ?] me. Q 115 act.] act Q, F2 118 Well.] Well Q  
Ew. add Q 119 Farewell.] Farewell Q

- 120 Now, to my charge, E c c h o, faire E c c h o, speake,  
 Tis M E R C V R I E, that calls thee, sorrowfull *Nymph*,  
 Salute me with thy repercussive voice,  
 That I may know what cauerne of the earth  
 Containes thy ayrie spirit, how, or where  
 125 I may direct my speech, that thou maist heare.

## Act I. Scene II.

E C C H O, M E R C V R I E.

H<sup>Ere.</sup>

M E R. So nigh?

E c c I

- M E R Know (gentle soule) then, I am sent from I o v e,  
 5 Who (pittying the sad burthen of thy woes,  
 Still growing on thee, in thy want of wordes,  
 To vent thy passion for N A R C I S S V S death)  
 Commands, that now (after three thousand yeeres,  
 Which haue beene exercis'd in I v n o e s sight)  
 10 Thou take a corporall figure, and ascend,  
 Enrich with vocall, and articulate power  
 Make haste, sad *Nymph*, thrice shall my winged rod  
 Strike th'obsequious earth, to giue thee way  
 Arise, and speake thy sorrowes, E c c h o, rise,  
 15 Here, by this fountayne, where thy loue did pine,  
 Whose memorie lues fresh to vulgar fame,  
 Shrin'd in this yellow flowre, that beares his name  
 E c c His name reuiues, and lifts me vp from earth.  
 O, which way shall I first conuert my selfe?  
 20 Or in what moode shall I assay to speake,

I 1 120 Now,] Now Q faire ECCHO,] faire *Eccho* Q 121  
 MERCURIE,] MERCURIE F2 thee,] thee, Q *Nymph*,] *Nymph* Q  
*Nymph* F2 123 earth] earth, Q 124 spirit,] spirit Q  
I 11 Act I Scene II.] SCENA 2 Q 1 Here] Echo Here Q Echo [below]  
Here G, continuing the Scene 8 Commands] Commands Q 9  
beene] bin Q IVNOES] JUNO'S F2 10 figure,] figure Q 12  
haste,] haste Q *Nymph*,] *Nymph* Q shall] doth Q 13 way ]  
way, Q 15 fountayne,] Fountayne Q 17 flowre] flower Q. F2  
18 Ascend] add Q

That (in a moment) I may be deliuered  
 Of the prodigious grieffe I goe withall ?  
 See, see, the mourning fount, whose springs weepe yet,  
 Th'vn̄timely fate of that too beauteous boy,  
 That trophæe of selfe-loue, and spoile of nature, 25  
 Who (now transform'd into this drouping flowre)  
 Hangs the repentant head, back from the streame,  
 As if it wish'd, would I had neuer look'd  
 In such a flattering mirroure. O N A R C I S S V S,  
 Thou that wast once (and yet art) my N A R C I S S V S ; 30  
 Had E c c h o but beene priuate with thy thoughts,  
 Shee would haue dropt away her selfe in teares,  
 Till shee had all turn'd water, that in her,  
 (As in a truer glasse) thou mightst haue gaz'd,  
 And seene thy beauties by more kind reflection . 35  
 But selfe-loue neuer yet could looke on truth,  
 But with beard beames ; slieke flatterie and shee  
 Are twin-borne sisters, and so mixe their eyes,  
 As if you seuer one, the other dies.  
 Why did the gods giue thee a heau'nly forme, 40  
 And earthy thoughts, to make thee proud of it ?  
 Why, doe I aske ? Tis now the knowne disease  
 That beautie hath, to beare too deepe a sense  
 Of her owne selfe-conceued excellence.  
 O, hadst thou knowne the worth of heau'ns rich gift, 45  
 Thou wouldst haue turn'd it to a truer vse,  
 And not (with staru'd, and couetous ignorance)  
 Pin'd in continuall eying that bright gem,  
 The glance whereof to others had beene more,  
 Then to thy famisht mind the wide worlds store : 50

i. u. 22 prodigious] prodigious Q withall] with all Q 23 mourn-  
 ing fount.] morning fount Q springs weepe] spring weepes Q yet,]  
 yet F2 24 too beauteous] too-beauteous Q 26 drouping]  
 drooping Q 27 back] back, Q streame,] streame, Q 28  
 wish'd, would] wish'd: Would Q look'd] lookt, Q 29 mirroure]  
 mirror Q 30 NARCISVS,] Narcissus, Q 33 water,] water, Q  
 34 mightst] mightst Q 35 reflection ]reflection F2 37 slieke] slick F3  
 shee] she Q 40 heau'nly] heavenly Q 41 earthy] earthly F2  
 42 Why,] Why Q 43 too] to Q 45 heau'ns] heauens Q gift]  
 guift Q 47 staru'd,] leane Q 49 beene] bine Q 50 Then] Than F2

" So wretched is it to be meerely rich.

Witnesse thy youths deare sweets, here spent vntasted,  
Like a faire taper, with his owne flame wasted.

MER. ECCHO, be briefe, SATVRNIA is abroad,  
55 And if shee heare, sheele storme at I O V E S high will.

EC C. I will (kind M E R C V R I E) be briefe as time.  
Vouchsafe me, I may doe him these last rites,  
But kisse his flowre, and sing some mourning straine  
Ouer his watrie hearse. MER. Thou dost obtaine.  
60 I were no sonne to I O V E, should I denie thee.  
Begin, and (more to grace thy cunning voice)  
The humorous aire shall mixe her solemne tunes,  
With thy sad words : strike musicque from the spheares,  
And with your golden raptures swell our cares

S O N G.

65 *S* Low, slow, fresh fount, keepe time with my salt teares ;  
*Y*et slower, yet, o faintly gentle springs :  
*L*ist to the heavy part the musique beares,

" Woe weepes out her diuision, when shee sings.

*D*roupe hearbs, and floweres ;

70 *F*all grieffe in showres ;

" Our beauties are not ours :

*O*, I could still

(*L*ike melting snow vpon some craggie hill,) *d*rop, drop, drop, drop,

75 *S*ince natures pride is, now, a wither'd daffodill.

MER. Now, ha' you done ?

EC C. Done presently (good H E R M E S) bide a little,  
Suffer my thirstie eye to gaze a while,  
But e'ene to taste the place, and I am vanisht.

80 MER. Forgoe thy vse, and libertie of tongue,

1. 11 51 rich.] ntch Q 52 vntasted,] vntasted; Q 54 ECCHO,]  
Eccho Q abroad,] abroad. Q 55 will.] will Q 56 time.] time, Q  
58 flowre] flower Q straine] straine. Q 59 obtaine.] obtaine, Q  
62 humorous] humorous Q 63 musicque] Musique Q musick F2  
After 64 SONG.] Cant. Q 66 Yef] yet Q faintly] faintly, G 69  
floweres.] flowers, Q 70 Fall] fall Q showres] showers Q 75  
pride is, now,] pride, is now Q daffodill] Daffodill Q 77 little,]  
little, Q 78 my] thy F2 79 vanisht.] vanisht. Q

And thou maist dwell on earth, and sport thee there.  
 \* E c c. Here yong A c t e o n fell, pursu'de, and torne  
 By C y n t h i a 's wrath (more eager, then his hounds)  
 And here, (ay me, the place is fatall) see  
 The weeping N i o b e, translated hither 85  
 From *Phrygian* mountaines: and by P h æ b e rear'd  
 As the proud trophæe of her sharpe reuenge.

M e r. Nay, but heare.

\* E c c. But here, O here, the *Fountainne of selfe-Loue*,  
 In which L a t o n a, and her carelesse *Nymphs*, 90  
 (Regardles of my sorrowes) bathe themselues  
 In hourelly pleasures. M e r. Stint thy babling tongue;  
 Fond E c c h o, thou prophan'st the grace is done thee:  
 So idle worldings (meerely made of voice)  
 Censure the powers aboute them Come, away, 95  
 I o v e calls thee hence, and his will brookes no stay.

E c c. O, stay: I haue but one poore thought to clothe  
 In ayrie garments, and then (faith) I goe.  
 Henceforth, thou treacherous, and murthering spring,  
 Be euer call'd the *Fountainne of selfe-Loue* · 100  
 And with thy water let this curse remaine,  
 (As an inseparate plague) that who but tastes  
 A drop thereof, may, with the instant touch,  
 Grow dotingly enamor'd on themselues.  
 Now, H e r m e s, I haue finisht. M e r. Then thy speech, 105  
 Must here forsake thee, E c c h o, and thy voice  
 (As it was wont) rebound but the last wordes.  
 Farewell. E c c. Well.

M e r. Now, C v p i d, I am for you, and your mirth,  
 To make me light before I leaue the earth. 110

1. 11 81 there.] there, Q 82 yong] young Q 83 eager.] egar Q  
 then] than F2 hounds)] houndes, ) Q 84 me.] me Q 85  
 hither] hether Q 86 Phæbe] Phæbe Q 89 selfe-Loue.]  
 selfe lous Q (so 100) 90 LATONA.] Query, LATONIA. Cf 'SATVRNVS'  
 for Ioue, i. 1. 47, and 'SATVRNIA' for Iuno, 1 11 54 94 voice)]  
 voyce.) Q 97 O.] O Q 98 goe] go. Q 102 tastes] tastes, Q  
 103 may, with . . . touch,] may (with . . . touch) Q 104 enamor'd]  
 enamour'd Q 105 finisht] finish'd Q 106 voice] voyce Q 107  
 wont] wount Q 107-8 wordes | Farewell] wordes, Fare well | Q  
 108 Ecc.] Echo [retiring] G Exit add Q 109 MER not in Q

## Act I. Scene III.

AMORPHVS, ECCHO, MERCVRIE.,

D Eare sparke of beautie, make not so fast away.

E c c. Away.

M E R. Stay, let me obserue this portent yet.

A M O. I am neither your *Minotaure*, nor your *Centaure*,  
 5 nor your *Satyre*, nor your *Hyæna*, nor your *Babion*, but  
 your mere trauailer, beleeeue me.

E c c. Leaue me.

M E R. I guess'd it should bee some trauailing motion  
 pursude E c c h o so.

10 A M O. Know you from whom you flie ? or whence ?

E c c. Hence.

A M O. This is somewhat about strange ! a *Nymph* of her  
 feature, and lineament, to be so preposterously rude ! well,  
 I will but coole my selfe at yon' spring, and follow her.

15 M E R. Nay, then I am familiar with the issue · I'll leaue  
 you too.

A M O I am a *Rhinoceros*, if I had thought a creature of  
 her *symmetry*, could haue dar'd so impropotionable, and  
 abrupt a digression. Liberall, and diuine fount, suffer my  
 20 prophane hand to take of thy bounties. By the puritie of  
 my taste, here is most *ambrosiacke* water ; I will sup of it  
 againe. By thy fauour, sweet fount. See, the water (a more  
 running, subtile, and humorous *Nymph* then shee) permits  
 me to touch, and handle her. What should I inferre ? If  
 25 my behauiours had beene of a cheape or customarie garbe ;

1 in Act I Scene III.] SCENA. 3 Q AMORPHVS, ECCHO,] *Amorphus*.  
 Echo. Q Enter *Amorphus* hastily G, continuing the scene 1 Deare]  
 Amo Deare Q away.] away : Q 6 trauailer] traueler Q, F3 me.]  
 me Q 8 trauailing] trauelling Q, F3 11 Exit. add Q 12  
 strange !] strange Q 13 feature.] feature Q lineament.] line-  
 ment Q rude ! well.] rude ; well, Q 14 spring.] Spring Q  
 16 Exit add Q 18 could] would Q impropotionable,] impro-  
 portionable Q 19 Liberall,] Liberall Q diuine] deuine Q 22  
 fauour,] fauor Q 23 then] than F2 24 her. What] her :  
 what Q 25 cheape] cheape, Q garbe, corr. Q. Ff. garbe, Q  
 originally

my accent, or phrase vulgar; my garments trite; my  
 countenance illiterate; or vnpractiz'd in the encounter of  
 a beautifull and braue-attir'd peece; then I might (with  
 some change of colour) haue suspected my faculties: but  
 (knowing my selfe an essence so sublimated, and refin'd by 30  
 trauell; of so studied, and well exercis'd a gesture; so alone  
 in fashion; able to tender the face of any states-man living;  
 and to speake the mere extraction of language; one that  
 hath now made the sixth returne vpon venter; and was  
 your first that euer enricht his countrey with the true lawes 35  
 of the *duello*; whose *optiques* haue drunke the spirit of  
 beautie, in some eight score and eighteen Princes courts,  
 where I haue resided, and beene there fortunate in the  
*amours* of three hundred fortie and fve ladies (all nobly, if  
 not princely descended) whose names I haue in catalogue; 40  
 to conclude, in all so happy, as euen admiration her selfe  
 doth seeme to fasten her kisses vpon me:) Certes, I doe  
 neither see, nor feele, nor taste, nor sauour the least steame,  
 or fume of a reason, that should inuite this foolish fastidious  
*Nymph*, so peeushly to abandon me. Well, let the memorie 45  
 of her fleet into aire; my thoughts and I am for this other  
 element, water.

1 in 27 illiterate, *corr* Q, *Ff* illiterate, *Q* originally encounter] encounter *F2* 28 peece,] Peice, *Q* 29 colour] coullor *Q* 30  
 (knowing] knowing *Q* 31 trauell, *F1* travell, *F2* Trauaile, *corr*  
*Q*: Trauaile *Q* originally gesture, *corr*. *Q*, *Ff* gesture, *Q* originally  
 32 fashion;] fashion, *Q* tender] make *Q* render *F2* states-man  
 living;] States-men living, *Q* 35 enricht] inricht *F2* 38  
 beene] bin *Q* 39 hundred fortie] hundred, fortie, *Q* 39-40 if not  
 princely not in *Q* 40 descended] disconded *Q* 40-1 catalogue; to  
 conclude,] Catalogue. to conclude, *Q* 42 doth] dooth *Q* me )) me.  
*Q*, *Ff* (cf 1. 30) 43 sauour] sauror *Q* 45 *Nymph*,] *Nymph* *Q*  
 me. Well,] me: well *Q* 46 her] her, *F2*



## Act I. Scene IIII.

CRITES, ASOTVS, AMORPHVS.

What! the wel-dieted AMORPHVS become a water-drinker? I see he meanes not to write verses then.

ASO. No, CRITES? why?

CR I. Because—*Nec placere diu, nec viuere carmina*  
5 *possunt, quæ scribuntur aquæ potoribus.*

AM O. What say you to your HELICON?

CR I. O, the MVS ES well! that's euer excepted.

AM O. Sir, your MVS ES haue no such water, I assure you; your *nectar*, or the iuyce of your *nepenthe* is nothing to  
10 it; tis aboute your *metheglin*, beleeue it.

ASO *Metheglin!* what's that, sir? may I be so audacious to demand?

AM O. A kind of *greeke* wine I haue met with, sir, in my trauailes: it is the same that DEMOSTHENES vsually  
15 drunke, in the composure of all his exquisite, and mellifluous orations.

CR I That's to be argued (AMORPHVS) if we may credit LVCIAN, who in his *Encomio Demosthenis* affirmes, hee neuer drunke but water in any of his compositions.

20 AM O. LVCIAN is absurd, hee knew nothing: I will beleeue mine owne trauailes, before all the LVCIANS of *Europe*. He doth feed you with fittons, figments, and leasings.

CR I. Indeed (I thinke) next a trauailer, hee do's prettily  
25 well.

AM O. I assure you it was wine, I haue tasted it, and from the hand of an *Italian Antiquarie*, who deriues it authenti-

1 iv. Act I Scene IIII ] SCENA. 4. Q CRITES, ASOTVS.] *Criticus. Asotus.*  
Q Enter Crites and Asotus G, continuing the scene 1 What! ] *Crit.*  
What? Q 3 CRITES] *Criticus* Q 4 Because—*Nec*] *Quia nulla* Q 12  
demand] *demaund* Q 13 with, sir.] with Sir Q 15 exquisite.] *exquisite*  
Q 17 argued] *argued*, Q 18 *Encomio Demosthenis*] (*Encomium*  
*Demosthenis*) Q 21 mine] *my* Q trauailes] *Trauels* Q. travels F3  
22 *Europe* He] *Europe*, he Q fittons, figments] *fictiones* Q 24  
trauailer.] *Traueller* Q traveller F3

cally from the Duke of *Ferrara's* bottles. How name you the gentleman you are in ranke with there, sir ?

C R I. Tis A S O T V S, sonne to the late deceas'd P H I - 30  
L A R G Y R V S the citizen.

A M O. Was his father of any eminent place, or meanes ?

C R I. He was to haue beene *Prætor* next yeere.

A M O. Ha ! A prettie formall yong gallant, in good sooth :  
pitty, he is not more gentilely propagated. Harke you, 35  
C R I T E S, you may say to him, what I am, if you please :  
though I affect not popularitie, yet I would be loth to stand  
out to any, whom you shall vouchsafe to call friend.

C R I. Sir, I feare I may doe wrong to your sufficiencies in  
the reporting them, by forgetting or misplacing some one ; 40  
your selfe can best enforme him of your selfe, sir . except  
you had some catalogue, or list of your faculties readie  
drawne, which you would request mee to shew him, for  
you, and him to take notice of.

A M O. This C R I T E S is sowre I will thinke, sir. 45

C R I. Doe so, sir. O heauen ! that any thing (in the like-  
nesse of man) should suffer these rackt extremities, for the  
vttering of his sophisticate good parts.

A S O. C R I T E S, I haue a sute to you ; but you must  
not denie mee . pray you make this gentleman and I 50  
friends.

C R I. Friends ! Why ? is there any difference betweene  
you ?

A S O. No, I meane acquaintance, to know one another.

C R I. O, now I apprehend you , your phrase was without 55  
me, before.

A S O. In good faith, hee's a most excellent rare man, I  
warrant him !

I 14 30 deceas'd] deceased Q 33 beene] bin Q 34 yong] young Q  
gallant, in good sooth:] Gallant (in good soothe) Q 35 gentilely] genteely  
G 35-6 you, CRITES,] you Criticus Q 36 please:] please, Q 38  
vouchsafe] vouchsafe Q 41 selfe, sir.] selfe Sir, Q 42 catalogue,]  
Catalogue Q list] Inuentory Q 43 hum,] hum Q, Fa 45  
CRITES] Criticus Q (so 49, 60) sowre] sower Q thinke,] thinke Q  
46 so,] so Q heauen !] heauen, Q 48 vttering] vttring Q 54 No,]  
No: Q 55 O,] O Q 57 faith,] faith Q man,] man Q 58 him !]  
him Q

- C R I. S'light, they are mutually inamor'd by this time !  
 60 A S O. Will you, sweet C R I T E S ?  
 C R I. Yes, yes.  
 A S O. Nay, but when ? you'le defer it now, and forget it.  
 C R I. Why, is't a thing of such present necessitie, that  
 it requires so violent a dispatch ?  
 65 A S O. No, but (would I might neuer stirre) hee's a most  
 rauishing man ! good C R I T E S, you shall endeare me to  
 you, in good faith-law.  
 C R I. Well, your longing shall be satisfied, sir.  
 A S O. And withall, you may tell him what my father was,  
 70 and how well he left me, and that I am his heire  
 C R I. Leauē it to mee, I'le forget none of your deare  
 graces, I warrant you.  
 A S O. Nay, I know you can better marshall these affaires  
 then I can—O gods ! I'de guee all the world (if I had it) for  
 75 abundance of such acquaintance  
 C R I. What ridiculous circumstance might I deuise now,  
 to bestow this reciprocall brace of butter-flies one vpon  
 another ?  
 A M O. Since I trode on this side the *Alpes*, I was not so  
 80 frozen in my inuention. Let mee see : to accost him with  
 some choice remnant of *spanish*, or *italian* ? that would  
 indifferently expresse my languages now . mary then, if he  
 should fall out to be ignorant, it were both hard, and harsh.  
 How else ? step into some *ragioni del stato*, and so make my  
 85 induction ? that were aboue him too ; and out of his element,  
 I feare. Faine to haue seene him in *Venice*, or *Padua* ? or  
 some face neere his in similitude ? 'tis too pointed, and

i. iv. 59 inamor'd] enamor'd Q, Fa time[] time Q 60 you,]  
 you Q 66 man[] man ; Q CRITES,] Criticus Q 67 faith-law.]  
 faith law Q : faith, la ! G 68 shall be] shalbe Q satisfied,]  
 satisfied corr. Q satified Q originally 73 Aso.] Asot, Q originally  
 74 then] than Fa gods ! I'de] Gods i'le Q, which printed il'e originally  
 75 abundance] abundance Q 77 butter-flies] Cockscornes, Q 79  
 trode] troad Q 80 inuention. Let] inuentio, let Q originally : in-  
 uention, let corr. Q 82 now.] now, Q 83 should corr. Q, Ff :  
 would Q originally 84 *ragioni del stato*] discourse of State Q 85  
 element,] element Q 86 Faine] Faigne Fa Venice,] Venice ? Q 87  
 'tis Fa. tis Q 'tis F

open. No, it must be a more quaint, and collaterall deuce.  
 As—stay: to frame some *encomiastick* speech vpon this our  
*Metropolis*, or the wise magistrates thereof, in which politique 90  
 number, 'tis ods, but his father fill'd vp a roome? descend  
 into a particular admiration of their iustice; for the due  
 measuring of coales, burning of cannes, and such like? As  
 also their religion, in pulling downe a superstitious crosse,  
 and aduancing a VENVS, or PRIAPVS, in place of it? 95  
 ha? 'twill doe well. Or to talke of some hospitall, whose  
 walls record his father a *Benefactor*? or of so many buckets  
 bestow'd on his parish church, in his life time, with his name  
 at length (for want of armes) trickt vpon them? Any of  
 these? Or to praise the cleannesse of the street, wherein 100  
 hee dwelt? or the prouident painting of his posts against  
 hee should haue beene *Prætor*? or (leauing his parent) come  
 to some speciall ornament about himselfe, as his rapier, or  
 some other of his accoutrements? I haue it: Thanks,  
 gracious MINERVA. 105

As o. Would I had but once spoke to him, and then—  
 Hee comes to me.

Am o. 'Tis a most curious, and neatly-wrought band,  
 this same, as I haue seene, sir.

As o. O god, sir. 110

Am o. You forgiue the humour of mine eye, in ob-  
 seruing it.

Cri His eye waters after it, it seemes.

As o. O lord, sir, there needes no such apologie, I assure  
 you. 115

I. iv. 88 No.] No, Q 91 ods.] ods Q 92 particular] perticuler Q  
 iustice.] justice, F2 93 burning] burning Q 95 VENVS.] Venus; Q  
 96 well] well, Q originally 97 Benefactor corr. F1 BENEFACIOR Q  
 BENEFACIOR F1 originally 98 church, corr. F1 church Q, F1  
 originally life time corr. Q, Ff lifetime Q originally 99  
 them?] them, Q 100 street.] streete Q 101 dwelt?] dwelt, Q  
 102 Prætor] Prætor Q 103 himselfe Q originally, Ff him selfe  
 corr. Q 104 Thanks.] Thankes Q 107 Hee. .me. not in  
 Q 108 curious, corr. F1. curious Q, F1 originally band.  
 corr. F1: band Q, F1 originally 109 seene.] seene Q 110  
 god.] God Q sir] Ssr Q originally 111 humour corr. Q, Ff:  
 humor Q originally eye.] eye Q 112 it] it? Q 113 Not in Q  
 114 lord.] Lord Q

C R I. I am anticipated : they'll make a solemne deed of gift of themselues, you shall see.

A M O. Your ribband too do's most gracefully, in troth.

A S O. Tis the most gentle, and receiu'd weare now, sir.

120 A M O. Beleeue mee, sir (I speake it not to humour you) I haue not seene a young gentleman (generally) put on his clothes, with more iudgement.

A S O. O, tis your pleasure to say so, sir.

A M O. No, as I am vertuous (being altogether vn-trauel'd) 125 it strikes me into wonder.

A S O. I doe purpose to trauaile, sir, at spring.

A M O. I thinke I shall affect you, sir. This last spech of yours hath begun to make you deare to me.

A S O. O god, sir. I would there were any thing in mee, 130 sir, that might appeare worthy the least worthinesse of your worth, sir. I protest, sir, I should endeouour to shew it, sir, with more then common regard, sir.

C R I. O, here's rare motley, sir.

A M O. Both your desert, and your endeouours are plenti- 135 full, suspect them not but your sweet disposition to trauaile (I assure you) hath made you another *my-selfe* in mine eye, and strooke mee inamor'd on your beauties

A S O. I would I were the fairest lady of *France* for your sake, sir, and yet I would trauaile too.

140 A M O. O, you should digresse from your selfe else : for (beleeue it) your trauaile is your only thing that rectifies, or (as the *Italian* saies) *vi rendi pronto all' attoni, makes you fit for action.*

114 they'll] theyle Q 117 gift] guift Q themselues.] themselues Q  
118 ribband] Rose Q gracefully.] grace-fully Q 119 gentle.] gentle Q.  
genteel G now.] now Q 120 mee,] me Q humour Q originally, Ff  
humor corr. Q 122 clothes, corr Ff cloathes Q clothes Ff originally  
123 your corr Q, Ff our Q originally 124 vn-trauel'd corr. Ff.  
vntrauel'd Q, Ff originally 126 trauaile, sir,] trauell (Sir) Q  
travell, sir, F2 127 you, sir. This] you sir, this Q 129 god,]  
God Q mee,] me Q 131 worth,] woorth Q sir. I protest, sir,  
corr. Ff] sir, I protest, Ff originally sir, I protest Sir, Q it,] it Q  
132 then] than F2 regard,] regarde Q 133, 140 O.] O Q  
134 endeouours] endeouors Q 135, 139, 141 trauaile] travell F2 137  
strooke] struck F2 inamor'd] enamour'd Q 138 France] Fraunce  
Q 139 sake,] sake Q 141 only Q originally, Ff onely corr. Q  
142 vi rendi corr. Q, Ff virendi Q originally

A s o. I thinke it be great charge though, sir.

A m o r. Charge? why tis nothing for a gentleman that 145  
goes priuate, as your selfe, or so; my intelligence shall quit  
my charge at all times. Good faith, this hat hath possest  
mine eye exceedingly; tis so prettie, and fantastike:  
what? ist a beauer?

A s o t. I, sir, Ile assure you tis a beauer, it cost mee 150  
eight crownes but this morning.

A m o r. After your *French* account?

A s o t. Yes, sir.

C r i t. And so neere his head? beshrow me, dangerous.

A m o r. A verie prettie fashion (beleue me) and a most 155  
nouel kind of trimme: your band is conceited too!

A s o t. Sir, it is all at your seruice.

A m o r. O, pardon me.

A s o t. I beseech you, sir, if you please to weare it, you  
shall doe mee a most infinite grace 160

C r i t. S'light, will he be praisde out of his clothes?

A s o t. By heauen, sir, I doe not offer it you after the  
*Italian* manner; I would you should conceiue so of me.

A m o r. Sir, I shall feare to appeare rude in denying  
your courtesies, especially, being inuited by so proper a 165  
distinction: may I pray your name, sir?

A s o t. My name is A s o t v s, sir.

A m o r. I take your loue (gentle A s o t v s) but let me  
winne you to receiue this, in exchange—

C r i t. 'Hart, they'll change doublets anon. 170

A m o r. And (from this time) esteeme your selfe, in the  
first ranke, of those few, whom I professe to loue. What  
make you in companie of this scholler, here? I will bring  
you knowne to gallants, as A N A I D E S of the ordinarie,

I. iv. 144 though,] though Q 147 all times] all times Q, which  
originally printed alltimes faith,] faith Q hat] hat that F3  
150 I, sir,] I Sir Q 151 eight] six Q 152-4 Not in Q 156  
band] Button Q conceited too!] conceited too Q 158 O,]  
O Q 162 heauen,] heauen Q 165 courtesies] curtesies Q 166  
name, sir?] name Sir. Q 167 Asotvs,] Asotus Q 170 'Hart,  
they'll] They'll F2 171 selfe,] selfe Q 172 ranke,] ranke Q  
few,] few Q loue What] loue, what Q 174 of the ordinarie, not in Q

175 HEDON the courtier, and others, whose societie shall  
render you grac'd, and respected: this is a triuiall fellow,  
too meane, too cheape, too course for you to conuerse with.

ASOT. Slid, this is not worth a crowne, and mine, cost  
mee eight but this morning.

180 CRIT. I lookt when he would repent him, he ha's  
begunne to bee sad a good while.

AMOR. Sir, shall I say to you for that hat? be not so  
sad, be not so sad: it is a relique I could not so easily haue  
departed with, but as the *hieroglyphicke* of my affection;  
185 you shall alter it to what forme you please, it will take any  
blocke; I haue receiu'd it varied (on record) to the three  
thousandth time, and not so few: It hath these vertues  
beside; your head shall not ake vnder it; nor your braine  
leauue you, without licence; It will preserue your complexion  
190 to eternitie; for no beame of the sunne (should you weare it  
vnder *Zona torrida*) hath power to approach it by two ells.  
It is prooffe against thunder, and inchantment: and was  
giuen mee by a great man (in *Russia*) as a especially-priz'd  
present; and constantly affirm'd to bee the hat, that accom-  
195 panied the politike VLYSSES, in his tedious, and ten  
yeeres trauels.

ASOT. By LOVE, I will not depart withall, whosoever  
would giue me a million.

1. iv. 177 too cheape, *not in Q* 179 eight] six *Q* 183 it is]  
tis *Q* 186 receiu'd it varied (on record)] varied it my selfe *Q*  
191 power] force *Q* approach] approach *Q* 192 It is] Tis *Q*  
inchantment] enchantment *Q* 193 especially-] especially- *Q* 194  
hat.] hat *Q*, *F2* 195 VLYSSES,] ULYSSES *F2* tedious,] tedious *F2*  
196 trauels] Trauailes *Q*

Act I. Scene v.

COS, CRITES, AMORPHVS, ASOTVS,  
PROSAITES.

Saue you, sweet blouds : do's any of you want a creature,  
or a dependant ?

CRIT. Beshrow me, a fine blunt slaue !

AMOR. A page of good timber ! it will now bee my  
grace to entertaine him first, though I casheere him againe 5  
in priuate : how art thou cal'd ?

COS. COS, sir, COS.

CRIT. COS ? How happily hath fortune furnisht him  
with a *whetstone* ?

AMOR. I doe entertaine you, COS, conceale your 10  
qualitie till wee be priuate ; if your parts be worthie of me,  
I will countenance you , if not, catechize you : gentles,  
shall we goe ?

ASOT. Stay, sir ; Ile but entertaine this other fellow,  
and then—I haue a great humour to taste of this water 15  
too, but Ile come againe alone for that—marke the place.  
What's your name, youth ?

PROS. PROSAITES, sir.

ASOT. PROSAITES ? A verie fine name, CRITES ?  
1st not ? 20

CRIT. Yes, and a verie ancient, sir, the *begger*.

ASOT. Follow me, good PROSAITES : Let's talke.

CRIT. He will ranke euen with you (er't be long)  
If you hold on your course. O vanitie,  
How are thy painted beauties doted on, 25

i. v. Act I Scene v.] SCENA 5 Q COS, . PROSAITES ] Cos.  
Prosaites. Criticus Amorphus. Asotus Q Enter Cos and Prosaites G,  
continuing the scene CRITES F2 CRITICVS FR 1 Saue you.] Cos.  
Saue you Q 3 Beshrow me,] Be-shrow me Q slaue!] slaue . Q 4  
timber!] timber, Q 7 Cos, sir] Cos Sir Q 8 happily] happely Q  
10 Cos,] Cos: Q 12 gentles] Gentiles F3 14 Stay.] Stay  
Q 15 taste] tast Q 16-17 place What's] place; whats Q 18  
PROSAITES,] Prosaites Q 19 name, CRITES] name Criticus Q 21  
ancient,] ancient Q. ancient one, F2 begger] Begger; Exeunt.  
add Q 22 me,] me Q 24 course.] course: Q



- By light, and emptie ideots ! how pursu'de  
 With open and extended appetite !  
 How they doe sweate, and run themselues from breath,  
 Rais'd on their toes, to catch thy ayrie formes,  
 30 Still turning giddie, till they reele like drunkards,  
 That buy the merrie madnesse of one houre,  
 With the long irkesomenesse of following time !  
 O how despise and base a thing is a man,  
 If he not striue t'erect his groueling thoughts  
 35 About the straine of flesh ! But how more cheape  
 When, euen his best and vnderstanding part,  
 (The crowne, and strength of all his faculties)  
 Floates like a dead drown'd bodie, on the streame  
 Of vulgar humour, mixt with commonst dregs ?  
 40 I suffer for their guilt now, and my soule  
 (Like one that lookes on ill-affected eyes)  
 Is hurt with meere intention on their follies.  
 Why will I view them then ? my sense might aske me .  
 Or ist a raritie, or some new obiect,  
 45 That straines my strict obseruance to this point ?  
 O would it were, therein I could afford  
 My spirit should draw a little neere to theirs,  
 To gaze on nouelties : so vice were one  
 Tut, she is stale, ranke, foule, and were it not  
 50 That those (that woo her) greet her with lockt eyes,  
 (In spight of all the impostures, paintings, drugs,  
 Which her bawd custome dawbes her cheekes withall)  
 Shee would betray, her loth'd and leprous face,  
 And fright th'enamored dotards from themselues :

1 v 26 ideots] Ideots ? Q idiots ! F2 Idots ! F3 27 open]  
 open, Q appetite] appetite ? Q 29 ayrie] ayery Q 31 houre]  
 hower Q 32 time] time ? Q 33 despise] dispise, Q a man]  
 Man Q man 1716, W 35 flesh] flesh ? Q 38 Floates Q, corr.  
 Fr Floate Fr originally. Floats F2 like] (like Q originally Jonson  
 probably pointed (like . . . bodie) ' 39 humour] humor Q 41  
 ill-affected corr Fr ill affected Q, Fr originally 42 follies. corr.  
 Fr, F2 . follies Q, Fr originally 46 afford] afforde Q . afford F2  
 50 woo corr Fr woee Q woe Fr originally 51 In spight] Inspight  
 Q originally 53 betray, corr. Fr . betray Q, Fr originally, F2  
 loth'd] loath'd Q

But such is the peruersenesse of our nature, 55  
 \* That if we once but fancie leuitie,  
 (How antike and ridiculous so ere  
 It sute with vs) yet will our muffled thought  
 Choose rather not to see it, then auoide it :  
 And if we can but banish our owne sense, 60  
 We act our mimicke trickes with that free licence,  
 That lust, that pleasure, that securitie,  
 \* As if we practiz'd in a paste-boord case,  
 And no one saw the motion, but the motion.  
 Well, checke thy passion, lest it grow too lowd : 65  
 " While fooles are pittied, they waxe fat, and proud.

## Act II. Scene I.

CVPID, MERCURY.

W<sup>H</sup>Hy, this was most vnexpectedly followed (my diuine  
 delicate MERCURY) by the heard of LOVE,  
 thou art a precious *deitie*.

MER. Nay, CVPID, leaue to speake improperly, since  
 wee are turn'd cracks, let's studie to be like cracks ; practise 5  
 their language, and behauiours, and not with a dead imita-  
 tion : act freely, carelessly, and capriciously, as if our veines  
 ranne with quick-siluer, and not vtter a phrase, but what  
 shall come forth steept in the verie brine of conceipt, and  
 sparkle like salt in fire 10

CVP. That's not euerie ones happinesse (HERMES)  
 though you can presume vpon the easinesse, and dexteritie  
 of your wit, you shall giue me leaue to be a little jealous of

1 v. 56 once Ff and perhaps Q originally. once, corr Q, but the comma  
 is doubtful. 57 antike] antique Q antick F2 59 then] than F2  
 63 -boord]-boad F3 66 Exit add Q After 66 *Finis Actus Primi* Q  
 II 1 Act II. Scene I.] ACTVS SECVNDVS ] SCENA I Q ACT II SCENE I.]  
 The Court. | Enter Cupid and Mercury, disguised as pages. G CVPID,]  
 Cupid Q 1 Why.] Cup Why Q my Q, corr F1 by F1 originally  
 diuine] deuine Q 3 precious] pretious Q 4 Nay, CVPID,] Nay Cupid  
 Q improperly,] improperly, Q 5 like cracks,] like cracks Q  
 6-7 imitation act] Imitation. Acte Q 9 forth] fourth Q 12  
 easinesse, corr F1, F2: easinesse Q, F1 originally 13 jealous]  
 lealous Q

mine : and not desperately to hazard it after your capring,  
15 humour.

M E R. Nay, then, C V P I D, I thinke wee must haue you  
hood-winkt againe, for you are growne too prouident,, since  
your eyes were at libertie.

C V P. Not so (M E R C V R Y) I am still blind C V P I D to  
20 thee.

M E R. And what to the ladie *Nymph* you serue ?

C V P. Troth, page, boy, and sirha : these are all my titles.

M E R. Then thou hast not altered thy name, with thy  
disguise ?

25 C V P. O, no, that had beene supererogation, you shall  
neuer heare your courtier call but by one of these three.

M E R. Faith, then both our fortunes are the same.

C V P. Why ? what parcell of man hast thou lighted on  
for a master ?

30 M E R. Such a one as (before I begin to decipher him) I  
dare not affirme to be any thing lesse then a courtier. So  
much hee is, during this open time of reuels, and would be  
longer, but that his meanes are to leaue him shortly after.  
His name is H E D O N, a gallant wholly consecrated to his  
35 pleasures.—

C V P. H E D O N ? he vses much to my ladies chamber,  
I thinke.

M E R. How is she cal'd, and then I can shew thee ?

C V P. Madame P H I L A V T I A.

40 M E R. O I, he affects her verie particularly indeed.  
These are his graces. Hee doth (besides me) keepe a barber,  
and a monkie : Hee has a rich wrought wast-coat to enter-  
taine his visitants in, with a cap almost sutable. His  
curtaines, and bedding are thought to bee his owne : his

11. 1. 14 mine. *corr. F1, F2* mine, *Q, F1 originally* 16 Nay,  
then.] Nay then *Q* 20 thee] thee. *Q* 22 Troth,] Troath  
*Q* 23 name,] name *Q* 25 O, no,] O No, *Q* beene] bin  
*Q* supererogation,] supererogation, *F2* 27 Faith,] Faith *Q*  
29 master] Maister *Q* 30 as (before] (as before *Q, Ff* 31  
to be] him to be *Q* lesse] else *Q* then] than *F2* 33-4 after.  
His] after. his *Q* 40 particularly] particularly *Q* 41  
graces. Hee] graces. he *Q* 42-3 entertaine] intertaine *Q* 43  
sutable.] sutable. *Q* 44 curtaines,] Curtaines *Q* owne:] owne; *Q*

bathing-tub is not suspected. Hee loues to haue a fencer, 45  
a pedant, and a musician seene in his lodging a mornings.

C v p. And not a poet?

M E R. Fye no : himselfe is a rimer, and that's a thought  
better then a poet. He is not lightly within to his mercer,  
no, though he come when he takes physicke, which is com- 50  
monly after his play. He beates a tailour very well, but a  
stocking-seller admirably : and so consequently any one  
hee owes monie too, that dares not resist him. Hee neuer  
makes generall inuitement, but against the publishing of  
a new sute, marie then, you shall haue more drawne to his 55  
lodging, then come to the lanching of some three ships ;  
especially if he be furnish'd with supplies for the retyring  
of his old ward-robe from pawne . if not, he do's hire a  
stocke of apparell, and some fortie, or fiftie pound in gold,  
for that fore-noone to shew. He's thought a verie necessarie 60  
perfume for the presence, and for that onely cause welcome  
thither : sixe millaners shops affoord you not the like sent.  
He courts ladies with how many great horse he hath rid  
that morning, or how oft he hath done the whole, or the  
halfe *pommado* in a seuen-night before : and sometime 65  
venters so farre vpon the vertue of his pomander, that he  
dares tell 'hem, how many shirts he has sweat at *tennis* that  
weeke, but wisely conceales so many dozen of bals hee is on  
the score. Here hee comes, that is all this.

II 1 45 bathing-tub] bathing Tub Q 46 musician] *Musitian* Q  
a mornings] *amornings* F<sub>2</sub> 48 a thought] thought F<sub>3</sub> 49 then]  
than F<sub>2</sub> (so 56) poet He] *Poet* he Q 50 physicke] *Phisique* Q  
51 tailour] *Taylor* Q taylor F<sub>2</sub> 55 marie] *mary* Q then,] then F<sub>2</sub>  
56 lanching] *lauching* Q 58 pawne ] pawne ; Q 59 gold,]  
Gould Q 60 shew ] shew Q 62 affoord] *afford* F<sub>2</sub> 64 hath  
done] has done Q 65 before.] before, Q 66 venters] *ventures* F<sub>3</sub>  
67 'hem] 'em F<sub>3</sub> (*et passim*)

## Act II. Scene II.

HEDON, MERCURY, ANAIDES,  
GELAI, CUPID.

Boy.

MER. Sir.

HED. Are any of the ladies in the presence?

MER. None yet, sir.

5 HED. Giue me some gold, more.

ANA. Is that thy boy, HEDON?

HED. I, what think'st thou of him?

ANA. S'hart, I'd geld him; I warrant he has the philosophers stone.

10 HED. Well said, my good melancholy deuill: Sirrah, I haue deuise one or two of the prettiest othes (this morning in my bed) as euer thou heard'st, to protest withall in the presence.

ANA. Pray thee, let's heare 'hem.

15 HED. Soft, thou'lt vse 'hem afore me.

ANA. No (dam' me then) I haue more othes then I know how to vtter, by this ayre.

HED. Faith, one is, *by the tip of your eare, sweet ladie*. Is't not prettie, and gentle?

20 ANA. Yes, for the person 'tis applyed to, a ladie. It should bee light, and——

HED. Nay, the other is better, exceeds it much: the inuention is farder fet too. *By the white valley that lies betweene the Alpine hils of your bosome, I protest——&c.*

25 ANA. Well, you trauel'd for that, HEDON.

MER. I, in a map, where his eyes were but blinde guides to his vnderstanding, it seemes.

II. II. Act II. Scene II.] SCENA. 2. Q HEDON. [CUPID] Hedon. Anades. Gelasa Cupid. Mercure Q Enter Hedon, Anades and Gelasa G, continuing the scene. 1 Boy] Hedon. Boy Q 4 yet,] yet Q 6 boy,] Boy Q 8 S'hart, om. F2 10 said,] said Q deuill] duell Q 11 othes] Oathes Q 14 Pray thee, Fr Pray thee Q Pr'y thee, F2 16 dam'] damne Q then] than F2 18 Faith, one] Farth'one Q 19,] is, Q ladie.] Lady, Q 20 Yes,] Yes Q 23 farder] farther F3 too.] too, Q 27 vnderstanding,] vnderstanding Q

H E D. And then I haue a salutation will nicke all, by this caper · hay !

A N A. How is that ?

30

H E D. You know I call madame PHILAVTIA, my Honour ; and shee calls me her Ambition. Now, (when I meet her in the presence anon) I will come to her, and say, *sweet Honour, I haue hitherto contented my sense with the lylles of your hand, but now I will taste the roses of your lip* ; 35 and (withall) kisse her : to which she cannot but blushingly answere, *nay, now you are too ambitious*. And then doe I reply ; *I cannot bee too ambitious of honour, sweet ladie*. Wil't not be good ? ha ? ha ?

A N A. O, assure your soule.

40

H E D. By heauen, I thinke 'twill bee excellent, and a verie politike atchiuement of a kisse.

A N A. I haue thought vpon one for M O R I A, of a sodaine too, if it take.

H E D. What is't, my deare inuention ?

45

A N A. Mary, I will come to her, (and shee alwayes weares a muffle, if you bee remembred) and I will tell her, *Madame, your whole selfe cannot but be perfectly wise : for your hands haue wit enough to keepe themselues warme*.

H E D. Now, (before I O V E) admirable ! looke, thy page 50 takes it too, by *Phæbus*, my sweet facetious rascall, I could eate water-gruell with thee a moneth, for this iest, my deare rogue.

A N A. O, (by H E R C V L E S) 'tis your onely dish, aboue all your potato's, or oyster-pyes in the world.

55

H E D. I haue ruminated vpon a most rare wish too, and the prophecie to it, but Ile haue some friend to be the prophet ; as thus : *I doe wish my selfe one of my mistresse*

ii. ii. 28 all,] all, Q 29 hay] ho Q 32 Honour:] Honor, Q  
34 Honour] Honor Q 35 hand,] hand, Q 36 blushingly] blush-  
ing F2 37 answere,] answeare · Q 40 O,] O Q 41 heauen,]  
heauen Q 42 politike] politique Q 43 MORIA,] Moria Q 43-4  
sodaine too,] suddaine too Q. sudden too, F2 45 inuention] mis-  
chiefe Q 47 her, Madame,] her Madame Q 50 Now,] Now F2  
admirable!] admirable. Q admirable! [Gelara laughs] G 51 too,]  
too; F2 52 moneth] month Q, F2 my] O my Q 54 O,] O Q  
58 mistresse] Mistres Q: Mistresse's F2

cioppini. Another demands, *Why would he be one of his*  
 60 *Mistresse* cioppini? A third answeres, *Because he would*  
*make her higher.* A fourth shall say, *That will make her proud.*  
 And a fifth shall conclude. *Then doe I prophesie, pride will*  
*haue a fall, and he shall giue it her.*

A N A. I'll be your prophet. By gods so, it will be most  
 65 exquisite, thou art a fine inuentious rogue, sirrah.

H E D. Nay, and I haue *poesies* for rings too, and *riddles*  
 that they dreame not of.

A N A. Tut, they'll doe that, when they come to sleep on  
 'hem time enough: but were thy deuices neuer in the  
 70 presence yet, H E D O N?

H E D. O, no, I disdaine that.

A N A. Twere good we went afore then, and brought them  
 acquainted with the roome where they shall act, lest the  
 strangenes of it put them out of countenance, when they  
 75 should come forth.

C V P. Is that a courtier too?

M E R. Troth no; he has two essentiall parts of the courtier,  
 pride, and ignorance; mary, the rest come somewhat after  
 the ordinarie gallant. Tis *impudence* it selfe, A N A I D E S;  
 80 one, that speakes all that comes in his cheekes, and will blush  
 no more then a sackbut. Hee lightly occupyes the iesters  
 roome at the table, and keepes *laughter*, G E L A I A (a  
 wench in pages attire) following him in place of a squire,  
 whom he now and then tickles with some strange ridiculous  
 85 stufte, vtter'd (as his land came to him) by chance He will

II II 59, 60 cioppini *corr* F1 Cioppini F1 originally Ciopino's  
 (60 Ciopinos) Q 59 demands,] demaunds Q 60 *Mistresse*] *Mistres*  
 Q 61 fourth] forth F2 63 fall,] fall · Q 65 exquisite,]  
 exquisite, F2 rogue, *corr* F1 Rogue Q, F1 originally 66 Nay,]  
 Nay Q and] an' F2 *poesies*] *Posies* Q *riddles*] *Riddles*, Q 68 Tut,]  
 Tut Q 69 'hem *corr* F1 the Q them F1 originally 'hem, F2  
 enough *corr* F1, F2 enough, Q, F1 originally 70 yet,] yet Q  
 71 O,] O Q 73 lest] least Q 74 strangenes Q, *corr*. F1 stratagems  
 F1 originally 76 too?] too Q *Exeunt* add Q 78 pride,] *Pride* Q  
 ignorance, mary] *Ignorance* (I meane of such a Courtier, who is (indeed)  
 but the *Zani* to an exact Courtier) mary Q 79 ordinarie *corr*. F1:  
*ordinaire* F1 originally · Ordinary Q ordinary F2 selfe,] selfe Q 80  
 one,] one F2 81, 91 then] than F2 82 *laughter*, *corr* F1. laughter, Q:  
*laughter* F1 originally *Laughter*, F2 84 now and then] (now & the) Q  
 85 vtter'd] vttered Q chance] chance Q

censure or discourse of any thing, but as absurdly as you would wish. His fashion is not to take knowledge of him that is beneath him in clothes. Hee neuer drinckes below the salt. Hee do's naturally admire his wit, that weares gold-lace, or tissue Stabs any man that speakes more contemptibly of the scholler then he. Hee is a great proficient in all the illiberall sciences, as cheating, drinking, swaggering, whoring, and such like : neuer kneeles but to pledge healths, nor prayes but for a pipe of pudding tabacco. He wil blaspheme in his shirt. The othes which hee vomits at one supper, would maintaine a towne of garrison in good swearing a twelue-moneth. One other genuine qualitie he has, which crownes all these, and that is this : to a friend in want, hee will not depart with the waight of a soldred groat, lest the world might censure him prodigall, or report him a gull mary, to his cockatrice, or punquetto, halfe a dozen taffata gownes, or sattin kirtles, in a paire or two of moneths, why they are nothing

C V P. I commend him, he is one of my clients.

Act II. Scene III.

AMORPHVS, ASOTVS, COS, PROSAITES,  
CVPID, MERCVRIE.

C Ome, sir. You are now within in regard of the presence, and see, the priuacie of this roome, how sweetly it offers it selfe to our retir'd intendments. Page, cast a vigilant,

II 11 87 wish ] wishe Q 88 clothes ] cloathes, Q 89 salt ]  
Salt Q 90 tissue ] Tissue, Q 93 like ] like, Q 94 healths,  
corr. F1, F2. healths, F1 originally. Health's, Q prayes] praies, Q  
95 shirt ] shirt, Q othes] oaths Q 97 -moneth ] -moneth  
Q -month F2 98 these,] these, Q this ] this, Q 99  
soldred] soldard Q. sodred F2 100 lest] least Q 101 cockatrice,  
corr. F1 cockatrice F1 originally Cocatrice Q punquetto,] Punquetto,  
Q 102 gownes,] gownes Q 104 him,] him Q They retire to  
the back of the stage add G II III. Act II. Scene III ] SCENA. 3. Q  
AMORPHVS, Cos,] Amorphus, Asotus, Cos, Q Enter Amorphus,  
Asotus, and Cos G, continuing the scene I Come,] Amor. Come Q  
within in regard] within reguarde Q within regard F3 presence,]  
Presence, Q 2 it offers] D 3 ends here in Q with catchword 'it',  
but D 3 verso opens with the repetition 'it offers it selfe'



and enquiring eye about, that we be not rudely surpriz'd,  
5 by the approach of some ruder stranger.

C O s. I warrant you, sir. I'll tell you when the wolfe  
enters, feare nothing.

M E R. O, what a masse of benefit shall we possesse, in  
being the inuisible spectators of this strange shew, now to  
10 be acted ?

A M O. Plant your selfe there, sir : and obserue me. You  
shall now, as well be the ocular, as the eare-witnesse, how  
cleerly I can refell that *paradox*, or rather *pseudodox*, of  
those, which hold the face to be the index of the mind, which  
15 (I assure you) is not so, in any politique creature : for  
instance. I will now giue you the particular, and distinct  
face of euery your most noted *species* of persons, as your  
marchant, your scholer, your souldier, your lawyer, courtier,  
&c and each of these so truly, as you would sweare, but that  
20 your eye shal see the variation of the lineament, it were my  
most proper, and genuine aspect. First, for your marchant,  
or citie-face, 'tis thus, a dull, plodding face, still looking in  
a direct line, forward there is no great matter in this face.  
Then haue you your students, or *academique* face, which is  
25 here, an honest, simple, and methodicall face but some-  
what more spread then the former. The third is your  
souldiers face, a menacing, and astounding face, that lookes  
broad, and bigge : the grace of this face consisteth much in  
a beard. The *anti-face* to this, is your lawyers face, a con-  
30 tracted, subtil, and intricate face, full of quirkes, and  
turnings, a *labyrinthæan* face, now angularly, now circularly,  
euery way aspected Next is your statists face, a serious,

11 in 5 approach] approach F2 ruder stranger] ruder-stranger Q  
6 wolfe enters.] Woolfe enters Q 8 O.] O Q 9 shew.] shew Q  
11 there.] there Q 15-16 creature for instance] creature, for instance,  
Q creature for instance, F2 16 particular] particular Q 17  
persons.] persons, Q 18 marchant] merchant F2 19 but]  
(but Q 20 shal see] sees Q lineament.] lineament) Q  
21 aspect] aspect Q marchant] Marchants Q merchant F2  
22 -face.] face, Q thus.] thus Q face, still] face, still Q  
25 face but] face, But Q 26 then] than F2 27 face,  
a] face A Q 28 consisteth] consists Q 29 face, a] face, a Q  
30 face, full] face full Q 31 turnings, a] turnings. A Q

solemne, and supercilious face, full of formall, and square grautie, the eye (for the most part) deeply and artificially shadow'd: there is great iudgement required in the making 35 of this face. But now, to come to your face of faces, or courtiers face, tis of three sorts, according to our subdiuision of a courtier, elementarie, practique, and theorique. Your courtier theorique, is hee, that hath arriu'd to his fardest, and doth now know the court, rather by speculation, then 40 practice; and this is his face: a fastidious, and oblique face, that lookes, as it went with a vice, and were screw'd thus Your courtier practike, is he, that is yet in his path, his course, his way, & hath not toucht the *puntilio*, or point of his hopes, his face is here a most promising, open, 45 smooth, and ouer-flowing face, that seemes as it would runne, and powre it selfe into you. Somewhat a northerly face. Your courtier elementarie, is one but newly enter'd, or as it were in the *alphabet*, or *ut-re-mi-fa-sol-la* of courtship. Note well this face, for it is this you must practice. 50

A s o. Ile practice 'hem all, if you please, sir.

A m o. I, hercafter you may: and it will not be altogether an vngratefull study. For, let your soule be assur'd of this (in any ranke, or profession what-cuer) the more generall, or *maior* part of opinion goes with the face, and (simply) 55 respects nothing else. Therefore, if that can be made exactly, curiously, exquisitely, thorowly, it is inough: But (for the present) you shall only apply your selfe to this face of the elementarie courtier, a light, reuelling, and protesting face,

ii. iii. 33 solemne] solempne Q 34 grautie] gratutie F1 originally  
34-5 deeply and artificially shadow'd ] arteficially and deeply shadow'd, Q  
35 required] requir'd Q 36 now,] now Q faces,] faces. Q 37  
face,] face sorts, according] sorts, (according Q 38 courtier,]  
Courtier, Q, for 'Courtier' theorique Your] Theorique your Q  
39 hee,] he Q fardest] farthest F2 40 court,] Court Q then]  
than F2 41 fastidious, Q. fastidious Ff oblique] oblick F3  
42 face,] face, Q 43 practike, is he,] Practique is he Q 44  
*puntilio*,] *Puntilio* Q 45 his hopes, hus] hopes, this Q 46  
ouer-flowing] ouerflowing Q 47 you ] you, Q Somewhat ...  
face not in Q 48 elementarie,] Elementary Q enter'd] entered Q  
49 or ut-] Vi-Q mi-] mi Q courtship ] Courtship Q 51 please,]  
please Q 52 Amo,] ANO F1 I,] I, Q 53 For,] For Q 54  
ranke,] Ranke Q what-cuer] whatsoever Q more] most Q 56  
Therefore,] Therefore. Q made] made, Q 57 inough] enough Q

60 now blushing, now smiling, which you may helpe much with,  
 a wanton wagging of your head, thus, (a feather will teach  
 you) or with kissing your finger that hath the ruby, or play-  
 ing with some string of your band, which is a most quaint  
 kind of melancholy besides: or (if among ladies) laughing  
 65 lowd, and crying vp your owne wit, though perhaps borrow'd,  
 it is not amisse. Where is your page? call for your casting-  
 bottle, and place your mirrour in your hat, as I told you:  
 so. Come, looke not pale, obserue me, set your face, and  
 enter.

70 M E R. O, for some excellent painter, to haue tane the  
 copy of all these faces!

A S O. P R O S A I T E S

A M O. Fye, I premonisht you of that: In the court, boy,  
 lacquay, or sirrah.

75 C O S. Master, *Lupus in*—O, 'tis P R O S A I T E S.

A S O. Sirrha prepare my casting-bottle, I thinke I must  
 be enforc'd to purchase me another page, you see how at  
 hand C O S waits, here

M E R. So will he too, in time.

80 C V P. What's he, M E R C V R I E ?

M E R. A notable smelt One, that hath newly entertain'd  
 the begger to follow him, but cannot get him to wait neere  
 enough. 'Tis A S O T V S, the heire of P H I L A R G Y R V S ;  
 but first I'll giue yee the others character, which may make

85 his the cleerer. He that is with him, is A M O R P H V S, a  
 trauailer, one so made out of the mixture and shreds of  
 formes, that himselfe is truly deform'd. He walkes most  
 commonly with a cloue, or pick-tooth in his mouth, hee is

II in 60 smiling,] smiling Q 61 thus,] thus; Q 64 besides:]  
 besides. Q 64-6 or (if . amisse. not in Q 67 mirrour] *Mirror*  
 Q 68 me,] me. Q 70 M E R O.] *Amor* O Q tane] ta'ne Q  
 71 faces:] faces Q 73 premonisht] premonish F2 74 lacquay,  
 not in Q 75 Master,] Maister Q in] in F1 O.] O Q 'tis Q  
 t'is F1 After 75 Enter Prosaites. G 76 prepare] prepare me Q  
 77 enforc'd] enforst Q purchase] purchase Q 78 *Exeunt.* add Q 81  
 smelt] *Finch* Q One,] One Q 83 enough] inough Q 'Tis] T'is F1  
 A S O T V S,] *Asotus* Q P H I L A R G Y R V S :] *Philargyrus* Q 84 yee] you Q  
 character] Character Q 85 cleerer ] clearer? Q 86 trauailer] Traueller  
 Q: traveller F2 87 deform'd ] deformed. Q 88 cloue,] *Clous* Q  
 mouth, hee is] mouth Hee's *corr.* Q mouth, Hee's Q *originally*

the very mint of complement, all his behauiours are printed,  
his face is another volume of *essayes*; and his beard an <sup>90</sup>  
*Aristarchus*. He speakes all creame, skimd, and more  
affected then a dozen of waiting women. He is his owne  
promoter in euery place. The wife of the ordinarie giues  
him his diet, to maintaine her table in discourse, which  
(indeed) is a meere tyrannie ouer her other guests, for hee <sup>95</sup>  
will vsurpe all the talke · ten constables are not so tedious.  
He is no great shifter, once a yeere his apparell is readie to  
reuolt. He doth vse much to arbitrate quarrels, and fights  
himselſe, exceeding well (out at a window.) He will lye  
cheaper then any begger, and lowder then most clockes <sup>100</sup>  
for which he is right properly accommodated to the *whet-*  
*stone*, his page The other gallant is his *Zani*, and doth most  
of these trickes after him, sweates to imitate him in euery  
thing (to a haire) except a beard, which is not yet extant.  
He doth learne to make strange sauces, to eat *anchoues*, <sup>105</sup>  
*maccaroni*, *bouoli*, *fagioli*, and *cauare*, because hee loues  
'hem, speakes as hee speakes, lookes, walkes, goes so in  
clothes, and fashion is in all, as if he were moulded of him.  
Mary (before they met) he had other verie prettie sufficien-  
cies, which yet he retaines some light impression of as <sup>110</sup>  
frequenting a dancing schoole, and grievously torturing  
strangers, with inquisition after his grace in his galliard  
He buyes a fresh acquaintance at any rate His eye and  
his rayment confer much together as he goes in the street.  
He treades nicely, like the fellow that walkes vpon ropes, <sup>115</sup>

11 in 89 complement, all] *Complement* All *Q* 92 then] than *F2*  
women He is] women, Hee's *Q* 93 promoter] promooter *Q* place]  
place *Q* 94 diet,] diet *Q* 95 guests,] guests *Q* 96 con-  
stables] Cunstable *Q* 97 shifter,] shifter, *Q* 98 reuolt ] reuolt,  
*Q* 99 himselſe,] himselſe *Q* 100 then then] than .. than  
*F2* clockes *corr F1* Clockes, *Q* clockes, *F1* originally 101-2  
*whetstone*, *corr F1* *Whetstone* *Q* *whetstone* *F1* originally 104  
extant He] extant he *Q* 105 to make sauces, *not in Q*  
*anchoues* *corr F1* *Anchoues* *Q* *anchoues* *F1* originally, *F2* 106  
*maccaroni*, *fagioli*, *not in Q* *cauare*,] *Caueare* *Q* 107 'hem,]  
'hem, *Q* hee speakes,] he speakes, *Q* 108 clothes, *corr F1*  
Cloathes *Q* clothes *F1* originally fashion ] fashion, *Q* as if] as *Q*  
109 Mary] Marry *F2* 111 dancing] dauncing *Q* 112 galliard ] Galliard,  
*Q* 113 rate His] rate, his *Q* eye] Eye, *Q* eyes *F2* 114 street ]  
street, *Q* 115 nicely,] nicely *F2* the fellow] a fellow *Q* ropes,] ropes, *Q*

especially the first *sunday* of his silke-stockings : and when he is most neat, and new, you shall strip him with commendations.

C V P. Here comes another.

120 M E R. I, but one of another straine, C V P I D : This fellow weighs somewhat.

*Crites  
passeth  
by.*

C V P. His name, H E R M E S ?

M E R. C R I T E S. A creature of a most perfect and diuine temper. One, in whom the humours and elements  
125 are peaceably met, without emulation of precedencie : he is neyther to phantastikely melancholy, too slowly phlegmaticke, too lightly sanguine, or too rashly cholericke, but in all, so composde & order'd, as it is cleare, *Nature* went about some ful worke, she did more then make a man, when  
130 she made him. His discourse is like his behaviour, vncommon, but not vnpleasing ; hee is prodigall of neyther Hee striues rather to bee that which men call iudicious, then to bee thought so : and is so truly learned, that he affects not to shew it. Hee will thinke, and speake his thought, both  
135 freely : but as distant from deprauing another mans merit, as proclaiming his owne. For his valour, tis such, that he dares as little to offer an iniurie, as receiue one. In summe, he hath a most ingenuous and sweet spirit, a sharp and season'd wit, a straight iudgment, and a strong mind. *Fortune* could  
140 neuer breake him, nor make him lesse. He counts it his pleasure, to despise pleasures, and is more delighted with good deeds, then goods. It is a competencie to him that

II. III. 116-stockings ]-stockings, Q 117 neat.] neate Q 120 straine.] straine Q 122 stage-dir *Crites*] *Criticus* Q name.] name Q 123 CRIES] *Criticus* Q 124 temper ] temper, Q humours] *Humors* Q 125 emulation] emulation Q 126 to phantastikely] too fantastically Q melancholy.] *Melancholy*, Q 127 cholericke, corr. *Fr.* *Cholerick*, Q cholericke, *Fr* originally 128 & corr. *Fr* (to save spacing) and *Fr* originally order'd,] order'd, Q *Nature* corr. *Fr*, *F2*, *Nature* Q nature *Fr* originally went] was Q 129 then] than *F2* (so 132) 130 him.] him, Q 131 neyther ] neither Q 132 that.. call] (that.. call) Q 133 learned,] learned Q 134 it.] it. Q 135 another] any other Q 136 owne ] owne. Q valour] valor Q 137 iniurie corr. *Fr.* *Injury* Q. iniurie *Fr* originally 138 ingenuous] ingenuous Q 139 straight] streight Q mind.] minde, constant and vnshaken Q 140 nor] or Q lesse He] lesse, he Q 141 pleasure,] pleasure Q 142 deeds,] deedes Q then] than *F2* (so 146, 149) goods ] Goods, Q

hee can bee vertuous. He doth neyther couet, nor feare ;  
hee hath too much reason to doe eyther : and that com-  
mends all things to him.

145

CVP. Not better then MERCVRV commends him.

MER. O, CVPID, tis beyond my *desire* to giue him his  
due prayes . I could leaue my place in heauen, to liue  
among mortals, so I were sure to be no other then he.

CVP. S'light, I beleeeue he is your minion, you seeme to  
be so raiisht with him.

MER. He's one, I would not haue a wry thought darted  
against, willingly.

CVP. No, but a straight shaft in his bosome, Ile promise  
him, if I am CITHEREAS sonne.

155

MER Shall we goe, CVPID ?

CVP. Stay, and see the ladies now they'll come present-  
ly. Ile helpe to paint them.

MER. What ! lay colour vpon colour ? that affords but  
an ill *blazon*.

160

CVP. Here comes mettall to helpe it, the ladie  
ARGVRION.

*Argurion  
passeth  
by*

MER. Monie, monie.

CVP. The same. A *Nymph* of a most wandering and  
giddy disposition, humorous as the aire, shee'le runne from  
gallant to gallant (as they sit at *primero* in the presence)  
most strangely, and seldome stayes with any. Shee spreads  
as shee goes. To day you shall haue her looke as cleere and  
fresh as the morning, and to morrow as melancholike as  
mid-night. Shee takes speciaall pleasure in a close obscure  
lodging, and, for that cause, visites the city so often, where  
shee has many secret true-concealing fauourites. When

II III 143 couet, Q couet Fr covet, Fz 147 O,] O Q 148  
praises corr Fr praises, Q praises, Fr originally 150  
minion, Q 152 a wry] awry Q 153 against,] against,  
Fz, corrected to a comma in the large paper copy 155 CITHEREAS]  
CITHEREAS'S Fz 156 goe,] go Q 157 Stay,] Stay Q 159 What !]  
What Q colour .. colour] Couller . Couler Q affords] affoordes  
Q 164 same.] same Q wandring] wandering Q 165 humorous]  
humorous Q 167 any ] any, Q 168 goes ] goes Q 169  
morning,] morning Q melancholike] Melancholy Q 170 close]  
close, Q 171 and, . . cause,] and . . . cause Q 172 secret]  
secret and Q fauourites] fauorites Q

shee comes abroad, shee's more loose and scattering then  
 dust, and will flie from place to place, as shee were rapt with  
 175 a whirle-winde. Your yong student (for the most part)  
 shee affects not, only salutes him, and away : a *poet*, nor a  
*philosopher*, shee is hardly brought to take any notice of ;  
 no, though he be some part of an *alchemist*. Shee loues  
 a *player* well, and a *lawyer* infinitely : but your foole aboute  
 180 all. Shee can doe much in court for the obtayning of any  
 sute whatsoeuer, no doore but flies open to her, her presence  
 is aboute a charme. The worst in her is want of keeping  
 state, and too much descending into inferior and base  
 offices, she's for any coorse imployment you will put vpon  
 185 her, as to be your procurer, or pandar.

M E R. Peace, C V P I D, here comes more worke for you,  
 another character or two.

## Act II. Scene IIII.

PHANTASTE, MORIA, PHILAVTIA,  
 MERCVRIE, CVPID.

S Tay, sweet PHILAVTIA, I'le but change my fanne,  
 and goe presently.

M O R. Now (in very good serious) ladies, I will haue this  
 order reuerst, the presence must be better maintayn'd from  
 5 you : a quarter past eleuen, and ne're a *Nymph* in *pros-*  
*pectiue* ? beshrew my hand, there must be a reform'd  
 discipline. Is that your new ruffe, sweet lady-bird ? By  
 my truth, 'tis most intricately rare

II III 173 abroad,] abroad Q then] than F2 175 yong] young Q  
 176 only] onely Q poet, nor] Poet or Q 177 philosopher.] Philoso-  
 pher Q of,] of, Q, F2 178 alchemist] Alchemist Q 179 player  
 well.] Player, well, Q 180 court] the Court Q 181 her,] her, Q  
 182 charme] Charme Q worst] worst Q 183 too] to Q 184  
 coorse] course Q 185 procurer,] Procurer Q 186 Peace, CVPID,]  
 Peace Cupid, Q 187 character] Character Q II. IV. Act II  
 Scene IIII] SCENA 4. Q Enter Phantaste, Moria, and Philautia. G,  
 continuing the Scene. 1 Stay,] Pha. Stay Q Philautia,] Philautia,  
 Q 2 Modern editions should note 'Exit Phantaste'. 4 maintayn'd]  
 maintained Q 5 ne're] n'ere Q 5-6 prospectiue?] Prospectiue; Q  
 7 ruffe,] Ruffe Q 8 truth,] truth Q

MER. Good LOVE, what reuerend gentlewoman in yeeres might this be? 10

CVP. This, Madam MORIA, guardian of the *Nymphs*. One that is not now to be perswaded of her wit, shee will thinke her selfe wise against all the iudgements that come. A lady made all of voice, and aire, talkes any thing of any thing. Shee is like one of your ignorant *Poetasters* of the 15 time, who when they haue got acquainted with a strange word, neuer rest till they haue wroong it in, though it loosen the whole fabricke of their sense.

MER. That was pretty and sharply noted, CVPID.

CVP. Shee will tell you, *Philosophie* was a fine reueller, 20 when shee was yong, and a gallant, and that then (though she say it) she was thought to be the Dame-DIDO, and HELLEN of the court: As also, what a sweet dogge shee had this time foure yeeres, and how it was call'd *Fortune*, and that (if the fates had not cut his thred) he had beene a 25 dogge to haue giuen entertainment to any gallant in this kingdome and, vnlesse shee had whelpt it her selfe, shee could not haue lou'd a thing better i' this world.

MER. O, I pray thee no more, I am full of her.

CVP. Yes (I must needs tell you) shee composes a sack- 30 posset well, and would court a yong page sweetly, but that her breath is against it.

MER. Now, her breath (or something more strong) protect mee from her: th'other, th'other, CVPID

CVP. O, that's my lady and mistris, Madam PHIL- 35 LAVTIA. Shee admires not her selfe for any one particularity, but for all shee is faire, and shee knowes it: shee has a pretty light wit too, and shee knowes it. shee can dance, and shee knowes that too: play at shittle-cock, and that too: no quality shee has, but shee shall take a very 40

11 iv 11 This,] 'Tis, F2 Nymphs] Nymphs Q 15 thing] thing  
Q 16 time,] time, Q they] the Q 17 wroong] wronge Q. wrong  
F3 20 you,] you Q 20-8 Q prints the speeches in italic. 21  
yong,] young Q 24 yeeres] yeere Q 27-8 and, vnlesse . . world.  
not in Q 29 O,] O Q pray thee] pr'y thee F2 33 Now,  
Now Q 35 mistris,] Mistris Q PHILAVTIA.] Philautia Q 39  
dance,] daunce Q



particular knowledge of, and most lady-like commend it to you. You shall haue her at any time reade you the historie of her selfe, and very subtilly runne ouer another ladies sufficiencies, to come to her owne. Shee has a good superficiall iudgement in painting; and would seeme to haue so in *poetry*. A most compleat lady in the opinion of some three, beside her-selfe.

PHI. Faith, how lik'd you my quippe to HEDON, about the garter? was't not witty?

50 MOR. Exceeding witty and integrate you did so aggravate the iest withall.

PHI. And did I not dance mouingly the last night?

MOR. Mouingly? out of measure (in troth) sweet *charge*.

MER. A happy commendation, to dance out of measure.

55 MOR. Saue only you wanted the *swim* i' the turne: ô! when I was at fourteene——

PHI. Nay, that's mine owne from any *Nymph* in the court (I am sure on't) therefore you mistake me in that, *Guardian*: both the *swimme* and the *trip*, are properly  
60 mine, euery body will affirme it, that has any iudgement in dancing: I assure you.

PHA. Come now, PHILAVTIA, I am for you, shall we goe?

PHI. I, good PHANTASTE: What! haue you  
65 chang'd your head-tire?

PHA. Yes faith, th'other was so neere the common: it had no extraordinary grace; besides, I had worne it almost a day, in good troth.

PHI. I'll bee sworne, this is most excellent for the deuice,  
70 and rare. 'Tis after the *italian* print, we look'd on t'other night.

II. IV 41 particular] particuler Q 42 you You] you, you Q  
44 Shee begins a new line in Q 52 dance] daunce Q mouingly]  
mouingly Q the not in Q 53 Mouingly?] Mouingly; Q charge]  
Lady Q 54 dance] daunce. Q 56 at fourteene] atfourteene Q  
57-8 in the court (I) i' the Court) I Q 58 that.] that Q 60 mine,]  
mine, Q 61 dancing] dauncing Q After 61 modern editions should  
note 'Re-enter Phantaste' 62 now, PHILAVTIA,] now Philautia Q  
64 I.] I Q What!] What? Q haue] ha' Q 66 faith,] faith; Q  
common ] common, Q 68 day.] day Q 70 t'other] tother Q

PHA. 'Tis so : By this fanne, I cannot abide any thing that sauours the poore ouer-worne cut, that has any kindred with it ; I must haue variety, I : this mixing in fashion I hate it worse, then to burne juniper in my chamber, 75 I protest.

PHI. And yet we cannot haue a new peculiar court-tire, but these *retainers* will haue it ; these *Suburbe-sunday-waiters* ; these courtiers for *high dayes* ; I know not what I should call 'hem— 80

PHA O, I, they doe most pittifully imitate, but I haue a tire a comming (yfaith) shall—

MOR. In good certaine, Madam, it makes you looke most heauenly ; but (lay your hand on your heart) you neuer skin'd a new beautie more prosperously in your life, nor 85 more metaphysically . looke, good lady, sweet lady, looke.

PHI. Tis very cleere, and well, belecue me. But if you had seene mine yesterday, when 'twas yong, you would haue—who's your Doctor, PHANTASTE?

PHA. Nay, that's counsell, PHILAVTIA, you shall 90 pardon mee yet (I'll assure you) hee's the most daintie, sweet, absolute rare man of the whole colledge. O ! his very lookes, his discourse, his behauiour, all hee doo's is physicke, I protest.

PHI. For heauens sake, his name , good, deare PHAN - 95 TASTE—

PHA. No, no, no, no, no, (belecue me) not for a million of heauens : I will not make him cheape. Fie—

CVP. There is a *Nymph* too, of a most curious and elaborate straine, light, all motion, an *ubiquitarie*, shee is 100 euery where, PHANTASTE—

II. iv. 73 sauours] sauors Q 75 worse] woorse Q then] than F2 juniper] Iuniper Q chamber.] Chamber Q 79 -waiters.] -waiters, Q dayes:] dases, Q 81 O.] O Q imitate.] Imitate, Q 82 a comming] accoming F2 84 heart] hart Q 86 metaphysically : corr F1 metaphysically, F1 originally supernaturally ; Q looke,] looke Q lady, looke] Lady looke Q 87 well.] well Q 88 'twas] twas Q 'twas Ff yong] young Q 90 Nay.] Nay Q counsell,] counsell Q 92 man] man, Q 94 physicke,] Phisick Q 95 sake,] sake Q 98 Exeunt. add Q 99 CVP] Phi Q too, corr. F1, F2 too Q, F1 originally

MER. Her very name speakes her, let her passe. But, are these (CVPID) the starres of CYNTHIAS court? doe these *Nymphs* attend vpon DIANA?

105 CVP They are in her court (MERCVRIE) but not as starres, these neuer come in the presence of CYNTHIA. The *Nymphs* that make her traine, are the diuine ARETE, TIMÈ, PHRONESIS, THAVMA, and others of that high sort. These are priuately brought in by MORIA in  
110 this licentious time, against her knowledge: and (like so many meteors) will vanish, when shee appears.

## Act II. Scene v.

PROSAITES, GELAIA, COS, MERCVRIE, CVPID

### SONG.

Come follow me, my waggies, and say as I say.  
There's no riches but in ragges; hey day, hey day  
You that professe this arte, come away, come away,  
And helpe to beare a part Hey day; hey day, &c.

II IV 106 starres,] Starres, Q 106-7 CYNTHIA The] Cynthia the  
Q 107 are] are, F2 108 TIMÈ] Timè Q TIME F2 110 know-  
ledge corr F1, F2 knowledge, Q, F1 originally 111 vanish,] vanish  
Q the 1 faint or missing in some copies of F1 II V Act II. Scene v]  
SCENA 5 Q PROSAITES, CVPID] Prosautes Gelaia Cos Mer-  
cury Cupid Q Enter Prosautes singing, followed by Gelaia and Cos,  
with bottles G, continuing the scene SONG] Cant Q 1 Come]  
Pro Come Q 3 arte, come] art Come Q 4 day, &c] day. Q, which  
continues the song as follows —

Beare-wards, & Blackingmè  
Corne-cutters, and Carmen.  
Sellers of mar-king stones  
Gatherer's vp of Marow-bones  
Pedlers, and Puppet-players  
Sow-gelders, and Sooth-saiers.  
Gipsies and Iaylers,  
Rat-catchers, and Raylers,  
Beadles, and Ballad-singers  
Fidlers, and Fadingers  
Thomahns, and Tinkers  
Scauengers, and Skinners  
There goes the Hare away  
Hey day, Hey day

Bawds and blinde Doctors  
Paritors, and spittle Proctors.  
Chymists, and Cuillebunges  
Hookers, and Horne-thums  
With all cast commaunders.  
turnd Post-knights, or Pādars  
Iuglers, and Iesters. { Beggars  
Borrowers of Testers. } rime.  
And all the troope of trash  
That're allhed to the lash,  
Come, and Ioyne with your Iags  
Shake vp your muscle-bags  
For Beggary beares the sway,  
Then sing . cast care away,  
Hey day, hey day.

MER. What ! those that were our fellow pages but now, 5  
so soone preferr'd to be yeomen of the bottles ? the myserie,  
the myserie, good waggess ?

CVF. Some dyet-drinke, they haue the guard of.

PRO. No, sir, we are going in quest of a strange foun-  
tayne, lately found out. 10

CVF. By whom ?

COS. My master, or the great discoverer, AMORPHVS.

MER. Thou hast well intitled him, COS, for hee will  
discover all hee knowes.

GEL. I, and a little more too, when the spirit is vpon him. 15

PRO. O, the good trauailing gentleman yonder has  
caus'd such a drought i' the presence, with reporting the  
wonders of this new water ; that all the ladies, and gallants,  
lie languishing vpon the rushes, like so many pounded cattle  
i' the midst of haruest, sighing one to another, and gasping, 20  
as if each of them expected a cocke from the fountayne, to  
bee brought into his mouth . and (without we returne  
quickly) they are all (as a youth would say) no better then  
a few trowts cast a-shore, or a dish of eeles in a sand-bagge.

MER. Well then, you were best dispatch, and haue a 25  
care of them. Come CVFID, thou and I'le goe peruse this  
drie wonder.

### *Act III. Scene I.*

AMORPHVS, ASOTVS.

Sir, let not this dis-countenance, or dis-gallant you a whit :  
You must not sinke vnder the first disaster. It is with  
your young *grammaticall* courtier, as with your *neophyte*-  
player, a thing vsuall to bee daunted at the first presence, or

II. v. 9 No.] No Q 12 master,] Maister Q 16 O.] O Q  
trauailing] traouelling Q travelling F2 18 gallants,] Gallants Q  
23 then] than F2 24 a-shore] a shore Q 25 dispatch,] dispatch Q  
26 them ] them, Q 27 *Exeunt* add G After 27 *Fins Actus Secundi.*  
Q III 1 Act III Scene 1.] ACTVS TERTIVS | SCENA 1 Q ACT III.  
SCENE 1. | *An Apartment at the Court* | Enter *Amorphus and Asotus.*  
G AMORPHVS.] *Amorphus* Q 1 Sir] *Amor* Sir Q whit ] whit.  
Q 2 disaster.] disaster, Q

5 enter-view : you saw, there was H E D O N, and A N A I D E S,  
 (farre more practis'd gallants then your selfe) who were both  
 out, to comfort you. It is no disgrace, no more, then for  
 your aduentrous reueller, to fall by some in-auspicious  
 chance in his galliard, or for some subtile *politique*, to vnder-  
 10 take the bastinado, that the state might thinke worthily of  
 him, and respect him as a man well beaten to the world.  
 What ! hath your taylor prouided the propertie (wee spake  
 of) at your chamber, or no ?

A s o. I thinke he has.

15 A m o. Nay (I intreat you) be not so flat, and melancholi-  
 que. Erect your mind · you shall redeerne thus with the  
 courtship I will teach you against after-noone. Where eate  
 you to day ?

A s o. Where you please, sir, any where, I.

20 A m o. Come, let vs goe and taste some light dinner, a  
 dish of slic'd *cauare*, or so, and after, you shall practise an  
 houre at your lodging, some few formes that I haue recall'd.  
 If you had but so farre gathered your spirits to you, as to  
 haue taken vp a rush (when you were out) and wagg'd it  
 25 thus, or clenst your teeth with it . or but turn'd aside, and  
 fain'd some businesse to whisper with your page, till you  
 had recouer'd your selfe, or but found some slight staine in  
 your stocking, or any other prettie inuention (so it had beene  
 sodaine,) you might haue come off with a most cleere, and  
 30 courtly grace.

A s o. A poyson of all, I thinke I was forespoke, I.

A m o. No, I must tell you, you are not audacious inough,  
 you must frequent ordinaries, a moneth more, to initiate  
 your selfe. In which time, it will not be amisse, if (in  
 35 priuate) you keepe good your acquaintance with C R I T E S,

in 1. 6, 7 then] than F2 7 you] you Q 8 reueller,] *Reueller* Q  
 9 *politique*,] *Politician* Q 12 What !] What ? Q taylor] Tayler Q  
 15 Nay] Nay, Q 15-16 melancholique Erect] melancholique, erect  
 Q 17 after-noone] afternoone Q 19 please,] please Q  
 where,] where Q 21 *cauare*] *Caueare* Q after,] after Q 22  
 houre] hower Q lodging,] lodging F2 recall'd] remembred ;  
 Q 23 so farre] (so farre) Q 24-5 it thus,] it, thus, Q 25 it ]  
 it, Q 29 sodaine] suddaine Q sudden F2 cleere,] cleare Q  
 32-75 Not in Q. 32 inough] enough F2 33 moneth] month F2

or some other, of his poore coate ; visite his lodging secretly, and often : become an earnest suter to heare some of his labours.

A s o. O I o v e ! sir, I could neuer get him to reade a line to me. 40

A m o. You must then wisely mixe your selfe in ranke, with such, as you know can ; and, as your eares doe meet with a new *phrase*, or an acute jest, take it in : a quicke nimble memory will lift it away, and, at your next publique meale, it is your owne. 45

A s o. But I shall neuer vtter it perfectly, sir.

A m o. No matter, let it come lame. In ordinary talke you shall play it away, as you doe your light crownes at *primero* It will passe.

A s o I shall attempt, sir. 50

A m o Doe. It is your shifting age for wit, and I assure you, men must bee prudent. After this, you may to court, and there fall in, first with the wayting-woman, then with the lady Put case they doe retaine you there, as a fit property, to hire coaches some paire of months, or so ; or 55 to read them asleep in afternoones vpon some pretty pamphlet, to breathe you ; why, it shall in time imbolden you to some farther atchivement . In the *interim*, you may fashion your selfe to bee carelesse, and impudent.—

A s o. How if they would haue me to make verses ? I 60 heard *Hedon* spoke to for some.

A m o. Why, you must prooue the aptitude of your *Genius* ; if you find none, you must harken out a *veine*, and buy . provided you pay for the silence, as for the worke. Then you may securely call it your owne. 65

A s o. Yes, and I'le giue out my acquaintance with all the best writers, to countenance me the more.

A m o. Rather seeme not to know 'hem, it is your best. I. Be wise, that you neuer so much as mention the name of one, nor remember it mention'd ; but if they be offered to 70 you in discourse, shake your light head, make betweene a

sad and a smiling face, pittie some, raile at all, and commend  
 your selfe: 't is your onely safe, and vnsuspected course.  
 Come, you shall looke back vpon the court againe to day,  
 75 and be restor'd to your colours: I doe now partly aime at  
 the cause of your repulse——(which was omenous indeed)  
 for as you enter at the doore, there is oppos'd to you the  
 frame of a wolfe in the hangings, which (surprizing your  
 eye sodainely) gaue a false alarme to the heart; and that  
 80 was it call'd your bloud out of your face, and so rowted  
 the whole ranke of your spirits. I beseech you labour to  
 forget it. And remember (as I inculcated to you before, for  
 your comfort) HEDON, and ANAIDES.

### Act III. Scene II.

HEDON, ANAIDES.

HART, was there euer so prosperous an inuention thus  
 vnluckily peruerted, and spoyl'd by a whore-sonne  
 booke-worme, a candle-waster?

ANA. Nay, be not impatient, HEDON.

5 HED. S'light, I would faine know his name.

ANA. Hang him, poore grogran-rascall, pray thee thinke  
 not of him: I'll send for him to my lodging, and haue him  
 blankettet when thou wilt, man.

9 HED. By gods so; I would thou could'st. Looke, here  
 hee comes. Laugh at him, laugh at him, ha, ha, ha.

*Crites  
 passeth  
 by.*

ANA. Fough, he smels all lamp-oyle, with studying by  
 candle-light.

III. 1 75 I doe now] *Amor* No, I do *Q. continuing* 31. 76 of your  
 repulse—not in *Q* omenous] ominous *F2* 78 wolfe] Wolfe *Q*  
 78-9 surprizing your eye] your eye taking *Q* 79 sodainely] suddenly  
*F2* 80 rowted] disordred *Q* 82 (after 'forget it') *Exeunt Q* 82-3  
 And. ANAIDES not in *Q* III II. Act III. Scene II.] SCENA. 2. *Q*.  
 SCENE II | Another Apartment in the same | Enter Hedon and Anasides. *G*  
 HEDON,] Hedon. *Q* 1 Hart] Hed Heart *Q* 2 spoyl'd] spoyld, *Q*  
 6 grogran-rascall] Grogran Rascall *Q* pray thee] pr'ythee *Q*. pr'y  
 thee *F2* 7 haue] ha' *Q* 10 him, ha] him. Ha *Q* stage-dir *Crites*  
*Criticus Q: Enter Crites, and walks in a musing posture at the back of the  
 stage. G*

H E D. How confidently he went by vs, and carelesly !  
neuer moou'd ! nor stirr'd at any thing ! did you obserue  
him ?

15

A N A. I, a poxe on him, let him goe, dormouse : he is in  
a dreame now. He has no other time to sleepe, but thus,  
when hee walkes abroad, to take the ayre.

H E D. Gods precious, this afflicts mee more then all the  
rest, that wee should so particularly direct our hate, and  
contempt against him, and hee to carrie it thus without  
wound, or passion ! 'tis insufferable.

A N A. S'lid, (my deare *enure*) if thou but saist the word  
now, Ile vndoe him eternally for thee.

H E D. How, sweet A N A I D E S ?

25

A N A. Mary halfe a score of vs get him in (one night)  
and make him pawne his wit for a supper.

H E D. Away, thou hast such vnseasonable jests. By  
this heauen, I wonder at nothing more then our gentlemen-  
vshers, that will suffer a piece of serge, or *perpetuana*, to  
come into the presence : mee thinkes they should (out of  
their experience) better distinguish the silken disposition  
of courtiers, then to let such terrible coorse ragges mixe  
with vs, able to fret any smooth or gentile societie to the  
threads with their rubbing deuices.

35

A N A. Vnlesse 't were *Lent*, *Ember weekes*, or *Fasting  
dayes*, when the place is most penuriously emptie of all  
other good outsides. Dam' mee, if I should aduenture on  
his companie once more, without a sute of buffe, to defend  
my wit ; he does nothing but stab, the slaue : how

40

III. 11 13 vs,] vs, Q 14 moou'd] mov'd F2 17 now] now, Q  
time] time, Q sleepe,] sleepe Q thus,] thus Q 19 precious]  
pretious Q then] than F2 20 particularly] particularly Q  
21 him,] him ; Q 22 passion ! corr. Q, Ff. passion, Q originally  
23 *enure*] *Enure* corr. Q Enuy Q originally if] if, Q 25 How,]  
How Q 26 Mary] Marry F2 28 jests] jests corr. Q jests :  
Q originally 29 heauen,] heauen Q then] than F2 (so 33) 30  
vshers,] Vshers, corr. Q Vshers, Q originally 31 thinkes]  
thinkes, Q they corr. Q, Ff they, Q originally 33 courtiers] a  
Courtier Q coorse] course Q, F2 34 vs] 'hem Q gentile  
societie] gentle Societie corr. Q' gentile Society Q originally' gentile  
societie F2 35 threads] threds, Q 36-8 Vnlesse't. outsides.  
not in Q 38 Dam'] Damne Q 40 stab, F2. stabbe Q : stab Ff



mischieuously he cross'd thy deuice of the *prophesie* there? And M O R I A, shee comes without her muffle too, and there my inuention was lost.

H E D. Well, I am resolu'd what Ile doe.

45 A N A. What, my good spirituous sparke?

H E D. Mary, speake all the venome I can of him; and poyson his reputation in euery place, where I come.

A N A. 'Fore god, most courtly.

H E D. And if I chance to bee present where any question  
50 is made of his sufficiencies, or of any thing he hath done priuate, or publike, Ile censure it slightly, and ridiculously.

A N A. At any hand beware of that, so thou maist draw  
thine owne iudgement in suspect. No, Ile instruct thee  
55 what thou shalt doe, and by a safer meanes: Approue any  
thing thou hearest of his, to the receu'd opinion of it; but  
if it bee extraordinarie, giue it from him to some other,  
whom thou more particularly affect'st. That's the way to  
plague him, and he shall neuer come to defend himselfe.  
60 S'lud, Ile giue out, all he does is dictated from other men,  
and sweare it too (if thou'lt ha' mee) and that I know the  
time, and place where he stole it, though my soule bee  
guiltie of no such thing; and that I thinke, out of my  
heart, hee hates such barren shifts. yet to doe thee a

III. II 42 too,] too, Q 44 resolu'd corr. Q, F1 resolv'd F2  
resolu'd, Q originally 46 Mary] Marie corr Q Marry Q originally 47  
euery] euerie corr. Q every Q originally place,] place Q 48 courtly]  
Courtly corr. Q Courtly Q originally 49 any] anie corr Q any  
Q originally 50 done Q originally, Ff. done, corr. Q (a probable reading)  
51 publike,] publique, Q originally publique, corr. Q slightly  
Q originally, Ff slightlie corr Q 53 any Q originally, Ff: anie  
corr. Q thou maist] you may Q 54 thine] your Q iudgement]  
iudgement, Q in suspect,] insuspect, Q originally. in suspect, corr. Q  
56 hearest corr Q, Ff: hear'st Q originally receu'd] receiud  
Q originally 57 extraordinarie corr Q, Ff extraordinary Q originally  
58 particularly] particularly Q originally particularlie corr Q  
affect'st. That's] affectst, that's Q way] waye Q originally waie  
corr Q 59-60 himselfe S'lud] himselfe Sblood Q 60 out,] out Q  
does] dos, corr. Q dos Q originally men,] men Q 61 ha' mee Ff:  
ha' me corr Q, F2 ha me Q originally 62 place] place, Q stole  
it,] stole it. Q 63 guiltie corr. Q, Ff. guilty Q originally thinke,]  
thinke Q 64 heart corr Q, Ff hart Q originally shifts Ff shifts,  
corr. Q: shifts, Q originally

pleasure, and him a disgrace, I'le dam' my selfe, or doe any 65  
thing.

H E D. Gramercies, my deare *deuill*: weelee put it  
seriously in practice, yfaith.

Act III. Scene III.

C R I T E S.

D Oe, good *detraction*, doe, and I the while  
Shall shake thy spight off with a carelesse smile.  
Poore pittious gallants! What leane idle sleights  
Their thoughts suggest to flatter their staru'd hopes?  
As if I knew not how to entertaine 5  
These straw-deuices: but, of force, must yeeld  
To the weake stroke of their calumnious tongues.  
What should I care what euery dor doth buzze  
In credulous eares? it is a crowne to me,  
That the best iudgements can report me wrong'd; 10  
Them lyars; and their slanders impudent.  
Perhaps (vpon the rumour of their speeches)  
Some grieued friend will whisper to me, C R I T E S,  
Men speake ill of thee; so they be ill men,  
If they spake worse, 'twere better: for of such 15  
To be disprais'd, is the most perfect praise.  
What can his censure hurt me, whom the world  
Hath censur'd vile before me? If good C H R E S T V S,  
E V T H V S, or P H R O N I M V S, had spoke the words,  
They would haue moou'd me, and I should haue call'd 20

III. II. 65 pleasure.] pleasure Q dam'] damne Q any Q  
originally, Ff anie corr Q 67 Gramercies.] Gramercies Q.  
Gramercie, Fz 68 *Exeunt.* add Q III. III Act III Scene III.]  
SCENA. 3 Q Crt. [coming forward] G, continuing the scene. CRITES]  
Criticus Q 1 Doe.] Crt Do Q doe.] do Q 3 gallants! What]  
Gallants, what Q 4 staru'd hopes?] steru'd Hopes! Q 6 but,  
of force,] but of force Q 8 What] Why Q euery Q originally, Fz:  
every Fz: euerie corr. Q 9 eares?] Eares? Q originally 12 rumour]  
rumor Q 13 to me, CRITES] Criticus Q to me, CRITES Fz 14 thee;  
so] thee. So Fz 16 disprais'd corr Q, Ff dispraisd Q originally  
18 censur'd corr Q, Ff censurd Q originally CHRESTVS.] Chrestus,  
corr. Q Chrestus. Q originally 20 would] could Fz moon'd]  
moov'd Fz me.] me, Q call'd Ff: cal'd corr. Q. cald Q originally

- My thoughts, and actions, to a strict accompt  
 Vpon the hearing . But when I remember,  
 'Tis HEDON, and ANAIDES : alas, then,  
 I thinke but what they are, and am not stirr'd.
- 25 The one, a light voluptuous reueller,  
 The other a strange arrogating puffe,  
 Both impudent, and ignorant inough ;  
 That talke (as they are wont) not as I merit :  
 Traduce by custome, as most dogges doe barke,
- 30 Doe nothing out of judgement, but disease,  
 Speake ill, because they neuer could speake well.  
 And who'd be angry with this race of creatures ?  
 What wise physician haue we euer seene  
 Moou'd with a frantike man ? the same affects
- 35 That he doth beare to his sicke patient,  
 Should a right minde carrie to such as these :  
 And I doe count it a most rare reuenge,  
 That I can thus (with such a sweet neglect)  
 Plucke from them all the pleasure of their malice.
- 40 For that's the marke of all their inginous drifts,  
 To wound my patience, howsoe're they seeme  
 To aime at other obiects . which if miss'd,  
 Their enui's like an arrow, shot vpriht,  
 That, in the fall, indangers their owne heads.

III 111 21 actions *corr* Q, Ff. Actions Q *originally* 22 remem-  
 ber.] remember Q 23 HEDON,] *Hedon* Q 24 stirr'd] stir'd :  
 Q 25 reueller F1 *Reueller* *corr* Q *Reueler* Q *originally* :  
 reueller F2 28 talke *corr* Q, F1 talk F2. take Q *originally*  
 30 judgement] iudgement Q disease,] disease, Q 31 well ] well. Q  
 32 who'd *corr* Q, Ff: whol'd Q *originally* angry Q *originally*, Ff.  
 angrie *corr* Q 33 physician] Phisitian Q 34 Moou'd] Mov'd F2  
 affects *corr*. Q, Ff affect Q *originally* 36 carrie *corr*. Q, Ff carry  
 Q *originally* 38 sweet *corr* Q, Ff. sweete Q *originally* 40 that's  
*corr*. Q, Ff thats Q *originally* 40 inginous] enginous Q 41  
 patience *corr* Q, Ff Patience Q *originally* howsoe're] (how soe're Q  
 42 aime *corr*. Q, Ff ayme Q *originally* obiects ] obiects) Q 43  
 enui's F1. Enui's *corr*. Q : Enuy's Q *originally* : envie's F2 44  
 That.] That Q fall,] fall Q indangers] endangers Q

Act III. Scene IIII.

ARETE, CRITES.

What, CRITES! where haue you drawne forth  
the day?

You haue not visited your jealous friends?

CR I. Where I haue seene (most honour'd ARETE,) 5  
The strangest pageant, fashion'd like a court,  
(At least I dream't I saw it) so diffus'd, 5  
So painted, pyed, and full of rainbow straines,  
As neuer yet (eyther by time, or place)  
Was made the food to my distasted sence :  
Nor can iny weake imperfect memorie  
Now render halfe the formes vnto my tongue, 10  
That were conuolu'd within this thriftie roome.  
Here, stalkes me by a proud, and spangled sir,  
That looks three hand-fuls higher then his fore-top ;  
Sauours himselfe alone, is onely kind  
And louing to himselfe : one that will speake 15  
More darke, and doubtfull then six *oracles* ;  
Salutes a friend, as if he had a stitch,  
Is his owne *chronicle*, and scarce can cat  
For registring himselfe is waited on  
By mimiques, jesters, pandars, parasites, 20  
And other such like prodigies of men.  
He past, appeares some mincing marmoset

III. IV Act III Scene IIII ] SCENA 4 Q ARETE, CRITES] *Arete.*  
*Criticus* Q Enter *Arete*. G, continuing the scene 1 What, CRITES!]  
*Arete*. What *Criticus*? Q drawne forth] spent Q day Q originally, Ff.  
daie corr Q 2 jealous] iealous Q 3 honour'd Ff honor'd corr Q.  
honord Q originally 4 fashion'd corr Q, Ff fashioned Q originally  
5 dream't] dreamp't Q diffus'd corr. Q, Ff diffusd Q originally  
6 pyed Q originally, Ff pied corr Q straines,] straines, Q 9  
memorie Ff Memorie corr Q Memory Q originally 11 thriftie  
roome. Ff thriftie Roome corr. Q thrifty Roome Q originally 12  
proud, corr Q, Ff proud Fa prowd, Q originally 13 then] than Fa  
fore-top in Q the hyphen faint, - lost in the Dyce copy 14 Sauours]  
Sauours Q onely] only Q 16 darke,] darke Q then] than Fa 19  
himselfe ] himselfe, corr Q himselfe, Q originally 20 jesters] Iesters Q  
22 past,] past, Q 22-42 mincing marmoset . . . With him there  
meets some not in Q, which reads 'He past, there comes some subttill Pro-  
teus. One'

- Made all of clothes, and face ; his limbes so set  
 As if they had some voluntarie act  
 25 Without mans motion, and must mooue iust so  
 In spite of their creation : one that weighes  
 His breath betweene his teeth, and dares not smile  
 Beyond a point, for feare t'vnstarch his looke ;  
 Hath trauell'd to make legs, and seene the cringe  
 30 Of seuerall courts, and courtiers ; knowes the time  
 Of giuing titles, and of taking wals ;  
 Hath read court-common-places ; made them his :  
 Studied the *grammar* of state, and all the rules  
 Each formall vsheer in that politike schoole,  
 35 Can teach a man. A third comes giuing nods  
 To his repenting creditors, protests  
 To weeping sutors, takes the comming gold  
 Of insolent, and base ambition,  
 That hourelly rubs his dry, and itchie palmes :  
 40 Which grip't, like burning coales, he hurles away  
 Into the laps of bawdes, and buffons mouthes.  
 With him there meets some subtile P R O T E V S, one  
 Can change, and varie with all formes he sees ;  
 Be any thing but honest ; serues the time ;  
 45 Houers betwixt two factions, and explores  
 The drifts of both ; which (with crosse face) he beares  
 To the diuided heads, and is receiu'd  
 With mutuall grace of eyther : one that dares  
 Doe deeds worthie the hurdle, or the wheele,  
 50 To be thought some bodie ; and is (in sooth)  
 Such as the *Satyrst* points truly forth,  
 That onely to his crimes owes all his worth.

III iv 25 mooue] move F<sub>2</sub> 34 schoole,] schoole F<sub>2</sub> 41  
 buffons] Buffoons F<sub>3</sub> 42 subtile] subtile F<sub>2</sub> 43 change]  
 thange Q varie corr Q, Ff vary Q originally 44 any Q origi-  
 nally, Ff anie corr Q 45 Houers corr Q, F<sub>1</sub>: Houers F<sub>2</sub>: Houres  
 Q originally 46 beares] bereas F<sub>2</sub> 47 diuided corr. Q, Ff: deuided  
 Q originally 48 eyther Q originally, F<sub>1</sub>: either corr. Q, F<sub>2</sub> 50  
 bodie corr Q, F<sub>1</sub> body Q originally, F<sub>2</sub> 51 truly Q originally, Ff:  
 trulie corr Q forth] foorth Q 52 That onely . . worth.] Crimi-  
 nibus debent hortos, pratoria, mensas Q

A R E. You tell vs wonders, C R I T E S.

C R I. This is nothing.

There stands a *Neophyte* glazing of his face, 55  
 Pruning his clothes, perfuming of his haire,  
 Against his idoll enters ; and repeates  
 (Like an vnperfect *prologue*, at third musike)  
 His part of speeches, and confederate iests,  
 In passion to himselfe. Another swears 60  
 His *Scene* of courtship ouer , bids, beleue him,  
 Twentie times, ere they will ; anon, doth seeme  
 As he would kisse away his hand in kindnesse ;  
 Then walkes of melancholike, and stands wreath'd,  
 As he were pinn'd vp to the arras, thus. 65  
 A third is most in action, swimmes, and friskes,  
 Playes with his mistresse pappes, salutes her pumps,  
 Adores her hems, her skirts, her knots, her curles,  
 Will spend his patrimonie for a garter,  
 Or the least feather in her bounteous fanne. 70  
 A fourth, he onely comes in for a *mute* :  
 Diuides the *act* with a dumbe shew, and *exit*.  
 Then must the ladies laugh, straight comes their *Scene*,  
 A sixt times worse confusion then the rest.  
 Where you shall heare one talke of this mans eye ; 75  
 Another, of his lip ; a third, his nose ;  
 A fourth commend his legge ; a fift his foot ;

III. iv. 53 wonders, CRITES] wonders *Criticus* Q 54 This] Tut,  
 this Q nothing *corr* Q, *Ff* nothing ; Q *originally* 55 *Neophyte*  
*Neophyte*, Q 56 Not in Q 58 musike] Musique Q 59 iests,]  
 iests Q 60 himselfe ] himselfe , Q 61 ouer ,] ouer, Q 61-2  
 bids .. will , not in Q 62 anon, doth seeme] and then seemes Q  
 63 away Q *originally*, *Ff* awaie *corr* Q 64-5 Not in Q 64 of]  
 as *Fa* 66 thurd] third, Q action,] Action, Q *originally* action,  
*corr.* Q 67 Playes Q *originally*, *Fi* Plaies *corr* Q Plays *Fa*  
 mistresse] mistris *Fa* pappes, *Fi* paps Q *originally* paps, *corr.*  
 Q papps, *Fa* pumps,] poms , Q 68 Not in Q 70 fanne.]  
 Fanne. Q 71 onely Q *originally*, *Fi* onehe *corr* Q only *Fa*  
*mute* ] Mute, Q 72 *exit* ] *Exit*, Q 73 laugh, straight] laugh  
 streight Q *Scene*,] *Scene*, Q 74, 78 sixt *corr* Q, *Ff*. sixth Q  
*originally* 74 then] than *Fa* rest] Rest Q *originally*: Rest ;  
*corr.* Q 75 eye *Fa* Eye Q *originally* Eye *corr* Q eye *Fi* 76  
 Another.] Another Q lip,] Lip, Q 77 legge,] Leg, Q fift *corr.*  
 Q, *Ff*: fifth Q *originally*

A sixt his hand ; and euery one a limme :  
 That you would thinke the poore distorted gallant  
 80 Must there expire. Then fall they in discourse  
 Of tires, and fashions, how they must take place,  
 Where they may kisse, and whom, when to sit downe,  
 And with what grace to rise , if they salute,  
 What curt'sie they must vse : such cob-web stuffe,  
 85 As would enforce the common'st sense abhorre  
 Th' *Arachnean* workers.

A R E. Patience, gentle C R I T E S  
 This knot of spiders will be soone dissolu'd,  
 And all their webs swept out of C Y N T H I A S court,  
 90 When once her glorious *deitie* appears,  
 And but presents it selfe in her full light :  
 Till when, goe in, and spend your houres with vs  
 Your honour'd friends, T I M È, and P H R O N E S I S,  
 In contemplation of our goddesse name.  
 95 Thinke on some sweet, and choice inuention, now,  
 Worthie her serious, and illustrious eyes,  
 That from the merit of it we may take  
 Desir'd occasion to preferre your worth,  
 And make your seruice knowne to C Y N T H I A.  
 100 It is the pride of A R E T E to grace  
 Her studious louers ; and (in scorne of time,  
 Enuie, and ignorance) to lift their state  
 Aboue a vulgar height. True happinesse

III. iv. 78 hand,] *Hand*, Q limme. *Ff* lim; Q originally limbe, *corr*.  
 Q 80 expire] expire Q 81 fashions,] Fashions, Q place,] place  
 Q 82 kisse,] kisse, Q whom,] whom Q downe, *Ff* downe;  
*corr* Q down, Q originally 83 rise,] rise. Q 84 curt'sie]  
 curtesie Q vse ] vse, Q 85 common'st *corr* Q, *Ff* commonst  
 Q originally 87 Patience, gentle CRITES ] Patience Criticus. Q (Criticus:  
 Q originally) 89 CYNTHIAS F1 CYNTHIA'S F2 Cynthias Q  
 originally Cynthias *corr* Q 90 *deitie* F1 Deity Q originally;  
 Deitie *corr* Q 92 in,] in. Q houres *corr* Q, *Ff* howers Q originally  
 93 honour'd *Ff* honor'd *corr* Q honor'd Q originally TIMÈ] Time Q:  
 TIME F2 94 name ] name. Q 95 sweet, *corr*. Q, *Ff*: sweet  
 Q originally choice *corr* Q, *Ff*: choise Q originally 96 serious,  
*corr* Q, *Ff*: serious Q originally illustrious] illustrious F2 98  
 Desir'd *Ff*: Desier'd *corr* Q Desierd Q originally 99 CYNTHIA. *Ff*.  
 Cynthia *corr* Q Cynthia. Q originally 101 louers *corr*. Q, F1:  
 Louers Q originally lovers F2

Consists not in the multitude of friends,  
But in the worth, and choice. Nor would I haue  
Vertue a popular regard pursue :  
Let them be good that loue me, though but few.  
C R I. I kisse thy hands, diuineſt A R E T E,  
And vow my ſelfe to thee, and C Y N T H I A.

Act III. Scene V.

AMORPHVS, ASOTVS.

A Little more forward : So, ſir. Now goe in, diſ-cloke  
your ſelfe, and come forth Taylor, beſtow thy abſence  
vpon vs ; and bee not prodigall of this ſecret, but to a deare  
customer. 'Tis well enter'd, ſir. Stay, you come on too  
faſt ; your paſe is too impetuous. Imagine this to be the  
palace of your *pleaſure*, or place, where your lady is pleas'd  
to bee ſcene. Firſt, you preſent your ſelfe, thus and  
ſpying her, you fall off, and walke ſome two turnes ; in  
which time, it is to bee ſuppos'd, your paſſion hath ſuffici-  
ently whited your face : then (ſtifiſg a ſigh or two, and  
closing your lips) with a trembling boldneſſe, and bold  
terror, you aduance your ſelfe forward. Proue thus much,  
I pray you.

III IV. 104 multitude] mulditude F2 105 worth, corr Q, Ff worth  
Q originally choice Ff choiſe, corr Q choiſe, Q originally 106  
Vertue] Vertue, Q regard pursue Ff Regard pursue, corr Q  
Regard purſew, Q originally 109 vow corr Q, Ff vowe Q originally  
thee, corr Q, Ff thee Q originally Exeunt add Q III v Act III  
Scene v] SCENA. 5 Q SCENE III | Another Apartment in the ſame. |  
Enter Amorphus, followed by Asotus and his Tailor G AMORPHVS,  
Amorphus Q 1 A] Amo A Q So,] So Q diſ-cloke Ff diſ-  
cloake corr Q diſcloake Q originally 2 forth ] forth. [Exit Asotus.]  
G Taylor, corr. Q, Ff Taylor, Q originally 3 vpon Q originally, Fr  
vpon corr Q. vpon F2 4 customer ] customer [Exit Tailor. |  
Re-enter Asotus G enter'd, Q originally, F2 enterd corr Q, Ff  
ſir corr. Q, Ff Sir Q originally Stay, corr Q, Ff Stay Q originally  
5 paſe] Pace Q 6 place,] Place Q pleas'd corr Q, Ff pleaſde Q originally  
7 ſcene ] ſcene Q Firſt,] Firſt Q ſelfe,] ſelfe Q 8 her, corr Q, Ff:  
her Q originally 9 time,] time Q ſuppos'd corr Q, Ff. ſuppoſde  
Q originally paſſion corr Q, Ff Paſſion Q originally 10 face  
corr. Q, Ff. Face ? Q originally 12 terror, Ff terror, corr. Q.  
terror ; Q originally Proue] Try Q 12 much,] much Q



A s o. Yes, sir, (pray I o v e I can light on it) Here, I  
15 come in, you say, and present my selfe ?

A m o. Good.

A s o. And then I spie her, and walke off ?

A m o. Very good.

A s o. Now, sir, I stiffe, and aduance forward ?

20 A m o. Trembling.

A s o. Yes, sir, trembling. I shall doe it better when  
I come to it. And what must I speake now ?

A m o. Mary, you shall say : Deare beautie, or, sweet  
honour (or by what other title you please to remember her)  
25 me thinkes you are melancholy. This is, if shee be alone  
now, and discompanied.

A s o. Well, sir, Ile enter againe ; her title shall be, My  
deare L I N D A B R I D E S.

A m o. L I N D A B R I D E S ?

30 A s o. I, sir, the Emperour A L I C A N D R O E S daughter,  
and the Prince M E R I D I A N S sister (in the *Knight of the  
Sunne*) shee should haue beene married to him, but that  
the Princesse C L A R I D I A N A——

A m o. O, you betray your reading.

35 A s o. Nay, sir, I haue read historie, I am a little  
*humanitian*. Interrupt me not, good sir. My deare L I N -  
D A B R I D E S, My deare L I N D A B R I D E S, My deare  
L I N D A B R I D E S, me thinkes you are melancholy.

III v. 14 sir corr Q, Ff Sir Q originally Ioue] god Q originally.  
God corr Q it]] it) F2 Here.] Here Q originally, Ff Heere corr Q  
15 in.] in Q say.] say Q selfe? Q originally, Ff selfe corr Q  
17 spie corr Q, Ff spy Q originally off? Q originally, Ff off. corr.  
Q 19 Now, sir] Now sir Q stiffe corr. Q, Ff stiffe Q originally  
21 Yes.] Yes Q sir, trembling Ff Sir, trembling. Q originally :  
sir, trembling, corr Q 23 Mary.] Mary Q Marry, F2 24 honour  
(or] Honor, or Q her) Q originally, Ff her, corr. Q (which omitted the  
first bracket of the parenthesis) 26 now.] now Q 27 Well.] Well Q  
again, Q originally, Ff againe corr Q be, corr. Q, Ff be Q originally  
30 A L I C A N D R O E S daughter Ff Alicandroes daughter corr Q Alic-  
andro's Daughter Q originally 32 beene Ff, been Q originally. bin  
corr Q 34 O.] O Q 35 historie, Ff Historie corr. Q. History Q  
originally 35-79 Q prints specimen speeches and quotations in italic.  
In 37-8 it leaves three spaces in the text before each attempt to begin with  
'My deare Lindabrides' to show Asotus at a loss and fumbling for words. For  
this method of making a pause, cf. *Induction*, 28, and *Poetaster*, pp. 188-9  
38 melancholy Ff: Melancholy Q originally. Melancholie corr Q

A M O. I, and take her by the rosie-finger'd hand.

A S O. Must I so? O, my deare LINDA BRIDES, mee 40  
thinkes you are melancholy.

A M O. Or thus, sir. All varietie of diuine pleasures, choice  
sports, sweet musique, rich fare, braue attire, soft beds, and  
silken thoughts attend this deare beautie.

A S O. Beleeue mee, that's pretty All varietie of diuine 45  
pleasures, choice sports, sweet musique, rich fare, braue  
attires, soft beds, and silken thoughts, attend this deare  
beautie.

A M O And then, offring to kisse her hand, if shee shall  
coily recoile, and signifie your repulse, you are to re- 50  
enforce your selfe, with, More then most faire ladie, let not  
the rigour of your iust disdaine thus coursly censure of your  
seruants zeale and, withall, protest her, to be the onely,  
and absolute vnparell'd creature you do adore, and admire,  
and respect, and reuerence, in this court, corner of the 55  
world, or kingdome

A S O This is hard, by my faith I'll begin it all, againe.

A M O. Doe so, and I will act it for your ladie.

A S O Will you vouchsafe, sir? All varietie of diuine  
pleasures, choice sports, sweet musique, rich fare, braue 60  
attire, soft beds, and silken thoughts attend this deare  
beautie

iii v 40 O, my] O My corr Q O My Q originally 42  
choise Ff choyse Q originally choise corr Q 43 musique F1  
musicke F2 Musique Q originally Musicke corr Q attire] Attires  
Q 44 thoughts F1 thoughts Q originally thoughts corr Q  
thoughts, F2 beautie Ff Beautie corr Q Beauty Q originally  
45 pretty Ff pretie corr Q prerty Q originally 47 attires] attire W  
49 then, corr Q, Ff then Q originally 49-50 shall coily recoile F1  
shall coily recoile F2 shall coily recoyle Q originally shal coile recoile  
corr Q 51 -enforce corr Q, Ff inforce Q originally selfe,] selfe Q  
51-3 More zeale as verse in G (so 64-6) 51 then] than F2 ladie,  
F1 Ladie, corr Q Lady, Q originally lady, F2 52 rigour]  
Rigor Q coursly] coursly Q originally coursie corr Q 53 and,  
withall, Ff and (withall) corr Q and (with-all) Q originally her  
corr Q, Ff hir Q originally onely, Q originally, F1 onelie, corr Q  
only F2 54 adore, Q and some copies of F1 adore F2 55 in  
this kingdome italic in Q & originally in F1 57 hard,] hard Q  
faith] faith Q all, againe corr F1 all againe Q, F1 originally all  
agen F2 58 act corr Q, Ff Act Q originally 59 vouchsafe,]  
vouchsafe Q 60 musique F1 Musique Q originally Musicke corr  
Q musicke F2 61 thoughts] thoughts, Q

A m o. So, sir, pray you away.

A s o. More then most faire ladie, let not the rigour of  
65 your iust disdaine, thus coursly censure of your seruants  
zeale, I protest, you are the onely, and absolute, vn-  
apparellled—

A m o. Vnparelleld.

A s o. Vnparelleld creature, I doe adore, and admire, and  
70 respect, and reuerence, in this court, corner of the world, or  
kingdome.

A m o. This is, if shee abide you. But now, put case shee  
should bee *passant* when you enter, as thus you are to  
frame your gate thereafter, and call vpon her, Ladie,  
75 *Nymph*, Sweet refuge, Starre of our court Then if shee be  
*guardant*, here : you are to come on, and (laterally disposing  
your selfe) sweare, by her blushing and well coloured cheeke,  
the bright die of her haire, her iuorie teeth (though they be  
ebonie) or some such white, and innocent oth, to induce you.  
80 If *reguardant*, then maintaine your station, briske, and irpe,  
shew the supple motion of your pliant bodie, but (in chiefe)  
of your knee, and hand, which cannot but arride her proud  
humour exceedingly.

A s o. I conceiue you, sir, I shall performe all these things  
85 in good time, I doubt not, they doe so hit me.

III v 63 So] So Q sir corr Q, Ff Sir Q originally 64 then]  
than F2 rigour] Rigor Q 66 protest.] protest Q onely, F1  
onely corr Q only Q originally only F2 absolute] absolute Q  
66-7 vnapparellled F1 unapparellled F2 vn appareled corr Q  
vn-aparailed Q originally 68, 69 Vnparelleld F1 Unparelleld F2  
Vnparelleld corr Q Vn-parelleld Q (originally in 69) 71 kingdome]  
Kingdome Q originally 72 you But now, put Ff you But now,  
putte corr Q you But now, put Q originally case] the case F2  
74 thereafter corr Q Ff ther'after Q originally vpon Q originally,  
F1 vpon F2 vpon corr Q her] her Q 75 Nymph, corr Q,  
corr F1, F2 Nymph Q originally Nymph F1 originally court]  
Court corr. Q Cart Q originally 76 here] hear F3 laterally Q  
originally, Ff laterallie corr Q 77 selfe] selfe, Q coloured  
cheeke, Ff (cheek F2) coloured cheeke corr Q coloured cheeke  
Q originally 78 die of her haire Ff die of her haire corr Q dye  
of her hayre Q originally 78-9 (though ebonie) not in Q 79  
white,] white Q oth] oath Q, F2 you Q originally, Ff you, a  
miscorrection in Q 80 *reguardant*, then] Reguardant, then, Q  
81 pliant bodie, Ff (body F2, c w p 187) pliant body Q originally  
pliant bodie corr Q 82 proud] proude Q originally proude corr Q  
83 humour] Humor Q exceedingly Q originally, Ff exceedingly corr Q.

A m o. Well, sir, I am your ladie; make vse of any of these beginnings, or some other out of your owne inuention: and proue, how you can hold vp, and follow it. Say, say.

A s o. Yes, sir, my dear LINDABRIDES.—

A m o. No, you affect that LINDABRIDES too much. 90 And (let mee tell you) it is not so courtly. Your *pedant* should prouide you some parcells of *french*, or some pretty commoditie of *italian* to commence with, if you would be exoticke, and exquisite.

A s o. Yes, sir, he was at my lodging t'other morning, 95 I gaue him a doublet.

A m o. Double your beneuolence, and giue him the hose too, clothe you his bodie, he will helpe to apparell your mind. But now, see what your proper GENIVS can per- forme alone, without adiection of any other MINERVA. 100

A s o. I comprehend you, sir.

A m o. I doe stand you, sir: fall backe to your first place. Good, passing well: Very properly persude.

A s o. Beautifull, ambiguous, and sufficient ladie, what l are you all alone? 105

A m o. We would be, sir, if you would leaue vs.

A s o. I am at your beauties appointment, bright angell; but—

A m o. What but?

A s o. No harme, more then most faire feature. 110

A m o. That touch relished well.

A s o. But, I protest—

III. v. 86 ladie, *Ff* Ladie, *Q* originally. Ladie. *corr* *Q* 88 proue,] prooue *Q*. prove *F2* hold] holde *corr* *Q* houlde *Q* originally 89 sir.] Sir *Q* LINDABRIDES — *corr* *Fr*, *F2* Lindabrides. *Q* LINDABRIDES. *Fr* originally 90 No, *corr* *Q*, *Ff* No *Q* originally much] much: *Q* 91 courtly *Ff* Courtly *Q* originally Courtly *corr*. *Q* 92-3 pretty commoditie *Fr*. prettie Commoditie *corr*. *Q*, *F2*. pretty Commodity *Q* originally 94 exoticke] exotickes *Fr* originally 98 too,] too; *Q* apparell] appaiaile *Q* 100 any *Q* originally, *Ff*. anie *corr*. *Q* 101, 102 you,] you *Q* 103 Good,] Good, *Q* persude *corr* *Q*, *Ff*. pursewd *Q* originally 104 ladie, what!] Lady What *Q* 105 alone? *corr* *Q*, *Ff* alone *Q* originally 106 be,] be *Q* sir *corr*. *Q*, *Ff* Sir *Q* originally 107 appointment, bright *Ff*. appointment *bright* *corr*. *Q* appoyntment. *Bright* *Q* originally 110 then *corr*. *Q*, *Fr* than *Q* originally, *F2* 112 But,] But *Q*

A M O. And why should you protest ?

A S O. For good will (deare esteem'd Madam) and I hope,  
115 your ladiship will so conceiue of it :

*And will, in time, returne from your disdain,*

*And rue the suffrance of our friendly paine.*

A M O. O, that peece was excellent ! if you could picke  
out more of these *play-particles*, and (as occasion shall salute  
120 you) embroider, or damaske your discourse with them,  
perswade your soule, it would most iudiciously commend  
you. Come, this was a well discharg'd, and auspicious bout.  
Proue the second

A S O. Ladie, I cannot ruffle it in red and yellow.

125 A M O. Why, if you can reuell it in white, sir, 'tis sufficient.

A S O. Say you so, sweet ladie ? *Lan, tede, de, de, de, dant,*  
*dant, dant, dante, &c.* No (in good faith) Madame, whosoever  
told your ladiship so, abusde you ; but I would be glad to  
meet your ladiship in a measure.

130 A M O. Me, sir ? belike you measure me by your selfe,  
then ?

A S O. Would I might, faire feature.

A M O. And what were you the better, if you might ?

A S O. The better it please you to aske, faire ladie.

135 A M O. Why, this was rauishing, and most acutely con-  
tinu'd. Well, spend not your humour too much, you haue  
now competently exercised your conceit : This (once or  
twice a day) will render you an accomlisht, elaborate, and  
well leuelled gallant. Conuey in your courting-stock, wee  
140 will (in the heat of this) goe visit the *Nymphs* chamber.

III v 114 hope,] hope Q 116-17 And . *parne* ] *If euer you haue*  
*seene great TAMBERLAINE* Q 118 O,] O Q *peece*] *Blanks* Q  
excellent ] excellent Q 120 embroider,] embroyder Q 121  
perswade . . soule,] (perswade . . soule) Q most not in Q 122  
you ] you Q well discharg'd,] well-discharg'd Q 122-3 bout. Proue]  
Bout prouee Q 124 ruffle] swagger Q red] *Black* Q 125 Why,]  
Why Q white,] *White* Q 126 so,] so Q *de, de, de*] *de, de* Q 127 *dante,*  
*&c.*] *dante* [Sings and dances] G 127-8 whosoever told] *whosoever*  
tould Q 130 Me,] Me Q selfe,] selfe Q 132 might,] might Q  
135 Why,] Why Q 135-6 continu'd ] continew'd ; Q 136 humour]  
humor Q 138 day,] day( Q 139 gallant. Conuey] *Gentleman* ,  
conuay Q 140 *Exeunt* add G After 140 *Finis Actus tertij.* Q

Act IIII. Scene I.

PHANTASTE, PHILAVTIA, ARGVRION,  
MORIA, CVPID.

I Would this water would ariue once, our trauailing friend  
so commended to vs.

A R G. So would I, for hee has left all vs in trauaile with  
expectation of it.

P H A. Pray I o v e, I neuer rise from this couch, if euer <sup>5</sup>  
I thirsted more for a thing, in my whole time of being a  
courtier.

P H I. Nor I, I'll be sworne: The very mention of it  
sets my lips in a worse heate, then if hee had sprinkled them  
with *mercurie*. Reach mee the glasse, sirrah. 10

C V P. Here, ladie.

M O R. They doe not peelee, sweet *Charge*, doe they?

P H I. Yes, a little, *Guardian*.

M O R. O, 'tis an eminent good signe. Euer when my lips  
doe so, I am sure to haue some delicious good drinke, or <sup>15</sup>  
other approaching.

A R G. Mary, and this may be good for vs ladies for  
(it seemes) tis far-fet by their stay.

M O R. My palate for yours (deare *Honor*) it shall proue  
most elegant, I warrant you. O, I doe fancy this geare <sup>20</sup>  
that's long a comming, with an vnmeasurable straine.

P H A. Pray thee sit downe, P H I L A V T I A, that rebatu  
becomes thee singularly.

IV. 1. Act IIII Scene I] ACTVS QVARTVS. [SCENA I. Q. ACT IV SCENE I |  
An Apartment in the Palace G PHANTASTE CVPID] Phantaste.  
Philautia Argurion. Moria Cupid Q Enter Phantaste, Philautia,  
Argurion, Moria, and Cupid. G <sup>1</sup> I] Phan I Q once,] once Q  
trauailing] travelling F<sub>2</sub> <sup>3</sup> trauaile] trauaile, Q travell F<sub>2</sub> <sup>9</sup> then]  
than F<sub>2</sub> hee corr F<sub>1</sub> he Q, F<sub>1</sub> originally <sup>10</sup> mercurie corr F<sub>1</sub>.  
Mercury Q MERCURY F<sub>1</sub> originally mee corr F<sub>1</sub> me Q, F<sub>1</sub> originally  
glasse,] glasse Q <sup>11</sup> Here,] Heere Q <sup>12</sup> peelee,] peelee Q *Charge,*  
charge' Q <sup>13</sup> Yes, a little,] Yes a little Q <sup>14</sup> O,] O Q an eminent]  
a imminent Q <sup>15</sup> drinke,] drinke Q <sup>16</sup> approaching] approaching  
Q, F<sub>2</sub> <sup>17</sup> Mary,] Mary Q Marry F<sub>2</sub> <sup>19</sup> palate] pallat Q proue,  
prooue Q <sup>20</sup> elegant,] elegant Q <sup>22</sup> downe,] downe Q

P H I. Is't not queint ?

- 25 P H A. Yes faith Me thinkes, thy seruant H E D O N is nothing so obsequious to thee, as he was wont to be . I know not how, hee's growne out of his garbe a-late, hee's warpt.

M O R. In trewnesse, and so me thinkes too ; he's much  
30 conuerted.

P H I. Tut, let him bee what hee will, 'tis an *animall* I dreame not of. This tire (me thinkes) makes me looke very ingeniously, quick, and spirited, I should be some L A V R A, or some D E L I A, me thinkes.

- 35 M O R. As I am wise (*faire Honors*) that title shee gaue him, to bee her *Ambition*, spoild him : Before, hee was the most propitious, and obseruant young nounce—

P H A. No, no, you are the whole heauen awry, *Guardian* : 'tis the swaggering coach-horse A N A I D E S, drawes with  
40 him there, has beene the diuerter of him

P H I. For C V P I D S sake, speake no more of him ; would I might neuer dare to looke in a mirror againe, if I respect ere a marmaset of 'hem al, otherwise, then I would a feather, or my shuttle-cock, to make sport with, now and then.

- 45 P H A. Come, sit downe ; troth (and you be good *Beauties*) let's runne ouer 'hem all now . Which is the properst man amongst them ? I say, the trauailer, A M O R P H V S.

P H I. O, fie on him, he lookes like a *venetian* trumpetter, i' the battaile of *Lepanto*, in the gallerie yonder , and speakes  
50 to the tune of a countrey ladie, that comes euer i' the rere-ward, or traine of a fashion.

iv i 25 faith. Me] faith me Q seruant] ser ant Q *originally*  
26 be *corr* F1: be, Q, F1 *originally* 28 warpt] wrapt F2, F3  
29 trewnesse *corr.* F1 truenesse Q, F2 trunesse F1 *originally* too,]  
too, Q he's Q, *corr* F1 hee's F1 *originally* 31 Tut,] Tut,]  
Q 33 ingeniously] Ingenuously Q spirited,] spirited Q  
34 DELIA,] Delia Q 37 propitious, Q, *corr* F1 propitious F1 *originally*  
38 no,] no, Q awry, *Guardian*] awry *Guardian*, Q 39 coach-  
horse ANAIDES,] tilt-horse *Anaides* Q 41 sake,] sake Q 43 'hem  
*corr* F1 them Q, F1 *originally* 44 then] than F2 45 Come,]  
Come Q and] an' F2 47 trauailer] traveller F2 48  
O,] O Q *venetian* *corr* F1. *Venetian* F1 *originally* Dutch Q  
trumpetter,] Trumpetter Q 49 battaile] battell Q, F2 50-1  
rereward] rere ward Q

• MOR. I should haue iudgement in a feature, sweet *Beauties*.

PHA. A bodie would thinke so, at these yeeres.

MOR. And I preferre another now, far before him, a 55  
million at least.

PHA. Who might that be, *Guardian*?

MOR. Mary (faire *Charge*) ANAIDES.

PHA ANAIDES! you talk't of a tune PHILAVTIA,  
there's one speakes in a key: like the opening of some 60  
Iustices gate, or a poste-boies horne, as if his voice fear'd  
an arrest for some ill wordes it should giue, and were loth  
to come forth.

PHI. I, and he has a very imperfect face.

PHA. Like a sea-monster, that were to rauish ANDRO - 65  
MEDA from the rocke.

PHI. His hand's too great too, by at least a strawes  
breadth.

PHA. Nay, he has a worse fault then that, too.

PHI. A long heele? 70

PHA. That were a fault in a ladie, rather then him. No,  
they say, hee puts off the calues of his legs, with his stockings,  
euery night.

PHI. Out vpon him: turne to another of the pictures, for  
loues sake. What saies ARGVRION? whom doo's shee 75  
commend, afore the rest?

CVF. I hope, I haue instructed her sufficiently for an  
answere.

MOR. Troth, I made the motion to her ladiship for one  
to day, i' the presence, but it appear'd shee was other- 80  
waies furnisht before. Shee would none.

PHA Who was that, ARGVRION?

IV 1. 52 feature,] feature Q 57 be,] be Q 59 ANAIDES!]  
Anades? Q 65-6 Like . . . rocke ] Like a squeez'd *Orange*, sower,  
sower Q 67 too,] to, Q 68 breadth ] breadth FI 69  
Nay,] Nay Q worse] woorse Q then] than F2 (so 71) that,]  
that Q 71 ladie,] Lady Q 72 off] of Q legs,] legges Q  
stockings,] Stockings Q stockings F2 74 pictures,] Pictures Q  
75 loues] Gods Q 76 commend,] commend Q 77 hope,] hope Q  
79 Troth,] Troth Q 80 day,] day Q 80-1 other-waies] other  
wayes Q 82 that,] that Q



MOR. Mary, the poore plaine gentleman, i' the blacke, there.

85 PHA. Who, CRITES?

ARG. I, I, he A fellow, that no body so much as lookt vpon, or regarded, and shee would haue had me done him particular grace.

PHA. That was a true tricke of your selfe, MORIA, to  
90 perswade ARGVRION, to affect the scholer

ARG. Tut, but shee shall be no chuser for me. In good faith, I like the citizens sonne there, ASOTVS, mee thinkes, none of them all come neere him.

PHA. Not, HEDON?

95 ARG. HEDON, in troth no HEDON's a pretty slight courtier, and he weares his clothes well, and sometimes in fashion. Mary, his face is but indifferent, and he has no such excellent body No, th'other is a most delicate youth, a sweet face, a streight body, a well proportion'd legge and  
100 foot, a white hand, a tender voice

PHI. How now, ARGVRION?

PHA. O, you should haue let her alone, shee was bestowing a copy of him vpon vs. Such a nose were enough to make me loue a man, now.

105 PHI. And then his seuerall colours he weares, wherein he flourisheth changeably, euey day

PHA. O, but his short haire, and his narrow eyes!

PHI. Why, shee dotes more palpably vpon him, then ere his father did vpon her.

110 PHA. Beleeue mee, the young gentleman deserues it. If shee could dote more, 'twere not amisse. Hee is an

iv 1 83 Mary.] Mary Q Marry F2 poore] little, poore, Q  
gentleman.] Gentleman Q blacke,] black Q 85 Who,  
CRITES?] Who? Criticus? Q 86 he] he, Q 88  
particular?] particular Q 89 selfe,] selfe Q 90 ARGVRION, corr.  
F1, F2 Argurion Q ARGVRION F1 originally to affect] affect Q  
91 Tut.] Tut, Q 92 faith,] faith Q there,] there Q ASOTVS,]  
ASOTUS, F2 94 Not,] Not Q 95 HEDON,] HEDON? F2 97  
fashion corr F1 fashion, Q, F1 originally Mary,] marry Q  
Marry F2 98 No,] No, Q 99 legge] legge, Q 101 now,]  
now Q 102 O,] O Q 103-7 Such . . . eyes! not in Q 105  
colours] colours, F2 108 Why,] Why Q then] than F2 110-11  
it If] it, if Q 111 more,] more Q amisse] amisse: Q

- exceeding proper youth, and would haue made a most neate barber-surgeon, if hee had beene put to it in time.

P H I. Say you so ? me thinkes, he lookes like a taylour alreadie.

115

P H A. I, that had sayed on one of his customers sutes. His face is like a squeezed orange, or——

A R G. Well, ladies, jest on the best of you both would be glad of such a seruant.

M O R. I, I'll be sworne would they, though hee be a little 120 shame-fac'd.

P H A. Shame-fac'd, M O R I A ! out vpon him. Your shame-fac'd seruant is your onely gull.

M O R. Goe to, *Beauties*, make much of time, and place, and occasion, and opportunitie, and fauourites, and things 125 that belong to 'hem, for I'll ensure you, they will all relinquish, they cannot indure aboue another yeere; I know it out of future experience: and therefore take exhibition, and warning I was once a reueller my selfe, and though I speak it (as mine owne trumpet) I was then 130 esteem'd——

P H I. The very march-pane of the court, I warrant you ?

P H A. And all the gallants came about you like flyes, did they not ?

M O R. Goe to, they did somewhat, that's no matter now 135

P H A. Nay, good M O R I A, be not angrie. Put case, that wee foure now had the grant from I V N O, to wish our selues into what happie estate wee could? what would you wish to be, M O R I A ?

M O R. Who I? Let me see now. I would wish to be a 140 wisewoman, and know all the secrets of court, citie, and countrie. I would know what were done behind the arras,

iv. 1. 114 taylour] Taylor Q, F2 116 sayed] said Q 117  
His face . . or— not in Q squeezed] squeez'd F2 118 Well,]  
Wel Q jest] jest Q 120 they,] they Q 120-3 though hee . . gull,  
not in Q 125 fauourites] *Fauorites* Q 126 'hem,] them, Q 127  
indure] endure Q, F2 128 experience ] experience, Q 129 warn-  
ing] warning Q 132 march-pane] march-bane F2, F3 court,]  
Court Q you not in Q 135 to,] to, Q 136-214 P H A. Nay, . .  
laugh at it. not in Q 136 case,] case F2 141 wisewoman] wise-  
woman F2

what vpon the staires, what i' the garden, what i' the  
*Nymphs* chamber, what by barge, & what by coach. I would  
 145 tel you which courtier were scabbed, and which not ; which  
 ladie had her owne face to lie with her a-nights, & which  
 not , who put off their teeth with their clothes in court,  
 who their haire, who their complexion ; and in which boxe  
 they put it. There should not a *Nymph*, or a widdow be got  
 150 with chulde i' the verge, but I would guesse (within one or  
 two,) who was the right father and in what moneth it was  
 gotten ; with what words , and which way. I would tell  
 you, which Madame lou'd a *Monsieur*, which a player,  
 which a page ; who slept with her husband, who with her  
 155 friend, who with her gentleman-vs her, who with her horse-  
 keeper, who with her monkie, and who with all Yes, and  
 who jugg'd the cocke too.

P H A Fye, you'd tell all, M O R I A. If I should wish  
 now, it should bee to haue your tongue out But what sayes  
 160 P H I L A V T I A ? who would she be ?

P H I Troth, the verie same I am. Onely I would wish  
 my selfe a little more command, and soueraignetie ; that  
 all the court were subiect to my absolute becke, and all  
 things in it depending on my looke ; as if there were no other  
 165 heauen, but in my smile, nor other hell, but in my frowne ;  
 that I might send for any man I list, and haue his head cut  
 off, when I haue done with him ; or made an *eunuch*, if he  
 denyed mee and if I saw a better face then mine owne , I  
 might haue my doctor to poyson it. What would you wish,  
 170 P H A N T A S T E ?

P H A. Faith, I cannot (readily) tell you what : But (mee  
 thinkes) I should wish my selfe all manner of creatures.  
 Now, I would bee an empress ; and by and by a dutchesse ;  
 then a great ladie of state ; then one of your *miscelany*  
 175 madams ; then a waiting-woman ; then your cittizens wife ;  
 then a course countrey gentlewoman ; then a deyrle maide ;  
 then a shepheards lasse ; then an empress againe, or the

queene of *fayries* : And thus I would prooue the vicissitudes,  
and whirle of pleasures, about, and againe. As I were a  
shepherdesse, I would bee pip'd and sung too ; as a *deyrie* 180  
wench, I would dance at *may*-poles, and make sillabubbes ;  
As a countrey gentlewoman, keep a good house, and come  
vp to terme, to see motions ; As a cittizens wife, bee troubled  
with a iealous husband, and put to my shifts ; (others  
miseries should bee my pleasures) As a waiting-woman, I 185  
would taste my ladies delights to her ; As a *miscellany*  
madame inuent new tyres, and goe visite courtiers ; As a  
great ladie, lye a bed, and haue courtiers visite mee ; As  
a dutchesse, I would keepe my state : and as an empresse,  
I'd doe any thing And, in all these shapes, I would euer 190  
bee follow'd with th'affections of all that see mee. Mary,  
I my selfe would affect none , or if I did, it should not bee  
heartily, but so as I might saue my selfe in 'hem still, and  
take pride in tormenting the poore wretches. Or, (now I  
thinke on't) I would, for one yeere, wish my selfe one 195  
woman, but the richest, fairest, and delicatest in a kingdome,  
the very center of wealth, and beautie, wherein all lines of  
loue should meet ; and in that person I would prooue all  
manner of suters, of all humours, and of all complexions,  
and neuer haue any two of a sort : I would see how *Loue* 200  
(by the power of his object) could worke inwardly alike, in  
a cholericke man, and a sanguine ; in a melancholique, and  
a phlegmatique ; in a foole, and a wise man ; in a clowne,  
and a courtier ; in a valiant man, and a coward : and how  
he could varie outward, by letting this gallant expresse 205  
himselfe in dumbe gaze , another with sighing, and rubbing  
his fingers ; a third, with play-ends, and pittifull verses ;  
a fourth, with stabbing himselfe, and drinking healths, or  
writing languishing letters in his bloud ; a fifth, in colour'd  
ribbands, and good clothes ; with this lord to smile, and 210  
that lord to court, and the t'other lord to dote, and one

iv 1. 180-1 as a *deyrie* . . sillabubbes, *om F2, F3* 188 a bed] abed  
F2 191 Mary] Marry F2 196 delicatest] dlicatest F2, F3  
205 letting] leting F2 gallant] galland F2

lord to hang himselfe. And then, I to haue a booke made of all this, which I would call the booke of humours, and euery night reade a little piece, ere I slept, and laugh at it.  
 215 Here comes HEDON.

Act IIII. Scene II.

HEDON, ANAIDES, MERCVRIE, PHANTASTE,  
 PHILAVTIA, MORIA, ARGVRION,  
 CVPID

S Aue you, sweet and cleere beauties By the spirit that moues in me, you are all most pleasingly bestow'd, ladies. Onely, I can take it for no good *omen*, to find mine *Honor* so deiected.

5 PHI. You need not feare, sir, I did of purpose humble my selfe against your comming, to decline the pride of my *ambition*.

HED Fairc *Honor*, *Ambition* dares not stoope; but if it be your sweet pleasure, I shall lose that title, I will (as  
 10 I am HEDON) apply my selfe to your bounties

PHI. That were the next way to distitle my selfe of *honor*. O, no, rather be still *ambitious*, I pray you

HED. I will be any thing that you please, whilst it pleaseth you to bee your selfe, ladie Sweet PHAN-  
 15 TASTE, deare MORIA, most beautifull ARGVRION—

ANA. Farewell, HEDON.

HED. ANAIDES, stay, whither goe you?

ANA. S'light, what should I doe here? and you engrosse 'hem all for your owne vse, 'tis time for me to seeke out.

IV 11 Act IIII Scene II] SCENA. 2 Q HEDON, . CVPID.]  
 Hedon. Anades, Mercury Phantaste Philautia | Moria Argurion.  
 Cupid. Q. Enter Hedon, Anades, and Mercury, who retires with  
 Cupid to the back of the stage, where they converse together G,  
 continuing the scene 1 Saue] Hed Saue Q 2 moues]  
 mooues Q all most] almost Q bestow'd.] bestow'd Q 3 Onely.]  
 Only F2 5 feare,] feare Q 9 lose] loose Q title,] Title,  
 Q 10 HEDON)] He ) Q originally 12 honor O.] Honor  
 O Q ambitious.] Ambitious Q 14 selfe,] selfe Q 16 Farewell,]  
 Farewell Q 17 stay, whither] Stay. wether Q 18 and  
 an' F2

H E D. I, engrosse 'hem ? Away, mischief, this is one of 20  
your extrauagant iests now, because I began to salute 'hem  
by their names——

A N A. Faith, you might haue sparde vs Madame *Prudence*,  
the *Guardian* there, though you had more couetously aym'd  
at the rest. 25

H E D. S'heart, take 'hem all, man · what speake you to  
me of ayming, or couetous ?

A N A. I, say you so ? nay, then, haue at 'hem : ladies,  
here's one hath distinguish'd you by your names alreadie.  
It shall onely become me, to aske, How you doe ? 30

H E D. Gods so, was this the designe you trauaill'd with ?

P H A. Who answeres the brazen head ? it spoke to some  
bodie.

A N A. Lady *Wisedome*, doe you interpret for these  
puppets ? 35

M O R. In truth, and sadnesse (*Honors*) you are in great  
offence for this, goe too the gentleman (I'le vnder-take  
with him) is a man of faire liuing, and able to maintaine a  
ladie in her two carroches a day, besides pages, munkeys,  
and parachitos, with such attendants as shee shall thinke 40  
meet for her turne, and therefore there is more respect  
requirable, howsoere you seeme to conINUE. Harke you,  
sir, let mee discourse a sillable with you. I am to say to you,  
these ladies are not of that close, and open behauour, as  
happily you may suspend, their carriage is well knowne, 45  
to be such as it should be, both gentle and extraordinarie.

M E R. O, here comes the other paire

iv. ii 20 I,] I Q Away,] Away Q 23 Faith,] Faith Q *Prudence,*  
*Prudence* Q 26 all,] all Q 27 ayming,] ayming Q 28 nay,] nay Q  
29 alreadie] already, Q 30 aske,] aske, Q 31 designe] dissiene Q  
trauail'd] trauel'd Q travell'd F2 32 brazen head] *Brazen head* Q  
33 bodie] body ? Q 37 thus, goe too] this, goe too, Q this, goe  
too F2 vnder-take] vndertake Q 39 carroches] *Coaches* Q coaches  
G 40 such] sutch Q 41 turne,] turne, Q 42 howsoere] how  
soeuer Q conINUE,] conINUE Q you,] you Q 45 happily] haply  
F2 47 M E R F2: M E R Q: M O R F1 O,] O Q

*Act IIII. Scene III.*

AMORPHVS, ASOTVS, HEDON, ANAIDES,  
 MERCVRIE, CVPID, <MORVS,> PHANTASTE,  
 PHILAVTIA, ARGVRION,  
 MORIA.

THat was your fathers loue, the *Nymph* ARGVRION.  
 I would haue you direct all your courtship thither, if  
 you could but endear your selfe to her affection, you were  
 eternally en-gallanted.

5 ASO In truth, sir? pray PHÆBVVS I proue fauour-  
 some in her faire eyes.

AMO All diuine mixture, and increase of beautie to this  
 bright beuy of ladies; and to the male-courtiers, comple-  
 ment, and courtesie

10 HED In the behalfe of the males, I gratifie you,  
 AMORPHVS

PHA. And I, of the females.

AMO. Succinctly return'd I doe vale to both your  
 thanks, and kisse them: but primarily to yours, most  
 15 ingenious, acute, and polite ladie.

PHI. Gods my life, how hee doe's all to bee qualifie her  
 ingenious, acute, and polite? as if there were not others in  
 place as ingenious, acute, and polite, as shee.

HED. Yes, but you must know, ladie, hee cannot speake  
 20 out of a *dictionary* method.

PHA. Sit downe, sweet AMORPHVS: When will this  
 water come, thinke you?

AMO. It cannot now be long, faire ladie.

IV III Act IIII Scene III] SCENA 3. Q AMORPHVS, . . MORIA.]  
*Amorphus. Asotus Hedon Anaides Mercurie Cupid | Phantaste.*  
*Philautia Argurion Moria Q Enter Amorphus and Asotus G.*  
 continuing the scene MORVS added in Fz 1 That] Amor. That Q  
 2 thither,] thither, Fz 4 en-gallanted] engallanted Q 5 truth,]  
 truth Q 5-6 proue fauour-some] proue fauorsome Q 7 increase]  
 encrease Q beautie] beauty, Q 10 gratifie] gratefie Q 13 return'd.]  
 spoken Q vale] vaile Fz 21 downe,] downe Q AMOR-  
 PHVS] Amorphus Q 22 come,] come Q 23 long.] long Q

CVP. Now obserue, MERCURY.

ASO. How? most ambiguous beautie? loue you? that 25  
I will by this hand-kercher.

MER. S'lid, he drawes his othes out of his pocket.

ARG. But, will you be constant?

ASO. Constant, Madam? I will not say for constant-  
nesse, but by this purse (which I would be loth to sweare by, 30  
vnlesse 'twere embroider'd) I protest (more then most faire  
ladie) you are the onely, absolute, and vnparalleld creature,  
I doe adore, and admire, and respect, and reuerence in this  
court, corner of the world, or kingdome: Mee thinkes you  
are melancholy. 35

ARG. Do's your heart speake all this?

ASO. Say you?—

MER. O, he is groping for another oth.

ASO. Now, by this watch (I marle how forward the day  
is) I doe vnfeignedly vow my selfe (s'light 'tis deeper then 40  
I tooke it, past fife) yours entirely addicted, Madame.

ARG. I require no more, dearest ASOTVS, hence-  
forth let mee call you mine, and in remembrance of me,  
vouchsafe to weare this chaine, and this diamond.

ASO. O god, sweet ladie! 45

CVP. There are new othes for him: what? doth  
HERMES taste no alteration, in all this?

MER. Yes, thou hast strooke ARGVRION inamour'd  
on ASOTVS, me thinkes.

CVP. Alas, no; I am no-body, I: I can doe nothing in 50  
this disguise.

MER. But thou hast not wounded any of the rest,  
CVPID?

CVP. Not yet: it is enough that I haue begun so prosper-  
ously. 55

iv iii 24 obserue,] obserue Q 25 How?] How Q 27 S'lid,]  
'S'lid Q 28 But,] But Q 29 Constant,] Constant Q 31-5  
I . . melancholy Q prints in italics 31, 40 then] than F2  
34 kingdome ] Kingdome, Q 37 you?—] you? Q 39 Now,] Now  
Q 42 more,] more Q 43 mine,] mine, Q 44 vouchsafe] vouch-  
safe Q 45 god,] god Q ladie!] Lady Q 46 doth] dooth Q 48  
inamour'd] enamour'd Q 49 Asotvs,] Asotus Q thinkes.] thinkes? Q



A R G. Nay, these are nothing to the gems I will hourelly bestow vpon thee · be but faithfull, and kind to me, and I will lade thee with my richest bounties . behold, here my bracelets, from mine armes.

60 A S O. Not so, good ladie, By this diamond.

A R G. Take 'hem, weare 'hem : my iewels, chaine of pearle, pendants, all I haue.

A S O Nay then, by this pearle, you make me a wanton.

C V F. Shall not shee answere for this, to maintayne him  
65 thus in swearing ?

M E R. O, no, there is a way to weane him from this, the gentleman may be reclaim'd.

C V F. I, if you had the ayring of his apparell, couss', I thinke

70 A S O. Louing ? 'twere pittty I should be liuing else, beleue me. Saue you, sir. Saue you, sweet ladie. Saue you, Monsieur A N A I D E S Saue you, deare Madame

A N A. Do'st thou know him that saluted thee, H E D O N ?

H E D No, some idle F V N G O S O, that hath got aboue  
75 the cup-board, since yesterday.

A N A S'lud, I neucr saw him till this morning, and he salutes me as familiarly, as if we had knowne together, since the deluge, or the first yeere of *Troy-action*.

A M O. A most right-handed, and auspicious encounter.  
80 Confine your selfe to your fortunes.

P H I. For sports sake, let's haue some *riddles*, or *purposes* ; hough.

P H A. No faith, your *prophecies* are best, the t'other are stale.

85 P H I. *Prophecies* ? we cannot all sit in at them ; wee

iv m 56 Nay] Tut Q hourelly] howerly Q 59 bracelets,] Bracelets  
Q 60 so,] so Q 61 Take 'hem,] Take 'hem, Q 63 pearle,]  
Pearle Q 64 maintayne] mainteine Q 66 a way] away Q this,]  
this Q 68 apparell,] apparell Q couss'] Cosse Q Couz F3 71 you,  
sweet ladie ] you sweete Lady, Q 72 you, Monsieur] you Mounsieur Q  
ANAIDES ] Anaiides, Q you,] you Q 73 Do'st] Doo'st Q 74-5  
that hath . yesterday ] I warrant you Q 76 S'lud] 'Sbloud Q  
78 the deluge, or not in Q *Troy-action*] the siege of *Troy* Q 81  
sports sake,] gods sake Q *riddles,*] *Riddles* Q 81-2 *purposes*] *proposes*  
F2 83 t'other] 'tother Q

shall make a confusion. No ; what calld you that we had in the fore-noone ?

P H A. *Substantiues*, and *Adiectiues*. Ist not H E D O N ?

P H J. I, that, who begins ?

P H A. I haue thought ; speake your *Adiectiues*, sirs. 90

P H I. But doe not you change, then

P H A. Not I, who saies ?

M O R. Odoriferous.

P H I. Popular.

A R G. Humble. 95

A N A. White-luer'd.

H E D. Barbarous.

A M O. *Pythagoricall*.

H E D. Yours, Signior.

A S O. What must I doe, sir ? 100

A M O. Giue forth your *Adiectiue*, with the rest ; as, prosperous, good, faire, sweet, well——

H E D. Any thing, that hath not beene spoken.

A S O. Yes, sir : well-spoken, shall be mine

P H A. What ? ha' you all done ? 105

A L L. I.

P H A. Then the *Substantiue* is Breeches. Why odoriferous Breeches, *Guardian* ?

M O R. Odoriferous, because odoriferous ; that which containes most varietie of sauour, and smell, we say is most 110 odoriferous . now, Breeches I presume are incident to that varietie, and therefore odoriferous Breeches.

P H A. Well, we must take it howsoever, who's next ?

P H I L A V T I A.

P H I. Popular. 115

P H A. Why popular Breeches ?

iv. 111 86 confusion. No] confusion . no Q 89 I,] I Q 90  
*Adiectiues*,] *Adiectiues* Q 91 change,] change Q then Q, *Fa*.  
then? *Fr* 92 I, who] I Who *Fa* 99 Yours,] Yours Q 100 doe,]  
doe Q 101 forth] foorth Q (so 118) 102 well—] Well Q 103  
thing,] thing Q beene] bin Q 104 Yes,] Yes Q well-spoken,]  
Well-spoken Q 106 ALL] *Omnes* Q 108 Breeches,] Breeches Q  
110 sauour] saour Q 111 now,] now Q 112 therefore] therefore, Q  
113 next ?] next Q

P H I. Mary, that is, when they are not content to be generally noted in court, but will presse forth on common stages, and brokers stalls, to the publique view of the  
120 world

P H A. Good : why humble Breeches ? ARGVRION.

ARG Humble, because they vse to be sate vpon ; besides, if you tie 'hem not vp, their propertie is to fall downe about your heeles.

125 M E R Shee has worne the breeches, it seemes, which haue done so

P H A But why white-luier'd ?

A N A. Why ? 'shart, are not their linings white ? besides, when they come in swaggering companie, and will pocket  
130 vp any thing, may they not properly be said to be white-luierd ?

P H A. O, yes, wee must not denie it And why barbarous, H E D O N ?

H E D. Barbarous, because commonly, when you haue  
135 worne your breeches sufficiently, you giue them to your Barbek

A M O. That's good : but now *Pythagoricall* ?

P H A I, A M O R P H V S. Why *Pythagoricall* Breeches ?

A M O. O, most kindly of all, 'tis a conceit of that  
140 fortune, I am bold to hug my braine for.

P H A How ist, exquisite A M O R P H V S ?

A M O O, I am rapt with it, 'tis so fit, so proper, so happy—

P H I Nay, doe not racke vs thus !

145 A M O. I neuer truly relisht my selfe, before. Giue me your eares Breeches *Pythagoricall*, by reason of their transmigration, into seuerall shapes.

IV III 117 Mary,] Mary Q Marry, F2 118 court,] Court, Q forth] fourth Q 121 Good why] Good. Why F2 Breeches ? ARGVRION.] Breeches, ARGVRION ? F2 125 breeches, . . . seemes,] Breeches . . . seemes Q 128 'shart,] 'Sharte Q om F2 130 thing,] thing ; Q 132 O,] O Q (so 139, 142) must not] cannot Q 134 commonly,] commonly Q 140 fortune,] Fortune, Q bold] bould Q 143 happy—] happy Q 144 Nay,] Nay Q thus ] thus ? Q, F1. thus F2 145 selfe,] selfe Q 146-7 transmigration,] transmigration Q

MOR. Most rare, in sweet troth. Mary, this young gentleman, for his well-spoken—

PHA. I, why well-spoken Breeches? 150

ASQ. Well-spoken? mary well-spoken, because—whatsoever they speake, is well taken; and whatsoever is well taken, is well-spoken.

MOR. Excellent! beleue me.

ASO. Not so, ladies, neither. 155

HED. But why Breeches, now?

PHA. Breeches, *quasi* beare-riches; when a gallant beares all his riches in his breeches:

AMO. Most fortunately *etymologyz'd*.

PHA. Nay, we haue another sport afore this, of *A thing done*, and, *Who did it*, &c. 160

PHI. I, good PHANTASTE, let's haue that: Distribute the *places*.

PHA. Why, I imagine, *A thing done*; HEDON thinks, *Who did it*; MORIA, *With what it was done*, ANAIDES, *Where it was done*, ARGVRION, *When it was done*; AMORPHVS, *For what cause it was done*, you PHILAVTIA, *What followed vpon the doing of it*, and this gentleman, *Who would haue done it better*. What? is't conceiu'd about? 170

ALL. Yes, yes.

PHA. Then speake you, sir. *Who would haue done it better*?

ASO. How! do's it beginne at me?

PHA. Yes, sir: This play is cal'd the *Crab*, it goes backward. 175

ASO. May I not name my selfe?

PHA. If you please, sir, and dare abide the venture of it.

ASO. Then, I would haue done it better, what euer it is.

iv. iii 148 rare,] rare Q Mary,] Mary Q Marry, F2 151 Well-spoken? Well-spoken Q mary] marry, F2 because—] because Q 152 speake,] speake Q taken, and] taken, and Q 154 Excellent! Excellent Q 155 so, ladies,] so Ladyes Q 156, 157 Breeches,] Breeches Q 158 breeches ] Breeches Q 159–203 Not in Q 174 me?] The question-mark in F1 faint in some copies and lost in others.

- 180 PHA. No doubt on't, sir: a good confidence. *What followed upon the act*, PHILAVTIA?  
 PHI. A few heate drops, and a moneths mirth  
 PHA. *For what cause*, AMORPHVS?  
 AMO. For the delight of ladies.
- 185 PHA. *When*, ARGVRION?  
 ARG. Last progresse.  
 PHA. *Where*, ANAIDES?  
 ANA. Why, in a paire of pain'd slops.  
 PHA. *With what*, MORIA?
- 190 MOR. With a glyster.  
 PHA. *Who*, HEDON?  
 HED. A trauailer.  
 PHA. Then, *The thing done* was, An oration was made.  
 Rehearse. An oration was made.
- 195 HED. By a trauailer.  
 MOR. With a glyster.  
 ANA. In a paire of pain'd slops,  
 ARG. Last progresse  
 AMO. For the delight of ladies.
- 200 PHI. A few heat drops, and a moneths mirth followed  
 PHA. And, this silent gentleman would haue done it better.  
 ASO. This was not so good, now.  
 PHI. In good faith, these vnhappy pages would be  
 205 whipt, for staying thus.  
 MOR. Beshrew my hand, and my heart, else.  
 AMO. I doe wonder at their protraction!  
 ANA. Pray VENVS, my whore haue not discouer'd her selfe to the rascally boyes, and that be the cause of their stay.
- 210 ASO. I must sute my selfe with another page. this idle PROSAITES will neuer be brought to wait well.  
 MOR. Sir, I haue a kinsman I could willingly wish to your seruice, if you would deigne to accept of him.

iv in 182, 200 moneths] months F<sub>2</sub> 192, 195 trauailer] traveller  
 F<sub>2</sub> 204 faith,] faith Q pages] Pages, Q 205 whipt,] whipt Q  
 206 heart,] hart Q 207 protraction!] protraction Q 208 VENVS,]  
 God Q 212 Sir.] Sir Q

A s o. And I shall bee glad (most sweet ladie) to imbrace  
him : where is hee ? 215

M o r. I can fetch him, sir, but I would bee loth to make  
you turne away your other page.

A s o. You shall not, most sufficient ladie, I will keepe  
both : pray you lets goe see him.

A r g. Whither goes my loue ? 220

A s o. Ile returne presently, I goe but to see a page, with  
this ladie.

A n a. As sure as fate, 't is so ; shee has opened all : A  
poxe of all *cockatrices*. Dam'me, if she haue plai'd loose  
with me, I'll cut her throat, within a haire's breadth, so it 225  
may be heal'd againe.

M e r. What, is he jealous of his *Hermaphrodite* ?

C v p. O, I, this will be excellent sport

P h i. P h a n t a s t e ! A r g v r i o n ! what ? you  
are sodainely strooke, me thinkes ! for loues sake let's haue 230  
some musike, till they come. *Ambition*, reach the *lyra*, I  
pray you.

H e d. Any thing to which my *Honour* shall direct mee.

P h i. Come, A m o r p h v s, cheare vp P h a n t a s t e.

A m o. It shall bee my pride, faire ladie, to attempt all 235  
that is in my power. But here is an instrument that (alone)  
is able to infuse soule in the most melancholique, and dull  
disposde creature vpon earth O ! let mee kisse my faire  
knees. Beauteous eares attend it.

H e d. Will you haue the Kisse, *Honour* ? 240

P h i. I, good *Ambition*.

IV III. 214 shall bee] shalbe Q imbrace] embrace F2 216  
him,] him Q 218 not,] not Q 219 *Exeunt*. add Q 220  
Whither Q 221 presently,] presently, Q page,] Page Q  
*Exeunt Asotus and Moria* add G 223 fate,] Fate Q 224  
Dam'me,] Damne mee Q 225 throat,] throate Q 226 *Exit*.  
add Q 227 jealous] Iealous Q 228 O,] O Q 229  
PHANTASTE ! ARGVRION !] *Phantaste, Argurion*, Q 230 sodainely]  
suddenly F2 strooke,] stroake Q struck F2 thinkes !] thinkes, Q  
loues sake] Gods will Q haue] ha' Q 231 musike,] Musique Q  
the *lyra*] the *lyra* F1 233 Honour] Honor Q 234 Come, AMOR-  
PHVS,] Come *Amorphus*, Q 235 pride, ladie,] pride Lady Q  
237 in] into F2 238 earth] earth, Q 239 knees] knees Q  
240 Kisse, *Honour*] Kisse *Honor*. Q 241 I,] I Q

## SONG

- O, That toy so soone should waste '  
 or so sweet a blisse  
 as a kisse,  
 245 Might not for euer last '  
 So sugred, so melting, so soft, so delicious,  
 The dew that lyes on roses,  
 When the morne her selfe discloses,  
 is not so precious.  
 250 O, rather then I would it smother,  
 Were I to taste such another ,  
 It should bee my wishing  
 That I might dye, kissing

H E D I made this dittie, and the note to it, vpon a kisse  
 255 that my *Honour* gaue me , how like you it, sir ?

A M O A prettie ayre ' in generall, I like it well : but in  
 particular, your long *die*-note did arride me most, but it  
 was somewhat too long I can shew one, almost of the same  
 nature, but much before it, and not so long, in a composition  
 260 of mine owne I thinke I haue both the note, and dittie  
 about me.

H E D. Pray you, sir, see

A M O. Yes, there is the note , and all the parts if I mis-  
 thinke not. I will read the dittie to your beauties here, but  
 265 first I am to make you familiar with the occasion, which  
 presents it selfe thus Vpon a time, going to take my leaue  
 of the Emperour, and kisse his great hands , there being  
 then present, the Kings of *France*, and *Arragon*, the Dukes  
 of *Sauoy*, *Florence*, *Orleance*, *Bourbon*, *Brunswick*, the

iv iii. After 241 SONG] Ode Q 242 O,] O Q 249 precious ]  
 pretious Q 250 then] than F2 253 dye, corr F1 dye Q, F1 originally  
 die F2 255 Honour] Honor Q, F2 sir ?] Sir Q 256 ayre ]  
 Ayre Q ayre, F2 well but] well But Q 257 particular]  
 particular Q 258 long ] long, Q 259 it,] The comma faint or lost in F1.  
 Note Q 260 owne ] owne Q 268 Kings Q, corr F1  
 long,] long, Q 260 owne ] owne Q 268 Kings Q, corr F1  
 kings F1 originally, F2 France] Fraunce Q Dukes Q, corr F1 .  
 dukes F1 originally, F2 269 Brunswick Q, corr. F1, F2 Brunswiche  
 F1 originally

Lantgrauce, Count *Palatine*, all which had seuerally feasted 270  
me ; besides, infinite more of inferiour persons, as Counts  
and others : it was my chance (the Emperour detain'd by  
some exorbitant affaire) to wait him the fift part of an houre,  
or much neere it. In which time (retyring my selfe into a  
bay-window) the beauteous ladie ANNABELL, neece to 275  
the Empresse, and sister to the King of *Arragon*, who hauing  
neuer before eyde mee, (but only heard the common report  
of my vertue, learning, and trauaile) fell into that extremitie  
of passion, for my loue, that shee there immediately  
swounded : physicians were sent for, she had to her chamber, 280  
so to her bed ; where (languishing some few daies) after  
many times calling vpon me, with my name in her lips, she  
expirde. As that (I must mourningly say) is the onely fault  
of my fortune, that, as it hath euer beene my hap to be  
sew'd to, by all ladies, and beauties, where I haue come, so, 285  
I neuer yet sojourn'd, or rested in that place, or part of the  
world, where some high-borne admirable faire feature died  
not for my loue.

MER O, the sweet power of trauaile ! are you guiltie of  
this, CVPID ? 290

CVP. No, MERCVRIE, and that his page (Cos)  
knowes, if he were here present to be sworne.

PHI. But, how doth this draw on the dittie, sir ?

MER. O, she is too quicke with him, he hath not deuiss'd  
that yet. 295

AMO. Mary, some houre before she departed, she

iv. iii. 270 Lantgrauce *corr* *Fr* Lantgrauce *Q*, *Fr* originally *Lanigrave*  
*F2* Count] *Count* *Q*, *Fr* originally (mis-corrected to 'Connt'), *F2*  
271 besides,] besides *Q* Counts] *Earles*, *Q* 272 (the) the *Fr*  
273 exorbitant] other *Q* fift] fifth *Q* 275 the] I encountered the *Q*  
beauteous *not in* *Q* ANNABELL,] *Annabel* *Q* 276 *Arragon*,] *Arragon*, *Q*  
hauing] (hauing *Q* 277 eyde] eyed *F2* (but) but *Q* 280  
swounded] sounded *Q* physicians] *Phisicians* *Q* for,] for, *Q* chamber,]  
chamber, *Q* 282 lips] mouth *Q* 283 mourningly] needes *Q* 284  
that,] that *Q* beene] bin *Q* 285 sew'd] sued *F2* to,] to *Q* come,]  
come, *Q*, *F2* 286 sojourn'd] sojourn'd *Q* 287 high-borne]  
great and *Q* feature] Creature *Q* 289 O,] O *Q* trauaile'] trauaile,  
*Q* 290 this,] this *Q* 291 No, MERCVRIE,] No *Mercury*, *Q* 292  
if] and *Q* 293 But,] But *Q* dittie, sir ?] *Ditty* Sir. *Q* 294 MER  
*Mor* *Q*, O,] O *Q* hum, *corr*. *Fr* hum, *Q*, *Fr* originally, *F2* 296  
Mary,] *Marry* *Q*, *F2*



bequeath'd to mee this *gloue*; which *golden legacie*, the  
Emperour himselfe tooke care to send after me, in sixe  
coaches, couer'd all with blacke vellet, attended by the  
300 state of his empire; all which he freely presented mee with,  
and I reciprocally (out of the same bountie) gaue to the  
lords who brought it: only reseruing the gift of the deceas'd  
ladie, vpon which I composde this *ode*, and set it to my most  
affected instrument, the *lyra*.

## SONG.

305 **T**Hou more then most sweet *gloue*,  
Vnto my more sweet loue,  
Suffer me to store with kisses  
This emptie lodging, that now misses  
The pure rosie hand, that ware thee,  
310 Whither then the kid, that bare thee.  
Thou art soft, but that was softer;  
CVPIDS selfe hath kist it ofter,  
Then e're he did his mothers doutes,  
Supposing her the Queene of loues,  
315 That was thy Mistresse,  
Best of *gloues*.

MER. Blasphemie, blasphemie, CVPID.

CVP. I, I'le reuenge it time inough, HERMES.

PHI. Good AMORPHVS, let's heare it sung.

320 AMO. I care not to admit that, since it pleaseth PHI-  
LAVTIA to request it.

HED. Heere, sir.

After he  
hath sung. AMO. Nay, play it, I pray you, you doe well, you doe  
well—How like you it, sir?

iv. iii 297 *golden legacie*, not in Q 299 blacke vellet] black-veluet  
Q black vellvet F2 300 presented mee with] gaue me Q 301  
gaue] gaue it Q 302 who corr F1 that Q, F1 originally, F2  
reseruing] reseruing, and respecting, Q 304 instrument.] Instrument  
Q After 304 Song] Ode Q 305, 310 then] than F2 306 loue,]  
Loue, Q 307 store] store, Q 309 hand,] hand Q 310 kid,]  
Kid Q thee] thee Q 313 Then] Than F2 314 loues, corr.  
F1 Loues Q loues, F1 originally, F2 315 Mistresse,] Mistrs Q  
318 inough] enough F2 320 admit] do Q 322 Heere,] Heere Q  
323 stage-dir After . sung] He sings added in Q to 324 he] she F3  
Nay, play it,] Nay play it Q 324 well—How] well. how Q it,] it Q

H E D. Verie well in troth. 325

A M O. But very well? O, you are a meere *mammothrept* in judgement, then. Why, doe you not obserue how excellently the dittie is affected in euerie place? that I doe not marrie a word of short quantitie to a long note? nor an ascending sillable to a descending tone? Besides, vpon the 330 word (*best*) there, you see how I doe enter with an odde *minnum*, and driue it thorow the *briefe*, which no intelligent Musician (I know) but wil affirme to be verie rare, extraordinarie, and pleasing

M E R. And yet not fit to lament the death of a ladie, for 335 all this.

C V P. Tut, hecre be they will swallow any thing.

P H A. Pray you, let me haue a coppie of it, A M O R P H V S.

P H I. And me too, in troth, I like it exceedingly.

A M O. I haue denied it to princes, neuerthesse to you 340 (the true female twinnes of perfection) I am wonne, to depart withall.

H E D I hope, I shall haue my *Honours* coppie.

P H A You are *ambitious* in that, H E D O N

A M O. How now, A N A I D E S! what is it hath conjur'd 344  
vp this distemperature in the circle of your face? *Who is return'd from seeking his page.*

A N A. S'llood, what haue you to doe? A pox vpon your  
filthie trauailing face, hold your tongue

H E D. Nay, doo'st heare, *muschefe*?

A N A. Away, muske-cat. 350

IV m. 325 troth] troath Q 326 O,] O Q 327 judgement, *corr.*  
F1 judgement Q judgement F1 originally then Why,] then  
why Q 329 quantitie] quantity, Q note? ] Note, Q 330  
ascending] Q printed originally 2scending descending] descending  
Q, F2 tone? Besides,] Tone Besides Q 331 (*best*)] *Best*  
Q 332 thorow] through F2 333 Musician] *Musitan* Q  
335 ladie,] Lady Q 337 Tut,] Tut 338 you, *corr* F1 you Q, F1  
originally it,] it Q 339 troth,] troath Q 340 neuerthesse]  
neuertheleffe F1 (*printing the wrong ligature*) 341 wonne,] *wonne*  
Q 343 hope,] hope Q Honours] Honors Q, F2 344  
that,] that Q Enter *Anaides* add Q 345 stage-dir *not in* Q  
now, ANAIDES!] now *Anaides*? 347 S'llood,] 'Sblod Q Why,  
F2 pox] pox of God Q vpon *corr.* F1 o' Q. vpo' F1  
originally, F2 348 face,] Beard, Q 349 heare,] heare Q  
350 Away,] Away Q

A M O. I say to thee, thou art rude, debauch't, impudent, coarse, impolisht, a frapler, and base.

H E D. Heart of my father, what a strange alteration has halfe a yeeres haunting of ordinaries wrought in this fellow !  
 355 that came with a *tuff-taffata* ierkin to towne but the other day, and a paire of penillesse hose, and now he is turn'd H E R C V L E S, he wants but a club.

A N A Sir, you with the pencill on your chinne ; I will garter my hose with your guts, and that shall be all

360 M E R. S'h'd, what rare fireworkes be heere ? flash, flash.

P H A What's the matter H E D O N ? can you tell ?

H E D. Nothing, but that hee lackes crownes, and thinkes  
 363 weele lend him some, to be friends.

*Asotus  
returns  
with  
Moria,  
and  
Morus.*

A S O. Come, sweet ladie, in good truth I'll haue it, you shall not denie me M O R V S, perswade your aunt I may haue her picture, by any meanes.

M O R V. Yes, sir · good aunt now, let him haue it, hee will vse mee the better, if you loue me, doe, good aunt

M O R. Well, tell him, he shall haue it.

370 M O R V. Master, you shall haue it, she saies.

A S O. Shall I ? thanke her, good page

C V P. What, has he entertain'd the foole ?

M E R. I, heele wait close, you shall see, though the  
*begger* hang off, awhile

375 M O R V. Aunt, my master thanks you.

M O R. Call him hither.

M O R V. Yes Master.

IV III. 351 thee, thou] thee Thou Q debauch't, *not in Q* 352  
 coarse,] course, Q, F2 impolisht,] impolisht ; Q 354 fellow !]  
 fellow ? Q 355 the other] th'other Q 356 and a . hose, *not in Q*  
 of om F3 358 you with chinne, *not in Q* 359 guts,] guttes, Q  
 Exit add Q 360 S'h'd,] 'S'h'd Q 362 Nothing,] Nothing Q  
 crownes] mony Q 363 some,] some Q, F2 Enter Asot Mor.  
 Morus add Q 364 stage-dir *not in Q* stage-dir Moria,] Moria F2  
 Come,] Come Q 365 me Morvs,] me, Morus Q 367, 370,  
 375, 377 MORV *corr* FI Morus Q MOR. FI *originally* Mo F2  
 367 Yes,] Yes Q · Yea, F2 it,] it, Q 368 better,] better, F2 doe,]  
 do Q doe F2 369 him,] him Q 369, 376, 378, 388 Mor ]  
 Moria Q 370 Master] Maister Q saies ] saies ; Q 371 her,] her  
 Q 372 What,] What Q 373 close,] close Q 374 off, awhile] off Q  
 375 Aunt,] Aunt Q master] maister Q (so 388) 376 hither] hether Q  
 377 Yes Master *corr* FI. Yes maister Q Yes, master FI *originally*, F2

MOR. Yes, in veritie, and gaue me this pursse, and he has promis'd me a most fine dogge; which he will haue drawne, with my picture, he saies: and desires most 380 vehemently to bee knowne to your ladiships.

PHA. Call him hither, 'tis good groping such a gull.

MORV. Master ASOTVS, master ASOTVS.

ASO. For loues sake, let me goe: you see, I am call'd to the ladies. 385

ARG. Wilt thou forsake me then?

ASO. God so, what would you haue me doe?

MOR. Come hither, master ASOTVS. I doe ensure your ladiships, he is a gentleman of a verie worthie desert: and of a most bountiful nature. You must shew and in- 390 sinuate your selfe responsible, and equiualent now to my commendment. Good *Honors*, grace him

ASO I protest (more then most faire ladies) I doe wish all varietie of diuine pleasures, choice sports, sweet musique, rich fare, braue attire, soft beds, and silken thoughts attend 395 these faire beauties. Will it please your ladiship to weare this chaine of pearle, and this diamond, for my sake?

ARG. O.

ASO. And you, Madame, this iewell, and pendants.

ARG. O. 400

PHA. Wee know not how to deserue these bounties, out of so slight merit, ASOTVS.

PHI. No, in faith, but there's my gloue for a fauour.

PHA. And soone, after the reuells, I will bestow a garter on you. 405

ASO. O Lord, ladies! it is more grace then euer I could

iv m. 378 Yes, in veritie] Yes in very truth Q 380 he saies: not in Q 382 him] him him F<sub>2</sub> hither] hether Q 383 MORV. corr F<sub>1</sub> *Moria* Q. MOR F<sub>1</sub> originally Master] Maister Q (twice) 384 loues] Gods Q 387 God] Gods Q 388 hither, master Asotvs.] hither maister Asotus, Q 389 desert ] desart, Q 392 *Honors*,] *Honors* Q 393-6 I beauties. Q *prints in italic*. 393 then] than F<sub>2</sub> 394 pleasures] *pleasure* Q sports] *sport* Q sport F<sub>3</sub> 395 attre] *Attres* Q thoughts] *Thoughts*, Q. thoughts, F<sub>2</sub> 394-5 sports . attre] *sport* . . *Attres* Q Cf iii v 42, 47 397 sake?] sake Q 399 you, Madame,] you Madam Q 401 bounties,] bounties Q 403 No,] No Q there's] the's Q fauour] fauor Q 404 soone, . . reuells,] soone . . . Reuells Q 406 Lord, ladies!] Lord Ladyes Q then] than F<sub>2</sub>

haue hop'd, but that it pleaseth your ladiships to extend.  
I protest, it is enough, that you but take knowledge of my  
——if your ladiships want embroidered gownes, tires of any  
410 fashion, rebatu's, iewells, or carkanets, any thing what-  
soever, if you vouchsafe to accept

C V P And for it, they will helpe you to shooe-ties, and  
deuices

A S O I cannot vtter my selfe (deare beauties) but, you  
415 can conceue——

A R G O

P H A Sir, we will acknowledge your seruice, doubt not  
henceforth, you shall bee no more A S O T V S to vs, but  
our *gold-finch*, and wee your *cages*

420 A S O O V E N V S, Madams! how shall I deserue this?  
if I were but made acquainted with H E D O N, now, I'll  
trie pray you away

M E R How he praises *Money* to goe away from him!

A S O A M O R P H V S, a word with you here's a watch  
425 I would bestow vpon you, pray you make me knowne to that  
gallant

A M O That I will, sir Monsieur H E D O N, I must  
intreat you to exchange knowledge with this gentleman

H E D 'Tis a thing (next to the water we expect) I thirst  
430 after, sir Good Monsieur A S O T V S

A S O. Good Monsieur H E D O N, I would be glad to be  
lou'd of men of your ranke, and spirit, I protest Please  
you to accept this paire of bracelets, sir they are not worth  
the bestowing——

435 M E R O, H E R C V L E S, how the gentleman purchases!  
this must needs bring A R G V R I O N to a consumption

iv in 407 extend ] extend, Q 408 protest, enough,] protest  
enough Q 410 rebatu s] Rebatus Q 410-11 whatsoever,] what  
soever, Q 411 accept ] accept — F. 412 it,] it Q 414 but,] but,  
Q 417 Sir,] Sir Q seruice ] seruice Q 418 henceforth,] henceforth Q  
420 V E N V S, Madams!] God Madams Q 421 H E D O N, now,] *Hedon*  
now, Q 423 him!] him Q 427, 430, 431 Monsieur] *Monsieur* Q  
427 will,] will Q H E D O N,] *Hedon* Q 430 after,] after Q 433  
bracelets, sir ] Bracelets Sir, Q 434 bestowing—] bestowing.  
Q 435 O, H E R C V L E S,] O *Hercules*, Q purchases!] pur  
chases? Q

HED. Sir, I shall neuer stand in the merit of such bountie, I feare.

ASO. O, VENVS, sir; your acquaintance shall bee sufficient. And if at any time you neede my bill, or my 440 bond.

ARG. O, ô.

*Argurion  
swounes.*

AMO. Helpe the ladie there.

MOR. Gods deare, ARGVRION! Madame, how doe you? 445

ARG. Sicke.

PHA. Haue her forth, and giue her aire.

ASO. I come againe strait, ladies.

MER. Well, I doubt, all the physiqe hee has will scarce recouer her. shee's too farre spent. 450

*Act IIII. Scene IIII.*

PHILAVTIA, GELAIÀ, ANAIDES, COS, PRO-  
SAITES, PHANTASTE, MORIA, A-  
MORPHVS, HEDON.

O Here's the water come: fetch glasses, page.

GEL. Heart of my body, here's a coile indeed, with your iealous humours. Nothing but whore, and bitch, and all the villanous swaggering names you can thinke on? S'lid, take your bottle, and put it in your guts for me, I'll see you 5 poxt ere I follow you any longer.

ANA. Nay, good punke, sweete rascall; dam' mee, if I am iealous now.

iv in 437 bountie,] Bounty Q 439 O, VENVS,] O Lord Q 441  
bond] bond—Fz 442 stage-dir swounes] swounes Q 444 ARGVRION!]  
Argurion Q 447 forth,] forth Q 448 strait,] streight Q Exeunt  
Asotus, Morus, and Argurion add G 449 doubt,] doubt Q has] ha's,  
Q After 450 Exeunt Asotus, Morus, Argurion Q iv iv Act IIII.  
Scene IIII] SCENA 4 Q PHILAVTIA, .. HEDON] Anasides Gelaià. Cos.  
Prosaites Philautia Phantaste] Moria Amorphus Hedon Q Re-enter  
Anasides with Gelaià, Prosaites, and Cos, with the bottles G, continuing  
the scene 1 O] Ph: O Q glasses,] Glasses Q 2 indeed,] indeed Q  
3 humours] humors Q 4 S'lid] 'Slid Q 6 longer] longer? Q  
7 Nay,] Nay Q rascall,] rascall? Fz dam' mee,] damne me Q

G E L. That's true indeede : pray let's goe.

10 M O R. What's the matter, there ?

G E L. S'light, he has mee vpon intergatories, (nay, my mother shall know how you vse me) where I haue beene ? and, why I should stay so long ? and, how ist possible ? and withall, calls me at his pleasure, I know not how many  
15 cockatrices, and things.

M O R. In truth and sadnesse, these are no good *epitaphs*,  
A N A I D E S, to bestow vpon any gentlewoman . and (Ile ensure you) if I had knowne you would haue dealt thus with my daughter, she should neuer haue fancied you so deeply,  
20 as shee has done. Goe too.

A N A. Why, doe you heare, mother M O R I A. Heart !

M O R. Nay, I pray you, sir, doe not sweare.

A N A. Sweare ? why ? S'llood, I haue sworne afore now, I hope. Both you and your daughter mistake me. I haue  
25 not honor'd A R E T E, that is held the worthiest ladie in court (next to C Y N T H I A) with halfe that obseruance, and respect, as I haue done her in priuate, howsoever outwardly I haue carried my selfe carelesse, and negligent Come, you are a foolish *punke*, and know not when you are well implor'd.  
30 Kisse me, come on. Doe it, I say.

M O R. Nay, indeed I must confesse, shee is apt to misprision. But I must haue you leaue it, minion.

A M O. How now, A S O T V S ? how do's the ladie ?

A S O. Faith, ill. I haue left my page with her, at her  
35 lodging.

H E D. O, here's the rarest water that euer was tasted : fill him some.

14, 14 9 indeede.] indeed, Q 10 matter.] matter Q 11 S'light.] Slight Q  
intergatories] Interrogatories F3 nay.] nay Q 13 and.] and Q  
14 withall.] with-all Q withall F2 pleasure.] pleasure, Q 16-17  
*epitaphs*, ANAIDES.] Epithites *Anaides* Q 21 heare.] heare Q  
Heart !] Heart Q 22 Nay, you, sir.] Nay .. you Sir Q 23  
S'llood.] Sblood Q om F2 now.] now Q 24 me.] me, Q  
25 ARETE.] *Arete* Q 26 court] the Court Q obseruance.] obser-  
uance Q 27 done] doone Q 28 carelesse.] carelesse Q Come.]  
Come Q you] yov F2 29 implor'd] employde Q 30 me, Q  
come] me Come Q it.] it Q 31 to] too Q 32 it.] it Q  
Enter *Asotus* add Q 33 now.] now Q 34 Faith.] Fayth Q  
her.] her Q 36 O.] O Q

- PRO. What I has my master a new page ?
- MER. Yes, a kinsman of the ladie MORIAS : you must waite better now, or you are casheer'd, PROSAITES 40
- ANA. Come, gallants, you must pardon my foolish humour : when I am angrie, that any thing crosses mee, I grow impatient straight. Here, I drinke to you.
- PHI. O, that we had fve, or sixe bottles more of this liquor. 45
- PHA. Now I commend your iudgement, AMORPHVS, who's that knockes ? Looke, page.
- MOR. O, most delicious, a little of this would make ARGVRION well
- PHA. O, no, gue her no cold drinke, by any meanes. 50
- ANA. S'llood, this water is the spirit of wine, I'll be hang'd else
- CVP. Here's the ladie ARETE, Madame.

*Act IIII. Scene v.*

ARETE, MORIA, PHANTASTE, PHILAVTIA,  
ANAIDES, GELAIA, <MORVS,> COS, PROSAITES,  
AMORPHVS, ASOTVS, HEDON,  
MERCVRIE, CVPID.

What ! at your beuer, gallants ?

MOR. Wilt please your ladiship drinke ? tis of the new fountayne water

ARE. Not I, MORIA, I thanke you. Gallants, you are

iv. iv. 38 What I] What ? Q master] Maister Q 39 Yes.] Yes Q  
MORIAS] MORIA's Fz 40 casheer'd.] casheer'd Q 41 Come,  
gallants.] Come Gallants, Q 42 humour ] humor, Q 43  
Here.] Here Q 44 O.] O Q fve.] fve Q 46 AMORPHVS,]  
Amorphus Q AMORPHUS, Fz 47 Looke,] looke Q Exit Cos.  
add G 48 O.] O Q 50 O, no, . . drinke,] O no . drinke Q  
51 S'llood.] Sblood, Q om Fz 53 CVP ] Cos Fz ARETE,] Arete Q  
iv. v. Act IIII. Scene v.] SCENA 5 Q ARETE, . . CVPID ] Arete.  
Phantaste. Philavtra Moria Anaides Gelaia. Cos | Prosaites.  
Amorphus Asotus. Hedon Mercury Cupid Q Re-enter Cos,  
with Arete, G, at iv iv 53, continuing the scene 1 What I] Arete.  
What Q beuer,] Beuer Q 2 drinke ?] drinke, Q to drinke ?  
Fz 4 MORIA,] Moria, Q you. Gallants,] you : Gallants Q 4-10  
Gallants, . . . presence ] Gallants you must prouide for some solemne



5 for this night free, to your peculiar delights; CYNTHIA  
will haue no sports: when shee is pleas'd to come forth, you  
shall haue knowledge. In the meane time, I could wish you  
did prouide for solemne reuells, and some vnlook't-for deuice  
of wit, to entertaine her, against she should vouchsafe to  
10 grace your pastimes with her presence.

A M O. What say you to a *Masque*?

H E D. Nothing better, if the proiect were new, and rare.

A R E. Why, Ile send for C R I T E S, and haue his aduice;  
be you ready in your indeauours. He shall discharge you of  
15 the inuentiue part.

P H A. But, will not your ladiship stay?

A R E. Not now, P H A N T A S T E.

P H I. Let her goe, I pray you, good ladie *Sobrietie*, I am  
glad wee are rid of her.

20 P H A. What a set face the gentlewoman has, as shee were  
still going to a sacrifice?

P H I. O, shee is the extraction of a dozen of *Puritans*, for  
a looke.

M O R. Of all *Nymphs* i' the court, I cannot away with  
25 her; 'tis the coursest thing——

P H I. I wonder, how CYNTHIA can affect her so aboue  
the rest! Here be they are euery way as faire as shee, and  
a thought fairer, I trow.

P H A. I, and as ingenious, and conceited as shee.

30 M O R. I, and as politique as shee, for all shee sets such  
a fore-head on't.

P H I. Would I were dead, if I would change to be  
CYNTHIA.

P H A. Or I.

35 M O R. Or I.

Reuells to night, *Cynthia* is minded to come forth, and grace your  
sports with her presence, therefore I could wish there were some thing  
extraordinary to entertaine her. Q 12 proiect] Inuention or Project  
Q new,] new Q 13 CRITES] Criticus Q 14 be you] you will be Q  
indeauours, Q 14-15 He part not in Q 16  
But,] Yes, but Q 17 now,] now Q Exit add Q 18 you,]  
you; Q 22 O,] O Q 26 wonder,] wounder Q 28 thought]  
thought, Q 29 ingenious,] ingenious F2 32 dead,] dead Q

A M O. And there's her minion C R I T E S ! why his aduice more then A M O R P H V S ? haue not I inuention, afore him ? Learning, to better that inuention, aboue him ? and infanted, with pleasant trauaile——

A N A. Death, what talke you of his learning ? he vnder- 40 stands no more then a schoole-boy ; I haue put him downe my selfe a thousand times (by this aire) and yet I neuer talkt with him but twice, in my life : you neuer saw his like. I could neuer get him to argue with me, but once, and then, because I could not construe an Author I quoted at 45 first sight, hee went away, and laught at me. By H E R C V L E S, I scorne him, as I doe the sodden *Nymph*, that was here e'en now, his mistris A R E T E : And I loue my selfe for nothing else.

H E D. I wonder the fellow do's not hang himselfe, being 50 thus scorn'd, and contemn'd of vs that are held the most accomplitst societie of gallants !

M E R. By your selues, none else

H E D. I protest, if I had no musique in me, no courtship, that I were not a reueller and could dance, or had not those 55 excellent qualities that giue a man life, and perfection, but a meere poore scholer as he is, I thinke I should make some desperate way with my selfe, whereas now (would I might neuer breathe more) if I doe know that creature in this kindome, with whom I would change. 60

C V P. This is excellent · well, I must alter all this soone.

M E R. Looke you doe, C V P I D. The bottles haue wrought, it seemes.

A S O. O, I am sorry the reuells are crost. I should ha'

IV v. 36 CRITES [ Criticus , Q 37 then] than F2 not [ I not Q inuention,] inuention F2 38-9 and infanted, with pleasant trauaile—] and Trauaile — Q 41 then] than F2 43 twice, corr F1 twice Q twice F1 originally 44 like] like: Q 45 then,] then Q an Author I quoted] a peece of Horace Q 46 away,] away Q 46-7 HERCVLES] Gods will Q 47 Nymph,] Nymph Q 48 e'en now,] euen now, Q 53 selues,] selues Q 54 courtship,] Courtship; Q 55 dance] daunce Q 58 selfe,] selfe, Q 59 breathe] breath Q, F2 61 well,] well Q all this corr. F1, F2 this Q, F1 originally 62 doe,] do Q 62-3 The seemes not in Q 64 O,] O Q I am .. crost not in Q 64-5 should ha' tickled] shall tickle Q

65 tickled it soone I did neuer appeare till then. S'lid, I am  
the neatlyest-made gallant i' the companie, and haue the  
best presence; and my dancing—well, I know what our  
vsher said to me, last time I was at the schoole: would I  
might haue lead PHILAVTIA in the measures, and it had  
70 beene the gods will I am most worthy, I am sure.

MORVS Master, I can tell you newes, the ladie kist mee  
yonder, and plaid with me, and sayes shee lou'd you once,  
as well as shee do's me, but that you cast her off.

ASO. Peace, my most esteemed page.

75 MORVS. Yes

ASO. What lucke is this, that our reuels are dasht?  
Now was I beginning to glister, i' the very high way of  
preferment And CYNTHIA had but seene me dance a  
straine, or doe but one trick, I had beene kept in court, I  
80 should neuer haue needed to looke towards my friends  
againe.

AMO. Containe your selfe. You were a fortunate yong  
man, if you knew your owne good which I haue now  
projected, and will presently multiply vpon you. *Beauties*,  
85 and *Valors*, your vouchsaf'd applause to a motion The  
humorous CYNTHIA hath, for this night, with-drawne  
the light of your de-light—

PHA. Tis true AMORPHVS, what may we doe to  
redeeme it?

90 AMO. Redceme that we cannot, but, to create a new  
flame, is in our power. Here is a gentleman my scholer,  
whom (for some priuate reasons me specially mouing) I am  
couetous to gratifie with title of Master, in the noble, and  
subtile science of *Courtship*: For which grace, he shall this  
95 night in court, and in the long gallery, hold his publique  
*Act*, by open challenge, to all *Masters* of the mysterie

rv v 65 soone ] soone, Q S'lid,] Shd Q 67 dancing] dauncmg Q  
well, not in Q our] the Q 68 me, last] me the last Q 69 might have  
lead] might leade Q measures] measure Q and] an F2 69-70 it had  
beene the gods] 'twere gods Q 70 Enter Morus add Q 71  
Master.] Maister Q 72 with me,] with me, Q 73 off] of Q 74  
Peace.] Peace Q 76-100 Not in Q 77 high way] high-way F2  
78 And] An G 81 againe] agen F2 96 mysterie] mysterie, F2

whatsoever, to play at the foure choice, and principall weapons thereof, viz. the *bare Accost*, the *better Regard*, the *solemne Adresse*, and the *perfect Close*. What say you?

A L L. Excellent, excellent, A M O R P H V S. 100

A M O. Well, let vs then take our time by the fore-head: I will instantly haue bills drawne, and aduanc'd in euery angle of the court. Sir, betray not your too much ioy. A N A I D E S, wee must mixe this gentleman with you in acquaintance, Monsieur A S O T V S. 105

A N A. I am easily intreated to grace any of your friends, A M O R P H V S.

A S O. Sir, and his friends shall likewise grace you, sir. Nay, I begin to know my selfe, now.

A M O. O, you must continue your bounties. 110

A S O. Must I? why, I'll giue him this ruby on my finger. Doe you heare, sir? I doe heartily wish your acquaintance, and I partly know my selfe worthy of it; please you, sir, to accept this poore ruby, in a ring, sir. The *poesie* is of my owne deuice. *Let this blush for me*, sir. 115

A N A. So it must for me, too. For I am not asham'd to take it.

M O R V S. Sweet man! by my troth, master, I loue you, will you loue me, too? for my aunts sake? Ile waite well, you shall see. Ile still bee here. Would I might neuer stirre, 120 but you are a fine man in these clothes, Master, shall I haue 'hem, when you haue done with them?

IV v. 97 choice,] choice F<sub>2</sub> 101 Well, . fore-head ] Gallants, thinke vpon your Time, and take it by the forehead, Q 102-3 I will . 109 not in Q 105 acquaintance, Monsieur] acquaintance. Mounseieur Q 108 you,] you Q 109 Nay.] Nay Q selfe,] selfe Q 112 Between 'finger' and 'I doe heartily' Q *inserts*

*Hed* Come Ladies; but stay we shall want one to Lady it in our Masque in place of *Argurion*

*Anas* Why my page shall do it, *Gelasa*.

*Hed* Troth and he'll do it well, it shalbe so. *Exeunt*

*Asot* Do you heere Sir, . .

heartily] hartely Q 114 you,] you Q ruby, . . ring,] Ruby . . . Ring Q 115 deuice ] device, F<sub>3</sub> me, sir ] me Sir Q 117 *Exit* add Q 118 man ] man, Q troth, master,] troath maister Q loue you,] loue you, Q 119 me, too] me to Q well,] well Q 120 see ] see, Q 121 a fine . . clothes,] in gay clothes. Q 121-2 Master . . them? not in Q

As o. As for that, M O R V S, thou shalt see more here-  
after : in the meane time, by this are, or by this feather,  
125 Ile doe as much for thee, as any gallant shall doe for his  
page, whatsoeuer, in this court, corner of the world, or  
kingdome.

M E R. I wonder, this gentleman should affect to keepe  
a foole ! mee thinkes, he makes sport enough with himselfe.

130 C V P. Well, P R O S A I T E S, 'twere good you did waite  
closer.

P R O. I, Ile looke to it ; 'tis time

C o s. The reuells would haue beene most sumptuous to  
night, if they had gone forward.

135 M E R. They must needs, when al the choisest singularities  
of the court were vp in pantofles ; ne're a one of them, but  
was able to make a whole shew of it selfe.

Within A s o. Sirrah, a torch, a torch.

P R O O, what a call is there ! I will haue a *canzonet*  
140 made, with nothing in it, but *sirrah* ; and the burthen shall  
be, *I come*.

M E R. How now, C V P I D, how doe you like this change ?

C V P. Faith, the thred of my deuce is crackt, I may goe  
leepe till the reuelling musique awake me.

145 M E R. And then too, C V P I D, without you had pre-  
uented the *Fountainne*. Alas, poore god, that remembers  
not *selfe-Loue*, to bee prooffe against the violence of his  
quiuer ! Well, I haue a plot vpon these prizers, for which,  
I must presently find out C R I T E S, and with his assistance,  
150 pursue it to a high straine of laughter, or M E R C V R I E  
hath lost of his mettall.

iv v 123 that,] that Q 123-4 hereafter ] here after, Q 125 thee,]  
thee Q 126 page,] Page Q 127 *Exeunt* add Q *Exeunt all*  
but the Pages G 128 wonder,] wonder Q 129 foole !]  
Foole, Q thinkes,] thinkes Q 130 Well, PROSAITES,] Well  
Prosaites Q 133-4 The... forward ] Wee are like to haue sumptuous  
Reuells to night Surs Q 134 *Exit* add G 135 They] We Q  
needs,] needes Q 136 were] are Q pantofles,] Pantofles, Q 137  
was] is Q 138 Aso ] *Hed* Q stage-dir. *Within*,] Hedon within.  
Q 139 O,] O Q there] there ? Q 140 made,] made Q it,]  
it Q 140-1 shall be,] shalbe Q 141 *Exeunt Omnes* add Q: *Exit*, [i.e.  
Prosaites ] G 142-51 Not in Q 143 thred] threed *Fa* 151  
*Exeunt*, add G, but Cupid leaves at 144

*Act v. Scene I.*

MERCVRIE, CRITES.

IT is resolu'd on, CRITES, you must doe it.

LCRI. The grace diuineſt MERCVRIE hath done me,  
In this vouchsafde diſcouerie of himſelfe,  
Binds my obseruance in the vtmost terme  
Of satisfaction, to his godly will :

5

Though I professe (without the affectation  
Of an enforc'd, and form'd austeritie)

I could be willing to enioy no place

With so vnequall natures. MER. We beleue it.

But for our sake, and to inflict iust paines

10

On their prodigious follies, aide vs now .

No man is, presently, made bad, with ill.

And good men, like the sea, should still maintaine

Their noble taste, in midst of all fresh humours,  
That flow about them, to corrupt their streames,

15

Bearing no season, much lesse salt of goodnesse

It is our purpose, CRITES, to correct,

And punish, with our laughter, this nights sport

Which our court-Dors so heartily intend :

And by that worthy scorne, to make them know

20

How farre beneath the dignitie of man

Their serious, and most practis'd actions are.

CR I. I, but though MERCVRIE can warrant out

His vnder-takings, and make all things good,

Out of the powers of his diuinitie,

25

Th'offence will be return'd with weight on me,

That am a creature so despisde, and poore ,

When the whole Court shall take it selfe abusde

By our *ironicall* confederacie.

MER. You are decei'd. The better race in court

30

That haue the true nobilitie, call'd vertue,

Will apprehend it, as a gratefull right

v 1. Act. . CRITES.] ACT V. SCENE I | *The Same.* | *Enter Mercury and*  
*Crites. G This scene is not in Q*

- Done to their separate merit · and approue  
 The fit rebuke of so ridiculous heads,  
 35 Who with their apish customes, and forc'd garbes,  
 Would bring the name of courtier in contempt,  
 Did it not liue vnblemisht in some few,  
 Whom equall I o v e hath lou'd, and P h æ b v s form'd  
 Of better mettall, and in better mould.
- 40 C R I. Well, since my leader on is M E R C V R I E,  
 I shall not feare to follow If I fall,  
 My proper vertue shall be my reliefe,  
 That follow'd such a cause, and such a chiefe.

## Act v. Scene II.

A S O T V S A M O R P H V S.

- N O more, if you loue mee, good master, you are incom-  
 patible to liue withall Send mee for the ladies  
 A m o Nay, but intend me  
 A s o. Feare me not, I warrant you, sir.
- 5 A m o Render not your selfe a refractarie, on the sodaine.  
 I can allow well, you should repute highly, heartily (and to  
 the most) of your own endowments; it giues you forth to  
 the world the more assur'd: but with reseruatiō of an eye,  
 to be alwaies turn'd dutifully back vpon your teacher.
- 10 A s o. Nay, good sir, leaue it to mee. Trust mee with  
 trussing all the points of this action, I pray S'hld, I hope  
 we shall find wit to performe the *science*, as well as another.
- A m o. I confesse you to be of an aped, and docible  
 humour. Yet, there are certaine *puntilioes*, or (as I may  
 15 more nakedly insinuate them) certaine intrinsecate strokes,  
 and wardes, to which your actiuitie is not yet amounted.  
 As your *gentile dor*, in colours. For supposition, your mistris  
 appeares heere in *prize*, ribbanded with *greene*, and *yellow*;

v 1 43 [Exeunt add G. v 11 Act. AMORPHVS] SCENE II. [Another  
 Room in the Same | Enter Asotus and Amorphus. G This scene is not in Q  
 5 sodaine] sudden F2 7 your own corr. F1, F2 your F1 originally  
 10 good F2 good, F1 13 aped] apted W (after Lewis Theobald)  
 18 greene, and yellow corr F1, F2 greene, and yellow F1 originally

now it is the part of euery obsequious seruant, to be sure to haue daily about him copie, and varietie of colours, to be 20 presently answerable to any hourelly, or half-hourelly change in his mistris reuolution.—

A s o. (I know it, sir.

A m o. Giue leaue, I pray you) which if your *Antagonist*, or player-against-you shall ignorantly be without, and your 25 selfe can produce ; you giue him the *dor*.

A s o. I, I, sir.

A m o Or, if you can possesse your opposite, that the *greene* your mistris weares, is her reioycing or exultation in his scruiue, the *yellow*, suspicion of his truth, (from her 30 height of affection .) and that he (greenly credulous) shall withdraw thus, in priuate, and from the abundance of his pocket (to displace her jelous conceit) steale into his hat the colour, whose *bluenesse* doth expresse truenesse, (shee being nor so, nor so affected) you giue him the *dor*. 35

A s o Doe not I know it, sir ?

A m o. Nay, good——swell not aboute your vnderstanding. There is yet a third *dor*, in colours.

A s o. I know it too, I know it

A m o Doe you know it too ? what is it ? Make good 40 your knowledge.

A s o Why it is——no matter for that.

A m o. Doe it, on pœne of the *dor*.

A s o. Why ? what is't, say you ?

A m o Loe, you haue giuen your selfe the *dor*. But I will 45 remonstrate to you the third *dor* ; which is not, as the two former *dors*, indicatiue, but deliberatiue : As how ? As thus. Your *Riualls*, with a dutifull, and serious care, lying in his bed, meditating how to obserue his mistris, dispatcheth his lacquay to the chamber, early, to know what her 50 colours are for the day, with purpose to apply his weare that day, accordingly : You lay wait before, preoccupie the

v. 11 25 -you] -you, F2 29 *greene* corr F1, F2 *greene* F1 originally  
32 abundance] abundance F2 34 *truenesse*, corr F1, F2 *true-*  
*nesse*; F1 originally 44 Why ?] Why, F2 51 day.]  
day, F2



chamber-maide, corrupt her, to returne false colours ; He followes the fallacie ; comes out accoutred to his beleeu'd  
 55 instructions ; your mistresse smiles ; and you giue him the *dor*.

A s o. Why, so I told you, sir, I knew it.

A m o. Tolde mee ? It is a strange outrecuidance ! your humour too much redoundeth.

60 A s o. Why, sir, what, doe you thinke you know more ?

A m o. I know that a cooke may as soone, and properly be said to smel wel, as you to be wise. I know these are most cleere, and cleane strokes. But then, you haue your *passages*, and *imbroccata's* in *courtship* ; as the *bitter Bob* in  
 65 wit ; the *Reuerse* in face, or wry-mouth , and these more subtle, and secure offenders. I will example vnto you. Your opponent makes entrie, as you are ingag'd with your mistresse. You seeing him, close in her eare, with this whisper (here comes your *Babion*, disgrace him) and withall,  
 70 stepping off, fall on his bosome, and turning to her, politiquely, aloud say, ladie, regard this noble gentleman, a man rarely parted, second to none in this court ; and then, stooping ouer his shoulder, your hand on his brest, your mouth on his back-side, you giue him the *Reuerse* stroke,  
 75 with this *Sanna*, or *Storkes-bill*, which makes vp your wits *Bob*, most bitter.

A s o. Nay, for heauens sake, teach me no more I know all as well—S'lid, if I did not, why was I nominated ? why did you chuse mee ? why did the ladies pricke out mee ?  
 80 I am sure there were other gallants. But me of all the rest ? By that light, and as I am a courtier, would I might neuer stirre, but 't is strange. Would to the lord, the ladies would come once.

Act v. Scene III.

MORPHIDES, AMORPHVS, ASOTVS, HEDON,  
ANAIDES, THE THRONG. LADIES, CI-  
TIZEN, WIFE, PAGES, TAYLOR,  
MERCER, PERFVMER,  
JEWELLER, & C.

S Ignior, the gallants and ladies are at hand. Are you  
readie, sir?

A M O. Instantly. Goe, accomplish your attire. Cousin  
MORPHIDES, assist me, to make good the doore with  
your officious tyrannie. 5

C I T. By your leaue my masters there, pray you let's  
come by.

P A G. You by? why should you come by, more then we?

W I F. Why, sir? Because he is my brother, that playes  
the prizes. 10

M O R. Your brother?

C I T. I, her brother, sir, and we must come in.

T A Y. Why, what are you?

C I T. I am her husband, sir.

T A Y. Then thrust forward your head. 15

A M O. What tumult is there?

M O R. Who's there? beare backe there. Stand from the  
doore.

A M O. Enter none but the ladies, and their hang-bies;  
welcome *Beauties*, and your kind *Shadowes*. 20

H E D. This countrie ladie, my friend, good signior  
A M O R P H V S.

A N A. And my *cockatrice*, heere.

A M O. She is welcome.

v. iii. Enter Morphides. G, continuing the scene This scene is not  
in Q. THRONG ] THRONG, F2 6 CIT ] Citizen [within ] G (so 14,  
8 PAG ] Pages [within ] G then ] than F2 9 WIF ] Citizen's Wife.  
[within ] G 13 TAY. ] Taylor [within ] G (so 15) 19 (After 'hang-bies')  
Enter Phantaste, Philautia, Argurion, Moria, Hedon and Anades,  
introducing two Ladies G After 20 The Citizen and his Wife,  
Pages, &c appear at the door. G 23 cockatrice, ] Cockatrice F2

25 M O R. Knocke those same pages there; and goodman Cokescombe the cittizen, who would you speake withall?

A M O. With whom? your brother?

M O R. Who is your brother?

A M O. Master A S O T V S? Is hee your brother? Hee is  
30 taken vp with great persons. Hee is not to know you to  
night.

A S O. O I O V E, master! and there come ere a cittizen  
gentlewoman in my name, let her haue entrance, I pray you.  
It is my sister.

35 W I F. Brother.

C I T. Brother, master A S O T V S.

A S O. Who's there?

W I F. 'Tis I, brother.

A S O. Gods me! There she is, good master, intrude her.

40 M O R. Make place. Beare backe there.

A M O. Knocke that simple fellow, there.

W I F. Nay, good sir; It is my husband.

M O R. The simpler fellow hee. Away, backe with your  
head, sir.

45 A S O. Brother, you must pardon your *non-entry*:  
Husbands are not allow'd here in truth. Ile come home  
soone with my sister; pray you meet vs with a lanthorn,  
brother. Be merrie, sister. I shall make you laugh anon.

P H A. Your *prizer* is not readie, A M O R P H V S

50 A M O. Apprehend your places, hee shall be soone; and  
at all points

A N A. Is there any body come to answer him? Shal we  
haue any sport?

A M O. Sport of importance; howsoever, giue me the  
55 gloues.

H E D. Gloues! why gloues, *Signior*?

P H I. What's the ceremonie?

*He dis-  
tributes  
gloues*

v. iii. After 26 G inserted 'Wife. My brother' and after 28 'Wife Master  
Asotus' After 31 *Re-enter Asotus hastily.* G 32 and] an' F2  
36 Crr] Cst [*thrusting in*] G 39 her] he Fr After 40 *Enter*  
*Citizen's Wife.* G 44 [*Pushes the Citizen back* add G 48 *Ext.*  
add G. 49 readie,] readie Ff 53 sport? F2 sport. Fr

A M O. Besides their receiu'd fitness, at all prizes, they are here properly accomodate to the nuptials of my *schollers* hauiour to the ladie *courtship*. Please you apparell 60 your hands. *Madam PHANTASTE, madam PHILAV-TIA, Guardian, Signior HEDON, Signior ANAIDES*, Gentlemen all, Ladies.

A L L. Thankes, good A M O R P H V S.

A M O. I will now call forth my *prouost*, and present him. 65

A N A. Heart! why should not we be masters, as well as he?

H E D. That's true, and play our masters prizes, aswell as the t'other?

M O R. In sadnesse, for vsing your court-weapons, me 70 thinks, you may.

P H A. Nay, but why should not wee ladies play our prizes, I pray? I see no reason, but we should take 'hem downe, at their owne weapons

P H I. Troth, and so we may, if we handle 'hem well. 75

W I F. I indeed, forsooth, Madame, if 'twere i' the citie, wee would thinke foule scorne, but we would, forsooth.

P H A. Pray you, what should we call your name?

W I F. My name is, *Downefall*.

H E D. Good mistris *Downefall*! I am sorry, your 80 husband could not get in.

W I F. 'Tis no matter for him, sir.

A N A. No, no, shee has the more liberty for her selfe.

P H A. Peace, peace: They come

A M O. So. Keepe vp your ruffe the tincture of your <sup>A flour-  
ish</sup> necke is not all so pure, but it will aske it. Mantayne your 86 sprig vpriight; your cloke on your halfe-shoulder falling; So. I will reade your bill, aduance it, and present you. Silence 89

*Be it knowne to all that professe courtship, by these presents* The chal-  
(*from the white sattin reueller, to the cloth of tissue, and bodkin*) lenge.

v. ii. 60 hauiour] 'haviour Fz 65 Exit add G After 84  
Re-enter Amorphus, introducing Asotus in a full-dress suit. G 85  
So] So, Fz 90 marg challenge.] challenge Fr. in some copies the  
two last letters are lost

that we, VLYSSES-POLYTROPVS-AMORPHVS,  
 Master of the noble, and subtile science of courtship, doe giue  
 leaue and licence to our Prouost, ACOLASTVS-POLY-  
 95 PRAGMON-ASOTVS, to play his Masters prize, against  
 all Masters whatsoever in this subtile mysterie, at these foure,  
 the choice, and most cunning weapons of court-complement,  
 viz. the bare Accost; the better Reguard; the solemne  
 Adresse; and the perfect Close. These are therefore to giue  
 100 notice, to all commers, that hee, the said ACOLASTVS-  
 POLYPRAGMON-ASOTVS, is here present (by the  
 helpe of his Mercer, Taylor, Millaner, Sempster, and so forth)  
 at his designed houre, in this faire gallery, the present day of this  
 present moneth, to performe, and doe his uttermost for the  
 105 atchieuement, and bearing away of the prizes, which are these :  
 viz. for the bare Accost, two Wall-eyes, in a face forced . For  
 the better Reguard, a Face fauourably simpring, with a  
 Fanne wauing For the solemne Adresse, two Lips wagging,  
 and neuer a wise word : For the perfect Close, a Wring by  
 110 the hand , with a Banquet in a corner. And PHÆBUS  
 saue CYNTHIA.

Musique  
 sounds

Appareth no man yet, to answere the prizer ? No voice ?  
 Musique, giue them their summons.

PHA. The solemnity of this is excellent.

115 AMO. Silence. Well, I perceiue your name is their  
 terror ; and keepeth them backe.

ASO. I faith, Master, Let's goe : no body comes.  
*Victus, victa, victum, Victi, victæ, victi*—Let's bee retro-  
 grade.

120 AMO. Stay. That were dispunt to the ladies. Rather,  
 our selfe shall be your Encount'rer. Take your state, vp, to  
 the wall : And, ladie, may we implore you to stand forth  
 as first terme, or bound to our courtship ?

HED. 'Fore heauen, 'twill shew rarely.

v. 111 92 POLYTROPVS-] POLITROPUS F2 104 moneth] month F2 106  
 for] For F2 117 Let's] let's F2 118-19 retrograde] retrograde  
 F1 originally 121 Encount'rer corr F1 Encounter F1 originally, F2  
 122 After 'ladie' leading Morra to the state G Cf v. 102, 180, 275,  
 278 123 terme,] terme F2 courtship ?] courtship. Ff

A M O. Sound a charge.	A charge.
A N A. A poxe on't. Your vulgar will count this fabulous, 126 and impudent, now : by that candle, they'le ne're conceit it.	
P H A. Excellent well ! Admirable !	
P H I. Peace.	129
H E D. Most fashionably, beleeue it.	They act their
P H I. O, he is a well-spoken gentleman.	accost
P H A. Now the other.	seuerally
P H I. Very good.	to the lady
H E D. For a Scholer, <i>Honor</i> .	that
A N A. O, 'tis too <i>dutch</i> . He reeles too much.	stands
H E D. This weapon is done.	forth.
A M O. No, we haue our two bouts, at euery weapon,	135
expect.	A flourish

Act v. Scene IIII.

CRITES, MERCVRIE.

To them.

**W**Here be these gallants, and their braue *prizer* here ?  
M O R P. Who's there ? beare backe : Keepe the dore.  
A M O R. What are you, sir ?  
C R I T. By your licence, grand-master. Come forward,  
sir. 5  
A N A I. Heart ! who let in that rag there, amongst vs ?  
put him out, an impecunious creature.  
H E D O. Out with him.  
M O R P. Come, sir.  
A M O R. You must be retrograde. 10  
C R I T. Soft, sir, I am *Truchman*, and doe flourish before  
this *Monsieur*, or *french*-behau'd gentleman, here ; who is  
drawne hither by report of your *chartells*, aduanced in court,  
to proue his fortune with your *prizer* : so he may haue faire  
play shewne him, and the libertie to choose his stickler. 15

v. iii. 125 stage-dir. in *Fi* at 124. v. iv. This scene is not in  
*Q* 1 Where] *Cri* [within] Where *G*, continuing the scene. *prizer* :  
corr. *Fi* : *prizer*, *Fi* originally, *Fa* After 1 Enter *Crites*, introducing  
*Mercury* fantastically dressed. *G* 15 to corr. *Fi*, *Fa* : too *Fi*  
originally

AMOR. Is he a Master?

CRIT. That, sir, he has to shew here; and, confirmed vnder the hands of the most skilfull, and cunning *commentaries* alue: please you reade, sir.

20 AMOR. What shall we doe?

ANAI. Death, disgrace this fellow i' the blacke-stuffe, what euer you doe.

AMOR. Why, but he comes with the stranger.

HEDO. That's no matter. He is our owne countryman.

25 ANAI, and he is a scholer besides. You may disgrace him here, with authoritie.

AMO. Well, see these first.

ASO. Now shall I be obseru'd by yon'd scholer, till I sweat againe; I would to LOVE, it were ouer.

30 CRIT. Sir, this is the wight of worth, that dares you to the encounter A gentleman of so pleasing, and ridiculous a carriage; as, euen standing, carries meat in the mouth, you see, and I assure you, although no bred *courtling*, yet a most particular man, of goodly hauings, well fashion'd  
35 hauour, and of as hard'ned, and excellent a barke, as the most naturally-qualified amongst them, inform'd, reform'd, and transform'd from his originall *citticisme*, by this *elixi'r*, or meere *magazine* of man. And, for your spectators, you behold them, what they are. The most choice particulars  
40 in court. This tels tales well; This provides coaches; This repeates iests; This presents gifts; This holds vp the arras: This takes downe from horse; This protests by this light; This sweares by that candle, This delighteth; This adareth. Yet, all but three men Then for your ladies, the most  
45 proud wittie creatures, all things apprehending, nothing vnderstanding, perpetually laughing, curious maintayners of fooles, mercers, and minstrels, costly to be kept, miserably keeping, all disdayning, but their painter, and pothecary,

v. iv. 20 [Gives him a certificate add G 23 AMOR] ANOR. FI originally 33 *courtling* corr FI *Courtling*, FI originally 35 hauour] 'hauour' F2 hard'ned.] hard'ned F2 37 *citticisme*,] *citticisme*, F2 *elixi'r* corr FI *elixi'r* FI originally 40 court corr FI. court FI originally 48 pothecary corr. FI. *pothecarie* FI originally 'pothecary' F2 Apothecary F3

twixt whom and them there is this reciproock commerce,  
their beauties maintaine their painters, and their painters so  
their beauties.

M E R. Sir, you haue plaid the painter your selfe, and  
limb'd them to the life. I desire to deserue before 'hem.

A M O. This is *authentique*. Wee must resolute to enter- *Having*  
taine the *Monsieur*, howsoeuer we neglect him. *read the*  
*certificate.*

H E D. Come, let's all goe together, and salute him. 56

A N A. Content, and not looke o' the other.

A M O. Well deuise'd : and a most punishing disgrace.

H E D. On.

A M O. *Monsieur*. We must not so much betray our  
selues to *discourtship*, as to suffer you to be longer vn saluted.  
Please you to vse the state, ordain'd for the *opponent*; in  
which nature, without enuy we receiue you.

H E D. And embrace you.

A N A. And commend vs to you, sir. 65

P H I. Beleeue it, he is a man of excellent silence.

P H A. He keepes all his wit for action.

A N A. This hath discountenanc'd our *scholaris*, most  
richly.

H E D. Out of all *emphasis*. The *Monsieur* sees, we regard 70  
him not.

A M O. Hold on : make it knowne how bitter a thing it  
is, not to bee look't on in court.

H E D. S'lud, will he call him to him yet? doe's not  
*Monsieur* perceiue our disgrace? 75

A N A. Hart! he is a foole, I see. Wee haue done our  
selues wrong to grace him.

H E D. S'light, what an asse was I, to embrace him?

C R I. Illustrious, and fearefull iudges——

H E D. Turne away, turne away. 80

C R I. It is the sute of the strange opponent (to whom you  
ought not to turne your tailes, and whose noses I must  
follow) that he may haue the iustice, before hee encounter

v. iv. 49 reciproock *corr.* F1, F2 . reciprick F1 originally commerce,  
*corr.* F1, F2 commerce; F1 originally 76 Hart] Heart F2



his respected aduersarie, to see some light stroke of his  
85 play, commenc'd with some other.

H E D. Answer not him, but the stranger, we will not  
beleue him.

A M O. I will demand him my selfe.

C R I. O dreadfull disgrace, if a man were so foolish to  
90 feele it !

A M O. Is it your sute, *Monsieur*, to see some *prélude* of  
my scholer ? Now, sure the *Monsieur* wants language.

H E D. And take vpon him to be one of the accomplisht ?  
S'lght, that's a good iest : would we could take him with  
95 that nullitie. *Non sapette voi parlar' Itagliano ?*

A N A. S'foot, the carpe ha's no tongue

C R I. *Signior*, in courtship, you are to bid your abettors  
forbeare, and satisfie the *Monsieurs* request.

A M O. Well, I will strike him more silent, with admira-  
100 tion, and terrifie his daring hither Hee shall behold my  
owne play, with my scholer. Ladie, with the touch of  
*A charge* your white hand, let me re-enstate you *Prouost*, begin to  
me, at the *bare Accost*. Now, for the honor of my discipline.

H E D *Signior* A M O R P H V S, reflect, reflect : what  
105 meanes hee by that mouthed waue ?

C R I He is in some distaste of your fellow disciple.

M E R. *Signior*, your scholer might haue plaid well still,  
if hee could haue kept his seate longer : I haue enough of  
him, now. He is a mere peece of glasse, I see through him,  
110 by this time.

A M O. You come not to giue vs the scorne, *Monsieur* ?

M E R. Nor to be frighted with a face, *Signior* ! I haue  
seene the lyons. You must pardon me. I shall bee loth to  
hazzard a reputation with one, that ha's not a reputation  
115 to lose.

A M O. How !

C R I. Meaning your *pupil*, sir.

A N A. This is that blacke deuill there.

A M O. You doe offer a strange affront, *Monsieur*.

C R I. Sir, he shall yeeld you all the honor of a competent 120  
aduersarie, if you please to vnder-take him——

M E R. I am prest for the encounter.

A M O. Me? challenge me?

A S O. What! my Master, sir? S'light, *Monsieur*,  
meddle with me, doe you heare? but doe not meddle with 125  
my Master.

M E R. Peace, good squib, goe out.

C R I. And stinke, he bids you.

A S O. Master?

A M O. Silence, I doe accept him. Sit you downe, and 130  
obserue. Me? He neuer profest a thing at more charges.  
Prepare your selfe, sir. Challenge me? I will prosecute  
what disgrace my hatred can dictate to me.

C R I. How tender a trauailers spleene is? comparison,  
to men, that deserue least, is euer most offensiuue. 135

A M O. You are instructed in our *chartell*, and know our  
weapons?

M E R. I appeare not without their notice, sir.

A S O. But must I lose the *prizes*, *Master*?

A M O. I will win them for you, bee patient. Lady, 140  
vouchsafe the tenure of this ensigne. Who shall be your  
stickler?

M E R. Behold him.

A M O. I would not wish you a weaker. Sound musiques. 144  
I prouoke you, at the *bare Accost*.

*A charge.*

P H A. Excellent comely!

C R I. And worthily studied. This is th' *exalted Fore-top*.

H E D. O, his legge was too much produc'd.

A N A. And his hat was carried skiruly.

P H I. Peace; Let's see the *Monsieur's Accost*: Rare! 150

P H A. Sprightly, and short.

A N A. True, it is the *french curteau*: He lacks but to  
haue his nose slit.

*A flour-  
ish*

*A charge.*

156

H E D. He do's hop. He do's bound too much.

A M O. The second bout, to conclude this weapon.

P H A. Good, beleeue it I

P H I. An excellent offer I

C R I. This is call'd the *solemne band-string*.

H E D. Foe, that cringe was not put home.

160 A N A. S'foot, he makes a face like a stab'd L V C R E C E.

A S O. Well, he would needes take it vpon him, but would I had done it for all this. He makes me sit still here, like a *babroun* as I am.

C R I. Making villanous faces.

165 P H I. See, the *French* prepares it richly.

C R I. I, this is y'cleped the *serious trifle*.

A N A. S'lud, 'tis the *horse-start out o' the browne studie*.

C R I. Rather the *bird-ey'd stroke*, sir. Your obseruance is too blunt, sir.

*A flour-  
ish.*

A M O. Iudges, award the *prize*. Take breath, sir. This  
171 bout hath beene laborious.

A S O. And yet your *Criticke*, or your *Besso'gno*, will thinke these things fopperie, and easie, now.

C R I. Or rather meere *lunacy*. For, would any reason-  
175 able creature make these his serious studies, and perfections?  
Much lesse, onely lue to these ends? to be the false pleasure  
of a few, the true loue of none, and the rust laughter of all?

H E D. We must preferre the *Monsieur*, we courtiers must be partiall.

180 A N A. Speake, *Guardian*. Name the *prize*, at the *bare Accost*.

M O R. A paire of *wall-eyes*, in a *face forced*.

A N A. Giue the *Monsieur*. A M O R P H V S hath lost his  
eies.

185 A M O. I! is the palate of your judgement downe?  
Gentles, I doe appeale.

A S O. Yes master, to me. The iudges be fooles.

v iv 155 stage-dir. in F2 at 156 159 Foe] Foh F2 160  
S'foot, he] He F2 166 y'cleped] ycleped F2 186 Gentles]  
Gentles F3

A N A. How now, sir ? Tie vp your tongue, Mungrill. He cannot appeale.

A S O. Say you, sir ?

190

A N A. Sit you still, sir.

A S O. Why, so I doe Doe not I, I pray you ?

M E R. *Remercie, Madame*, and these honourable Censors.

A M O. Well, to the second weapon, The *better Reguard* :  
I will encounter you better. Attempt.

195

H E D. Sweet *Honour*.

P H I. What sayes my good *Ambition* ?

H E D. Which take you at this next weapon ? I lay a  
*discretion*, with you, on A M O R P H V S head.

P H I. Why, I take the *french*-behau'd gentleman.

200

H E D. 'Tis done, a *discretion*.

C R I. A *discretion* ? A prettie court-wager ! would any  
discreet person hazard his wit, so ?

P H A. I'll lay a *discretion*, with you, A N A I D E S,

A N A. Hang 'hem. I'll not venter a doibt of *discretion*, ~~not~~  
on eyther of their heads.—

C R I. No, he should venter all then.

A N A. I like none of their playes.

H E D. See, see, this is strange play !

A N A. 'Tis too full of vncertaine motion. He hobbles ~~not~~  
too much.

C R I. 'Tis call'd your *court-staggers*, sir.

H E D. That same fellow talkes so, now he has a place.

A N A. Hang him, neglect him.

M E R. *Your good ladiships affectioned.*

W I F. Gods so ! they speake at this weapon, brother !

A S O. They must doe so, sister, how should it bee the  
*better Reguard*, else ?

P H A. Me thinkes, hee did not this respectuely inough.

P H I. Why, the *Monsieur* but dallies with him.

220

H E D. Dallies ? Slight see, hee'l put him too't, in earnest.  
Well done, A M O R P H V S.

V. IV. 199 AMORPHVS] AMORPHUS F2 : Amorphus's F3 (so 265)  
204 discretion.] discretion F2 222 done.] done F2

A N A. That puffle was good indeed.

C R I. Gods mee! This is desperate play. Hee hits him-  
225 selfe o'the shinnes.

H E D. And he make this good through, he carries it, I  
warrant him.

C R I. Indeed he displayes his feet, rarely.

H E D. See, see; Hee do's the *respectiue Leere* damnably  
230 well.

A M O. *The true idolater of your beauties, shall neuer passe  
their deities unadored: I rest your poore knight.*

H E D. See, now *the oblique leere, or the Ianus*: He  
234 satisfies all, with that aspect, most nobly.

*A flour-*  
ish C R I. And most terribly he comes off: like your *Rodo-*  
*mantada.*

P H A. How like you this play, A N A I D E S?

A N A. Good play; but 't is too rough, and boisterous.

A M O. I will second it with a stroke easier, wherein I  
240 will prooue his language.

*A charge* A N A. This is filthie, and graue, now.

H E D. O, 't is coole, and warie play. Wee must not  
disgrace our owne *camerade*, too much.

A M O. *Signora, ho tanto oblige per le fauore rescuito da lei;  
245 che veramente dessidero con tutto il core, à remunerarla in  
parte: & sicuratiue signora mea cara, chè io sera sempre  
pronto à seruirla, & honorarla. Bascio le mane de vo'  
signoria.*

C R I. *The venetian Dop* this.

250 P H A. Most vnexpectedly excellent! The *French* goes  
downe certaine.

A S O. *As buckets are put downe into a well;  
Or as a schoole-boy.*—

C R I. Trusse vp your *simile, Iacke-daw*, and obserue.

255 H E D. Now the *Monsieur* is moou'd.

A N A. Boe-peepe.

v. 1v 226 And] An' F2 235-6 Rodomantada] rodomontado W  
240 prooue] prove F2 244 Is G' ye Ff rescuito] rescinto F3 246  
io sera G: ioseira Ff 254 Iacke-] Yack- F3 255 moou'd]  
mov'd F2

H E D. O, most antique.

C R I. The *french Quirke*, this sir.

A N A. Heart, he will ouer-runne her !

M E R. *Madamoyselle, le voudroy que pouuoy monstrier* 260  
*mon affection, mais ie surs tant mal heureuse, ci froid, ci*  
*layd, ci—le ne scay qui de dire—excuse moy, le surs tout*  
*vostre.*

P H I. O braue, and spirited ! Hee's a right *Iouialist*.

*A flour-  
ish.*

P H A. No, no : A M O R P H V S grautie outwaies it. 265

C R I. And yet your ladie, or your feather would outweigh  
both.

A N A. What's the *prize*, ladie, at this *better Reguard* ?

M O R. *A Face fauourably simpring, and a fanne wauiing.*

A N A. They haue done doubtfully. Diuide. Giue the 270  
*fauourable Face* to the *Signior*, and the *light waue* to the  
*Monsieur*.

A M O. You become the *simper*, well, ladie.

M E R. And the *wag*, better.

A M O. Now, to our *solemne Adresse*. Please the well- 275  
grac'd P H I L A V T I A to relieue the ladie *sentinell* ; shee  
hath stood long.

P H I. With all my heart, come, *Guardian*. Resigne your  
place

A M O. *Monsieur*, furnish your selfe with what solemnitie 280  
of ornament you thinke fit for this third weapon ; at which  
you are to shew all the cunning of stroke, your deuotion can  
possibly deuse.

M E R. Let me alone, sir. Ile sufficiently decipher your  
amorous solemnities. C R I T E S, haue patience. See, if I 285  
hit not all their practicke obseruance, with which they lime  
twigs, to catch their phantasticke ladiebirds.

C R I. I, but you should doe more charitably, to doe it  
more openly ; that they might discouer themselues mockt  
in these monstrous affections. 290

v iv 262 de W d1 Ff excuse] excuse F2 265 PHA F2. PHI. F1  
273 *simper*,] *Simper* F2 276 *reliue*] *reliue* F2 278 *heart*,]  
*heart*, F2 *Moria comes from the State.* add G

- A charge.* M E R. *Lacquay*, where's the taylor ?  
 T A Y. Heere, sir.  
 H E D. See, they haue their Taylor, Barber, Perfumer,  
 Millaner, Jeweller, Feather-maker, all in common !  
 295 A N A I, this is prettie.  
*They make them selues readse on the stage* A M O Here is a haire too much, take it off. Where are  
 thy *mullets* ?  
 M E R. Is this pinke of equall proportion to this cut,  
 standing of this distance from it ?  
 300 T A Y. That it is, sir  
 M E R. Is it so, sir, you impudent *Poultroun* ? you slaue,  
 you list, you shreds, you —  
 H E D. Excellent. This was the best, yet.  
 A N A. S'foot, we must vse our taylors thus. This is your  
 305 true magnanimitie.  
 M E R. Come, goe to : put on Wee must beare with you,  
 for the times sake  
 A M O. Is the perfume rich, in this jerkin ?  
 P E R. Taste, smell, I assure you, sir, pure *beniamin*, the  
 310 onely spirited sent, that euer awak'd a *neapolitane* nostrill  
 You would wish your selfe all nose, for the loue ont. I  
 frotted a jerkin, for a new-reuenu'd gentleman, yeelded me  
 threescore crownes but this morning, and the same titillation.  
 A M O. I sauour no *sampsuchine*, in it.  
 315 P E R I am a *nulli-fidian*, if there be not three thirds of  
 a scruple more of *sampsuchinum*, in this confection, then  
 euer I put in any. Ile tell you all the ingredients, sir  
 A M O. You shall be simple, to discover your *simples*.  
 P E R. Simple ? why sir ? what recke I to whom I dis-  
 320 couer ? I haue in it, *muske, cruet, amber, phœnicobalanus*,  
 the decoction of *turmericke, sesama, nard, spikenard, calamus*  
*odoratus, stacte, opobalsamum, amomum, storax, ladanum,*  
*aspalathum, opoponax, oenanthe.* And what of all these now ?

v 1v After 291 Enter Taylor, Barber, Perfumer, Millner, Jeweller, and  
 Feather-maker. G 302 Beats the Taylor add G 304 S'foot] Why  
 F2 your] our F2 309 you,] you F1 310 sent] scent F3 (so  
 394) awak'd] awak't F2 319 recke] reck' F2, F3 321 sesama]  
 Sesana F3 323 opoponax F2: opponax F1

what are you the better? Tut, it is the sorting, and the diuiding, and the mixing, and the tempring, and the searc- 325  
ing, and the decocting, that makes the fumigation, and the suffumigation.

A M O. Well, indue me with it.

P E R. I will, sir.

H E D. An excellent confection.

330

C R I. And most worthie a true voluptarie. I O V E !  
what a coyle these muske-wormes take, to purchase anothers  
delight? for, themselues, who beare the odours, haue euer  
the least sence of them. Yet, I doe like better the prodi-  
galtie of jewels, and clothes, whereof one passeth to a mans 335  
heires, the other, at least weares out time. This presently  
expires, and without continuall riot in reparation is lost.  
which who so striues to keep, it is one speciall argument to  
me, that (affecting to smell better then other men) he doth  
indeed smell farre worse.

340

M E R. I know, you will say it sits well, sir.

T A Y. Good faith, if it doe not, sir, let your Mistris be  
judge.

M E R. By heauen, if my Mistris doe not like it, I'll make  
no more conscience to vndoe thee, then to vndoe an oyster 345

T A Y. Beleeue it, sir, there's ne're a Mistris i' the world  
can mislike it

M E R. No, not goodwife Taylor, your Mistris; that has  
onely the iudgment to heat your pressing toole. But for  
a *court*-Mistris, that studies these *decorums*, and knowes 350  
the proportion of euerie cut, to a haire. knowes why such  
a colour, is cut vpon such a colour, and, when a satten is cut  
vpon six taffataes, wil looke that we should diue into the  
depth of the cut.—Giue me my scarffe. Shew some  
ribbands, sirra. Ha you the feather?

355

F E T. I, sir.

M E R. Ha'you the jewell?

I E W. Yes, sir.

v. iv. 325-6 searching] searching F2 332 muske- F2: mukse- Fr  
336 least] last W 338 who so] whose F3 339, 345 then] than F2



M E R. What must I giue for the hire on't ?

360 I E W. You'le giue me six crownes, sir ?

M E R. Sixe crownes ? By heauen 'twere a good deed to borrow it of thee, to shew : and neuer let thee haue it againe

I E W. I hope your worship will not doe so, sir

365 M E R. By I O V E, sir, there bee such trickes stirring, I can tell you, and worthily too. Extorting knaues ! that liue by these *Court-decorums*, and yet,—What's your jewell worth, I pray ?

I E W. A hundred crownes, sir

370 M E R. A hundred crownes ? And sixe for the loane on't an houre ? What's that i' the hundred for the yeere ? These imposters would not bee hang'd ? your thiefe is not comparable to 'hem, by H E R C V L E S, well, put it in, and the feather. You will ha't, and you shall ; and the poxe giue  
375 you good on't.

A M O. Giue mee my confects, my *moscardini*, and place those colours in my hat

M E R. These are *bolognian* ribbands, I warrant you ?

M I L. In truth, sir : if they be not right *granado* silke—

380 M E R. A poxe on you, you'le all say so.

M I L. You giue me not a pennie, sir.

M E R. Come sir, perfume my *deuant* ; May it ascend, like solemne sacrifice, into the nostrils of the *Queene of Loue*.

H E D. Your *french ceremonies* are the best.

385 A N A. *Monsieur, Signior*, your *solemne Adresse* is too long. The ladies long to haue you come on.

A M O. Soft, sir, our comming on is not so easily prepar'd. Signior *Fig*.

P E R. I, sir.

390 A M O. Can you helpe my complexion, heere ?

P E R. O yes, sir, I haue an excellent *mineral Fucus*, for the purpose. The gloues are right, sir, you shall burie 'hem in a mucke-hill, a draught, seuen yeeres, and take 'hem

out, and wash 'hem, they shall still retaine their first sent,  
true *spanish*. There's *ambre* i'the *umbre*. 395

M E R. Your price, sweet *Fig*.

P E R. Giue me what you will, sir : The *Signior* payes me  
two crownes a paire, you shall giue me your loue, sir.

M E R. My loue ? with a pox to you, goodman *sasafras*.

P E R. I come, sir. There's an excellent *diapasme* in a 400  
chaine too, if you like it.

A M O. Stay, what are the ingredients to your *fucus* ?

P E R. Nought, but *sublimate*, and *crude mercurie*, sir,  
well prepar'd, and dulcified, with the jaw-bones of a sow,  
burnt, beaten, and searced. 405

A M O. I approue it. Lay it on.

M E R. Ile haue your chaine of pomander, sirrah ; what's  
your price ?

P E R. Wee'le agree, *Monsieur*, Ile assure you, it was  
both decocted, and dried, where no sun came, and kept in 410  
an *onyx* euer since it was ball'd.

M E R. Come, inuert my *mustachio*, and we haue done.

A M O. 'Tis good

B A R. Hold still I pray you, sir.

P E R. Nay, the *fucus* is exorbitant, sir. 415

M E R. Death ! doost thou burne me, Harlot ?

B A R. I beseech you, sir.

M E R. Begger, Varlet, *Poultroun* ?

H E D. Excellent, excellent !

*A flour-  
ish*

A N A. Your *french* Beate is the most naturall beate of 420  
the world.

A S O. O, that I had plaid at this weapon !

P H A. Peace, now they come on ; the second part. *A charg*

A M O. Madame, your beauties, being so attractiue, I  
muse you are left thus, alone. 425

P H I. Better be alone, sir ; then ill-accompanied.

A M O. Nought can be ill, ladie, that can come neere your  
goodnesse.

v. iv. 398 *paire*,] *paire*; F2 407 MER. F2 MAR. F1 418 *Beats*  
him. add G 425 you] your F2 426 then] than F2 (so 434. 443. 450)

M E R. Sweet Madame, on what part of you soeuer a man  
 430 casts his eye, he meets with perfection ; you are the liuely  
 image of V E N U S, throughout ; all the G R A C E S smile  
 in your cheeks ; your beautie nourishes, as well as delights ;  
 you haue a tongue steep't in honie ; and a breath like a  
 panther . your brests and forehead are whiter then gotes  
 435 milke, or *May-blossomes* ; a cloud is not so soft as your  
 skinne —

H E D Well strooke, *Monsieur* : Hee charges like a  
*Frenchman* indeed, thicke, and hotly.

M E R. Your cheekes are C V P I D S baths, wherein hee  
 440 vses to steepe himselfe in milke, and nectar : Hee do's  
 light all his torches at your eyes, and instructs you how to  
 shoot, and wound, with their beames. Yet I loue nothing, in  
 you, more then your innocence ; you retaine so natue a  
 simplicitie, so vnblam'd a behauour. Mee thinkes, with  
 445 such a loue, I should find no head, nor foot of my pleasure :  
 You are the verie spirit of a ladie.

A N A. Faire play, *Monsieur* ? you are too hot on the  
 quarrie. Gue your competitor audience

A M O. Lady, how stirring soeuer the *Monsieurs* tongue  
 450 is, hee will lie by your side, more dull then your *eunuch*.

A N A A good stroke ; That mouth was excellently  
 put ouer.

A M O. You are faire, lady——

C R I. You offer foule, *Signior*, to close. Keepe your  
 455 distance ; for all your *Brauo rampant*, here.

A M O. I say you are faire, lady, let your choice be fit, as  
 you are faire.

M E R. I say, ladies doe neuer beleue they are faire, till  
 some foole begins to dote vpon 'hem.

460 P H I. You play too rough, gentlemen.

A M O. Your *frenchified* foole is your onely foole, lady : I  
 doe yeeld to this honorable *Monsieur*, in all cuill, and  
 humane courtesie.

*A flower-  
 ish.*

M E R. Buzze.

AN A. Admirable. Giue him the *prize*. Giue him the 465  
*prize*; That mouth, againe, was most courtly hit, and rare.

A M O. I knew, I should passe vpon him with the *bitter*  
*Bob*.

H E D. O, but the *Reuerse* was singular.

P H A. It was most subtile, A M O R P H V S. 470

A S O. If I had don't, it should haue beene better.

M E R. How heartily they applaud this, C R I T E S !

C R I. You suffer 'hem too long.

M E R. I'll take off their edge instantly.

A N A. Name the *prize*, at the *solemne Adresse*. 475

P H I. Two *lips wagging*.

C R I. And neuer a wise word; I take it.

A N A. Giue to A M O R P H V S. And, vpon him, againe;  
let him not draw free breath.

A M O. Thankes, faire deliuerer, and my honorable iudges, 480  
Madame P H A N T A S T E, you are our worthy obiect at this  
next weapon.

P H A. Most couetingly ready, A M O R P H V S.

H E D. Your *Monsieur* is crest-falne.

A N A. So are most of 'hem once a yeere 485

A M O. You will see, I shall now giue him the gentle *dor*,  
presently, hee forgetting to shift the colours, which are now  
chang'd, with alteration of the Mistris. At your last weapon,  
sir. The *perfect Close*. Set forward, intend your approach. 489  
*Monsieur*. A charge.

M E R. 'Tis yours, *Signior*.

A M O. With your example, sir.

M E R. Not I, sir.

A M O. It is your right.

M E R. By no possible meanes. 495

A M O. You haue the way.

M E R. As I am noble——

A M O. As I am vertuous——

M E R. Pardon me, sir.

v. iv. 473 long] *The period faint or missing in most copies of F1.* 480  
iudges,] judges, F2 After 483 *She takes the state instead of Phil-*  
autia. G 489 approach] approach F2

500 A M O. I will die first.

M E R. You are a tyranne in courtesie.

A M O. He is remou'd—Iudges, beare witnesse.

*Amor-* M E R. What of that, sir?

*phus* A M O. You are remou'd, sir.

*states the* M E R. Well.

*other, on* A M O. I challenge you ; you haue receiued the *dor*. Giue  
*his* 507 me the *prize*.  
*mouing*

M E R. Soft, sir. How, the *dor*?

A M O. The common Mistris, you see, is changed.

510 M E R. Right, sir.

A M O. And you haue still in your hat the former colours.

M E R. You lie, sir, I haue none · I haue pull'd 'hem out.

*A flour-* I meant to play discolour'd

*ish* C R I. The *dor*, the *dor*, the *dor*, the *dor*, the *dor*! the  
515 palpable *dor*.

A N A. Heart of my bloud, A M O R P H V S, what ha' you  
done? Stuck a disgrace vpon vs all, and at your last  
weapon?

A S O. I could haue done no more.

520 H E D. By heauen, it was most vnfortunate lucke.

A N A. Lucke! by that candle, it was meere rashnesse,  
and ouer-sight, would any man haue venterd to play so  
open, and forsake his ward? Dam' me if he ha' not eternally  
vndone himselfe, in court, and discountenanc'd vs, that  
525 were his maine countenance, by it.

A M O. Forgiue it, now. It was the *solæcisme* of my  
starres.

C R I. The *Wring by the hand*, and the *Banquet* is ours.

M E R. O, here's a *lady*, *feeles* like a wench of the first  
530 yeare; you would thinke her hand did melt in your touch;  
and the bones of her fingers ran out at length, when you  
prest 'hem, they are so gently delicate! Hee that had the  
grace to print a kisse on these lips, should taste wine, &  
rose-leaues. O, shee kisses as close as a cockle. Let's take

v. iv 501 tyranne] Tyrant F<sub>3</sub> 502 Iudges,] Iudges F<sub>1</sub>: Judges,  
F<sub>2</sub> 513 *A flourish* G in F<sub>1</sub> at 516 522 venterd] ventered  
F<sub>2</sub> · ventured F<sub>3</sub>

'hem downe, as deepe as our hearts, wench, till our very 535  
soules mixe. Adieu, *Signior*. Good faith, I shall drinke  
to you at supper, sir.

A N A. Stay, *Monsieur*. Who awards you the *prize* ?

C R I. Why, his proper merit, sir : you see hee has plaid  
downe your grand garbe-Master, here 540

A N A. That's not in your *logicke* to determine, sir : you  
are no courtier. This is none of your seuen, or nine beggerly  
*sciences*, but a certaine mysterie aboute 'hem, wherein wee  
that haue skill must pronounce, and not such fresh-men as  
you are. 545

C R I. Indeed, I must declare my selfe to you no profest  
courtling ; nor to haue any excellent stroke, at your subtile  
weapons : yet if you please, I dare venter a hit with you, or  
your fellow, sir D A G O N E T, here.

A N A. With me ? 550

C R I. Yes, sir.

A N A. Heart, I shall neuer haue such a fortune to saue  
my selfe in a fellow againe, and your two reputations,  
gentlemen, as in this. I'll vndertake him.

H E D. Doe, and swinge him soundly, good A N A I D E S 555

A N A. Let mee alone, I'll play other manner of play,  
then has beene seene, yet. I would the *prize* lay on't.

M E R. It shall if you will, I forgiue my right.

A N A. Are you so confident ? what's your weapon ?

C R I. At any, I, sir. 560

M E R. The *perfect Close*, That's now the best.

A N A. Content, I'll pay your scholartie. Who offers ?

C R I. Mary, that will I. I dare giue you that aduantage,  
too.

A N A. You dare ? Well, looke to your *liberall* skonce. 565

A M O. Make your play still, vpon the answer, sir.

A N A. Hold your peace, you are a hobby-horse.

A S O. Sit by me, Master.

M E R. Now C R I T E S, strike home.

v. iv. 548 venter] venture F<sub>3</sub> 555 swinge] swing F<sub>2</sub> 557 then]  
than F<sub>2</sub> 561 That's] that's F<sub>2</sub> 563 Mary] Marry F<sub>2</sub>

570 C R I. You shall see me vndoe the assur'd swaggerer with  
a tricke, instantly : I will play all his owne play before him ;  
court the wench, in his garbe, in his phrase, with his face ;  
leaue him not so much as a looke, an eye, a stalke, or an  
imperfect oth, to expresse himselfe by, after me.

575 M E R. Excellent, C R I T E S.

large. A N A. When begin you, sir ? Haue you consulted ?

C R I. To your cost, sir ; which is the *Peece*, stands forth,  
to bee courted ? O, are you shée ? Well, Madame, or  
sweet lady, it is so, I doe loue you in some sort, doe you  
580 conceiue ? and though I am no *Monsieur*, nor no *Signior*,  
and do want (as they say) *logicke* and *sophustrie*, and good  
words, to tell you why it is so ; yet by this hand, and by that  
candle, it is so ; And though I bee no booke-worme, nor one  
that deales by arte, to giue you *rhétorike*, and causes, why it  
585 should be so, or make it good it is so, yet dam' me, but I  
know it is so, and am assur'd it is so, and I and my sword  
shall make it appeare it is so, and giue you reason sufficient,  
how it can be no otherwise, but so——

H E D. S'light, A N A I D E S, you are mockt ; and so we  
590 are all.

M E R. How now, Signior ! What, suffer your selfe to bee  
cossen'd of your courtship, before your face ?

H E D. This is plaine confederacy, to disgrace vs. Let's  
bee gone, and plot some reuenge.

595 A M O. *When men disgraces share,  
The lesser is the care.*

C R I. Nay stay, my deare *Ambition*, I can doe you ouer  
too. You that tell your Mistris, Her beautie is all composde  
of theft ; Her haire stole from A P O L L O ' s goldy-locks ;  
600 Her white and red, lillies, and roses stolne out of paradise ;  
Her eyes, two starres, pluckt from the skie ; Her nose, the  
*gnomon* of *Loues* diall, that tells you how the clocke of your  
heart goes : And for her other parts, as you cannot reckon  
'hem, they are so many ; so you cannot recount them, they

- are so manifest. Yours, if his owne, vnfortunate HOYDEN, 605  
in stead of HEDON. A flour-  
ish.
- ASO. Sister, come away, I cannot endure 'hem longer.
- MER. Goe, *Dors*, and you, my Madame *Courting-stocks*,  
Follow your scorned, and derided mates ;  
Tell to your guiltie brests, what meere guilt blocks 610  
You are, and how vnworthy humane states.
- CR1. Now, sacred god of wit, if you can make  
Those, whom our sports taxe in these apish graces,  
Kisse (like the fighting snakes) your peacefull rod ;  
These times shall canonize you for a god. 615
- MER. Why, CRITES, thinke you any noble spirit,  
Or any, worth the title of a man,  
Will be incenst, to see th'inchaunted vailes  
Of selfe-conceit, and seruile flatterie  
(Wrapt in so many folds, by time, and custome) 620  
Drawne from his wronged, and bewitched eyes ?  
Who sees not now their shape, and nakednesse,  
Is blinder then the sonne of earth, the mole :  
Crown'd with no more humanitie, nor soule.
- CR1. Though they may see it, yet the huge estate 625  
Phansie, and forme, and sensuall pride haue gotten,  
Will make them blush for anger, not for shame ;  
And turne shewne nakednesse, to impudence.  
Humour is now the test, we trie things in ;  
All power is iust : Nought that delights is sinne. 630  
And, yet the zeale of euery knowing man,  
(Opprest with hills of tyrannie, cast on vertue  
By the light phant'sies of fooles, thus transported)  
Cannot but vent the *Aetna* of his fires,  
T'enflame best bosomes, with much worthier loue 635  
Then of these outward, and effeminate shades .  
That, these vaine ioyes, in which their wills consume  
Such powers of wit, and soule, as are of force

v. 1v. 607 *Exeunt all but Mercury and Crites.* add G 610 guilt]  
gilt F2 613 *taxe corr. FI, F2* *taxe, FI originally* 620 folds]  
foulds F2 623 then] than F2 625 see it corr FI, F2 : see't  
FI originally 636 Then] Than F2



To raise their beings to æternitie,  
 640 May be conuerted on workes, fitting men.  
 And, for the practice of a forced looke,  
 An antique gesture, or a fustian phrase,  
 Studie the natiue frame of a true heart,  
 An inward comelinesse of bountie, knowledge,  
 645 And spirit, that may conforme them, actually,  
 To *Gods* high figures, which they haue in power  
 Which to neglect for a selfe-louing neatnesse,  
 Is sacrilege, of an vn pardon'd greatnesse.

MER. Then let the truth of these things strengthen thee,  
 650 In thy exempt, and only man-like course .  
 Like it the more, the lesse it is respected ;  
 Though men faile, vertue is by gods protected.  
 See, here comes ARETE, I'll with-draw my selfe.

### *Act v. Scene v.*

ARETE, CRITES.

C RITES, you must prouide strait for a masque,  
 'Tis CYNTHIAS pleasure. CRI. How, bright  
 ARETE!  
 Why, 'twere a labour more for HERCVLES.  
 Better, and sooner durst I vnder-take  
 5 To make the different seasons of the yeere,  
 The windes, or elements to sympathize,  
 Then their vnmeasurable vanitie  
 Dance truely in a measure They agree ?  
 What though all concord's borne of contraries ?  
 10 So many follies will confusion proue,  
 And like a sort of jarring instruments,

v iv 653 *Exit* add G v. v. *Act v. Scene v.* SCENA. 6. (i.e. of  
 Act iv) Q ARETE, CRITES] *Arete Criticus* Q *Enter Arete* G, con-  
 tinuing the scene 1-2 CRITES, ... pleasure *not in* Q 2 CYNTHIAS]  
 CYNTHIA'S F2 CRI How,] *Crit* — A masque, Q ARETE!] *Arete?*  
 Q 3 Why,] *Why* Q 4 vnder-take] *vndertake* Q 6  
 sympathize,] *sympathize*, Q 7 Then] *Than* F2 8 Dance] *Daunce* Q  
 measure.] *measure*. Q 10 proue] *prooue* Q 11 jarring] *jarring* Q

All out of tune : because (indeede) we see  
There is not that analogie, twixt discords,  
As betweene things but meerely opposite.

A R E. There is your error. For as H E R M E S wand 15  
Charmes the disorders of tumultuous ghosts,  
And as the strife of *Chaos* then did cease,  
When better light then *Natures* did arriue :  
So, what could neuer in it selfe agree,  
Forgetteth the *eccentrique* propertie, 20  
And at her sight, turnes forth-with regular,  
Whose scepter guides the flowing *Ocean*  
And though it did not, yet the most of them  
(Being either courtiers, or not wholly rude)  
Respect of maiestie, the place, and presence, 25  
Will keepe them within ring ; especially  
When they are not presented as themselues,  
But masqu'd like others. For (in troth) not so  
T'incorporate them, could be nothing else,  
Then like a state vngouern'd, without lawes ; 30  
Or body made of nothing but diseases .  
The one, through impotency poore, and wretched,  
The other, for the *anarchie* absurd.

C R I. But, ladie, for the reuellers themselues,  
It would be better (in my poore conceit) 35  
That others were imploid : for such as are  
Vnfit to be in C Y N T H I A E S court, can seeme  
No lesse vnfit to be in C Y N T H I A E S sports.

A R E. That, C R I T E S, is not purposed without  
Particular knowledge of the Goddesses mind, 40  
(Who holding true intelligence, what folles

v. v 13 analogie,] *Analogy* Q 15 error. For] error, for Q 16  
disorders] disorders, Q 18 then] than F<sub>2</sub> 21 sight,] sight Q  
forth-with] forthwith Q 22 Ocean ] Ocean Q 26 ring,] ring, F<sub>2</sub>  
28 others. For] others for Q 30 Then] Than F<sub>1</sub> vngouern'd,]  
vngouern'd F<sub>1</sub> 30-1 lawes, | Or body] lawes, or | A body Q  
32 wretched,] wretched ; Q 34 But,] But Q theselues,  
corr. F<sub>1</sub> theselues, Q. theselues F<sub>1</sub> originally 37, 38 CYNTHIAES]  
Cynthias Q : CYNTHIA'S F<sub>2</sub> 38 vnfit] to be unfit F<sub>2</sub> 39 That,  
... purposed] That is not done (my Criticus) Q 40 mind,] minde,  
Q 41 (Who holding] Who (holding Q

Had crept into her palace) shee resolu'd,  
 Of sports, and triumphs, vnder that pretext,  
 To haue them muster in their pompe, and fulnesse :  
 45 That so shee might more strictly, and to roote,  
 Effect the reformation shee intends.

C R I. I now conceiue her heauenly drift in all,  
 And will apply my spirits, to serue her will.  
 O thou, the very power, by which I am,  
 50 And but for which, it were in vaine to be,  
 Chiefe next D I A N A, virgin, heauenly faire,  
 Admired A R E T E (of them admir'd,  
 Whose soules are not enkindled by the sense)  
 Disdaine not my chaste fire, but feede the flame  
 55 Deuoted truely to thy gracious name.

A R E. Leaue to suspect vs : C R I T E S well shall find,  
 As we are now most deare, wee'le proue most kind.  
 Harke, I am call'd. C R I. I follow instantly.

P H æ B V S A P O L L O · if with ancient rites,  
 60 And due deuotions, I haue euer hung  
 Elaborate *pæans*, on thy golden shrine,  
 Or sung thy triumphs in a loftie straine,  
 Fit for a theater of gods to heare ;  
 And thou, the other sonne of mighty I O V E,  
 65 *Cyllenian* M E R C V R Y (sweet M A I A S ioy)  
 If in the busie tumults of the mind,  
 My path thou euer hast illumined,  
 For which, thine altars I haue oft perfum'd,  
 And deckt thy statues with discolour'd flowres :  
 70 Now thrue inuention in this glorious court,  
 That not of bountie only, but of right,  
 C Y N T H I A may grace, and giue it life by sight.

v v. 43 triumphs,]Triumphs, Q 47 all ]all, Q 48 her will.] thy will  
 Q 49 power,] power Q am,]am, Q 50 be,] be, Q 52 ARETE] Arete,  
 Q 54 Disdaine] Disdeigne Q 56 CRITES well] Criticus Q 57 proue]  
 prooue Q After 57 Arete Within Q: [Within ]Arete] G 58 Harke]  
 Arete Harke Q call'd ] cald. Exit Q 61 *pæans*,] *Pæans* Q 62  
 straine,] straine, Q 63 theater] Theatre F3 heare,] heare: Q  
 64 IOVE,] Ioue Q 67 hast] haste F2 illumined,] illumined Q 69  
 statues] Statue Q discolour'd F2 discoloured Q discoloured F1  
 flowres] flowers Q. F2 72 Exit add Q. After 72 Finis Actus quartus. Q

Act v. Scene vi.

HESPERVS, CYNTHIA, ARETE, TYMÈ,  
PHRONESIS, THAVMA

The Hymne

Q Veene, and Huntresse, chaste, and faire,  
Now the Sunne is laid to sleepe,  
Seated, in thy siluer chaire,  
State in wonted manner keepe :

HESPERVS intreats thy light,  
Goddesse, excellently bright

5

Earth, let not thy enuious shade  
Dare it selfe to interpose ,  
CYNTHIAS shining orbe was made  
Heauen to cleere, when day did close  
Blesse vs then with wished sight,  
Goddesse, excellently bright.

10

Lay thy bow of pearle apart,  
And thy cristall-shining quiver ;  
Giue vnto the flying hart  
Space to breathe, how short soeuer .  
Thou that mak' st a day of night,  
Goddesse, excellently bright.

15

CYN. When hath DIANA, like an enuious wretch,  
That glitters onely to his soothed selfe,  
Denying to the world, the precious vse  
Of hoorded wealth, with-held her friendly aide ?  
Monthly, we spend our still-repaired shine,

20

V VI Act v Scene vi ] ACTVS QVINTVS | SCENA I Q SCENE III G  
HESPERVS, . THAVMA ] Hesperus Cynthia Arete Tymè | Phronesis  
Thauma. Q Enter Hesperus, . Thauma. [ Music accompanied Hesperus  
sings G TYMÈ ] TIME F2 The Hymne ] Hymnus Q 1 Queene,]  
Hesp Queene Q 2 sleepe, ] sleepe, F2 6, 12, 18 Goddesse,]  
Goddesse Q 9 CYNTHIAS ] CYNTHIA'S F2 (so 32, 75) 15 hart]  
Hart, Q 16 breathe ] breath Q soeuer ] soeuer, Q 17 Thou]  
Thou, Q 18 Exit (ie Hesperus) Q 21 world, ] world Q 22  
hoorded ] hoarded F3 23 Monthly, ] Mon'thly Q

- And not forbid our virgin-waxen torch ·  
 25 To burne, and blaze, while nutriment doth last :  
 That once consum'd, out of I o v e s treasure  
 A new we take, and sticke it in our speare,  
 To giue the mutinous kind of wanting men,  
 Their look't-for light. Yet, what is their desert ?  
 30 " Bountie is wrong'd, interpreted as due ;  
 " Mortalls can challenge not a ray, by right,  
 " Yet doe expect the whole of C Y N T H I A s light.  
 But if that *Deities* with-drew their gifts,  
 For humane follies, what could men deserue  
 35 But death, and darknesse ? It behooues the high,  
 For their owne sakes, to doe things worthily.  
 A R E. Most true, most sacred *Goddesse* ; for the heauens  
 Receiue no good of all the good they doe.  
 Nor I o v e, nor you, nor other heavenly power,  
 40 Are fed with fumes, which doe from incense rise,  
 Or sacrifices reeking in their gore,  
 Yet, for the care which you of mortalls haue,  
 (Whose proper good it is, that they be so)  
 You well are pleas'd with odours redolent :  
 45 But ignorant is all the race of men,  
 Which still complaincs, not knowing why, or when  
 C Y N. Else, noble A R E T E, they would not blame,  
 And taxe, for or vnjust, or for as proud,  
 Thy C Y N T H I A, in the things which are indeed  
 50 The greatest glories in our starrie crowne ;  
 Such is our chastitie which safely scornes  
 (Not *Loue*, for who more feruently doth loue  
 Immortall honour, and diuine renowne ?

v. vi 24 torch] torch, Q 27 A new] Anew Q 29 lookt-for]  
 lookt for Q lookt- for Ff Yet,] Yet Q 31 ray, by] Ray but Q  
 32 light] light Q 33 gifts] gifts Q 34 could] should Q 35  
 death,] Death Q 36 sakes,] sakes Q 38 doe] do Q 39  
 power] powers F2 41 gore,] gore Q 43 so,] so, Q  
 47 Else,] Else Q 48 taxe,] taxe Q for or] or for F2 vnjust]  
 vnjust Q proud,] proud Q 51 chastitie] Chastity, Q scornes]  
 scornes, Q 52 (Not *Loue*, for] corr. F1, F2 (*Loue* F2) . Not *Loue* (for Q  
 (Not *Loue* ; for F1 originally 53 honour] Honor Q renowne ?]  
 Renowne ?) Q

But) giddie C V P I D, V E N V S franticke sonne.  
 Yet A R E T E, if by this veiled light, 55  
 Wee but discover'd (what we not discern)  
 Any, the least of imputations stand  
 Readie to sprinkle our vnspotted fame,  
 With note of lightnesse, from these reuels neere  
 Not, for the empire of the vnuerse, 60  
 Should night, or court, this whatsoeuer shine,  
 Or grace of ours vnshappily enjoy.  
 " Place, and occasion arc two priuie theeues ;  
 " And from poore innocent ladies often steale  
 " (The best of things) an honourable name : 65  
 " To stay with follics, or where faults may be,  
 " Infers a crime, although the partie free  
 A R E How *Cynthian-ly* (that is, how worthily  
 And like herselfe) the matchlesse C Y N T H I A speakes !  
 Infinite ielousies, infinite regards, 70  
 Doe watch about the true virginitie  
 But P H Œ B E liues from all, not onely fault,  
 But as from thought, so from suspicion free.  
 " Thy presence *broad-seales* our delights for pure,  
 " What's done in C Y N T H I A S sight, is done secure. 75  
 C Y N. That then so answer'd (dearest A R E T E)  
 What th'argument, or of what sort our sports  
 Are like to be this night, I not demaund.  
 Nothing which dutie, and desirc to please  
 Bears written in the forehead, comes amissc. 80  
 But vnto whose inuention, must we owe,  
 The complement of this nights furniturc ?  
 A R E. Excellcnt Goddessc, to a mans, whose worth,  
 (Without *hyperbole*,) I thus may praise ,

v. vi 54 But) But Q 57 Any, *corr* F1, F2 Any Q, F1 *originally*  
 imputations] imputations, Q 61 night,] Night Q 62 ours] ours,  
 Q enjoy] enjoy Q 68 *Cynthian-ly*] *Cynthianly* Q is,] is Q  
 72 all,] all Q 73 free] free, Q 77 argument, *corr* F1, F2  
 Argument, Q argument F1 *originally* sort] sort, Q 78 night,]  
 night, Q demaund] demand F2 80 amisse] amisse, Q 83  
 a mans] mans Q 84 *hyperbole* *corr* F1, F2 *Hyperbole* Q *hyperbole*  
 F1 *originally*

- 85 One (at least) studious of deseruing well,  
 And (to speake truth) indeed deseruing well :  
 " Potentiall merit stands for actual,  
 " Where onely oportunitie doth want,  
 " Not will, nor power . both which in him abound.
- 90 One, whom the M V S E S, and M I N E R V A loue.  
 For whom should they, then C R I T E S, more esteeme,  
 Whom P H Œ B V S (though not *Fortune*) holdeth deare ?  
 And (which conuinceth excellence in him,)  
 A principall admirer of your selfe.
- 95 Euen, through th' vngentle injuries of *fate*,  
 And difficulties, which doe vertue choake,  
 Thus much of him appeares. What other things  
 Of farther note, doe lye vnborne in him,  
 Them I doe leaue for cherishment to shew,
- 100 And for a Goddesse graciously to iudge.  
 C Y N. We haue alreadie judg'd him, A R E T E :  
 Nor are we ignorant, how noble minds  
 Suffer too much through those indignities,  
 Which times, and vicious persons cast on them :
- 105 Our selfe haue cuer vowed to esteeme,  
 (As vertue, for it selfe, so) fortune base ;  
 Who's first in worth, the same be first in place.  
 Nor farther notice (A R E T E) we craue  
 Then thine approuals soueraigne warrantie :
- 110 Let't be thy care, to make vs knowne to him,  
 " C Y N T H I A shall brighten, what the world made dimme

v. vi 85 studious] studious, Q 86 well ] well, Q well F2 88  
 oportunitie] opportunitie F2 doth] dooth Q 90 One,] One Q  
 loue ] loue, Q 91 they, then esteeme] they more loue then  
 Criticus Q then] than F2 94 selfe ] selfe Q 100 iudge]  
 iudge Q 101 judg'd him,] iudg'd him Q 106 selfe, so) fortune]  
 selfe) so Fortune, Q 107 Who's] Who Q 109 Then] Than F2  
 approuals] approvals, F2 110 Let't be F2 let, be Q Let' be F1  
 Cf v xi 31 him,] him, Q After 111 Exit Arete G

Act v. Scene vii.

The first Masque

CYPID, like ANTEROS

To them

CLeare pearle of heauen, and, not to bee farther ambi-  
tious in titles, CYNTHIA The fame of this illustrious  
night, among others, hath also drawne these foure faire  
virgins from the palace of their Queene *Perfection* (a word,  
which makes no sufficient difference, twixt hers, and thine) 5  
to visit thy imperiall court · for she, their soueraigne, not  
finding where to dwell among men, before her returne to  
heauen, aduised them wholly to consecrate themselves to thy  
celestiall seruice, as in whose cleere spirit (the proper element,  
and sphere of vertues) they should behold not her alone, 10  
(their euer honour'd mistris) but themselves (more truly  
themselves) to liue inthroniz'd. Her selfe would haue com-  
mended them vnto thy fauour more particularly, but that  
shee knowes no commendation is more auailable with them,  
then that of proper vertue. Neuerthelesse, she will'd them 15  
to present this christall *mound*, a note of monarchie, and  
symbole of perfection, to thy more worthie *deitie*, which,  
as heere by me they most humble doe, so amongst the rarities  
thereof, that is the chiefe, to shew whatsoever the world  
hath excellent, howsoever remote and various But your 20  
irradiate iudgement will soone discover the secrets of this  
little cristall world. Themselves (to appeare more plainly)  
because they know nothing more odious, then false pretexs,

v vii Act v Scene vii The first Masque] SCENA 2 THE FIRST  
MASQUE Q which prints the scene in italic om G, who continues the  
scene CYPID,] Cupid Q Enter Cupid, disguised as Anteros, followed  
by Storgé, Aglaia, Euphantaste, and Aphelera G stage-dir To them.  
not in 1 Cleare] Ante Cleare Q 2 titles,] titles Q, which should  
have printed ' (not' illustrious] illustrious Q 3 others,] others Q  
6 she,] she Q soueraigne] Soueraigne Lady Q 7 returne] retourne Q  
originally 8 heauen,] heauen Q 9 celestia] Celestia] Q 10  
sphere] sphere Q vertues] vertue F2 behold] behould Q 11  
honour'd mistris] honor'd Mistresse Q 12 inthroniz'd] enthronised Q  
13 them] thee Q thee F3 15 then] than F2 (so 23) vertue,]  
vertue . Q 18 doe,] doe , F2 22 more] the more Q 23 odious,]  
odious Q pretexs,] pretexs Q



haue chosen to expresse their seuerall qualities, thus, in  
 25 seuerall colours.

The first, in citron colour, is *naturall Affection*, which giuen  
 vs to procure our good, is sometime called S T O R G E, & as  
 euery one is neerest to himselfe, so this hand-maid of reason,  
*allowable selfe-loue*, as it is without harme, so are none with-  
 30 out it : Her place in the court of *Perfection* was to quicken  
 mindes in the pursuit of honour. Her deuce is a *perpen-  
 dicular Leuell*, vpon a *Cube*, or *Square*. The word, S E S V O  
 M O D V L O. Alluding to that true measure of ones selfe,  
 which as euerie one ought to make, so is it most conspicuous  
 35 in thy diuine example.

The second, in greene, is A G L A I A, *delectable and pleasant  
 Conuersation*, whose propertie is to moue a kindly delight,  
 and sometime not without laughter. Her office, to enter-  
 taine assemblies, and keepe societies together with faire  
 40 familiaritie. Her deuce within a *Ring of clouds*, a *Heart with  
 shine about it*. The word, C V R A R V M N V B I L A P E L L O.  
 An *allegorie* of C Y N T H I A E S hght, which no lesse cleares  
 the skie, then her faire mirth the heart.

The third, in the discolour'd mantle spangled all ouer, is  
 45 E V P H A N T A S T E, *a well conceited Wittnesse*, and  
 imployd in honouring the court with the riches of her pure

v. vii. 24 qualities,] *qualities* Q thus, *corr* F1 thus Q thus F1  
 originally, F2 25 colours] *colours* Q 26 The first] 1 The  
 first Q colour,] *coulour* Q *naturall Affection* *corr* F1  
*naturall Affection* Q *natural affection* F1 originally, F2 27  
 STORGE, & *corr* F1 Storge, and Q Storge, and F1 originally  
 Storge, and F2 29 *allowable selfe-loue* *corr* F1 *allowable selfe-  
 loue* Q. *allowable selfe-loue* F1 originally, F2 (love F2) 30 *Perfection*  
*corr*. F1 : *Perfection* Q *perfection* F1 originally, F2 31 honour]  
 Honor Q 31-2 *perpendicular Leuell* *corr* F1 *Perpendicular Leuell*  
 Q. *perpendicular leuell* F1 originally, F2 (leuell F2) 32 *Cube*, or *Square*  
*corr*. F1 *Cube* or *Square* Q *Cube*, or *Square* F1 originally, F2 33  
 MODVLO.] MODVLO Q 36 The] 2 The Q greene.] *Greene* Q  
 36-7 *delectable and pleasant Conuersation* *corr*. F1 *delectable and pleasant*  
*Conuersation* Q, F1 originally, F2 (*Conuersation* F2) 37 is to moue] it  
 is to moue Q 38 office,] *office* Q 41 it. The] it, the Q word  
*corr* F1, F2 worde Q Word F1 originally 42 *allegorie* *corr*. F1  
*Allegory* Q. *Allegorie* F1 originally, F2 CYNTHIAES] *Cynthias* Q :  
 CYNTHIA'S F2 43 then] than F2 44 The] 3 The Q the dis-  
 colour'd] *discolour'd* Q 45 *Wittnesse* *corr*. F1 *Wittnesse* Q  
*witnesse* F1 originally *wittynesse* F2

invention. Her deuice, vpon a *Petanus*, or *Mercuriall* hat, a *Crescent*. The word, SIC LAVS INGENII. Inferring, that the praise and glorie of wit, doth euer increase, as doth thy growing moone. 50

The fourth in white, is APHELEIA, a *Nymph* as pure and simple as the soule, or as an abrase table, and is therefore called *Simplicite*; without folds, without pleights, without colour, without counterfeit: and (to speake plainly) *Plainenesse* it selfe. Her deuice is no deuice. The 55 word vnder her *siluer Shield*, OMNIS ABEST FVCVS. Alluding to thy spotlesse selfe, who art as farre from impuritie, as from mortaltie

My selfe (celestiall Goddesse) more fit for the court of CYNTHIA, then the arbors of CYTHEREE, am call'd 60 ANTEROS, or *Loues enemy*; the more welcome therefore to thy court, and the fitter to conduct this *quaternion*, who as they are thy professed votaries, and for that cause aduersaries to *Loue*, yet thee (perpetuall *Virgin*) they both loue, and vow to loue eternally. 65

# Act v. Scene VIII.

CYNTHIA, ARETE, CRITES.

Not without wonder, nor without delight,  
Mine eyes haue view'd (in contemplations depth)  
This worke of wit, diuine, and excellent:  
What shape? what substance? or what vnknowne power  
In virgins habite, crown'd with lawrell leaues, 5

v. vii. 47 deuice,] deuice Q Petasus,] Petasus F2 Mercuriall]  
Mercuriall Q 48 word, corr F1, F2 worde, Q Word, F1  
originally INGENII Inferring,] INGENII Inferring Q 51 The]  
4 The Q 53 Simplicitie corr. F1, F2 Symplcity Q. simplicitie F1  
originally folds] foulds Q 54 colour] coullour Q 56 siluer Q.  
corr. F1 Siluer F1 originally, F2 Shield,] Shield Q 56-7 Fvcvs  
Alluding] Fvcvs, alluding Q 59 celestiall] Cælestiall Q 60 then]  
than F2 CYTHEREE] Cythere Q 62 quaternion corr. F1  
Quaternio Q. Quaternion F1 originally, F2 v viii Act v. Scene viii]  
SCENA. 3. Q CYNTHIA, . . . CRITES ] Cynthia Arete. Criticus  
Q. Re-enter Arete, with Crites G, continuing the scene 1 Not]  
Cynthia Not Q wonder] wouder Q 2 view'd (in] veiw'd in Q  
depth)] depth, Q 5 habite,] habit Q leaues,] leaues Q

- And oliue branches wouen in betweene,  
 On sea-girt rockes, like to a Goddesse shines ?  
 O front ! O face ! O all cælestiall sure,  
 And more then mortall ! A R E T E, behold  
 10 Another C Y N T H I A, and another Queene,  
 Whose glorie (like a lasting *plenilune*)  
 Seemes ignorant of what it is to wane!  
 Not vnder heauen an obiect could be found  
 More fit to please. Let C R I T E S make approach.  
 15 Bountie forbids to paule our thanks with stay,  
 Or to deferre our fauour, after view .  
 " The time of grace is, when the cause is new.  
 A R E. Loe, here the man (celestiall D E L I A)  
 Who (like a circle bounded in it selfe)  
 20 Contaynes as much, as man in fulnesse may.  
 Loe, here the man, who not of vsuall earth,  
 But of that nobler, and more precious mould,  
 Which P H œ B V S selfe doth temper, is compos'd ;  
 And, who (though all were wanting to reward)  
 25 Yet, to himselfe he would not wanting be :  
 Thy fauours gaine is his ambitions most,  
 And labours best ; who (humble in his height)  
 Stands fixed silent in thy glorious sight.  
 C Y N. With no lesse pleasure, then we haue beheld  
 30 This precious christall, worke of rarest wit,  
 Our eye doth reade thee (now enstil'd) our C R I T E S ;  
 Whom learning, vertue, and our fauour last,  
 Exempteth from the gloomy multitude.  
 " With common eye the supreme should not see.  
 35 Henceforth be ours, the more thy selfe to be

v. viii. 7 rockes,] Rocke Q 8 cælestiall] celestia] Q 9 then]  
 than F2 behold] behould Q 12 wane! corr F1. wane Q, F1  
 originally 14 please.] please, Q CRITES make approach ] Criticus  
 approach, Q CRITES make approach F2 15 paule corr F1.  
 paull Q pall F1 originally, F2 16 fauour,] fauour Q 18 Loe,]  
 Lo Q (so 21) celestia] cælestiall Q 19 selfe)] selfe,) Q 20 may ]  
 may, Q 21 man, who] man, who, Q 24 reward)] reward, Q  
 26 fauours] Fauors Q 29 then] than F2 31 thee . . CRITES]  
 thee, now, our Criticus Q 35 Henceforth] Hence forth Q ours]  
 Ours F2

CRI. Heau'ns purest light, whose orbe may be eclips'd,  
 But not thy praise (diuineſt CYNTHIA)  
 How much too narrow for ſo high a grace,  
 Thine (ſaue therein) the moſt vnworthy CRITES  
 Doth find himſelfe ! for euer ſhine thy fame ; 40  
 Thine honours euer, as thy beauties doe ;  
 In me they muſt, my darke worlds chiefeſt lights,  
 By whose propitious beames my powers are rais'd  
 To hope ſome part of thoſe moſt loftie points,  
 Which bleſſed ARETE hath pleas'd to name, 45  
 As markes, to which m'indeuours ſteps ſhould bend  
 Mine, as begun at thee, in thee muſt end.

## Act v. Scene IX.

The ſecond Maſque.

MERCVRIE, as a PAGE.

Sister of PHÆBUS, to whose bright orbe we owe, that  
 We not complaine of his abſence, Theſe foure brethren  
 (for they are brethren, and ſonnes of EVTAXIA, a lady  
 knowne, and highly belou'd of your reſplendent *deitie*) not  
 able to be abſent, when CYNTHIA held a ſolemnitie, 5  
 officiouſly inſinuate themſelues into thy preſence : For, as  
 there are foure cardinall vertues, vpon which the whole  
 frame of the *court* doth moue, ſo are theſe the foure cardinall  
 properties, without which, the body of *complement* moueth  
 not. With theſe foure ſiluer iauelins (which they beare in 10  
 their hands) they ſupport in Princes courts the ſtate of the

v viii. 36 Heau'ns] Heauens Q 37 praise corr. Fr: Praise ;  
 Q. praise ; Fr originally, F2 39 Thine] Thy Q the moſt . . .  
 CRITES] vnworthy Criticus Q 40 himſelfe !] himſelfe ? Q 42  
 lights,] Lights, Q 45 name,] name Q 46 to not in Q m'indeuours  
 corr. Fr my'ndeours Q my'ndeours Fr originally, F2 v ix Act v.  
 Scene ix The ſecond Maſque] SCENA. 4 THE SECOND MASQUE.  
 Q, which prints the ſcene in italic The Second Maſque G, who  
 continues the ſcene. MERCVRIE,] Mercury Q Enter Mercury as a  
 Page, introducing Eucosmos, Eupathes, Eutolmos, and Eucolus. G  
 1 Sister] Mer. Sister Q PHÆBUS,] Phœbus Q 3 brethren, and]  
 Brethren and Q 5 ſolemnitie] ſolempnity Q 6 For,] For Q 8  
 moue] moous Q 9 properties,] properties Q which,] which Q  
 moueth] mooueth Q

presence, as by office they are obliged ; which, though here they may seeme superfluous, yet, for honors sake, they thus presume to visite thee, hauing also beene employd in the  
 15 palace of Queene *Perfection*. And though to them, that would make themselues gracious to a Goddesses, sacrifices were fitter then presents, or *Impreses*, yet they both hope thy fauour, and (in place of either) vse seuerall *Symboles*, contayning the titles of thy imperiall dignitie.

20 First, the hethermost, in the changeable blew, and greene robe, is the commendably-fashioned gallant, *EV COSMOS* ; whose courtly habite is the grace of the presence, and delight of the surueying eye : whom ladies vnderstand by the names of *neate*, and *elegant*. His *Symbole* is, *DIVA EVIRGINI*,  
 25 in which he would expresse thy *deities* principall glory, which hath euer becne *virginitie*.

The second, in the rich acoutrement, and robe of purple, empaled with gold, is *EV PATHES* ; who entertaynes his mind with an harmelesse, but not incurious varietie All  
 30 the obiects of his senses are sumptuous, himselfe a gallant, that, without excesse, can make vse of superfluitie goe richly in imbroderies, iewells (and what not ?) without vanitie, and fare delicately without gluttonie and therefore (not without cause) is vniuersally thought to be of *fine*  
 35 *humour*. His *Symbole* is, *DIVA EOPTIMAE*. An attribute to expresse thy *goodnesse*, in which thou so resemblest *LOVE* thy father.

The third, in the blush-colour'd sute, is, *EV TOLMOS*, as duely respecting others, as neuer neglecting himselfe ,

v ix 13 yet, . sake,] yet . sake Q honors] honours F2  
 14, 26 beene] bin Q 14 employd] employde Q 16 gracious] gracious Q  
 17 then] than Fa presents,] Presents Q Impreses] Impresses Q 18  
 fauour] fauor Q Symboles,] Symboles Q 20 First, the hethermost]  
 1 The hethermost Q First, the hethermost F3 21 robe] Roabe Q (so  
 27) -fashioned gallant] -fashionate Gallant Q 24 is,] is Q (so 35,  
 38, 42, 50) 27 The second,] 2 The second Q purple,] Purple Q  
 28 entertaynes] entertaines Q 31 that, . excesse,] that . . . excesse  
 Q superfluitie] superfluities Q 32 imbroderies] Imbroyers Q  
 iewells] Jewels, Q 33 vanitie,] Vanity, Q 34 [not] not  
 (not Fr 35 humour] humor Q 36 goodnesse,] Goodnesse  
 Q 38 The thurd,] 3. The third Q -colour'd sute,] -collour'd  
 Sute Q

commonly knowne by the title of *good audacitie* : to courts, 40  
and courtly assemblies, a guest most acceptable. His  
*Symbole* is, DIVAE VIRAGINI. To expresse thy *hardy*  
*courage*, in chase of sauage beasts, which harbour in woods,  
and wildernesses.

The fourth, in watchet tinsell, is the kind, and truly 45  
benefique EVCOLOS. Who imparteth not without re-  
spect, but yet without difficultie ; and hath the happinesse  
to make euery kindnesse seeme double, by the timely, and  
freely bestowing thereof. He is the chiefe of them, who (by  
the vulgar) are said to be of *good nature*. His *Symbole* is, 50  
DIVAE MAXIMAE. An adiunct to signifie thy *great-*  
*nesse*, which in heauen, earth, and hell is formidable.

Act v. Scene x.

CVPID, MERCVRIE

IS not that AMORPHVS, the trauailer ?

IMER. As though it were not ! doe you not see how his  
legs are in trauaile with a measure ?

CVP. HEDON, thy master, is next

MER What, will CVPID turne *nomenclator*, and cry  
them ?

CVP No faith, but I haue a *comædie* toward, that would  
not be lost for a kingdome

MER. In good time, for CVPID will proue the *comædie*.

CVP MERCVRV, I am studying how to match them. 10

MER How to mis-match them were harder.

The  
Masques  
royne, and  
they  
dance

v. ix. 40 *audacitie* Audacitie, Q courts,] Courts Q 42 VIRAGINI ]  
VIRAGINI, Q 43 beasts,] *beasts* Q harbour] harbor Q 44  
wildernesses] Wildernesses F3 45 The fourth,] 4 The fourth Q  
watchet tinsell] Watchet-Tinsell Q 49 thereof He] thereof, he Q  
v x. Act v Scene x ] SCENA 5 THE MASQUES Ioyne Q Music.  
A Dance by the two Masques joyned, during which Cupid and Mercury  
retire to the side of the stage G, continuing the scene stage-dir  
The dance not in Q they dance corr. F1, F2 dance F1 originally  
1 Is] Cup Is Q AMORPHVS,] Amorphus Q trauailer] Traueller Q  
traveller F2 2 not I] not ? Q 3 trauaile] Travell F2 4  
master,] maister Q master Ff 5 What,] What Q 7, 9 *comædie*  
corr F1 Comedy Q: comedie F1 originally: Comædie F2 Cf. 65  
9 proue] prooue Q 11 to mis-match them] too mismatch them, Q

C V P. They are the *Nymphs* must doe it, I shall sport my selfe with their passions aboue measure.

M E R. Those *Nymphs* would be tam'd a little, indeed, but  
15 I feare thou hast not arrowes for the purpose.

C V P. O, yes, here be of all sorts, flights, rouers, and butt-shafts. But I can wound with a brandish, and neuer draw bow for the matter.

M E R. I cannot but beleue it, my inuisible archer, and  
20 yet me thinks you are tedious.

C V P. It behoues me to be somewhat circumspect, M E R C V R Y, for if C Y N T H I A heare the twang of my bow, shee'le goe neere to whip mee with the string: therefore, to preuent that, I thus discharge a brandish vpon—  
25 it makes no matter which of the couples. P H A N T A S T E, and A M O R P H V S, at you.

M E R. Will the shaking of a shaft strike 'hem into such a feuer of affection?

C V P. As well as the wincke of an eye: but I pray thee,  
30 hinder me not with thy prattle.

M E R. I O V E forbid I hinder thee. Mary, all that I feare, is C Y N T H I A S presence; which, with the cold of her chastitie, casteth such an *antiperistasis* about the place, that no heate of thine will tarry with the patient.

35 C V P. It will tarry the rather, for the *antiperistasis* will keepe it in.

M E R. I long to see the experiment.

C V P. Why, their marrow boiles already, or they are all turn'd *eunuchs*.

40 M E R. Nay, and't bee so, I'll giue ouer speaking, and bee a spectator onely.

The first  
straine  
done

A M O. C Y N T H I A (by my bright soule) is a right  
v x 12 They are] It is Q it,] it, F2 14 little, corr. F1,  
F2 little Q, F1 originally 16 O,] O Q 19 it,] it Q 22  
M E R C V R Y ] Mercury, Q heare] here Q 25 couples ] couples Q  
26 Waves his arrow at them add G 27 shaft] shaft, Q 29 thee,]  
thee Q 31 Mary,] Marry Q Marry, F2 32 feare,] feare Q  
presence,] presence, Q cold] could Q 38 Why,] Why Q 40  
ouer speaking] ouerspeaking Q 41 stage-dir The first straine done.  
corr F1, F2 They daunce the 1. Straine. Q. They haue (sic) danced  
the first straine. F1 originally

\* exquisite, and splendidious lady; yet AMORPHVS, I thinke, hath seene more fashions, I am sure more countries · but whether I haue, or not, what neede wee gaze on 45 CYNTHIA, that haue our selfe to admire?

PHA. O, excellent CYNTHIA! yet if PHANTASTE sate where shee doo's, and had such a tire on her head (for attire can doe much) I say no more—but goddesses are goddesses, and PHANTASTE is as shee is! I would the 50 reuells were done once, I might goe to my schoole of glasse, againe, and learne to doe my selfe right after all this ruffling

MER. How now, CVPID? here's a wonderfull change with your brandish! doe you not heare, how they dote?

CV P. What prodigie is this? no word of loue? no 55 mention? no motion?

MER. Not a word, my little *Ignis fatue*, not a word.

CV P. Are my darts inchaunted! Is their vigour gone? is their vertue——

MER. What? CVPID turn'd iealous of himselfe? ha, 60 ha, ha.

CV P. Laughs MERCVRV?

MER. Is CVPID angrie?

CV P. Hath he not cause, when his purpose is so deluded?

MER. A rare *comædie*, it shall be intitled, CVPID'S. 65

CV P. Doe not scorne vs, HERMES.

MER. Choller, and CVPID, are two fiery things; I scorne 'hem not. But I see that come to passe, which I presag'd in the beginning.

CV P. You cannot tell · perhaps the physicke will not 70 worke so soone vpon some, as vpon others. It may be, the rest are not so resty.

v. x. 43-4 AMORPHVS, I thinke,] *Amorphus* I thinke Q 45 not,] no Q what] whether F<sub>2</sub>, F<sub>3</sub> 47 O.] O Q CYNTHIA!] *Cynthia*. Q 48 doo's] do's F<sub>2</sub> a tire] Attire F<sub>3</sub> 49 more—] more, Q 50 is!] is Q 51 glasse,] Glasse Q After 52 Music they begin the second dance. G 53 now,] now Q 54 brandish!] Brandish? Q dote] doate Q 57 word,] word Q *Ignis fatue*] *Hell-fire* Q 58 inchaunted] enchanted Q 59 enchanted F<sub>2</sub> vigour] vigor Q 65 MER] *Mer.* Q MOR F<sub>1</sub> *comædie*] *Comedy* Q intitled,] intitled; Q 66 vs,] vs Q 67 Choller,] Chollar Q CVPID,] *Cupid* Q 68 passe,] *passe* Q



M E R. *Ex vngue*, you know the old *adage*, as these, so are ' the remainder.

75 C V P. I'll trie · this is the same shaft, with which I wounded A R G V R I O N.

M E R. I, but let mee saue you a labour, C V P I D: there were certayne bottles of water fetcht, and drunke off (since that time) by these gallants

80 C V P. I O V E, strike me into earth: The *Fountayne* of *selfe-Loue*!

M E R. Nay, faint not, C V P I D.

C V P. I remembred it not

M E R. Faith, it was ominous to take the name of  
85 A N T E R O S vpon you, you know not what charme or inchantment lies in the word: you saw, I durst not venter vpon any deuice, in our presentment, but was content to be no other then a simple page. Your arrowes properties (to keepe *decorum*) C V P I D, are suted (it should seeme) to the  
90 nature of him you personate.

C V P. Indignitie not to be borne.

M E R. Nay rather, an attempt to haue beene forborne.

C V P. How might I reuenge my selfe on this insulting  
M E R C V R Y? there's C R I T E S, his minion, he has not  
The second straine. tasted of this water. It shall be so. Is C R I T E S turn'd dotard on himselfe too?

97 M E R. That followes not, because the venome of your shafts cannot pierce him, C V P I D.

C V P. As though there were one *antidote* for these, and  
100 another for him?

M E R. As though there were not! or as if one effect might

v x 73 *vngue*,] *ungus*, F2 *adage*,] *Adage*, Q After 76 *Waves*  
his arrow again. G 77 labour,] labour Q 78 off] off, Q 79  
time] time,) Q 80 I O V E,] *Youe* Q 81 *selfe-Loue*] *Selfe-loue*? Q  
82 Nay, not,] Nay not Q 84 Faith,] Faith Q ominous  
omenous Q 86 saw,] saw Q 87 deuice,] *Deuise* Q presentment,  
presentment Q 88 then] than F2 Your arrowes] Your wes  
Q originally 92 rather,] rather Q beene] bin Q 94 C R I T E S, his  
minion,] *Criticus* his Minnion Q 95 water] water? Q water  
[waves his arrow at *Critus*] G C R I T E S] *Criticus* Q (so 105) stage-dir.  
The straine] *They daunce the 2 straine*. Q (in text after 'shall be so')  
96 dotard corr. Q, Ff Dotard Q originally 98 him, C V P I D] him Q  
99 these,] these, F2 101 not!] not? Q

not arise of diuers causes? What say you to CYNTHIA, ARETE, PHRONESIS, TIMÈ, and others there?

CVP. They are diuine.

MER. And CRITES aspires to be so. 105

CVP. But that shall not serue him.

MER. 'Tis like to doe it, at this time. But CVPID is growne too couetous, that will not spare one of a multitude.

CVP. One is more then a multitude. 109

MER. ARETES fauour makes any one shot-prooffe *The third straine.* against thee, CVPID. I pray thee, light hony-bee, remember thou art not now in ADONIS garden, but in CYNTHIAS presence, where thornes he in garrison about the roses. Soft, CYNTHIA speakes.

Act v. Scene XI.

CYNTHIA, ARETE, CRITES,

MASQVERS.

LAdies, and gallants of our court, to end,  
 And giue a timely period to our sports,  
 Let vs conclude them with declining night;  
 Our empire is but of the darker halfe.  
 And if you iudge it any recompence 5  
 For your faire paines, t'haue earn'd DIANAs thanks,  
 DIANA grants them and bestowes their crowne  
 To gratifie your acceptable zeale.  
 For you are they, that not (as some haue done)  
 Doe censure vs, as too seuer, and sowre, 10  
 But as (more rightly) gracious to the good;  
 Although we not denie, vnto the proud,  
 Or the prophane, perhaps indeede austere:

V. x 103 TIMÈ] TIME Q TIME' F2 After 105 Music they begin the  
 thrd dance G 107 it.] prettily well Q 109 then] than F2 110  
 stage-dir. The . straine.] They daunce the 3 straine. Q 111 thee.]  
 thee Q 114 Soft.] Soft Q V XI Act v. . . . MASQVERS not in  
 Q. or G, who continue the scene. 1 ladies.] Cynthia Ladyes Q of  
 our court, to end, not in Q 2 And] To Q 3 them] them, Q 4  
 halfe.] halfe. Q 5 recompence] recompence, Q 6 thanks.]  
 thanks, Q 10 sowre] sower Q 11 as] are Q gracious] Gracious Q

- For so ACTAEON, by presuming farre,  
 15 Did (to our grieve) incurre a fatall doome ;  
 And so, swolne NIOBE (comparing more  
 Then he presum'd) was trophæed into stone.  
 But are we therefore judged too extreme ?  
 Seemes it no crime, to enter sacred bowers,  
 20 And hallowed places, with impure aspect,  
 Most lewdly to pollute ? Seemes it no crime,  
 To braue a *deitie* ? Let mortals learne  
 To make religion of offending heauen ;  
 And not at all to censure powers diuine.  
 25 To men, this argument should stand for firme,  
 " A Goddesses did it, therefore it was good .  
 " We are not cruell, nor delight in bloud.  
 But what haue serious repetitions  
 To doe with reuels, and the sports of court ?  
 30 We not intend to sowre your late delights  
 With harsh expostulation. Let 't suffice,  
 That we take notice, and can take reuenge  
 Of these calumnious, and lewd blasphemies.  
 For we are no lesse CYNTHIA, then we were,  
 35 Nor is our power (but as our selfe) the same .  
 Though we haue now put on no tyre of shine,  
 But mortall eyes vndaz'led may indure.  
 " Yeeres are beneath the spheres : and time makes weake  
 " Things vnder heauen, not powers which gouerne heauen.  
 40 And though our selfe be, in our selfe, secure,  
 Yet let not mortals challenge to themselues  
 Immunitie from thence. Loe, this is all :  
 " Honour hath store of spleene, but wanteth gall.  
 Once more, we cast the slumber of our thankes  
 45 On your ta'ne toile, which here let take an end.

v xl. 14 ACTAEON, Q Actæon Q 17 Then] Than F2 presum'd)]  
 presum'd, Q 18 judged] iudged Q 19 crime,] Crime Q 20  
 places, . aspect,] Places . . . aspect Q 24 diuine] diuine Q  
 26 it,] it, Q 31 expostulation Let't] expostulation ; Let Q  
 33 blasphemies ] Blasphemies, Q 34 then] than F2 36 shine,] shine  
 Q 38 " Yeeres],, Yeares, Q 39 heauen,] Heauen, Q heauen,]  
 Heaven Q 40 be,] be Q 42 thence] thence Q 45 end:] end: Q

And that we not mis-take your seuerall worths,  
 Nor you our fauour, from your selues remooue  
 What makes you not your selues, those cloudes of masque :  
 " Particular paines, particular thanks doe aske. *They vnmasque.*  
 How ! let me view you ! ha ? Are we contemn'd ?  
 Is there so little awe of our disdaine, *51*  
 That any (vnder trust of their disguise)  
 Should mixe themselues with others of the court ?  
 And (without forehead) boldly presse so far,  
 As farther none ? How apt is lenitie *55*  
 To be abusde ? seueritie to be loth'd ?  
 And yet, how much more doth the seeming face  
 Of neighbour-vertues, and their borrow'd names,  
 Adde of lewd boldnesse, to loose vanities ?  
 Who would haue thought that PHILAVTIA durst *60*  
 Or haue vsurped noble STORGES name ?  
 Or with that theft haue ventred, on our eyes ?  
 Who would haue thought, that all of them should hope  
 So much of our conniuece, as to come  
 To grace themselues, with titles not their owne ? *65*  
 In stead of med'cines, haue we maladies ?  
 And such impostumes, as PHANTASTIE is,  
 Grow in our palace, we must lance these sores,  
 Or all will putrifie Nor are these all,  
 For we suspect a farder fraud then this : *70*  
 Take off our vaile, that shadowes may depart,  
 And shapes appeare, beloued ARETE—So.  
 Another face of things presents it selfe,  
 Then did of late : What ! featherd CVPID mask'd ?

v. xi. 47 fauour,] Fauour, Q remooue] remooue, Q. remove F2  
 48 selues,] selues, Q 50 How ! . . . ha ? not in Q contemn'd]  
 contemn'd F1 originally 51 disdaine,] Disdeigne Q 57 doth]  
 dooth Q 58 neighbour-vertues] neighbor Vertues Q borrow'd]  
 borrowed Q, Ff 59 boldnesse,] Bouldnesse Q 60 haue] hane Q  
 62 ventred,] ventred Q. ventur'd F3 63 thought,] thought Q  
 hope] hope, Q 64 conniuece] continence F2, F3 66 med'cines,]  
 Medicines Q 68 palace,] Pallace ? Q palace ? F1 Palace ? F2  
 (But 'And' in 67 = 'If'.) 69 putrifie] putrifie. Q 70 farder]  
 farther F3 then] than F2 72 ARETE—] Arete, Q 74 Then]  
 Than F2 What !] what ? Q

- 75 And mask'd like ANTEROS? And, stay! more strange!  
 Deare MERCVRIE, our brother, like a page,  
 To countenance the ambush of the boy?  
 Nor endeth our discouerie as yet:  
 GELAI A, like a *Nymph*, that but ere-while  
 80 (In male attire) did serue ANAIDES?  
 CVPID came hither to find sport and game,  
 Who, heretofore hath beene too conuersant  
 Among our traine, but neuer felt reuenge.  
 And MERCVRIE bare CVPID companie.  
 85 CVPID, we must confesse this time of mirth  
 (Proclam'd by vs) gaue opportunitie,  
 To thy attempts, although no priuiledge;  
 Tempt vs no farther, we cannot indure  
 Thy presence longer: vanish hence, away.  
 90 You, MERCVRIE, we must intreate to stay,  
 And heare what we determine of the rest;  
 For in this plot, we well perceiue your hand.  
 But (for we meane not a *censorian* taske,  
 And yet to lance these vlcers growne so ripe)  
 95 Deare ARETE, and CRITES, to you two  
 We giue the charge; impose what paines you please:  
 Th' incurable cut off, the rest reforme,  
 Remembring euer what we first decreed,  
 Since reuells were proclam'd let now none bleed.  
 100 ARE. How well DIANA can distinguish times?  
 And sort her censures? keeping to her selfe  
 The doome of gods, leauing the rest to vs?  
 Come, cite them, CRITES, first, and then proceed.  
 CRI. First, PHILAVTIA (for she was the first,)

V. XI. 75 like ANTEROS? And, stay! like to *Anteros*? but, Q 76  
 MERCVRIE,] *Mercury* Q brother,] *Brother*, Q, F3 brother Ff  
 79 GELAI A.] *Gelasia* Q ere-while] ere while Q 80 attire)]  
 attire,) Q 81 hither] hether Q 82 heretofore] heere tofore  
 Q 89 vanish hence, away] Vanish, Hence, Away Q *Exit Cupid*.  
 add Q 90 You,] You Q 92 we . hand] you haue the deepest  
 hand Q 93 taske,] tasque Q 95 CRITES, . . . two] *Criticus*, to  
 you Q 97 reforme,] reforme, Q 99 proclam'd let] proclam'd,  
 Let Q proclam'd, let F2 103 them, CRITES, first,] them *Criticus* Q  
 104 first,)] first) Q

Then light GELAI A, in AGLAIAS name, 105  
Thirdly PHANTASTE, and MORIA next,  
Maine follies all, and of the female crew :  
AMORPHVS, or EVCOSMOS counterfeit,  
Voluptuous HEDONtane for EVPATHES,  
Brazen ANAIDES, and ASOTVS last, 110  
With his two pages, MORVS and PROSAITES ;  
And thou, the trauellers euill, COS, approach,  
Impostors all, and male deformities—

A RE. Nay, forward, for I delegate my power,  
And will that at thy mercie they doe stand, 115  
Whom they so oft so plainly scorn'd before.  
" 'Tis vertue which they want, and wanting it,  
" Honour no garment to their backes can fit.  
Then, CRITES, practise thy discretion.

CR I. Adored CYNTHIA, and bright ARETE, 120  
Another might seeme fitter for this taske,  
Then CRITES farre, but that you iudge not so :  
For I (not to appeare vindicatiue,  
Or mindfull of contempts, which I contemn'd  
As done of impotence) must be remisse, 125  
Who, as I was the authour, in some sort,  
To worke their knowledge into CYNTHIAS sight,  
So should be much seuerer to reuenge  
Th'indignitie, hence issuing to her name.  
But there's not one of these, who are vnpain'd, 130  
Or by themselues vnpunished for vice  
Is like a furie to the vicious minde,  
And turnes delight it selfe to punishment.

v. xi 107 crew ] crue, Q 108 counterfeit F2 conterfeit F1 coun-  
terfet Q 111 pages, Morvs] Pages Morus, Q 112 trauellers]  
Trauailers Q approach] approach F2 113 deformities—] De-  
formities. Q 114 power, Q power. Ff 115 will] will, stand,]  
stand Q 116 oft] oft, Q before] before Q 119 Then .. thy]  
Now Criticus, vse your Q 120 ARETE, corr. F1, F2: Arete, Q.  
ARETE, F1 originally 121 taske,] tasque Q 122 Then] Than  
F2 CRITES farre] Criticus Q 125 remisse,] remisse; Q 126  
Who, . . . authour,] Who . . . Author Q 129 Th'indignitie] The  
indignity Q name,] Name: Q 131 vnpunished . corr F1, F2:  
vnpunished, Q. vnpunished F1 originally 132 vicious] vitious Q

- But we must forward to designe their doome.
- 135 You are offenders, that must be confest,  
Doe you confesse it? ALL. We doe.  
C R I. And, that you merit sharpe correction? ALL. Yes.  
C R I Then we (reseruing vnto D E L I A E S grace,  
Her farther pleasure, and to A R E T E
- 140 What D E L I A granteth) thus doe sentence you.  
That from this place (for pœnance knowne of all,  
Since you haue drunke so deeply of *selfe-Loue*)  
You (two and two) singing a *palinode*,  
March to your seuerall homes by N I O B E S stone,
- 145 And offer vp two teares apiece thereon;  
That it may change the name, as you must change,  
And of a stone be called *weeping Crosse*:  
Because it standeth crosse of C Y N T H I A S way,  
One of whose names is sacred T R I V I A.
- 150 And, after pœnance thus perform'd, you passe  
In like set order, not as M I D A S did,  
To wash his gold off into *Tagus* streame,  
But to the well of knowledge, *Helicon*;  
Where purged of your present maladies,
- 155 (Which are not few, nor slender) you become  
Such as you faine would seeme: and then returne,  
Offering your seruice to great C Y N T H I A.  
This is your sentence, if the goddesse please,  
To ratifie it with her high consent:
- 160 "The scope of wise mirth vnto fruit is bent.  
C Y N. We doe approue thy censure, belou'd C R I T E S.  
Which M E R C V R Y, thy true propitious friend,

v. xi. 134 designe] define Q, G doome. F2: Doome, Q doome, FI originally doome, corr. FI (a misprint?) 136 ALL] Omnes Q 137 And,] And Q ALL. Yes] Omnes We doe. Q 138 DELIAES] Delias Q. DELIA'S F2 140 granteth] graunteth Q 141, 150 pœnance] Penance Q. penance F2 145 apiece] a piece Q 147 weeping corr. FI, F2 Weeping, Q, FI originally Probably Jonson intended to print 'weeping crosse'. 150 And,] And Q 151 order,] order, Q did,] did Q 152 streame,] streame; Q, F2 153 Helicon,] Helicon, Q 154 Where] Where, Q 155 not few] nor few Q 156 returne,] returne Q 158 please, corr. FI: please Q, F2 please FI originally 160 fruit] fruit Q, F2 161 approue] approoue Q censure, belou'd CRITES] Censure Criticus; Q

(A *deitie*, next I o v e, belou'd of vs)  
 Will vnder-take to see exactly done :  
 And for this seruice of discouerie 165  
 Perform'd by thee, in honor of our name,  
 We vow to guerdon it with such due grace,  
 As shall become our bountie, and thy place.  
 " Princes, that would their people should doe well,  
 " Must at themselues begin, as at the head ; 170  
 " For men, by their example, patterne out  
 " Their imitations, and regard of lawes :  
 " A vertuous *Court* a world to vertue drawes.

PALINODE.

A M O. *From spanish shrugs, french faces, smirks, irps,  
 and all affected humours :*

C H O R V S. Good M E R C V R Y defend vs.

P H A. *From secret friends, sweet seruants, loues, doues,  
 and such phantastique humours.* 5

C H O R V S. Good M E R C V R Y defend vs.

A M O. *From stabbing of armes, flap-dragons, healths,  
 whiffes, and all such swaggering humours.*

C H O R V S. Good M E R C V R Y defend vs.

P H A. *From wauing of fannes, coy glaunces, gluckles, 10  
 cringes, and all such simpring humours.*

C H O R V S. Good M E R C V R Y defend vs.

A M O. *From making loue by atturny, courting of puppets,  
 and paying for new acquaintance.*

C H O R V S. Good M E R C V R Y defend vs. 15

v. xi. 163 vs)] vs.) Q 164 done ] done Q 169 "Princes,"  
 „Princes Q 170 head] heads Q 171 men, . . example,] men . .  
 example Q 173 Court] Court, Q After 173 Exeunt, *Cynthia, Arete,  
 &c. Q. Exeunt Cynthia and her Nymphs, followed by Arete and Cries —  
 Amorphus, Phantaste, &c. go off the stage in pairs singing the following  
 PALINODE. G PALINODE] Palinodeia Q 2 humours ] Humors. Q.  
 humours F2 4 loues,] loues F2 5 phantastique] fantastick F3  
 humours] Humors Q (so 8, 11, 33) 6 Good] Cood Q 10 of om. F2  
 glaunces] glances F2 13 atturny] Attorney Q*



P H A. *From perfum'd dogs, munkeyes, sparrowes, dildo's, and parachito's.*

C H O R V S. Good M E R C V R Y defend vs.

A M O. *From wearing bracelets of haire, shooe-ties, gloues, 20 garters, and rings with poesies.*

C H O R V S. Good M E R C V R Y defend vs.

P H A. *From pargetting, painting, slicking, glazing, and renewing old riueled faces.*

C H O R V S. Good M E R C V R Y defend vs.

25 A M O. *From squiring to tilt-yards, play-houses, pageants, and all such publique places.*

C H O R V S. Good M E R C V R Y defend vs.

P H A. *From entertayning one gallant to gull an other, and making fooles of either.*

30 C H O R V S. Good M E R C V R Y defend vs.

A M O. *From belying ladies fauours, noble-mens countenance, coyning counterfet employments, vaine-glorious taking to them other mens seruices, and all selfe-louing humours.*

C H O R V S. Good M E R C V R Y defend vs.

#### S O N G.

35 N O w each one drie his weeping eyes,  
And to the well of knowledge haste ;

Where purged of your maladies,

You may of sweeter waters taste .

And, with refined voice, report

40 The grace of C Y N T H I A, and her court.

PAL 22 slicking] Slicking Q 28 an other] another Q 31 fauours] fauors Q 32 counterfet] counterfest F2 33 them should be 'vs' After 34 SONG] CANT Q Mercury and Crites sing G 35-40 Q prints in roman 38 You] we Q 39 And, . . . voice,] And . . . voice Q After 40 Exeunt G Finis Actus quinti & ultimi. Q

THE EPILOGVE.

GEntles, be't knowne to you, since I went in  
 I am turn'd rimer ; and doe thus begin.  
 The Author (iealous, how your sense doth take  
 His trauailes) hath enioyned me to make  
 Some short, and ceremonious *epilogue* ; 5  
 But if I yet know what, I am a rogue .  
 He ties me to such lawes, as quite distract  
 My thoughts ; and would a yeere of time exact.  
 I neither must be faint, remisse, nor sorry,  
 Sowre, serious, confident, nor peremptory . 10  
 But betwixt these. Let's see ; to lay the blame  
 Vpon the Childrens action, that were lame.  
 To craue your fauour, with a begging knee,  
 Were to distrust the writers facultie.  
 To promise better at the next we bring, 15  
 Prorogues disgrace, commends not any thing.  
 Stify to stand on this, and proudly approue  
 The play, might taxe the maker of *selfe-Loue*.  
 I'le onely speake, what I haue heard him say ;  
 By (—) 'tis good, and if you lik't, you may. 20

THE END.

*Ecce rubet quidam, pallet, stupet, oscitat, odit*  
*Hoc volo : nunc nobis carmina nostra placent.*

EPIL. THE EPILOGVE.] Epilogus Q, which prints the lines in italic  
 A first draft is found in an Edinburgh University MS. Blooms and Blossoms  
 of the Reigns of Elizabeth, James, Charles I & II, compiled by Richard  
 Jackson in 1623, folio 36, with the title in laudē Cythias Revels 2  
 begin] beginne Q 10 Sowre] Sower Q 11 see:] see? Q  
 13 fauour.] Fauours Q 14 facultie] faculty, Q 17 approue]  
 approoue Q 20 By (—)] By God Q After 20 the MS adds two  
 lines like't or not lik't, for liking comes by chance | Art hath noe enemy  
 but ignorance Ile onely speake THE END] FINIS. Q Originally  
 THE END was enclosed between two rules, afterwards the top rule was  
 taken out and placed below the quotation from Martial.

---

(184)

---

This Comickall Satyre was first  
acted, in the yeere  
1600.

*By the then Children of Queene*

ELIZABETHS

Chappell.

The principall Comœdians were,

NAT. FIELD.	}	IOH. VNDERWOOD.
SAL. PAVY.		ROB. BAXTER.
THO. DAY.		IOH. FROST.

*With the allowance of the Master of REVELLS.*

*This page was added in F1 In F2 the statements about the date, the company, and the Master of the Revels were omitted, and the list of 'The principall Comœdians' was transferred to the back of the half-title, where it followed 'The Persons of the Play' and 'The Scene'*

---

## POETASTER

---



## THE TEXT

*Poetaster* was entered on the Stationers' Register by its first publisher, Matthew Lownes, on December 21, 1601. The entry is as follows

21 decembris

Matthew Lownes    Entred for his copie vnder the handes of  
master Pasfeild and the Wardens    A booke  
called Poetaster, or his arrainment.    vj<sup>d</sup>  
Arber, *Transcript*, III. 198.

The play was published next year with Lownes's imprint. The collation, A to M in fours with one leaf of N, is in detail—Title-page, A 1. The Persons that Act, A 1 verso *Livor* (or the speech of Envy), A 2. Prologue, A 3. The text of the play, A 3 verso to N recto. A note 'To the Reader', explaining that 'an Apology from the Author', designed 'in place of the Epilogue', could not be printed, N verso.

Four copies have been collated for this edition—those in the British Museum, the Bodleian, the Dyce Library, and Mr. T. J. Wise's copy. The text as a whole is carefully printed and only two variations have been detected in it. In II. 1. 36, Mr. Wise's copy has the misprint 'rarher', which is corrected in the other copies, in III. 1. 4 the British Museum copy 'corrects' the spelling '*Mecænas*' to '*Mecenas*', to tally with the spelling in Horace's opening speech. Both of these alterations seem to have been made by the printer<sup>1</sup>

Occasionally the Quarto fails to reproduce the catchwords, but these errors do not seriously affect the text. At I. II. 12-13 B drops a syllable. A 4 verso ends 'By my hous- | holde'; B begins 'gods'. At III. IV. 140 F has had a line taken over and the old catchword retained: F ends

I am none of your fellowes, I haue com-  
I *Pyr*.

<sup>1</sup> '*Mecænas*' is the common spelling of the name both in Quarto and Folio. Jonson must have accepted it so that we are not warranted in substituting the classical form '*Mæcenas*'. '*Mecænas*' is found in the Quarto in the list of the characters and in the text at I. II. 164 and, originally, in the passage noted above in both Quarto and Folio at IV. IV. 41. In Elizabethan times '*Mecænas*', '*Mecœnas*', and '*Mecenas*' would be pronounced alike.

F verso begins

maunded a hundred and fiftie such Rogues, I.

1 Pyr. I, and most of that hundred and fiftie . . .

A full page of text has normally thirty-five lines in the Quarto; there are thirty-five on E 4 verso. F, F verso, F 2, and F 2 verso have thirty-four. There may have been a slight shortening of the text at this point, deleting some personality after it had been set up. Jonson had difficulties with the authorities over this play, and public opinion censured him for satirizing lawyers, captains, and players.<sup>1</sup>

The play was next printed in the Folio of 1616. By a printer's error the second page of the text, p. 276, part of Envy's speech, is headed '*Cynthias Reuells*'. The title-page is in two states—one plain, with the imprint 'London, Printed by William Stansby, for Matthew Lownes'; the other framed in an ornamental border, 'Printed by *W. Stansby*, for *M Lownes*.' As might be expected, the text was set up from a copy of the Quarto which Jonson had revised. Peculiarities of the printing prove this.

For instance, the Folio copies the devices of spacing and paragraphing used in the Quarto to indicate a dramatic pause. In I. II. 211-12 the Quarto prints

Thou shalt be my *Solicitor*: Tis right *olde boy*, Ist ?

In II. i. 166-7

. . . till I turne my selfe to nothing but obseruation.  
Godmorrow cosen *Cytheris*.

In III. i. 16-17, Horace's first reply to Crispinus in Holy Street :

Not greatly gallant, Sir : like my fortunes; well.  
I'm bold to take my leaue Sir, . . .

<sup>1</sup> Trivial variations of the catchwords are E 4 (III iv 67) c w. 'must'—text, 'must', G 4 verso (IV iv 23) c w. 'him'—text, 'him', I 2 verso (IV viii 19) c w. 'Me'—text, 'Mee', M 2 (V III 422) c w. 'Deme'—text, 'Demei'; M 4 (ibid. 566) c w. 'Crisp'—text, 'Crispinus'.

\* In iv. iv. 23-7.

I can talke to no *Pothecaries*, now. Heart of mee ! Stay the *Pothecary* there.

You shall see, I haue fish't out a cunning piece of Plot now ;

In these four examples the breaks in the text and the paragraphing are clear : Ovid senior is telling out money to Tucça in the first passage ; Cytheris enters at the second ; in the third Horace stops short, stares pointedly at Crispinus, and then haughtily turns away ; in the fourth there is a short pause before ' Heart of mee ! ' while the fussy magistrate hits on a new idea, and a longer pause at the end of the line while the Lictor goes out and returns with Minos. The Folio reproduces all these minor stage-effects ; once, indeed, in II. II (157-8), it is misled by the Quarto into copying a pointless punctuation of this kind :

One of your own compositions, *Hermogenes*.  
He offers you vantage enough.

In three passages the Folio marks a paragraph not indicated in the Quarto because the words are normally spaced to make a full line in the text. Only the first of these has any significance :

*Crisp.* And how deales *Mecænas* with thee ? Liberally ? Ha ?  
Is he open handed ? bountifull ?  
(III. i. 230-2 . Sig. E verso.)

The Folio prints these as two lines, as if Crispinus, whose only object in clinging to Horace and refusing to be shaken off was to get an introduction to Mæcenas, stops short to measure the effect of his words and, getting no reply, drives the point home by repetition.

But the other two examples have no point : it is impossible to credit the muddle-headed and excitable Lupus with a vestige of subtlety. They relate to Horace's emblem of the vulture and the wolf preying upon the dead ass :

*Lupus.* An *Embleme* ? right : That's *Greeke* for a Libell.  
Doe but marke, how Confident he is. (v. iii. 59-60 : Sig. L.)



*Lupus.* An *Asse*? Good still: That's I, too. I am the *Asse*.  
You meane me by the *Asse*. (Ibid. 96-7: Sig. L verso.)

Here the printer seems to have misjudged. He certainly did later in printing a prose speech of *Tucca*'s as three lines of verse:

*Tucca.* Thou twangst right, httle *Horace*; they be indeed:

A couple of Chap-falne Curres. Come, Wee of the Bench,  
Let's rise to the *Vrme*, and condemne 'hem, quickly.

(Ibid. 340-2: Sig. M)

This outburst comes between a verse speech of *Horace* and *Virgil*'s dignified summing-up. All that could be said in defence of the metrical form here is that, if *Tucca* had tried to compose verses, it is probably the sort of verse he would have composed. But it is clearly prose, and follows the Quarto lining mechanically; it is strange that *Jonson* overlooked the error in his proof-reading.

A few minor examples of mispunctuation are taken over from the Quarto: 'he' shall haue them now' (III. iv. 86), which is probably a misprint for 'a' shall'; 'get' (ibid. 133); 'Dost thou 'swear?' (ibid. 151), where the mark of a lead was misread as an apostrophe; and 'the ditt'is all borrowed' (iv. iii. 95).

In revising the punctuation of the Folio, *Jonson* freely introduced the dash, the exclamation mark, and the hyphen, and he is more careful in the use of the bracket. An example of his minute care is to be found before *Tucca*'s admiring phrases interjected in the parody of *Marston*'s style in v. iii. 275 ff. They were inset in brackets in the Quarto: the Folio at first inset them again, prefixing a long dash. Then, as an afterthought, *Jonson* cancelled the dash and printed the lines to range with the names of the other speakers. He also substituted a comma for the heavier stop in 'Come: ' 'True; ' 'O, Father; ' 'Aye me; ' and similar openings of a speech. A comparison of the following passages will show how he went to work.

Quarto.

*Crisp.* Sweete *Horace!*  
*Minerua*, and the *Muses*,  
stand auspicious to thy des-  
seignes. How far'st thou  
sweete man? Frolicke?  
rich? gallant? ha?

*Hor.* Not greatly gallant,  
Sir: like my fortunes; well.  
I'm bold to take my leaue  
Sir, you'd naught else Sir,  
wold you?

What sight is this? *Mecæ-*  
*nas*, *Horace*, say,  
Haue we our senses? . . . Are  
they the *Gods*?  
Reuerence: Amaze: and  
Fury fight in me.

Folio.

CRIS. Sweet HORACE,  
MINERVA, and the *Muses*  
stand auspicious to thy des-  
seignes. How far'st thou,  
sweete man? frolicke?  
rich? gallant? ha?

HORA. Not greatly gallant,  
sir, like my fortunes; well.  
I'm bold to take my leaue,  
sir, you'd naught else, sir,  
would you?

III. 1 13-18.

What sight is this? MECÆ-  
NAS! HORACE! Say!  
Haue we our senses? . . . Are  
they the Gods?

Reuerence, amaze, and furie  
fight in me. IV. vi. 1-6.

The dramatic pointing of the Quarto text—especially in the significant pauses 'Reuerence: Amaze:' with which the speaker tries to stifle his anger in the second passage—gives way to Jonson's systematic attempt to mark precisely the structure of the sentence. This appears even more noticeably in his alteration of the Quarto's reproduction of *Tucca*'s stammer, which Jonson finally left to the actor, relying rather on the comma to indicate a succession of gasps than on heavier stops to mark strong pauses.

Quarto.

visite me some times:  
Thou shalt be welcome *olde*  
*boy*: doe not balke me good  
Swaggrer; *Ioue* keepe thy  
chaine from pawning: goe  
thy waies: if thou lacke  
money Ile lend thee some:  
I'le leaue thee to thy horse,  
now; Adue.

Folio.

visit me sometimes thou  
shalt be welcome, old boy.  
Doe not balke me, good  
swaggerer. Ioue keepe thy  
chaine from pawning, goe  
thy waies, if thou lacke  
money, I'll lend thee some:  
I'll leaue thee to thy horse,  
now. Adieu.

I. ii. 216-20.

## Quarto.

. . . goe, he pens high, loftie, in a new stalking straine; bigger then halfe the Rimers i' the towne againe: he was borne to fill thy mouth, *Minotaurus*; he was: he will teach thee to teare and rand, Rascall; to him: cherish his *Muse*; goe: thou hast fortie, fortie; shillings, I meane, Stinkard; giue him in earnest; doe; he shall write for thee, slaue.

Goe to then, raise; recouer; doe; suffer him not to droop, in prospect of a Player, a Rogue, a Stager: put twentie into his hand; twentie; *Drachmes*, I meane, and let no bodie see: goe, doe it; the worke shall commend it selfe: be *Minos*: Ile pay.

. . . and you Stage mee, Stinkard; your *Mansions* shall sweate for't, your *Tabernacles*, Varlettes: your *Globes*: and your *Tryumphes*.

Verse is printed as prose in both Quarto and Folio at III. i. 83-4, iv. 256-8, iv. vii. 30-1, and prose is turned into verse at v. iii. 340-2.

Finally, a strange misprint of the Quarto, the repeated 'and' in iv. vii. 6 'Hart; and and all the *Poetry* in *Parnassus* get me to be a Player againe' reappears uncorrected in the Folio.

But these lapses are only occasional. The Folio shows

## Folio.

Goe, he pens high, loftie, in a new stalking straine; bigger then halfe the rimers i' the towne, againe: he was borne to fill thy mouth, *MINOTAVRVS*, he was: hee will teach thee to teare, and rand, Rascall, to him, cherish his *muse*, goe: thou hast fortie, fortie, shillings, I meane, stinkard, giue him in earnest, doe, he shall write for thee, slaue.

III. iv. 161-7.

Goe to then, raise; recouer, doe. Suffer him not to droop, in prospect of a player, a rogue, a stager: put twentie into his hand, twentie, sesterces, I meane, and let no bodie see: goe, doe it, the worke shall commend it selfe, be *MINOS*, I'le pay.

Ibid. 180-4

. . . and you stage me, stinkard; your mansions shall sweat for't, your tabernacles, varlets, your *Globes*, and your *Triumphs*.

Ibid. 199-201.

that Jonson worked carefully over the earlier text, correcting punctuation, toning down some dangerous allusions, and strengthening weak phrases. In this last point his retouchings recall the treatment of *Every Man out of his Humour*: the literary critic asserts himself.

The Folio also makes some important additions to the text. Far the most valuable of these is the 'Apologetical Dialogue', which was 'only once spoken vpon the stage' and suppressed by authority: Jonson retrieved it in 1616. Without it we should have a serious gap in our knowledge of the history of the play.<sup>1</sup> It is significant that two insertions of the Folio strengthen the satire on lawyers and players, two classes who protested strongly against the treatment of their order in the original text. Some scathing comments on lawyers were printed for the first time in Act I, Scene ii, ll. 98-136: they added point and sting to the Quarto text. 'Why, the law makes a man happy, without respecting any other merit: a simple scholer, or none at all may be a lawyer.' Considering Jonson's standard of scholarship, that meant a good deal; but he continues, 'If thou canst but haue the patience to plod inough, talke, and make noise inough, be impudent inough, and tis inough.' 'Three bookes will furnish you.' 'And the lesse arte, the better.' And there is a final fling at the lawyer's elastic conscience, which he can stretch to any length. It is probable that this passage, like the 'Apologetical Dialogue', gave trouble—as well it might,—was judiciously cancelled in the Quarto, and revived in the Folio. Once, and once only, a term of contempt was toned down: Jonson originally talked of 'their ( ) Courts', a euphemistic way of printing 'their damned Courts'; he modified this to 'their loud courts' (III. i. 216).

A general indictment of the players, accusing them of fleecing and pandaring (III. iv. 306-13), is added to a personal attack on individual actors: this too was probably a revival of a suppressed passage and not an afterthought.

<sup>1</sup> See vol. I, pp. 415-18.

On the other hand, the new scene added in the Folio to round off the third act, a dialogue between Horace and Trebatius, which is a free rendering of the first *Satire* of Horace's second book, was new in 1616. The part of Trebatius was not in the Quarto. Horace in this poem describes his mission as a satirist. In the words of Professor Arthur Palmer, 'This *Satire* forms a sort of general apologetic preface to the second book, and, though prefixed to that collection, was, perhaps, the last composed. Horace found that his *Satire* had made him unpopular.<sup>1</sup> . . . He had probably been advised to abandon it, and to take to some other branch of poetry; and this poem may be regarded as an answer to those who advised him to do so. Keeping to the dramatic form, which he has cultivated all through the second book, he represents himself as consulting the famous jurist C. Trebatius Testa.' Trebatius had been a friend of Cicero, who introduced him to Julius Caesar as the first lawyer of his day.<sup>2</sup> Now Jonson's main plea in the 'Apologetical Dialogue' was that, after being attacked for three years by the players, he unwillingly replied to them by drawing upon ancient history and pointing a moral from the times of Augustus Caesar,

When wit, and artes were at their height in *Rome*,  
and master-spirits, such as Vergil and Horace

did not want

Detractors, then, or practisers against them.

To introduce a great Roman lawyer, who was broad-minded enough to be on friendly terms with a Roman satirist, appealed to Jonson. It ought to silence legal carpers in London. Further, he felt that the parallel between Horace's position and his own was complete. The critical bent which gave a new turn to historical reading is characteristic of Jonson. In later life he resorted in a similar spirit to Seneca for quotations to illustrate the oratory of Bacon,

<sup>1</sup> See the fourth *Satire* of the first book.

<sup>2</sup> *Epistolae ad Familiares*, vii v 3, 'familiam ducit in iure civili angulari memoria, summa scientia'.

the copiousness of Shakespeare, and even his own retentive memory and ruthless power of concentration.<sup>1</sup>

The text of *Poetaster* in the 1640 Folio was printed by Robert Young. Matthew Lowndes died in 1625, and his son Thomas succeeded to the business; on May 30, 1627, he assigned his rights in *Poetaster* to his uncle, Humphrey Lownes, and to Robert Young (Arber, iv. 205). On November 6, 1628, Humphrey Lownes assigned his rights to George Cole and George Latham, the latter a son-in-law of Matthew Lownes (ibid. iv. 205); on December 6, 1630, they reassigned them to Robert Young, who thus acquired the full copyright (ibid. 245). But Richard Bishop's device (no. 393 in McKerrow) of a boy with wings on his right arm which points upward to a figure in the clouds, but held down to earth by a heavy weight which he carries in his left hand, appears above the imprint. Bishop had taken over Stansby's rights to the works in the 1616 Folio on March 4, 1639, and all the plays except *Poetaster* and the masques in this volume have his imprint.

The Folio of 1640 is in the main a reprint of the 1616 Folio, but it differs in three passages, and sometimes it corrects the punctuation in accordance with Jonson's principles. The readings are 'enforce' for 'enforme' in Envy's opening speech (Ind. 54), 'savours' for 'labours' in the tribute to Virgil:

His learning labours not the schoole-like glosse,  
That most consists in *ecchoing* wordes, and termes  
(v. i. 129-30)

and a smoother reading in the advise to Crispinus

Looke, you take  
Each morning, of old CATOES principles  
A good draught, next your heart; that walk vpon,  
Till it be well digested.  
(v. iii. 536-9)

which appears in the form

Look, you take . . .  
A good draught, next your heart; and walk upon't . . .

<sup>1</sup> See vol II, pp 442-5.

The two first are weaker readings ; the third might be an editor's correction. It would be hazardous to affirm that these readings are posthumously printed corrections made by Jonson himself.

The Folio text has been twice reprinted. Dr. Herbert S. Mallory edited it in 1905 for the Yale Studies in English, no. xxvii, from the copy in the Library of Yale University. It is an extremely accurate text, a collation of it with the original revealing not a single error. A careful and scholarly edition by Dr. Josiah H. Penniman appeared in 1913 in Heath's Belles-Lettres Series. It was printed from the editor's own copy of the Folio, collated with the copy in the University of Pennsylvania Library and the Grenville copy in the British Museum. The old spelling and punctuation are retained, but italics and capital letters are modernized. The chief variants of the Quarto and the 1640 Folio are noted in the critical apparatus.

POETASTER  
or  
The Arraignment:

*As it hath beene sundry times priuately  
acted in the Blacke Friers, by the  
children of her Maiesties  
Chappell.*

Composed, by Ben. Iohnson.

*Et mihi de nullo fama rubere placet.*



LONDON

¶ Printed for M. L. and are to be sold in  
Saint Dunstons Church-yard.

1602.

The title-page of the Quarto



# POETASTER, OR His Arraignement.

*A Comickall Satyre..*

Acted, in the yeere 1601. By the then  
Children of Queene ELIZABETH.  
CHAPPAE.

Th. Author R. I.

MART.

*Et in his die nulla ratio tollit poetas.*

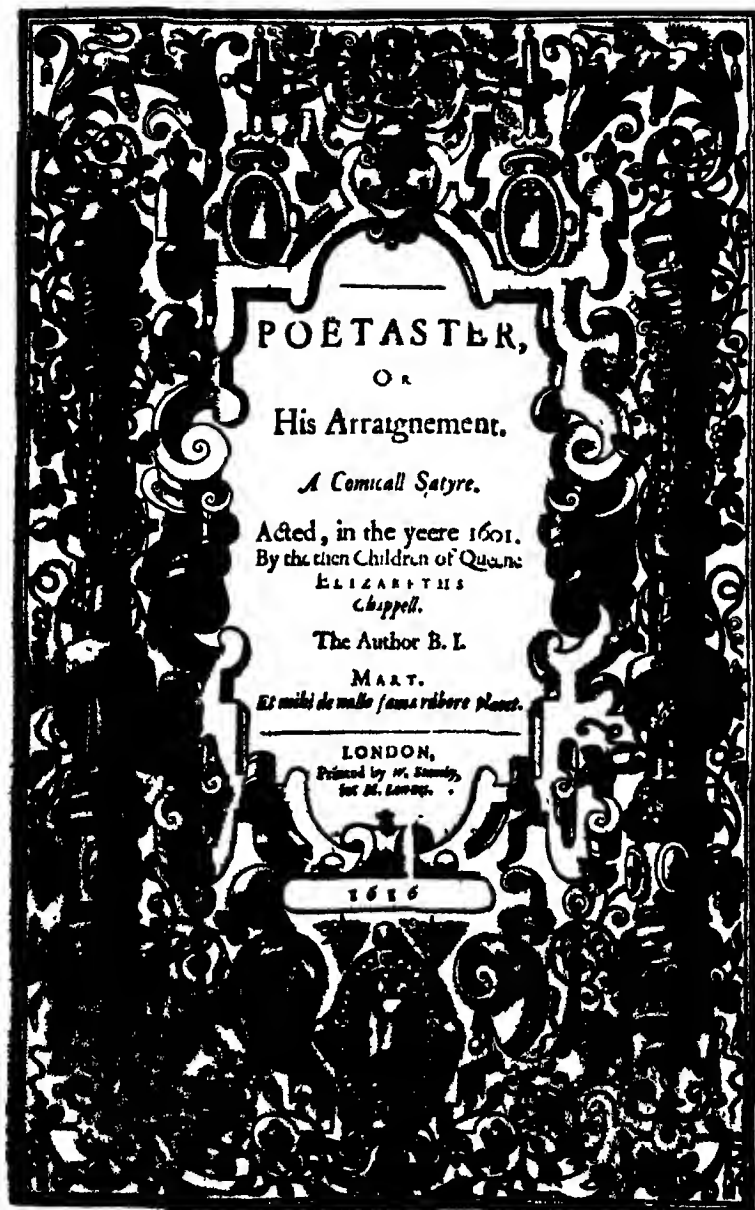
---

LONDON,  
Printed by WILLIAM STANSBY,  
for *Matthew Lawnes.*

---

M. DC. XVI.

The plain title-page of the 1616 folio.



Title-page of the 1616 Folio, with ornamental border



# POËTASTER, OR His Arraignement.

*A Comickall Satyre.*

First Acted in the yeare 1601. By the then  
Children of Queene ELIZABETHES  
CHAPPELL.

*With the allowance of the Master of REVELS.*

The Author B. J.

---

M A R T.

*Et mihi de uobis fano robore placet.*

---



---

L O N D O N,  
Printed by ROBERT YOUNG.

M. DC. XL.

The title-page of the 1640 Folio.



TO  
 THE VERTVOVS,  
 AND MY WORTHY  
 FRIEND,  
 M<sup>r</sup>. Richard Martin. 5

SIR, *A thankfull man owes a courtesie euer: the  
 vnthankfull, but when he needes it. To make  
 mine owne marke appeare, and shew by which of  
 these seales I am known, I send you this peece of  
 what may liue of mine; for whose innocence, as for 10  
 the Authors, you were once a noble and timely vnder-  
 taker, to the greatest Iustice of this kingdome. Enioy  
 now the delight of your goodnesse; which is to see  
 that prosper, you preseru'd: and posteritie to owe  
 the reading of that, without offence, to your name; 15  
 which so much ignorance, and malice of the times,  
 then conspir'd to haue suppress.*

Your true louer,  
 BEN. IONSON.

TITLE-PAGE. For minor differences of the title-page in F1 see the facsimiles 5 Acted] First Acted F2 in the yeare 1601. By] F2 originally misprinted in the yeare 1601 By. the After 7 With the allowance of the Master of REVELS. F2 DEDICATION not in Q 4 FRIEND, corr. F1. FRIEND. F1 originally

## The Persons of the Play.

AVGVSTVS CÆSAR.	LVPVS.	
MECÆNAS.	TVCCA.	
MARC. OVID.	<LVSCVS.>	
<TIBVLLVS.>	CRISPINVS.	15
5 COR. GALLVS.	HERMOGENES.	
PROPERTIVS.	DE. FANNIVS.	
FVS. ARISTIVS.	ALBIVS.	
PVB. OVID.	MINOS.	
VIRGIL.	HISTRIO.	20
10 HORACE.	<ÆSOP.>	
TREBATIVS.	PYRGVS.	
	LICTORS.	
	<EQVITES ROMANI.>	
	IVLIA.	25
	CYTHERIS.	
	PLAVTIA.	
	CHLOE.	
	MAYDES.	

## THE SCENE.

30

## ROME.

The Persons of the Play] THE PERSONS THAT ACT Q, which numbers the characters  
 2 MECÆNAS] *Mecænas* Q 4 TIBVLLVS added by Penniman  
 7 ARISTIVS] *Aristus* Q: ARISTVS FI ARISTVS Fa  
 11 TREBATIVS. added in Fi 14 LVSCVS W. 21 ÆSOP G. 22  
 PYRGVS] *Pyrgi* G 23 LICTORS] *Lictor* Q 24 EQVITES ROMANI]  
*Equites*, &c. G 28 CHLOE] *Chloë* Q, which usually prints the name  
 thus. 30-1 THE SCENE. ROME not in Q, which adds at this point:  
 Ad Lectorem.

*Ludimus innocuis verbis, hoc iuro potentis*

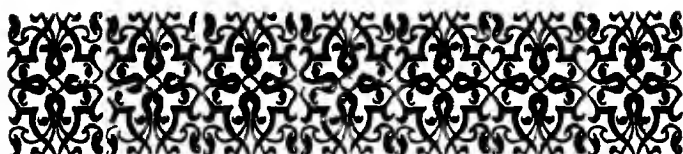
*Per Gensum Famæ, Castalidumq; gregem;*

*Perq; tuas aures, magni mihi numinis instar,*

*Lector, inhumana liber ab Invidia.*

Mart.

*After The Scene Fa inserts the Actor-list given in Fi at the end of the play.*



## POËTASTER.

*After the second sounding.*

ENVIE.

*Arising in  
the midst  
of the  
stage.*

**L**ight, I salute thee ; but with wounded nerues :  
Wishing thy golden splendour, pitchy darknesse.  
What's here ? TH'ARRAIGNMENT ? I : This, this  
is it,

That our sunke eyes haue wak't for, all this while :  
Here will be subiect for my snakes, and me. 5

Cling to my necke, and wrists, my louing wormes,  
And cast you round, in soft, and amorous foulds,  
Till I doe bid, vncurle : Then, breake your knots,  
Shoot out your selues at length, as your forc't stings  
Would hide themselves within his malic't sides, 10

To whom I shall apply you. Stay ! the shine  
Of this assembly here offends my sight,  
I'll darken that first, and out-face their grace.  
Wonder not, if I stare : these fiftene weekes  
(So long as since the plot was but an *embrion*) 15

Haue I, with burning lights, mixt vigilant thoughts,  
In expectation of this hated play :  
To which (at last) I am arriu'd as *Prologue*.  
Nor would I, you should looke for other lookes,  
Gesture, or complement from me, then what 20  
Th'infectèd bulke of ENVIE can afford :

For I am risse here with a couetous hope,

*Induction. After . . . sounding not in Q ENVIE.] LIVOR Q. Envy  
arises in the midst of the stage. G stage-dir not in Q 2 splendour]  
splendor Q 5 snakes,] Snakes Q 6 necke, and wrists,] necke and  
wrists Q wormes,] Wormes; Q 8 vncurle] vncurle Q knots,]  
knots; Q 11 Stay ! corr. F1, F2 : Stay : Q, F1 originally 14 not,  
corr. F1, F2 . not Q, F1 originally these corr. F1, F2 : These Q, F1  
originally 16 lights, Q, corr. F1, F2 : Lights F1 originally 20 then]  
than F2*



- To blast your pleasures, and destroy your sports,  
 With wrestings, comments, applications,  
 25 Spie-like suggestions, priuie whisperings,  
 And thousand such promooting sleights as these.  
 Marke, how I will begin : The *Scene* is, ha !  
 R O M E ? R O M E ? and R O M E ? Cracke ey-strings, and  
 your balles  
 Drop into earth ; let me be euer blind.  
 30 I am preuented ; all my hopes are crost,  
 Checkt, and abated ; fie, a freezing sweate  
 Flowes forth at all my pores, my entrailes burne :  
 What should I doe ? R O M E ? R O M E ? O my vext soule,  
 How might I force this to the present state ?  
 35 Are there no players here ? no poet-apes,  
 That come with basiliskes eyes, whose forked tongues  
 Are steept in venome, as their hearts in gall ?  
 Eyther of these would helpe me ; they could wrest,  
 Peruert, and poyson all they heare, or see,  
 40 With senselesse glosses, and allusions.  
 Now if you be good deuils, flye me not.  
 You know what deare, and ample faculties  
 I haue indow'd you with : Ile lend you more.  
 Here, take my snakes among you, come, and eate,  
 45 And while the squeez'd iuice flowes in your blacke iawes,  
 Helpe me to damne the Authour. Spit it foorth  
 Vpon his lines, and shew your rustie teeth  
 At euerie word, or accent : or else choose  
 Out of my longest vipers, to sticke downe  
 50 In your deep throats ; and let the heads come forth  
 At your ranke mouthes ; that he may see you arm'd  
 With triple malice, to hisse, sting, and teare  
 His worke, and him ; to forge, and then declame,  
 Traduce, corrupt, apply, enforme, suggest :  
 55 O, these are gifts wherein your soules are blest.

Ind. 31 Checkt] Check't F2 32 forth] foorth Q 41 deuils] Duels Q  
 43 indow'd] endowed Q 44 you,] you ; Q 45 iuice] iuice Q iawes]  
 iawes Q 46 Authour] Author Q foorth] forth F2 50 forth]  
 foorth Q 52 sting,] sting F2 54 enforme] enforce F2

What? doe you hide your selues? will none appeare?  
 None answer? what, doth this calme troupe affright you?  
 Nay, then I doe despaire: downe, sinke againe.  
 This trauaile is all lost with my dead hopes.  
 If in such bosomes, spight haue left to dwell, 60  
 Enuie is not on earth, nor scarce in hell.

### The third sounding.

#### PROLOGVE.

Stay, Monster, ere thou sinke, thus on thy head  
 Set we our bolder foot; with which we tread  
 Thy malice into earth: So spight should die,  
 Despis'd and scorn'd by noble industrie.  
 If any muse why I salute the stage, 5  
 An armed *Prologue*; know, 'tis a dangerous age:  
 Wherein, who writes, had need present his *Scenes*  
 Fortie-fold prooffe against the coniuring meanes  
 Of base detractors, and illiterate apes,  
 That fill vp roomes in faire and formall shapes. 10  
 'Gainst these, haue we put on this forc't defence:  
 Whereof the *allegorie* and hid sence  
 Is, that a well erected confidence  
 Can fright their pride, and laugh their folly hence.  
 Here now, put case out Authour should, once more, 15  
 Sweare that his play were good; he doth implore,  
 You would not argue him of arrogance:  
 How ere that common spawne of ignorance,  
 Our frie of writers, may beslime his fame,  
 And giue his action that adulterate name. 20  
 Such ful-blowne vanitie he more doth lothe,

Prologue. *The third sounding.* not in Q PROLOGVE] PROLOGVS Q,  
 which prints the Prologue in italic As she disappears, enter Prologue hastily,  
 in armour. G 1 Stay, Monster,] Stay Monster Q 2 bolder] boulder Q  
 6 know,] know Q 8 Fortie-fold prooffe] Fortie fold prooffe Q: Fortie  
 fold-prooffe F1: Forty-fold prooffe F2 15 Authour should,] Author  
 should Q more,] more Q 21 ful-blowne] full blowne Q

Then base deiection : There's a meane 'twixt both.  
 Which with a constant firmeresse he pursues,  
 As one, that knowes the strength of his owne *muse*.  
 25 And this he hopes all free soules will allow ;  
 Others, that take it with a rugged brow,  
 Their moods he rather pitties, then enuies :  
 His mnd it is aboute their iniuries.

### Act I. Scene I.

OVID, LVSCVS.

**T**hen, when this bodie falls in funerall fire,  
 My name shall liue, and my best part aspire.  
 It shall goe so.

LVSC. Young master, master OVID, doe you heare ?  
 5 gods a mee ! away with your *songs*, and *sonnets* ; and on  
 with your gowne and cappe, quickly : here, here, your  
 father will be a man of this roome presently. Come, nay,  
 nay, nay, nay, be briefe These verses too, a poyson on  
 'hem, I cannot abide 'hem, they make mee readie to cast,  
 10 by the bankes of *helicon*. Nay looke, what a rascally vnto-  
 ward thing this *poetrie* is ; I could teare 'hem now.

OVID. Giue me, how neere's my father ?

LVSC. Hart a'man · get a law-booke in your hand, I  
 will not answere you else. Why so : now there's some  
 15 formalitie in you. By IOVE, and three or foure of the  
 gods more, I am right of mine olde masters humour for that ;  
 this villanous *poetrie* will vndoe you, by the welkin.

OVID. What, hast thou buskins on, LVSCVS, that  
 thou swear'st so tragically, and high ?

20 LVSC. No, but I haue bootes on, sir, and so ha's your

Prol. 22 Then] Than *F2* both] both *Q* 24 one,] one *Q* 25  
 allow, *F2* allowe · *Q* (the colon imperfect in some copies) : allow, *Fr*  
 26 Others,] Others *Q* 27 then] than *F2* 1.1 Act I. Scene I.]  
 ACTVS PRIMVS | SCENA PRIMA *Q* : ACT I SCENE I. | Scene draws, and  
 discovers Ovid in his study. G, who continues the scene throughout the  
 act 1 Then] Ovid THEN *Q* After 3] Enter Luscus with a gown  
 and cap. G 5 songs,] songs *Q* 13 law-booke] lawe booke *Q*  
 15 you] you ; *Q* 19 tragically,] tragically *Q* 20 on,] on *Q*

father too by this time : for he call'd for 'hem, ere I came from the lodging.

OVID. Why? was he no readier?

Lvs c. O no; and there was the madde skeldring capitaine, with the veluet armes, readie to lay hold on him as hee comes downe: he that presses euerie man he meets, with an oath, to lend him money, and cries; (Thou must doo't, old boy, as thou art a man, a man of worship.)

OVID. Who? PANTILIVS TVCCA?

Lvs c. I, hee: and I met little master LVPVS, the *Tribune*, going thither too.

OVID. Nay, and he be vnder their arrest, I may (with safetie enough) reade ouer my *elegie*, before he come.

Lvs c. Gods a mee! What'll you doe? why, young master, you are not *castalian* mad, lunatike, frantike, 35 desperate? ha?

OVID. What ailest thou, Lvs cvs?

Lvs c. God be with you, sir, I'le leaue you to your *poeticall* fancies, and *furies*. I'le not be guiltie, I.

OVID. Be not, good ignorance: I'm glad th'art gone: 40 For thus alone, our eare shall better judge The hastie errorrs of our morning *muse*.

**E**Nuie, why twitst thou me, my time's spent ill?  
And call'st my verse, fruits of an idle quill?

Or that (vnlike the line from whence I sprung)

Wars dustie honours I pursue not young?

Or that I studie not the tedious lawes;

And prostitute my voyce in euerie cause?

Thy scope is mortall; mine, eternall fame:

Which through the world shall euer chaunt my name.

HOMER will liue, whil'st TENEDOS stands, and IDE,

Or, to the sea, fleet SIMOIS doth slide:

Ouid Lab.  
1. Amo.  
Ele. 15.

45

50

1. 1 27-8 (Thou .. worship.)] Thou ... worshippes. Q 30 LVPVS, Lupus Q 32 and] an' Fa 33 inough] enough Q, Fa 34 young] yong Q 38 you,] you Q 39 fancies,] fancies Q Exit. add Q 41 iudge] iudge Q 42 errorrs] errors Q morning] Moning F3 45 sprung] sprong Q 46 honours] honors 47 tedious] tedious Q 49 mine, F2: mine Q, F1 fame] Fame, Q 52 Or.] Or Q

- And so shall HESIOD too, while vines doe beare,  
Or crooked sickles crop the ripened eare.
- 55 CALLIMACHVS, though in inuention lowe,  
Shall still be sung: since he in art doth flowe.  
No losse shall come to SOPHOCLES proud vaine.  
With sunne, and moone, ARATVS shall remaine.  
Whil'st slaues be false, fathers hard, and barodes be whorish,
- 60 Whil'st harlots flatter, shall MENANDER flourish.  
ENNIVS, though rude, and ACCIVS high-reard straine,  
A fresh applause in euerie age shall gaine.  
Of VARRO'S name, what eare shall not be told?  
Of IASONS ARGO? and the fleece of gold?
- 65 Then shall LVCRETIVS loftie numbers die,  
When earth, and seas in fire and flames shall frie.  
TYTIRVS, Tillage, ÆNEE shall be read,  
Whil'st ROME of all the conquer'd world is head.  
Till CVPIDS fires be out, and his bowe broken,
- 70 Thy verses (neate TIBVLVS) shall be spoken.  
Our GALLVS shall be knowne from east to west:  
So shall LYCORIS, whom he now loues best.  
The suffering plough-share, or the flint may weare:  
But heauenly poesie no death can feare.
- 75 Kings shall giue place to it, and kingly showes,  
The bankes ore which gold-bearing Tagus flowes.  
Kneele hindees to trash: me let bright PHÆBVVS swell,  
With cups full flowing from the MVSES well.  
Frost-fearing myrtle shall impale my head,
- 80 And of sad louers Ile be often read.  
"Enue, the liuing, not the dead, doth bite:  
"For after death all men receiue their right.  
Then, when this bodie fals in funerall fire,  
My name shall liue, and my best part aspire.

i. i. 54 ripened] ripen'd G 56 sung.] sung, Q. F2 58 sunne, and  
moone.] Sunne and Moone Q 60 flourish] flourish Q 64 ARGO ?]  
ARGO F2 65 Then] Then, Q 66 flames] flame G 67  
TYTIRVS] Titirus Q ÆNEE] ÆNEY Q 73 suffering] suffering Q  
-share.] share Q 77 swell.] swell F2 79 Frost-fearing] The  
frost-dread Q 80 Ile] I G 81 bite:] bite. Q 83 Then.] Then Q

## Act I. Scene II.

OVID Senior, OVID Iunior, LVSCVS,  
TVCCA, LVPVS, PYRGVS.

YOur name shall liue indeed, sir; you say true: but how infamously, how scorn'd and contemn'd in the eyes and eares of the best and grauest *Romanes*, that you thinke not on: you neuer so much as dreame of that. Are these the fruits of all my trauaile and expenses? is this the scope and aime of thy studies? are these the hopefull courses, wherewith I haue so long flattered my expectation from thee? verses? *poetrie*? OVID, whom I thought to see the pleader, become OVID the play-maker?

OVID *iu.* No, sir.

10

OVID *se.* Yes, sir. I heare of a *tragædie* of yours comming forth for the common players there, call'd M E D E A. By my household-gods, if I come to the acting of it, Ile adde one tragick part, more then is yet expected, to it: beleeeue me when I promise it. What? shall I haue my sonne a stager 15 now? an engle for players? a gull? a rooke? a shot-clogge? to make suppers, and bee laught at? P V B L I V S, I will set thee on the funerall pile, first.

OVID *iu.* Sir, I beseech you to haue patience.

L V S C. Nay, this tis to haue your eares damm'd vp to 20 good counsell. I did augure all this to him afore-hand, without poring into an oxes panch for the matter, and yet he would not be scrupulous.

T V C C. How now, good man slaue? what, *rowle powle*? all riuals, rascall? why my master of worship, do'st heare? 25 Are these thy best proiects? is this thy desseignes and thy

I. II Act I. Scene II] SCENA SECVNDA Q OVID] ¶ Ouid Q Enter  
Ouid senior, followed by Luscus, Tucça, and Lupus. G, continuing the  
Scene 1 Your] Ouid sen. YOVR Q indeed,] indeed Q you]  
your Q 5 trauaile] travel F3 8 OVID,] OVID F2 11  
*tragædie*] Tragedie Q 12 forth] forth F2 13 household-gods]  
householde gods Q: houshold-gods F2 14 then] than F2 18 pile,]  
pile Q 21 afore-hand] afore hand Q before-hand F2 22 panch]  
paunch Q 25 master F2. Master, F1 Knight Q 26 desseignes]  
designes F2

discipline, to suffer knaues to bee competitors with commanders and gent'men? are wee *parallels*, rascall? are wee *parallels*?

30 OVID *se*. Sirrah, goe get my horses ready. You'll still be prating.

T v c c. Doe, you perpetuall stinkard, doe, goe, talke to tapsters and ostlers, you slaue, they are i' your element, goe. here bee the Emperours captaines, you raggamuffin  
35 rascall; and not your *cam'rades*.

L v p v. Indeed, MARCVS OVID, these players are an idle generation, and doe much harme in a state, corrupt yong gentry very much, I know it. I haue not beene a  
Tribune thus long, and obseru'd nothing: besides, they will  
40 rob vs, vs, that are magistrates, of our respect, bring vs vpon their stages, and make vs ridiculous to the plebeians; they will play you, or me, the wisest men they can come by still; me only to bring vs in contempt with the vulgar, and make vs cheape.

45 T v c c. Th'art in the right, my venerable cropshin, they will indeede: the tongue of the *oracle* neuer twang'd truer. Your courtier cannot kisse his mistris slippers, in quiet, for 'hem: nor your white innocent gallant pawne his reuelling sute, to make his punke a supper. An honest decayed  
50 commander, cannot skelder, cheat, nor be seene in a bawdie house, but he shall be straight in one of their wormewood *comædies*. They are growne licentious, the rogues; libertines, flat libertines. They forget they are i' the *statute*, the rascals, they are *blazond* there, there they are trickt, they  
55 and their pedigrees, they neede no other *heralds*, I wisse.

OVID *se*. Mee thinkes, if nothing else, yet this alone,

1. 11 28 gent'men] Gentmen Q. gentlemen Ff 30, 56, 68, 72 OVID  
*se* F2 OVID. *se* corr F1. OVID *se* F1 originally Ouid *sen* Q 32  
doe,] doe Q goe,] goe; Fa 33 ostlers,] Ostlers Q slaue,] slaue Q  
35 *cam'rades* cor F1, F2. *Comrades* Q: *camrades* F1 originally 36  
*Exit Luscus* G MARCVS] Sir Marcus Q 38 yong] young Q 39  
long,] long Q 43 me om Fa 47 mistris] Mistresses F3 48 'hem:  
corr F1, F2. 'hem, Q, F1 originally 50 commander] Commaunder  
Q 51 straight] strait Fa 51-2 wormewood *comædies*] wormewood  
Comedies Q worme-wood Comedies F2 55 *heralds*,] *Heralds* Q 56  
thinkes,] thinkes Q alone, corr. F1, Fa. alone, Q, F1 originally

the very reading of the publike *edicts* should fright thee from commerce with them ; and giue thee distaste enough of their actions. But this betrayes what a student you are : this argues your proficiencie in the *law*. 60

OVID *iu*. They wrong mee, sir, and doe abuse you more, That blow your eares with these vntrue reports. I am not knowne vnto the open stage, Nor doe I traffique in their *theaters* Indeed, I doe acknowledge, at request 65 Of some neere friends, and honorable *Romanes*, I haue begunne a *poeme* of that nature.

OVID *se*. You haue, sir, a *poeme*? and where is't? that's the *law* you studie.

OVID *iu*. CORNELIVS GALLVS borrowed it to 70 reade.

OVID *se*. CORNELIVS GALLVS? There's another gallant, too, hath drunke of the same poison. and TIBVLVS, and PROPERTIVS. But these are gentlemen of meanes, and reuenew now. Thou art a yonger brother, and 75 hast nothing, but thy bare exhibition : which I protest shall bee bare indeed, if thou forsake not these vnprofitable by-courses, and that timely too. Name me a profest *poet*, that his *poetrie* did euer afford him so much as a competencie. I, your god of *poets* there (whom all of you admire and reuer- 80 ence so much) HOMER, he whose worme-eaten statue must not bee spewd against, but with hallowed lips, and groueling adoration, what was he? what was he?

TVC C. Mary, I'll tell thee, old swaggrer; He was a poore, blind, riming rascall, that liu'd obscurely vp and 85 downe in booths, and tap-houses, and scarce euer made a good meale in his sleepe, the whoorson hungrie begger.

OVID *se*. He saies well: Nay, I know this nettles you

1. ii 61, 70 OVID *iu*] OVID *iu* corr F1, F2: OVID. IV F1 originally Ouid Iun (Iu) Q 66 neere] meere F2 Romanes] Romaines Q 75 reuenew corr F1 reuennew F1 originally Reuenewes Q: reuenews F2 82 lips,] lips Q 84 Mary,] Marry Q thee,] thee Q swaggrer] swaggerer F2 85 poore, blind,] poore blind Q 86 booths,] Boothes Q 87 whoorson] whorson Q, F2 88-229 OVID] OVID Ff well. Nay,] well. Nay Q



now, but answere me; Is't not true? you'le tell me his  
 90 name shall liue; and that (now being dead) his workes  
 haue eternis'd him, and made him diuine. But could this  
 diuinitie feed him, while he liu'd? could his name feast  
 him?

T V C C. Or purchase him a *Senators* reuenue? could it?  
 95 OVID *se.* I, or giue him place in the common-wealth?  
 worship, or attendants? make him be carried in his litter?

T V C C. Thou speakest sentences, old B I A S.

L V P V. All this the *law* will doe, yong sir, if youle  
 follow it.

100 OVID *se.* If he be mine, hee shall follow and obserue,  
 what I will apt him too, or, I professe here openly, and  
 vtterly to disclaime in him.

OVID *iu.* Sir, let me craue you will, forgoe these moodes;  
 I will be any thing, or studie any thing:

105 I'le proue the vnfashion'd body of the *law*  
 Pure elegance, and make her ruggedst straines  
 Runne smoothly, as P R O P E R T I V S *elegies.*

OVID *se.* P R O P E R T I V S *elegies?* good!

L V P V. Nay, you take him too quickly, M A R C V S.

110 OVID *se.* Why, he cannot speake, he cannot thinke out  
 of *poetrie*, he is bewitcht with it.

L V P V. Come, doe not mis-prize him.

OVID *se.* *Mis-prize?* I, mary, I would haue him vse  
 some such wordes now: They haue some touch, some taste  
 115 of the *law*. Hee should make himselfe a stile out of these,  
 and let his P R O P E R T I V S *elegies* goe by.

L V P V. Indeed, yong P V B L I V S, he that will now hit the  
 marke, must shoot thorough the *law*, we haue no other  
*planet* raignes, & in that spheare, you may sit, and sing with  
 120 angels. Why, the *law* makes a man happy, without

1. u 89 now,] now Q Is't not true? Is't not true? Is't not true?  
 Q (a probable reading) 90 liue,] liue, Q (now being] now (being Q  
 91 eternis'd] eternised Q diuine But] diuine but Q 92 him,] him  
 Q liu'd?] liued, Q 94-6 Tycc . . . litter? not in Q 97  
 speakest] speak'st Q 98-136 LVFV. . . . Boy not in Q 98 yong]  
 young F2 102 in him] him F2 118 thorough] through F2  
*law,] Law; F2*

respecting any other merit: a simple scholer, or none at all may be a lawyer.

T v c c. He tells thee true, my noble *Neophyle*; my little *Grammaticaster*, he do's: It shall neuer put thee to thy *Mathematiques*, *Metaphysiques*, *Philosophie*, and I know not <sup>125</sup> what suppos'd sufficiencies; If thou canst but haue the patience to plod inough, talke, and make noise inough, be impudent inough, and 'tis inough.

L v p v. Three bookes will furnish you.

T v c c. And the lesse arte, the better: Besides, when it <sup>130</sup> shall be in the power of thy cheu'rill conscience, to doe right, or wrong, at thy pleasure, my pretty A L C I B I A D E S.

L v p v. I, and to haue better men then himselfe by many thousand degrees, to obserue him, and stand bare.

T v c c. True, and he to carry himselfe proud, and <sup>135</sup> stately, and haue the law on his side for't, old boy.

O v i d s e. Well, the day growes old, gentlemen, and I must leaue you. P v b l i v s, if thou wilt hold my fauour, abandon these idle fruitlesse studies that so bewitch thee. Send I A N V S home his back-face againe, and looke only <sup>140</sup> forward to the law: Intend that. I will allow thee, what shall sute thee in the ranke of gentlemen, and maintaine thy societie with the best: and vnder these conditions, I leaue thee. My blessings light vpon thee, if thou respect them: if not, mine eyes may drop for thee, but thine owne heart wil <sup>145</sup> ake for it selfe, and so farewel. What, are my horses come?

L v s c. Yes, sir, they are at the gate without.

O v i d s e. That's well. A S I N I V S L v p v s, a word. Captaine, I shall take my leaue of you?

T v c c. No, my little old boy, dispatch with C o t h - <sup>150</sup> v r n v s there: I'll attend thee, I—

i. u. 127 noise] a noise F<sub>3</sub> 127, 128 inough] enough F<sub>2</sub> 133 then] than F<sub>2</sub> 136 boy] Boy F<sub>1</sub> originally 138 hold] hould Q 139 bewitch] traduce Q 140 back-face] backe face Q 141 law; Intend that corr. F<sub>1</sub>, F<sub>2</sub>. Law. Intend that Q. law, Intend that F<sub>1</sub> originally 146 farewel] farewel, F<sub>1</sub> originally (a reading recorded in Professor Bang's copy) G forgot to insert the stage-direction here Re-enter Luscus 148 Ovid se] Ouid sen, Q 150 old boy corr. F<sub>1</sub>, F<sub>2</sub>: old Boy F<sub>1</sub> originally. knight Errant Q 150-1 C o t h v r n v s] Caulier Colthurnus Q 151 I— corr. F<sub>1</sub>, F<sub>2</sub>. I. Q, F<sub>1</sub> originally

L v s c. To borrow some ten drachmes, I know his project.

O v i d se. Sir, you shall make me beholding to you.  
155 Now, Capitaine T v c c A, what say you?

T v c c. Why, what should I say? or what can I say, my flowre o' the order? Should I say, thou art rich? or that thou art honorable? or wise? or valiant? or learned? or liberrall? Why, thou art all these, and thou knowest it  
160 (my noble L v c v L L v s) thou knowest it: come, bee not ashamed of thy vertues, old stumpe. Honour's a good brooch to weare in a mans hat, at all times. Thou art the *man of warres* M e c æ n a s, old boy. Why shouldst not thou bee grac't then by them, as well as hee is by his  
165 *poets*? How now, my carrier, what newes?

L v s c. The boy has staidewithin for his *cue*, this halfe houre.

T v c c. Come, doe not whisper to me, but speake it out: what? it is no treason against the state, I hope,  
170 is't?

L v s c. Yes, against the state of my masters purse.

P y r g. Sir, A g r i p p a desires you to forbear him till the next weeke: his moyles are not yet come vp.

T v c c. His moyles? now the *bots*, the *spawm*, and the  
175 *glanders*, and some dozen diseases more, light on him, and his moyles. What ha' they the *yellowes*, his moyles, that they come no faster? or are they foundred? ha? his moyles ha' the *staggers* belike: ha' they?

P y r g. O no, sir: then your tongue might be suspected  
180 for one of his moyles.

T v c c. Hee owes mee almost a talent, and hee thinks to beare it away with his moyles, does hee? Sirrah, you,

1. 11. 154 Sir.] Sir Q 155 Now, Capitaine] Now, capitaine *Fr* originally Now Capitaine Q, corr. *Fr*, *Fa* (*For Capitaine*, see 213, 221. in correcting to a capital letter the printer omitted the comma) 157 flowre o' the order] most *Magnanimous Mirror of Knighthood* Q Should] Shold Q say.] say Q 163 Mæcenas, old boy] *Mecenas*, knight Q 165 after '*poets*' Enter *Pyrgus* and whispers *Tucca*. G 165 now.] now Q 169 out what?] out what, Q 171 *Aside*, and exit G 179 no.] no Q

nut-cracker, goe your waies to him againe, and tell him I must ha' money, I: I cannot eate stones and turfes, say. What, will he clem me, and my followers? Aske him, an' he will 185 clem me: doe, goe. He would haue mee frie my ierkin, would hee? Away, setter, away. Yet, stay, my little tumbler: this old boy shall supply now. I will not trouble him, I cannot bee importunate, I: I cannot bee impudent.

P Y R G. Alas, sir, no · you are the most maidenly blush- 190 ing creature vpon the earth.

T V C C. Do'st thou heare, my little *sixe and fiftie*, or thereabouts? Thou art not to learne the humours and tricks of that old bald cheater, Time: thou hadst not this chaine for nothing. Men of worth haue their *chymæra's*, as well 195 as other creatures: and they doe see monsters, sometimes: they doe, they doe, braue boy.

P Y R G. Better cheape then he shall see you, I warrant him.

T V C C. Thou must let me haue sixe, sixe, drachmes, I 200 meane, old boy; thou shalt doe it: I tell thee, old boy, thou shalt, and in priuate too, do'st thou see? Goe, walke off: there, there. Sixe is the summe. Thy sonn's a gallant sparke, and must not be put out of a sudden: come hither, CALLIMACHVS, thy father tells me thou art too 205 poetically, boy, thou must not be so, thou must leaue them, yong nouce, thou must, they are a sort of poore staru'd rascalls; that are euer wrapt vp in foule linnen, and can boast of nothing but a leane visage, peering out of a seame-

I. u 183 -cracker, *corr. F1, F2* -cracker *Q, F1 originally* 184  
 turfes] Turues *Q* 185 me,] me *Q* him, an' *corr. F1, F2* him and  
*Q, F1 originally* 187 Away,] Away *Q* Yet,] Yet *Q* 188 this old  
 boy] the Knight *Q* now. *corr. F1, F2* now · *Q, F1 originally* 190  
 Alas, sir,] Alas sir *Q* 192-3 or thereabouts *italicized in Q* 192  
*sixe* *corr. F1, F2* *Six* *Q* *Sixe* *F1 originally* 194 Time *corr. F1, F2* ·  
 Time *Q, F1 originally* hadst] hast *F3* 197 braue boy *not in Q*  
 198 then] than *F2* 200 sixe, sixe,] six, six *F2* six—six *G* 205  
 CALLIMACHVS, thy *corr. F1, F2* CALLIMACHVS Thy *Q, F1 originally*  
 206 boy,] boy; *F2* Slaue *Q* so, *corr. F1, F2* so *Q, F1 originally*  
 207 young nouce,] yong Nouce, *Q* must, they *corr. F1* must:  
 They *Q, F1 originally*: must, they *F2* staru'd *corr. F1, F2*:  
 starued *Q, F1 originally* 208 linnen, *corr. F1*: linnen: *Q, F1*  
*originally*. linnen, *F2*

210 rent sute ; the very *emblems* of beggerie. No, dost heare ?  
turne lawyer, Thou shalt be my solicitor : Tis right, old  
boy, ist ?

OVID *se.* You were best tell it, Captaine.

TVC C. No : fare thou well mine honest horse-man, and  
215 thou old beuer. Pray thee *Romane*, when thou comcest to  
towne, see me at my lodging, visit me sometimes : thou  
shalt be welcome, old boy. Doe not balke me, good  
swaggerer. IOVE keepe thy chaine from pawning, goe thy  
waies, if thou lack money, I'll lend thee some : I'll leaue  
220 thee to thy horse, now. Adieu.

OVID *se.* Farewell, good Captaine.

TVC C. Boy, you can haue but halfe a share now, boy.

OVID *se.* 'Tis a strange boldnesse, that accompanies  
this fellow : Come.

225 OVID *iu.* I'll giue attendance on you, to your horse,  
sir, please you—

OVID *se.* No : keepe your chamber, and fall to your  
studies ; doe so . the gods of *Rome* blesse thee.

OVID *iu.* And giue me stomacke to digest this *law*,  
230 That should haue follow'd sure, had I beene he.

O sacred *poesie*, thou spirit of artes,  
The soule of science, and the queene of soules,  
What prophane violence, almost sacriledge,  
Hath here beene offered thy diuinities !

235 That thine owne guiltlesse pouertie should arme  
Prodigious ignorance to wound thee thus !

1 u 210 No, *cor* F1, F2. No Q, F1 originally 211 lawyer  
*cor* F1 : Lawyer Q, F1 originally, F2 solicitor ] Solicitor. Q :  
Solicitor F2 212 1st *cor* F1, F2 1st Q, F1 originally 213  
it, ] it Q 214 horse-man ] Knight Q 215 *Romane* ] Knight Q  
216 sometimes ] some times Q 217 old boy. Doe ] *olde* boy : doe Q  
me, *cor* F1, F2 . me Q, F1 originally 218 swaggerer. ] Swaggrer,  
Q pawning, ] pawning Q 219 waies, ] waies . Q money, ] money Q  
220 horse, Q, *cor*. F1, F2 : horse F1 originally now. Adieu ] now,  
Adue Q 221 Farewell, ] Farwell Q 222 *Exit*. add Q *Exit*, followed  
by *Pyrgus* G 225 *iu* not in Q 226 sir, ] Sir, Q you— ] you — Q  
228 *Exeunt*. add Q *Exit with Lupus* G (who should have added  
'and *Luscus* ') 229 *iu*. not in Q law, ] law . Q 230 follow'd]  
followed Q, Ff 231 artes *cor* F1 : *Romane artes* F1 originally, F2,  
F3 *Arts* Q 232 soules, ] soules ; F2 235 That ] *Hmh* !  
that Q

For thence, is all their force of argument  
 Drawne forth against thee ; or from the abuse  
 Of thy great powers in adultrate braines :  
 When, would men learne but to distinguish spirits, 240  
 And set true difference twixt those jaded wits  
 That runne a broken pase for common hire,  
 And the high raptures of a happy *Muse*,  
 Borne on the wings of her immortall thought,  
 That kickes at earth with a disdainfull heele, 245  
 And beats at heauen gates with her bright hooues ;  
 They would not then with such distorted faces,  
 And desp'rate censures stab at *poesie*.  
 They would admire bright knowledge, and their minds  
 Should ne're descend on so vnworthy obiects, 250  
 As gold, or titles : they would dread farre more,  
 To be thought ignorant, then be knowne poore.  
 " The time was once, when wit drown'd wealth : but now,  
 " Your onely barbarisme is t'haue wit, and want.  
 " No matter now in vertue who excells, 255  
 " He, that hath coine, hath all perfection else.

Act I. Scene III.

TIBVLLVS, OVID.

OVID? OVID. Who's there? Come in. TIBV.  
 Good morrow, Lawyer.

OVID. Good morrow (deare TIBVLLVS) welcome :  
 sit downe.

TIBV. Not I. What : so hard at it? Let's see, what's  
 here?

Nay, I will see it—OVID. Pray thee away—

I. n. 238 forth] forth Q 241 jaded] jaded Q 243 *Muse*] soule Q  
 246 hooues] Hoofs F3 248 desp'rate] dudgeon Q *poesie*] *Poesy*: Q  
 249 knowledge, Q, corr F1 knowledge F1 originally, F2 250 ne're]  
 nere Q 251 gold,] Gould Q 252 then] than F2 254 barbarisme is  
 t'haue] Barbarism's, to haue Q I III Act I Scene III ] SCENA TERTIA.  
 Q TIBVLLVS.] *Tibullus*. Q Enter *Tibullus* G, continuing the Scene  
 1 Ovid?] *Tibull. Ouid?* Q Who's] Whose Q 3 What ] What, F2  
 3-4 Let's . . . it—] lets see, | Whats here? *Numa in Decimo nono?*  
 Q 4 Pray thee] Pry 'thee F2 away—] away. Q

- 5 TIB V. *If thrice in field, a man vanquish his foe,  
'Tis after in his choice to serve, or no.*

How now OVID! *Law-cases* in verse?

OVID. In troth, I know not: they runne from my pen  
Vnawittingly, if they be verse. What's the newes abroad?

- 10 TIB V. Off with this gowne, I come to haue thee walke.

OVID. No, good TIBVLVS, I'm not now in case,  
Pray' let me alone. TIB V. How? not in case!  
S'light thou'rt in too much case, by all this *law*.

- OVID. Troth, if I liue, I will new dresse the *law*,  
15 In sprightly *poesies* habillaments.

TIB V. The hell thou wilt. What, turne *law* into verse?  
Thy father has school'd thee, I see. Here, reade that same.  
There's subiect for you: and if I mistake not,  
A *Supersedeas* to your melancholy.

- 20 OVID. How! subscrib'd IVLIA! ô, my life, my heauen!

TIB V. Is the mood chang'd?

OVID. Musique of wit! Note for th' harmonious spheares!  
Celestiall accents, how you rauish me!

TIB V. What is it, OVID?

- 25 OVID. That I must meete my IVLIA, the Princesse IVLIA.

TIB V. Where?

OVID. Why, at——hart, I haue forgot: my passion so  
transports mee.

- TIB V. Ile saue your paines: it is at ALBIVS house,  
30 The iewellers, where the faire LYCORIS lies.

OVID. Who? CYTHERIS, CORNELIVS GALLVS loue?

TIB V. I, heele be there too, and my PLAVTIA.

OVID. And why not your DELIA?

TIB V. Yes, and your CORINNA.

- 35 OVID. True, but my sweet TIBVLVS, keepe that  
secret:

I would not, for all ROME, it should be thought,

I vaile bright IVLIA vnderneath that name:

1. in 7 *Law-cases* F2 *Law cases* Q: *Law- -cases* Fr 11 TIBVLVS,]  
Tibullus; Q case,] case Q 12 Pray'] Pray thee Q 15  
habillaments] Accoutrements Q 27 Why, at——hart] Why at Hart Q  
29, 30 Fr originally divided at iewellers, | where 35 True,] True; Q

IVLIA, the gemme, and iewell of my soule,  
 That takes her honours from the golden skie,  
 As beautie doth all lustre, from her eye. 40  
 The ayre respires the pure *elyzian* sweets,  
 In which she breathes : and from her lookes descend  
 The glories of the summer. Heauen she is,  
 Prays'd in her selfe aboute all praise : and he,  
 Which heares her speake, would sweare the tune-full  
 orbes 45  
 Turn'd in his *zenith* onely. TIBV. PVBLIVS, thou'lt  
 lose thy selfe.

OVID. O, in no labyrinth, can I safelier erre,  
 Then when I lose my selfe in praysing her.  
 Hence *Law*, and welcome, *Muses* ; though not rich,  
 Yet are you pleasing : let's be reconcilde, 50  
 And now made one. Hencefoorth, I promise faith,  
 And all my serious houres to spend with you :  
 With you, whose musicke striketh on my heart,  
 And with bewitching tones steales forth my spirit,  
 In IVLIAS name ; faire IVLIA · IVLIAS loue 55  
 Shall be a law, and that sweet law I'le studie,  
 The law, and art of sacred IVLIAS loue :  
 All other obiects will but abiects prooue

TIBV. Come, wee shall haue thee as passionate, as  
 PROPERTIVS, anon.

OVID. O, how does my SEXTVS ? 60

TIBV. Faith, full of sorrow, for his CYNTHIAS death.

OVID. What, still ?

TIBV. Still, and still more, his grieues doe grow vpon  
 him,

As doe his houres. Neuer did I know  
 An vnderstanding spirit so take to heart 65

The common worke of *fate*. OVID. O my TIBVLLVS,  
 1. iii. 38 IVLIA,] *Iulia*, Q : IVLIA *Fi* 39 golden] goulden Q  
 41 *elysian* corr. *Fi* · *Elysum* Q · *elyzium* *Fi* originally · *Elyman* *F2*  
 42 descend] descend, Q 46, 48 lose] loose Q 48 Then] Than *F2*  
 51 now corr. *Fi*, *F2* · new Q, *Fi* originally, G Hencefoorth] Hence  
 foorth Q. Henceforth *F2* 55 faire IVLIA ] Faire *Iulia*, Q 58  
 prooue] proue Q 63 grieues] griefes *F2*. Griefs *F3*



- Let vs not blame him : for, against such chances,  
 The heartiest strife of vertue is not prooffe.  
 We may read constancie, and fortitude,  
 70 To other soules : but had our selues beene strooke  
 With the like *planet* ; had our loues (like his)  
 Beene rausht from vs, by injurious death,  
 And in the height, and heat of our best dayes,  
 It would haue crackt our sinnewes, shrunk our veines,  
 75 And made our verie heart-strings iarre, like his.  
 Come, let's goe take him foorth, and prooue, if mirth  
 Or companie will but abate his passion.  
 TIBV. Content, and I implore the gods, it may.

## Act II. Scene I.

ALBIUS, CRISPINVS, CHLOE,  
 MAYDES, CYTHERIS.

MASTER CRISPINVS, you are welcome. Pray', vse  
 a stoole, sir. Your cousin CYTHERIS will come  
 downe presently. Wee are so busie for the receiuing of these  
 courtiers here, that I can scarce be a minute with my selfe,  
 5 for thinking of them : Pray you sit, sir, Pray you sit, sir.

CRIS. I am verie well, sir. Ne're trust me, but you are  
 most delicately seated here, full of sweet delight and  
 blandishment ! an excellent ayre, an excellent ayre !

ALBI. I, sir, 'tis a prettie ayre. These courtiers runne  
 10 in my minde still ; I must looke out. for IVPITERS

1. iii. 67 for,] for Q chances] chaunces Q 69 constancie,] Constancy Q  
 71 planet,] Planet, Q (with the dot faintly printed) planet, F1 :  
 Planet, F2 72 injurious] inurious Q 73 height] heigh F2  
 75 heart-strings] hart strings Q 76 foorth] forth F2 mirth]  
 Mirth. Q 78 gods,] Gods, Q Exeunt add Q After 78 Fins  
 Actus Primi. Q II 1. Act II. Scene I. . . CYTHERIS] ACTVS  
 SECVNDVS | SCENA PRIMA | *Albius Crispinus. Chloe. Maydes. Cytheris.*  
 Q. ACT II SCENE I | A Room in Albius's House Enter Albius and  
 Crispinus G, who continues the scene throughout the act 1 Master]  
 Albius. Master Q 2 stoole,] stoole Q cousin CYTHERIS] Cousen  
 Cytheris, Q 3 receiuing] re- | ceceauing Q 5 sit, . . . sit,]  
 sit . . . sit Q sir, Pray] sir Pray F2 6 well,] well Q Ne're] Nere Q  
 trust] trust F2 7 delicately] delicatly Q 8 blandishment!] blandish-  
 ment; Q ayre!] Ayre. Q 9 I,] I Q ayre] ayre: Q

sake, sit, sir. Or please you walke into the garden? There's a garden on the back-side.

C R I S. I am most strenuously well, I thanke you, sir.

A L B I. Much good doe you, sir.

C H L O. Come, bring those perfumes forward a little, <sup>15</sup> and strew some roses, and violets here; Fye, here bee roomes sauour the most pittifully ranke that euer I felt: I crie the gods mercie, my husband's in the winde of vs.

A L B I. Why, this is good, excellent, excellent. well said, my sweet C H L O E. Trimme vp your house most <sup>20</sup> obsequiously.

C H L O. For V V L C A N V S sake, breathe somewhere else: in troth you ouercome our perfumes exceedingly, you are too predominant

A L B I. Heare but my opinion, sweet wife. 25

C H L O. A pinne for your pinnion. In sinceritie, if you be thus fulsome to me in euerie thing, I'll bee diuorc't; Gods my bodie? you know what you were, before I married you; I was a gentlewoman borne, I; I lost all my friends to be a citicens wife; because I heard indeed, they kept <sup>30</sup> their wiues as fine as ladies; and that wee might rule our husbands, like ladies; and doe what wee listed: doe you thinke I would haue married you, else?

A L B I. I acknowledge, sweet wife, she speakes the best of any woman in *Italy*, and mooues as mightily: which <sup>35</sup> makes me, I had rather she should make bumpes on my head, as big as my two fingers, then I would offend her. But sweet wife——

C H L O. Yet againe? I'st not grace inough for you, that I call you husband, and you call me wife: but you must <sup>40</sup> still bee poking mee, against my will, to things?

11. 11 sake, sit, sir Or] sake sit Sir, or Q the garden?] the Garden. Q 13, 14 you,] you Q 14 Exit add Q After 14] Enter Chloe, with two Maids G 15 little,] little: Q 17 sauour] sauour Q 18 Re-enter Albus Penniman 19 Why,] Why Q 20 said,] said Q 22 VVLCANVS] Vulcanes Q. VULCAN'S F<sub>2</sub> breathe somewhere] breathe some where Q 24 too] to Q 26 pinnion] opinion F<sub>3</sub> 28 bodie?] body! Q 33 you,] you Q 34 wife,] wife: Q 35 mooues] moues Q mightily] mightly Fa originally 36 rather] rather Qx originally 37 then] than Fa her] her: Q 41 will,] will Q

ALBI. But you know, wife ; here are the greatest ladies,  
and gallantest gentlemen of ROME, to bee entertain'd in  
our house now : and I would faine aduise thee, to enter-  
45 taine them in the best sort, yfaith wife.

CHLO. In sinceritie, did you euer heare a man talke so  
idley ? You would seeme to be master ? You would haue  
your spoke in my cart ? you would aduise me to entertaine  
ladies, and gentlemen ? because you can marshall your  
50 pack-needles, horse-combes, hobby-horses, and wall-candle-  
stickes in your ware-house better then I ; therefore you can  
tell how to entertaine ladies, and gentle-folkes better  
then I ?

ALBI. O my sweet wife, vpbraide me not with that :  
55 " Gaine sauours sweetly from any thing ; He that respects  
to get, must relish all commodities alike ; and admit no  
difference betwixt oade, and frankincense ; or the most  
precious balsamum, and a tar-barrell.

CHLO. Mary fough : You sell snuffers too, if you be  
60 remembred, but I pray you let mee buy them out of your  
hand ; for I tell you true, I take it highly in snuffe, to learne  
how to entertaine gentlefolkes, of you, at these yeeres, I  
faith. Alas man ; there was not a gentleman came to your  
house i' your tother wiues time, I hope ? nor a ladie ? nor  
65 musique ? nor masques ? Nor you, nor your house were  
so much as spoken of, before I disbast my selfe, from my  
hood and my fartingall, to these bumrowles, and your  
whale-bone bodies.

ALBI. Looke here, my sweet wife ; I am mum, my  
70 deare mummia, my balsamum, my *spermacete*, and my verie  
citie of—shee has the most best, true, fæminine wit in  
ROME !

II. 1. 42 know,] know Q 43 gallantest] Gallantst Q 49 ladies,]  
ladies F<sub>2</sub> because] because Q 51 ware-house] ware house Q  
51, 53 then] than F<sub>2</sub> 57 oade,] oade F<sub>2</sub> 58 balsamum,]  
balsamum F<sub>2</sub> 59 too] to Q 62 yeeres,] yeeres F<sub>2</sub> 63 faith,]  
faith Q 65 masques ?] Masques, Q 67 fartingall] Farthingal F<sub>3</sub>  
to these] tothese F<sub>1</sub> 68 whale-bone bodies] Whale-bone Bodies Q  
whale-bone-bodies F<sub>f</sub> 70 mummia] Mummia Q *spermacete*] *Sperma*  
*Cete* Q *sperma cete* F<sub>2</sub> (? F<sub>1</sub>) 71 fæminine] fæminine F<sub>2</sub> 72  
ROME] Rome. Q

CRIS. I haue heard so, sir ; and doe most vehemently desire to participate the knowledge of her faire features.

ALBI. Ah, peace ; you shall heare more anon : bee not 75  
seene yet, I pray you ; not yet : Obserue.

CHLO. 'Sbodie, giue husbands the head a little more,  
and they'll bee nothing but head shortly ; whats he there ?

MAYD 1. I know not forsooth.

MAYD 2. Who would you speake with, sir ? 80

CRIS. I would speake with my cousin CYTHERIS.

MAYD <2>. Hee is one forsooth would speake with his  
cousin CYTHERIS.

CHLO. Is she your cousin, sir ?

CRIS. Yes in truth, forsooth, for fault of a better. 85

CHLO. Shee is a gentlewoman.

CRIS. Or else she should not be my cousin, I assure you.

CHLO. Are you a gentleman borne ?

CRIS. That I am, ladie ; you shall see mine armes, if't  
please you. 90

CHLO. No, your legges doe sufficiently shew you are a  
gentleman borne, sir : for a man borne vpon little legges, is  
always a gentleman borne.

CRIS. Yet, I pray you, vouchsafe the sight of my armes,  
Mistresse ; for I beare them about me, to haue 'hem seene : 95  
my name is CRISPINVS, or CRI-SPINAS indeed ;  
which is well exprest in my armes, (a Face crying *in chiefe* ;  
and beneath it a blouddie Toe, betweene three Thornes  
*pungent*.)

CHLO. Then you are welcome, sir ; now you are a 100  
gentleman borne, I can find in my heart to welcome you :  
for I am a gentlewoman borne too ; and will beare my head  
high inough, though 'twere my fortune to marrie a trades-man.

II 1. 73 so,] so Q 76 yet, I] yet, I Q Exit add Q 77  
'Sbodie, om. F<sub>2</sub> 79, 80 MAYD] Mayde Q. MAYD Ff 79 forsooth.]  
forsooth Q 80 with,] with Q, F<sub>2</sub> 81, 83, 84, 87 cousin] Cosen Q  
82 MAYD 2] Mayde Q. MAYD Fr. MAYD 2 F<sub>2</sub> 85 truth,  
forsooth] truth for sooth Q 86 gentlewoman G gentlewoman ?  
Q, Ff 87 you ] you, Q 92 borne, sir ] borne Sir Q 95 'hem] h'em  
Q 97 (a) a Q 99 *pungent* )] *Pungent* Q 100 welcome,] welcome Q  
103 inough] enough Q, F<sub>2</sub> trades-man] Fiat-cappe Q

CRIS. No doubt of that, sweet feature, your carriage  
105 shewes it in any mans eye, that is carried vpon you with  
iudgement.

*Has is still going in and out.* ALBI. Deare wife, be not angry.

CHLO. God's my passion !

ALBI. Heare me but one thing ; let not your maydes  
110 set cushions in the parlor windowes ; nor in the dyning-  
chamber windowes ; nor vpon stooles, in eyther of them, in  
any case ; for 'tis tauerne-like ; but lay them one vpon  
another, in some out-roome, or corner of the dyning-  
chamber.

115 CHLO. Goe, goe, meddle with your bed-chamber onely,  
or rather with your bed in your chamber, onely ; or rather  
with your wife in your bed onely ; or on my faith, I'll not  
be pleas'd with you onely.

ALBI. Looke here, my deare wife, entertaine that  
120 gentleman kindly, I pre' thee ;—mum.

CHLO. Goe, I need your instructions indeede ; anger  
mee no more, I aduise you. Citi-sin, quoth'a ! she's a wise  
gentlewoman yfaith, will marrie her selfe to the sinne of  
the citie.

125 ALBI. But this time, and no more (by heauen) wife :  
hang no pictures in the hall, nor in the dyning-chamber, in  
any case, but in the gallerie onely, for 'tis not courtly else,  
o' my word, wife.

CHLO. 'Sprecious, neuer haue done !

130 ALBI. Wife.—

CHLO. Doe I not beare a reasonable corrigible hand ouer  
him, CRISPINS ?

CRIS. By this hand, ladie, you hold a most sweet hand  
ouer him.

135 ALBI. And then for the great gilt andyrans ?—

II 1. 104-6 CRIS. iudgement *not in Q* 107 wife,] wife *Q* stage-dir.  
*not in Q* 110-11, 113-14, 126 dyning-chamber] dining Chamber *Q*  
111 them,] them *Q* 112 tauerne-like] Tauerne like *Q* 113 another]  
an other *Q* out-roome] out Roome *Q* 120 pre' thee] pr'y thee *F2*  
*Exit add Q* 128 o'] on *Q* 130 *Exit. add Q* 133 hand,] hand *Q*  
135 andyrans ?—] Andyrans ? *Q*

CHLO. Againe! would the andyrans were in your great guttes, for mee.

ALBI. I doe vanish, wife.

CHLO. How shall I doe, Master CRISPINS? here 140  
will bee all the brauest ladies in court presently, to see your  
cousin CYTHERIS: ô the gods! how might I behaue  
my selfe now, as to entertayne them most courtly?

CRIS. Mary, ladie, if you will entertaine them most  
courtly, you must doe thus: as soone as euer your maide, or  
your man brings you word they are come; you must say 145  
(A poxe on 'hem, what doe they here?) And yet when they  
come, speake them as faire, and giue them the kindest  
welcome in wordes, that can be.

CHLO. Is that the fashion of courtiers, CRISPINS?

CRIS. I assure you, it is, ladie, I haue obseru'd it 150

CHLO. For your poxe, sir, it is easily hit on; but, 'tis  
not so easie to speake faire after, me thinkes?

ALBI. O wife, the coaches are come, on my word, a  
number of coaches, and courtiers.

CHLO. A poxe on them: what doe they here? 155

ALBI. How now wife! wouldst thou not haue 'hem  
come?

CHLO. Come? come, you are a foole, you: He knowes  
not the trick on't. Call CYTHERIS, I pray you and  
good master CRISPINS, you can obserue, you say; let 160  
me intreat you for all the ladies behauiours, iewels, uests,  
and attires, that you marking as well as I, we may put both  
our markes together, when they are gone, and conferre of  
them.

CRIS. I warrant you, sweet ladie; let mee alone to 165  
obserue, till I turne my selfe to nothing but obseruation.  
Good morrow cousin CYTHERIS

II 1 137 guttes,] guts *Fr* 138 *Exit* add *Q* 143 Mary,] Marry *Q*  
145-6 say (A poxe) say, *A poxe* *Q* (italicizing) 146 'hem,] 'hem, *Q*  
here ?)] here *Q* here) *Fr* 150 is,] is *Q* 151 poxe,] Pox *Q*  
on] vpon *Q* 152 easie] easily *Fr* 155 italicized in *Q* 156 'hem]  
them *Q* 159 CYTHERIS,] *Cytheris* *Q* 161 behauiours] behauiors  
*Q* 163 together] together *Q* 165 you,] you *Q* After 166 *Enter*  
*Cytheris*. *G* 167 Good morrow cousin] Godmorrow cosen *Q*

CYTH. Welcome kind cousin. What? are they come?

ALBI. I, your friend CORNELIVS GALLVS,  
170 OVID, TIBVLLVS, PROPERTIVS, with IVLIA  
the Emperors daughter, and the ladie PLAVTIA, are  
lighted at the dore; and with them HERMOGENES  
TIGELLIVS, the excellent musician.

CYTH. Come, let vs goe meet them, CHLOE.

175 CHLO. Obserue, CRISPINVS.

CRIS. At a haire breadth, ladie, I warrant you.

### Act II. Scene II.

GALLVS, OVID, TIBVLLVS, PROPERTIVS,  
HERMOGENES, IVLIA, PLAVTIA,  
CYTHERIS, CHLOE, ALBIVS,  
CRISPINVS.

HEALTH to the louely CHLOE you must pardon me,  
Mistris, that I preferre this faire gentlewoman.

CYTH. I pardon, and praise you for it, sir; and I  
beseech your Excellence, receiue her beauties into your  
5 knowledge and fauour.

IVLI. CYTHERIS, shee hath fauour, and behauiour,  
that commands as much of me and sweet CHLOE,  
know I doe exceedingly loue you, and that I will approue in  
any grace my father the Emperour may shew you. Is this  
10 your husband?

ALBI. For fault of a better, if it please your highnesse.

CHLO. Gods my life! how hee shames mee!

CYTH. Not a whit, CHLOE, they all thinke you politike,  
and wittie; wise women choose not husbands for the eye,  
15 merit, or birth, but wealth, and soueraigntie.

II. 1. 168 cousin] cosen Q What? What, Q 171 Emperors]  
Emperours F2 PLAVTIA,] *Plautia* Q 175 Obserue, CRISPINVS]  
Obserue *Chrispinus* Q 176 breadth,] breadth Q II. II. Act II  
Scene II.] SCENA SECVNDA Q As they are going out, enter Cornelius  
Gallus, Ovid, Tibullus, Propertius, Hermogenes, Julia, and Plautia. G.  
continuing the scene GALLVS] ¶ Gallus Q 1 Health] Gall.  
Health Q me,] me Q 3 CYTH] Cith Q (so 23) 13 whit,]  
whit Q politike] politicke Q 15 birth,] Byrth, Q

OVID. Sir, we all come to gratulate, for the good report of you.

TIBV. And would be glad to deserue your loue, sir.

ALBI. My wife will answere you all, gentlemen; I'll come to you againe presently. 20

PLAV. You haue chosen you a most faire companion here, CYTHERIS, and a very faire house.

CYTH. To both which, you and all my friends, are very welcome, PLAVTIA.

CHLO. With all my heart, I assure your ladiship. 25

PLAV. Thanks, sweet Mistris CHLOE.

IVLI. You must needes come to court, ladie, yfaith, and there bee sure your welcome shall be as great to vs.

OVID. Shee will well deserue it, Madame. I see, euen in her lookes, gentrie, and generall worthinesse. 30

TIBV. I haue not seene a more certaine character of an excellent disposition.

ALBI. Wife

CHLO. O, they doe so commend me here, the courtiers! what's the matter now? 35

ALBI. For the banquet, sweet wife.

CHLO. Yes; and I must needes come to court, and bee welcome, the Princesse sayes.

GALL. OVID, and TIBVLLVS, you may bee bold to welcome your Mistresses here. 40

OVID. We find it so, sir.

TIBV. And thanke CORNELIVS GALLVS

OVID. Nay, my sweet SEXTVS, in faith thou art not sociable.

PROP. Infait, I am not, PVBLIVS; nor I cannot. 45 Sicke mindes, are like sicke men that burne with feuers, Who when they drinke, please but a present tast,

11 n 20 Exit add Q. 22 CYTHERIS,] Cytheris; Q 24 welcome,] welcome Q 26 Mistris] Mistresse Q 27 court, ladie,] Court Ladie Q 29 it,] it Q 33 ALBI] Alb [re-entering] G 37 court,] Court; Q 38 Exit add Q Exit with Albius G 39 Ovid,] Ouid Q 41 so,] so Q 42 GALLVS] Gallus Q 45 not,] not Q 46 mindes,] mindes Q 47 present] lingring Q



- And after beare a more impatient fit.  
 Pray, let me leaue you ; I offend you all,  
 50 And my selfe most. GALL. Stay, sweet PROPERTIVS.  
 TIBV. You yeeld too much vnto your grieues, and fate,  
 Which neuer hurts, but when we say it hurts vs.  
 PROP. O peace, TIBVLLVS ; your philosophie  
 Lends you too rough a hand to search my wounds.  
 55 Speake they of griefes, that know to sigh, and grieve ;  
 The free and vnconstrained spirit feelles  
 No weight of my oppression OVID. Worthy Roman !  
 Me thinkes I taste his miserie ; and could  
 Sit downe, and chide at his malignant starres  
 60 IULI. Me thinkes I loue him, that he loues so truly.  
 CYTH. This is the perfect'st loue, liues after death.  
 GALL. Such is the constant ground of vertue still.  
 PLAV. It puts on an inseparable face.  
 CHLO. Haue you markt euery thing, CRISPINVS ?  
 65 CRIS. Euery thing, I warrant you.  
 CHLO. What gentlemen are these ? doe you know  
 them ?  
 CRIS. I, they are *poets*, lady.  
 CHLO. *Poets* ? they did not talke of me since I went,  
 70 did they ?  
 CRIS. O yes, and extold your perfections to the heauens.  
 CHLO. Now in sinceritie, they be the finest kind of men,  
 that euer I knew. *Poets* ? Could not one get the Emperour  
 to make my husband a *Poet*, thinke you ?  
 75 CRIS. No, ladie, 'tis loue, and beautie make *Poets* : and  
 since you like *Poets* so well, your loue, and beauties shall  
 make me a *Poet*.  
 CHLO. What shall they ? and such a one as these ?  
 CRIS. I, and a better then these : I would be sorry else.

11 11 50 Stay,] Stay Q 51, 54 too] to Q 51, grieues] griefes  
 F2 griefs F3 53 peace,] peace Q 55 sigh,] sigh Q griue,] grieve ?  
 F3 57 Exit add Q after 'oppression.' 59 starres ] Starres · Q  
 After 63 Re-enter Chloë. G 64 markt] mark't F2 65 you ] you Q  
 73 Emperour] Emperor Q 78 What] What, F2 79 then] than  
 Q, F2

CHLO. And shall your lookes change? and your haire 80  
change? and all, like these?

CRIS. Why, a man may be a *Poet*, and yet not change  
his haire, lady.

CHLO. Well, wee shall see your cunning: yet if you can  
change your haire, I pray, doe. 85

ALBI. Ladies, and lordings, there's a slight banquet  
staies within for you, please you draw neere, and accost it.

IVLI. We thanke you, good ALBIVS: but when shall  
wee see those excellent iewels you are commended to haue?

ALBI. At your ladships seruice. I got that speech by 90  
seeing a play last day, and it did me some grace now. I see,  
'tis good to collect sometimes; I'll frequent these plaies  
more then I haue done, now I come to be familiar with  
courtiers.

GALL. Why, how now, HERMOGENES? what 95  
ailest thou trow?

HERM. A little melancholy, let me alone, pray thee.

GALL. Melancholy! how so?

HERM. With riding a plague on all coaches for me.

CHLO. Is that hard-fauour'd gentleman a *poet* too; 100  
CYTHERIS?

CYTH. No; this is HERMOGENES, as humorous as  
a *poet* though: he is a *Musician*.

CHLO. A *Musician*? then he can sing.

CYTH. That he can excellently; did you neuer heare 105  
him?

CHLO. O no: will he be intreated, thinke you?

CYTH. I know not. Friend, Mistresse CHLOE would  
faine heare HERMOGENES sing: are you interested in him?

GALL. No doubt, his owne humanitie will command him 110  
so farre, to the satisfaction of so faire a beautie; but rather  
then faile, wee'll all bee suiters to him.

11. 11. 85 pray,] pray Q After 85 Re-enter Albius G 87  
neere,] nere Q 88 you,] you Q 90 At . . . seruice. italicized in Q  
93 then] than F2 95 Why, now,] Why now Q 97 pray thee]  
pr'y thee F2 100 hard-fauour'd] hard fauourd Q 102 HERMOGENES,]  
Hermogenes; Q 110 command] commaund Q 112 then] than F2

HERM. 'Cannot sing.

GALL. Pray thee, HERMOGENES.

115 HERM. 'Cannot sing.

GALL. For honour of this gentlewoman, to whose house,  
I know thou maist be euer welcome.

CHLO. That he shall in truth, sir, if he can sing.

OVID What's that?

120 GALL. This gentlewoman is wooing HERMOGENES  
for a song.

OVID. A song? come, he shall not denie her. HER-  
MOGENES?

HERM. 'Cannot sing.

125 GALL. No, the ladies must doe it, hee staies but to haue  
their thankes acknowledg'd as a debt to his cunning

IVLI. That shall not want: our selfe will be the first  
shall promise to pay him more then thankes, vpon a fauour  
so worthily vouchsaf't.

130 HERM. Thanke you, Madame, but 'will not sing.

TIBV Tut, the onely way to winne him, is to abstaine  
from intreating him.

CRIS. Doe you loue singing, ladie?

CHLO. O, passingly.

135 CRIS. Intreat the ladies, to intreat me to sing then, I  
beseech you.

CHLO. I beseech your grace, intreat this gentleman to  
sing.

IVLI That we will CHLOE; can he sing excellently?

140 CHLO I thinke so, Madame: for he intreated me, to  
intreat you, to intreat him to sing.

CRIS. Heauen, and earth! would you tell that?

IVLI. Good sir, let's intreat you to vse your voice

CRIS. Alas, Madame, I cannot in truth.

145 PLAV. The gentleman is modest: I warrant you, he  
sings excellently

11 114 Pray thee,] Pray thee Q. Pr'y thee, F2 120 wooing]  
woung Q 128 then] than F2 130 you, Madame,] you Madame; Q  
137 grace,] Grace Q 140 so,] so Q 142 Heauen,] Heauen Q  
144 Alas,] Alas Q 145 gentleman] Gentlemans Q

OVID. HERMOGENES, cleere your throat: I see by him, here's a gentleman will worthily challenge you.

CRIS. Not I, sir, I'll challenge no man.

TIBV. That's your modestie, sir: but wee, out of an assurance of your excellencie, challenge him in your behalfe.

CRIS. I thanke you, gentlemen, I'll doe my best.

HERM. Let that best be good, sir, you were best.

GALL. O, this contention is excellent. What is't you sing, sir? 155

CRIS. *If I freely may discover, &c.* Sir, I'll sing that.

OVID. One of your owne compositions, HERMOGENES. He offers you vantage enough

CRIS. Nay truely, gentlemen, I'll challenge no man: I can sing but one staffe of the dittie neither. 160

GALL. The better: HERMOGENES himselfe will bee intreated to sing the other.

SONG.

*IF I freely may discover,  
What would please me in my loue:  
I would haue her faire, and wittie,  
Sauouring more of court, then citie;  
A little proud, but full of pittie:  
Light, and humorous in her toying  
Oft building hopes, and soone destroying,  
Long, but sweet in the enioying,  
Neither too easie, nor too hard:  
All extremes I would haue bard.* 165 170

GALL. Beleeue me, sir, you sing most excellently.

OVID. If there were a praise about excellence, the gentleman highly deserves it. 175

II, II 147 HERMOGENES,] *Hermogenes* Q 149 I,] I Q 150  
modestie,] modestie Q 152 you,] you Q 155 sing,] sing Q  
158 He begins a new line in Q, F1 After 162 SONG.] CANTUS Q.  
*Crispinus* sings. G 163 may Q, F1, F3. can F2 166 then  
than F2 168 Light,] *Light* Q *toying*] *toying*, Q 170 enioying,]  
enjoying; F2 171 too hard] *to hard* Q 172 extremes] *extreames* Q  
173 me,] me Q

HERM. Sir, all this doth not yet make mee enuie you :  
for I know I sing better then you

TIBV. Attend HERMOGENES, now.

## 2.

180 *Shée should be allow'd her passions,  
So they were but vs'd as fashions,  
Sometimes froward, and then frowning,  
Sometimes sickish, and then swooning,  
Euery fit, with change, still crowning.  
Purely iealous, I would haue her,  
185 Then onely constant when I craue her.  
'Tis a vertue should not saue her  
Thus, nor her delicates would cloy me,  
Neither her peeuishnesse annoy me*

IVLI. Nay, HERMOGENES, your merit hath long  
190 since beene both knowne, and admir'd of vs.

HERM. You shall heare me sing another : now will  
I begin.

GALL We shall doe this gentlemans banquet too much  
wrong, that staes for vs, ladies.

195 IVLI. 'Tis true · and well thought on, CORNELIVS  
GALLVS.

HERM Why 'tis but a short aire, 'twill be done present-  
ly, pray' stay ; strike musique.

OVID. No, good HERMOGENES · wee'll end this  
200 difference within.

IVLI. 'Tis the common disease of all your musicians, that  
they know no meane, to be intreated, either to begin, or end.

ALBI Please you lead the way, gentles ?

ALL. Thanks, good ALBIVS.

205 ALBI. O, what a charme of thankses was here put vpon

II ii. 177 then] than F<sub>2</sub> 178 HERMOGENES.] *Hermogenes* Q now.]  
now. | *Hermogenes, accompanied* G 179 allow'd] allowed Q, F<sub>1</sub> 182  
swooning] Swooning F<sub>3</sub> 184 iealous] *Ielous* Q 189 Nay,] Nay Q  
194 ladies] Ladies Q 198 strike] strick F<sub>2</sub> 201 that]  
hat F<sub>1</sub> originally 202 meane,] meane; F<sub>2</sub> 203 gentles] Gentles F<sub>3</sub>  
204 ALL.] *Omnes* Q *Exeunt* add Q *Exeunt all but Albus* G

me! O I O V E, what a setting forth it is to a man, to haue many courtiers come to his house! Sweetly was it said of a good olde house-keeper; *I had rather want meate, then want ghests*: specially, if they be courtly ghests. For, neuer trust me, if one of their good legges made in a house, be not 210 worth all the good cheere, a man can make them. Hee that would haue fine ghests, let him haue a fine wife; he that would haue a fine wife, let him come to me.

C R I S. By your kind leaue, Master A L B I V S.

A L B I. What, you are not gone, Master C R I S P I N V S? 215

C R I S. Yes farth, I haue a desseigne drawes me hence: pray' sir, fashion me an excuse to the ladies.

A L B I. Will you not stay? and see the iewels, sir? I pray you stay.

C R I S. Not for a million, sir, now; Let it suffice, I must 220 relinquish; and so in a word, please you to expiate this complement.

A L B I. Mum.

C R I S. Ile presently goe and enghle some broker, for a *Poets* gowne, and bespeake a garland: and then ieweller, 225 looke to your best iewell yfaith.

### Act III. Scene I.

H O R A C E, C R I S P I N V S.

H M h? yes; I will begin an *ode* so: and it shall be to Hor. li. i.  
M E C Æ N A S. Sat 9

C R I S. 'Slid, yonder's H O R A C E! they say hee's an excellent *Poet*: M E C Æ N A S loues him. Ile fall into his

ii. u 207 many] may Q 208 then] than F2 209 ghests] guests F2  
209, 212 ghests] guests F2 209 For.] For Q After 213 Re-enter  
Crispinus G 215 CRISPINVS] Crispine Q 216 desseigne] designe F2  
219 pray] pay F1 220 million.] Million Q now.] now F2 223 Exit.  
add Q 225 garland] Gyrland Q 226 Exit. add Q After 226 Fins  
Actus Secundus. Q III 1. Act III Scene I] ACTVS TERTIVS. | SCENA  
PRIMA. Q ACT III SCENE I. | The Via Sacra, (or Holy Street) | Enter  
Horace, Crispinus following. G 1 Hmh] Hor Hmh Q Hah F2  
Marginal note, Hor] Hot. F1 F2 places the reference at 10-11 3  
'Slid, yonder's HORACE!] Slid yonders Horace: Q 4 MECENAS]  
Mecenas Q originally, corrected to Mecenas

5 acquaintance, if I can; I thinke he be composing, as he goes i' the street! ha? 't is a good humour, and he be: Ile compose too.

H O R A. *Swell me a bowle with lustie wine,  
Till I may see the plump L Y Æ V S swim*

10 *Above the brim:*

*I drinke, as I would wright,  
In flowing measure, fill'd with flame, and spright.*

C R I S. Sweet H O R A C E, M I N E R V A, and the *Muses* stand auspicious to thy desseignes. How far'st thou, sweete  
15 man? frolicke? rich? gallant? ha?

H O R A. Not greatly gallant, sir, like my fortunes; well I'm bold to take my leaue, sir, you'd naught else, sir, would you?

C R I S. Troth, no, but I could wish thou did'st know vs,  
20 H O R A C E, we are a scholer, I assure thee.

H O R A A scholer, sir? I shall bee couetous of your faire knowledge.

C R I S. Gramercie, good H O R A C E. Nay, we are new turn'd *Poet* too, which is more; and a *Satyr*ist too, which  
25 is more then that. I write iust in thy veine, I. I am for your *odes* or your *sermons*, or any thing indeed; wee are a gentleman besides: our name is R V F V S L A B E R I V S C R I S P I N V S, we are a prettie *stock* too.

H O R A. To the proportion of your beard, I thinke it, sir.  
30 C R I S. By P H Æ B V S, here's a most neate fine street, is't not? I protest to thee, I am enamour'd of this street now, more then of halfe the streets of *Rome*, againe; 'tis so polite, and terse! There's the front of a building now.

III 1 6 humour] humor Q and] if F2 11 wright,] wright, Q write F2 12 flowing] flowong F2 spright] sprite F2 13 HORACE,] Horace! Q 14 desseignes] designs F2 thou,] thou Q 16 sir,] Sir Q sir, W fortunes, W 17 I'm begins a new line in Q, Ff (I am F2) leaue, else,] leaue .. else Q you'd] you'le F2 18 would] wold Q 19 Troth, no,] Troth no, Q 20 HORACE,] Horace, Q 21 scholer,] Scholer Q 23 Gramercie,] Gramercy Q HORACE] Horace; Q 25, 32 then] than F2 28 CRISPINVS,] Crispinus; Q 29 it,] it Q 30 street,] streete; Q 31 enamour'd] enamord Q 33 terse! There's] terse. Ther's Q

I studie architecture too : if euer I should build, I'de haue  
a house iust of that *prospectiue*. 35

H O R A. Doubtlesse, this gallants tongue has a good  
turne, when hee sleepes.

C R I S. I doe make verses, when I come in such a street  
as this : O your city-ladies, you shall ha' 'hem sit in euery  
shop like the *Muses*—offring you the *castalian* dewes, and 40  
the *thespian* liquors, to as many as haue but the sweet grace  
and audacitie to—sip of their lips. Did you neuer heare  
any of my verses ?

H O R A. No, sir (but I am in some feare, I must, now.)

C R I S. I'le tell thee some (if I can but recouer 'hem) I 45  
compos'd e'en now of a dressing, I saw a iewellers wife  
weare, who indeede was a iewell her selfe : I preferre that  
kind of tire now, what's thy opinion, H O R A C E ?

H O R A. With your siluer bodkin, it does well, sir.

C R I S. I cannot tell, but it stirres me more then all your 50  
court-curles, or your spangles, or your tricks . I affect not  
these high gable-ends, these *tuscane*-tops, nor your coronets,  
nor your arches, nor your *pyramid's* ; giue me a fine sweet  
—little delicate dressing, with a bodkin, as you say : and  
a mushrome, for all your other ornatures 55

H O R A. Is't not possible to make an escape from him ?

C R I S. I haue remitted my verses, all this while, I  
thinke I ha' forgot 'hem.

H O R A. Here's he, could wish you had else.

C R I S. Pray I O V E, I can intreat 'hem of my memorie 60

H O R A. You put your memorie to too much trouble, sir.

C R I S. No, sweet H O R A C E, we must not ha' thee  
thinke so.

H O R A. I crie you mercy , then, they are my eares  
That must be tortur'd : well, you must haue patience, eares. 65

III.1 34 I'de] I'd F2 39 ha' 'hem] ha'hem Q, Fr 40 *Muses*—]  
*Muses*,—Q dewes] Deawes Q 44 No, sir (but] No Sir, but Q  
now)] now Q 46 dressing] veluet cap Q 47 weare,] wear; Q  
48 now,] now, Q opinion,] opinion Q 50 then] than F2 51  
court-curles] Court Curles Q 52 gable-ends] Gable ends Q *tuscane*-  
tops] *Tuscan* tops Q 54 delicate dressing] veluet Cap Q bodkin,]  
Bodkin; Q 57 verses,] verses Q 58 thinke] think, F2



C R I S. Pray thee, H O R A C E, obserue.

H O R A. Yes, sir : your sattin sleeue begins to fret at the rug that is vnderneath it, I doe observe . And your ample veluet bases are not without euident staines of a hot disposition, naturally.

C R I S. O—I'll die them into another colour, at pleasure : how many yards of veluet dost thou thinke they containe ?

H O R A. Hart ! I haue put him now in a fresh way  
To vex me more Faith, sir, your mercers booke  
75 Will tell you with more patience, then I can ;  
(For I am crost, and so's not that, I thinke.)

C R I S. S'ligh, these verses haue lost me againe : I shall not inuite 'hem to mind, now.

H O R A. Racke not your thoughts, good sir ; rather,  
deferre it  
80 To a new time ; I'll meete you at your lodging,

Or where you please . Till then, I o v e keepe you, sir.

C R I S. Nay, gentle H O R A C E, stay . I haue it, now.

H O R A. Yes, sir A P O L L O, H E R M E S, I V P I T E R,  
Looke down vpon me.

85 C R I S. *Rich was thy hap, sweet, demtie cap,*

*There to be placed :*

*Where thy smooth blacke, sleeke white may smacke,*

*And both be graced.*

*White*, is there vsurpt for her brow ; her forehead : and then  
90 *sleeke*, as the *parallell* to *smooth*, that went before. A kind of  
*Paranomastie*, or *Agnomination* : doe you conceue, sir ?

H O R A. Excellent. Troth, sir, I must be abrupt, and leaue you.

C R I S. Why, what haste hast thou ? pray thee, stay a  
95 little : thou shalt not goe yet, by P H æ B V S.

III 1 66 thee,] thee Q 67 Yes,] Yes Q 69 bases] hose Q  
69-70 disposition,] disposition Q 71 O—] O,— Q 73 Hart] 'Hart  
Q om F2 way] way, F2 74 Faith,] Faith Q 75 then] than  
F2 76 (For] For Q thinke)] thinke. Q 77 S'ligh,] 'Slight ; Q  
78 mind,] minde Q 82 Nay,] Nay Q 83-4 Prose in Q, Ff 85  
sweet, demtie] Sweete Veluet Q sweet demtie F2 89 White] white F1  
90 smooth,] smooth Q 91 conceue,] conceaue Q 92 Troth,] Troth Q  
94 pray thee,] pray thee Q pr'y thee, F2

H O R A. I shall not ? what remedie ? Fie, how I sweat  
with suffering !

C R I S. And then——

H O R A. Pray, sir, giue me leaue to wipe my face a little

C R I S. Yes, doe, good H O R A C E. H O R A. Thanke 100  
you, sir.

Death ! I must craue his leaue to pisse anon ;

Or that I may goe hence with halfe my teeth :

I am in some such feare. This tyrannie

Is strange, to take mine eares vp by *commission*,

(Whether I will or no) and make them stalls 105

To his lewd *solacismes*, and worded trash.

Happy thou, bold B O L A N V S, now, I say ;

Whose freedome, and impatience of this fellow,

Would, long ere this, haue call'd him foole, and foole,

And ranke, and tedious foole, and haue slung iests 110

As hard as stones, till thou hadst pelted him

Out of the place : whil'st my tame modestie

Suffers my wit be made a solemne asse

To beare his fopperies——

C R I S. H O R A C E, thou art miserably affected to be 115

gone, I see. But—pray thee, let's proue, to enioy thee

awhile Thou hast no businesse, I assure me. Whether is

thy iourney directed ? ha ?

H o R A. Sir, I am going to visit a friend, that's sicke.

C R I S. A friend ? What's he ? doe not I know him ? 120

H o R A. No, sir, you doe not know him ; and 'tis not the  
worse for him.

C R I S. What's his name ? where's he lodg'd ?

H o R A. Where, I shall be fearefull to draw you out of  
your way, sir ; a great way hence : Pray', sir, let's part. 125

III 1. 97 suffering [ ] suffering Q 99 Pray, ] Pray Q 100 H O R A.  
Thanke *begins a new line in Ff* you, ] you Q 101 I *not in Q* 102  
teeth ] teeth, Q 103 feare ] feare. Q 104 strange, ] strange, Q  
106 worded ] worded Q 107 thou, bold ] the bold Q 108 Whose . . .  
fellow ] *Romes Common Buffon* His free Impudence Q 109 call'd him  
foole, and foole, ] *cald this fellow, Foole, Q* 111 thou hadst ] he had Q  
116 pray thee ] *pr'y thee F2* 117 me ] mee Q 121 No, ] No Q  
125 Pray', ] Pray Q

CRIS. Nay, but where is't? I pray thee, say.

HORA. On the farre side of all *Tyber* yonder, by CAESARS gardens.

CRIS O, that's my course directly; I am for you.  
130 Come, goe why stand'st thou?

HORA Yes, sir marry, the plague is in that part of the citie; I had almost forgot to tell you, sir.

CRIS. Fow: It's no matter, I feare no pestilence, I ha' not offended PHŒBUS.

135 HORA I haue, it seemes; or else this heaue scourge Could ne're haue lighted on me——

CRIS. Come, along.

HORA. I am to goe downe some halfe mile, this way, sir, first, to speake with his physician And from thence to  
140 his apothecary, where I shall stay the mixing of diuers drugs——

CRIS. Why, it's all one. I haue nothing to doe, and I loue not to be idle, I'll beare thee companie. How call'st thou the pothecary?

145 HORA. O, that I knew a name would fright him now. Sir RHADAMANTHVS, RHADAMANTHVS, sir.

There's one so cald, is a iust iudge, in hell,  
And doth inflict strange vengeance on all those,  
That (here on earth) torment poore patient spirits.

150 CRIS. He dwells at the three *Furies*, by IANVS Temple?

HORA. Your pothecary does, sir.

CRIS. Hart, I owe him money for sweet meates, and hee has laid to arrest me, I heare: but——

HORA Sir, I haue made a most solemne vow: I will  
155 neuer baile any man.

CRIS. Well then, I'll sweare, and speake him faire, if the worst come. But his name is MINOS, not RHADAMANTHVS, HORACE.

III 1 126 pray thee,] pray thee Q: pr'y thee, F2 131 Yes, . . .  
marry,] Yes . marry Q 136 ne're] nere 139 first,] first;  
143 loue] looue Q idle,] idle, Q 144 pothecary] Apothecary F2  
145-6 Verse in F3 prose in Q, Ff 146 Sir RHADAMANTHVS, not  
in Q sir] Sir Q 147 iudge,] Iudge Q 151 pothecary] Apothe-  
cary Q 'pothecary F2

H O R A. That may bee, sir : I but guest at his name by his signe. But your M I N O S is a iudge too, sir ? 160

C R I S. I protest to thee, H O R A C E (doe but taste mee once) if I doe know my selfe, and mine owne vertues truely, thou wilt not make that esteeme of V A R I V S, or V I R G I L, or T I B V L L V S, or any of 'hem indeed, as now in thy ignorance thou dost ; which I am content to forgiue : I 165 would faine see, which of these could pen more verses in a day, or with more facilitie then I, or that could court his mistris, kisse her hand, make better sport with her fanne, or her dogge——

H O R A. I cannot baile you yet, sir. 170

C R I S. Or that could moue his body more gracefully, or dance better : you shoo'd see mee, were it not i' the street——

H O R A. Nor yet.

C R I S. Why, I haue beene a reueller, and at my cloth of 175 siluer sute, and my long stocking, in my time, and will be againe——

H O R A. If you may be trusted, sir.

C R I S. And then for my singing, H E R M O G E N E S himselfe enuies me ; that is your onely Master of musique 180 you haue in *Rome*.

H O R A. Is your mother liuing, sir ?

C R I S. Au. Conuert thy thoughts to somewhat else, I pray thee.

H O R A. You haue much of the mother in you, sir. your 185 father is dead ?

C R I S. I, I thanke I o v E, and my grand-father too, and all my kins-folkes, and well compos'd in their vrnes.

H O R A. The more their happinesse ; that rest in peace, Free from th'abundant torture of thy tongue ; 190

III. 1 159 bee,] be Q 160 too,] to Q 162 once)] once,) Q  
163 VIRGIL] Virgill Q (so commonly) 164 indeed) in deed Q  
167 then] than F2 169 dogge—] Dogge? Q 171 grace-  
fully,] gracefully? Q 172 better ] better Q shoo'd] should  
F2 173 street—] street Q 180 himselfe] him selfe Q 187  
too,] to, Q too F1 188 vrnes] Graues Q 190 abundant]  
abundant Q

Would I were with them too. CRIS. What's that,  
HORACE?

HORACE. I now remember me, sir, of a sad fate  
A cunning woman, one SABELLA sung,  
When in her vrne, she cast my destinie,  
195 I being but a child. CRIS. What was't, I pray thee?

HORACE. Shee told me, I should surely neuer perish  
By famine, poyson, or the enemies sword;  
The *hecticke* feuer, cough, or pleurisie,  
Should neuer hurt me; nor the tardie gowt:  
200 But in my time, I should be once surpriz'd,  
By a strong tedious talker, that should vex  
And almost bring me to consumption.

Therefore (if I were wise) she warn'd me shunne  
All such long-winded monsters, as my bane  
205 For if I could but scape that one discourser,  
I might (no doubt) proue an olde aged man.  
By your leaue, sir?

CRIS. Tut, tut abandon this idle humour, 'tis nothing  
but melancholy. 'Fore LOVE, now I thinke ont, I am to  
210 appeare in court here, to answere to one that has me in  
suit; sweet HORACE, goe with mee, this is my houre.  
if I neglect it, the law proceedes against me. Thou art  
familiar with these things, pray thee, if thou lou'st me, goe.

HORACE. Now, let me dye, sir, if I know your lawes;  
215 Or haue the power to stand still halfe so long  
In their loud courts, as while a case is argued.  
Besides, you know, sir, where I am to goe,  
And the necessitie.—

CRIS. 'Tis true:—

111 193 one] on Q 195 child] Child Q· child Fr was't,  
wast Ff 196 told] tould Q 206-7 One line in Q 206 proue . . .  
olde] prooue . . . ould Q 207 leaue,] leaue Q 208 abandon]  
abandon, Q humour] humor Q 209 'Fore] Fore Q 211  
HORACE,] Horace Q mee,] me Q 212 me] me Q 213 things,]  
things, Q pray thee] pr'y thee Fz lou'st] louest Q 214 dye,]  
die Q 215 power] power, Q still not in Q 216 their loud courts]  
their ( ) Courts Q case is argued] Case is Argued Q, Fz:  
case is Argued Fr 217-18 One line in Q 217 know,]  
know Q

H O R A. I hope the houre of my release be come : Hee 220  
will (vpon this consideration) discharge me, sure.

C R I S. Troth, I am doubtfull, what I may best doe;  
whether to leaue thee, or my affaires, H O R A C E ?

H O R A. O I V P I T E R, mee, sir ; mee, by any meanes :  
I beseech you, mee, sir. 225

C R I S. No faith, I'll venture those now : Thou shalt see  
I loue thee, come H O R A C E.

H O R A. Nay then, I am desperate : I follow you, sir.  
'Tis hard contending with a man that ouer-comes thus

C R I S. And how deales M E C C E N A S with thee ? liber- 230  
ally ? ha ?

Is he open-handed ? bountifull ?

H O R A. Hee's still himselfe, sir.

C R I S. Troth, H O R A C E, thou art exceeding happy in  
thy friends and acquaintance ; they are all most choice 235  
spirits, and of the first ranke of *Romanes* : I doe not know  
that *poet*, I protest, ha's vs'd his fortune more prosperously,  
then thou hast If thou would'st bring me knowne to  
M E C C E N A S, I should second thy desert well, thou  
should'st find a good sure assistant of mee · one, that 240  
would speake all good of thee in thy absence, and be content  
with the next place, not enuying thy reputation with thy  
patron. Let me not lue, but I thinke thou and I (in a small  
time) should lift them all out of fauour, both V I R G I L,  
V A R I V S, and the best of them ; and enioy him wholly to 245  
our selues

H O R A. Gods, you doe know it, I can hold no longer ;  
This brize hath prickt my patience Sir, your silkenesse  
Cleerely mistakes M E C C E N A S, and his house ;  
To thinke, there breathes a spirit beneath his roofe, 250  
Subiect vnto those poore affections  
Of vnder-mining enuie, and detraction,

III. 1. 221 me,] me Q 224 mee, sir] me Sir Q 228 you,] you Q  
229 ouer-comes] ouercomes Q 232 open-handed] open handed Q  
234 Troth,] Troth Q 235 acquaintance] acquaintance F2 237  
prosperously,] prosperously Q 238 then] than F2 240 assistant]  
Assistance Q one,] One Q 244 fauour] Fauor Q 250  
breathes] breaths Q

Moodes, onely proper to base groueling minds :

That place is not in *Rome*, I dare affirme,

255 More pure, or free, from such low common euils.

There's no man greeu'd, that this is thought more rich,

Or this more learned ; each man hath his place,

And to his merit, his reward of grace

Which with a mutuall loue they all embrace.

260 C R I S. You report a wonder ! 'tis scarce credible, this.

H O R A. I am no torture<r>, to enforce you to beleue it,  
but 'tis so.

C R I S. Why, this enflames mee with a more ardent  
desire to bee his, then before but, I doubt I shall find the

265 entrance, to his familiaritie, somewhat more then difficult,

H O R A C E.

H O R A. Tut, you'll conquer him, as you haue done me ;

There's no standing out against you, sir, I see that. Either  
your importunitie, or the intimation of your good parts ;

270 or——

C R I S. Nay, I'll bribe his porter, and the { 50omes of his  
chamber ; make his doores open to mee that way, first :

and then, I'll obserue my times. Say, he should extrude  
mee his house to day, shall I therefore desist, or let fall

275 my suite, to morrow ? No : I'll attend him, follow him,

meet him i' the street, the high waies, run by his coach,

neuer leaue him. What ? Man hath nothing giuen him, in

this life, without much labour.

H O R A And impudence

280 Archer of heauen, P H Œ B V S, take thy bow,

And with a full drawne shaft, naile to the earth

This P Y T H O N ; that I may yet run hence, and liue :

Or brawnie H E R C V L E S, doe thou come downe,

And (though thou mak'st it vp thy thirteenth labour)

285 Rescue me from this H Y D R A of discourse, here.

III 1 261 Torturer Q, W, G 264, 265 then] than F2 265  
entrance,] entrance Q 268 you,] you Q 269 importunitie]  
Importunacy Q 272 way,] way Q 275 suite,] suite Q 277  
Man] "Man Q 280 heauen,] Heauen, Q bow,] Bowe Q 283  
downe,] downe, Q 285 discourse,] discourse Q

## Act III. Scene II.

ARISTIVS, HORACE, CRISPINVS.

HORACE, well met. HORA. O welcome, my releuer,  
 ARISTIVS, as thou lou'st me, ransome me.

ARIS. What ayl'st thou, man? HORA. 'Death, I am  
 seaz'd on here

By a Land-Remora, I cannot stirre;

Not moue, but as he please. CRIS. Wilt thou goe, 5

HORACE?

HORA. 'Hart! he cleaues to me like ALCIDES shirt,  
 Tearing my flesh, and sinnewes; ô, I ha' beene vext  
 And tortur'd with him, beyond fortie feuers.

For LOVES sake, find some meanes, to take me from him.

ARIS. Yes, I will. but I'll goe first, and tell ME - 10  
 CÆNAS.

CRIS Come, shall we goe?

ARIS The iest will make his eyes runne, yfaith.

HORA Nay, ARISTIVS?

ARIS. Farewell, HORACE

15

HORA. 'Death! will a' leaue me? FVSCVSVS ARIS-  
 TIVS, doe you heare? Gods of Rome! you said, you had  
 somewhat to say to me, in priuate.

ARIS I, but I see, you are now implo'd with that  
 gentleman. 'twere offence to trouble you. I'll take some 20  
 fitter opportunitie, farewell.

HORA. Mischiefe, and torment! ô, my soule, and heart,  
 How are you cramp't with anguish! Death it selfe

Brings not the like convulsions. ô, this day,

That euer I should view thy tedious face—

25

III 11 Act III Scene II] SCENA SECVNDA Q ARISTIVS, HORACE,]  
 Aristus Horace Q Enter Fuscus Aristus G, continuing the Scene.  
 1 HORACE, well] Aristus Horace Well Q welcome,] welcome  
 Q releuer,] Redeemer Q 2 as] As Ff lou'st] louest Q 5 please]  
 please F2 6 'Hart!] Heart! F2 7 ô,] ô Q 8 beyond] worse  
 then Q 14-15 One line in F2 17 Rome!] Rome, Q said,] said Q  
 18 me,] me Q 20 offence] sinne Q 21 farewell] adue Q Exit  
 add Q 22, 24 ô,] O Q 24 convulsions] Convulsion Q 25 face—]  
 face? Q



CRIS. HORACE, what passion? what humour is this?

HORA Away, good prodigie, afflict me not.

(A friend, and mocke me thus!) neuer was man

So left vnder the axe——how now?

### *Act III. Scene III.*

MINOS, LICTORS, CRISPINVS,

HORACE.

THat's he, in the imbrodered hat, there, with the ash-colour'd feather: his name is LABERIVS CRISPINVS.

LICT. LABERIVS CRISPINVS, I arrest you in  
5 the Emperours name.

CRIS. Me, sir? doe you arrest me?

LICT. I, sir, at the sute of Master MINOS the pothecarie.

HORA. Thanks, great APOLLO. I will not slip thy  
10 fauour offered me in my escape, for my fortunes

CRIS Master MINOS? I know no master MINOS.  
Where's HORACE? HORACE? HORACE?

MINO Sir, doe not you know me?

CRIS. O yes; I know you, master MINOS: 'crie you  
15 mercy. But HORACE? Gods me, is he gone?

MINO I, and so would you too, if you knew how.  
Officer, looke to him.

CRIS. Doe you heare, master MINOS? pray' let's be  
vs'd like a man of our owne fashion. By IANVS, and  
20 IVPITER, I meant to haue paied you next weeke, euery  
drachme. Seeke not to eclipse my reputation, thus vulgarly.

III ii. 26 humour is] Humours Q 29 [A] A Q thus! Q  
30 now?] now. Q, Fr III iii Act III Scene III] SCENA TERTIA.  
Q. Enter Minos, with two Lictors G, continuing the Scene. 1  
That's] Minos That's Q 1-2 ash-colour'd] Ash colour'd Q 2, 4  
LABERIVS] Liberius Q 5 Emperours] Emperors Q 6 Me,] Me Q  
7 I,] I Q 7-8 pothecarie] Apothecary Q 'pothecarie Fr 10 Exit.  
add Q 15 Gods me] Slid Q 17 Officer,] Officer Q 19 IANVS,]  
Ianus Q 21 reputation,] reputation Q

MINO. Sir, your oathes cannot serue you, you know I haue forborne you long.

CRIS. I am conscious of it, sir. Nay, I beseech you, gentlemen, doe not exhale me thus; remember 'tis but for 25 sweet meates——

LICT Sweet meat must haue sowre sawce, sir. Come along.

CRIS. Sweet, master MINOS: I am forfeited to eternall disgrace, if you doe not commiserate. Good officer, 30 be not so officious.

Act III. Scene IIII.

TVCCA, PYRGVS, MINOS, LICTORS,  
CRISPINVS, HISTRIO, DE-  
METRIVS.

WHy, how now, my good brace of bloud-hounds? whither doe you dragge the gent'man? you mungrels, you cures, you bandogs, wee are Captaine TVCCA, that talke to you, you inhumane pilchers.

MINO Sir, he is their prisoner. 5

TVCC. Their pestilence. What are you, sir?

MINO. A citizen of Rome, sir.

TVCC. Then you are not farre distant from a foole, sir

MINO. A pothecarie, sir

TVCC. I knew thou wast not a *physician*, fough: out 10 of my nostrils, thou stink'st of *lotum*, and the syringe. away, quack-saluer Follower, my sword.

PYRG. Here, noble leader, youle doe no harme with it: I'le trust you.

III III 22 you.] you, Q 29 Sweet.] Sweete Q 30 officer.] officer  
Q III IV Act III Scene IIII ] SCENA QVARTA Q Enter Tucca and  
Pyrgi G, continuing the Scene I Why.] Tuc Why Q 2  
whither] whether Q gent'man] gentleman F2 10 thou wast] that  
was Q 11-12 syringe away, quack-saluer ] Syringe, away Quack-  
saluer, Q 13 PYRG] I Pyr. G (here and at 21, 26, 71, 89, 119)

- 15 T v c c. Doe you heare, you, good-man slaue? hooke, ramme, rogue, catch-pole, loose the gent'man, or by my veluet armes——

The  
Officer  
strikes up  
his heeles.

L I c t. What will you doe, sir?

T v c c. Kisse thy hand, my honourable actiue varlet : and imbrace thee, thus

- 21 P y r g O patient *metamorphosis*!

T v c c. My sword, my tall rascall.

L I c t. Nay, soft, sir Some wiser then some.

T v c c. What? and a wit to! By P l v t o, thou must

- 25 bee cherish'd, slaue; here's three drachmes for thee · hold.

P y r g. There's halfe his lendings gone

T v c c. Giue mee

L I c t. No, sir, your first word shall stand. I'll hold all.

T v c c. Nay, but, rogue——

- 30 L I c t. You would make a rescue of our prisoner, sir, you?

T v c c. I, a rescue? away inhumane varlet. Come, come, I neuer relish aboue one rest at most, doe not disgust me Sirra, doe not Rogue, I tell thee, rogue, doe not.

- 35 L I c t. How, sir? rogue?

T v c c. I, why! thou art not angrie, rascall? art thou?

L I c t. I cannot tell, sir, I am little better, vpon these termes

- T v c c. Ha! gods, and fiends! why, do'st heare? rogue,  
40 thou, giue me thy hand, I say vnto thee, thy hand: rogue.  
What? do'st not thou know me? not me, rogue?, not  
Captaine T v c c a, rogue?

M I n o. Come · pra' surrender the gentleman his sword, officer, we'll haue no fighting here.

- 45 T v c c. What's thy name?

M I n o M I n o s, an't please you

III. iv 16 loose Q lose Ff 8 Stage-direction *not in Q.* 23 soft,] softe Q then] than F2 24 to] to? Q too! F2 25 cherish'd] cherished Q 28 No,] No Q 29 rogue—] Rogue Q 33 come,] come, Q disgust] disgeste Q 35 How,] How Q 36 why] why, Q angrie,] angry Q 37 tell,] tell Q 39 gods,] Gods Q fiends] friends F2, F3, W 39-40 heare? rogue, thou,] hear, Rogue, thou? F3 40 hand] hand, F2.

T v c c. M I N O S? come, hither, M I N O S; Thou art a wise fellow, it seemes : Let me talke with thee.

C R I S. Was euer wretch so wretched, as vnfortunate I?

T v c c. Thou art one of the *centum-viri*, old boy, art' so not?

M I N O. No, indeed, master Captaine.

T v c c. Goe to, thou shalt be, then: I'le ha' thee one, M I N O S. Take my sword from those rascals, do'st thou see? goe, doe it I cannot attempt with patience. What 55 does this gentleman owe thee, little M I N O S?

M I N O. Fourescore *sesterties*, sir.

T v c c. What? no more? Come, thou shalt release him, M I N O S. what, I'le bee his baile, thou shalt take my word, old boy, and casheere these furies: thou shalt do't, I say, 60 thou shalt, little M I N O S, thou shalt.

C R I S. Yes, and as I am a gentleman, and a reueller, I'le make a peece of *poetrie*, and absolue all, within these five daies.

T v c c. Come, M I N O S is not to learne how to vse a 65 gent'man of qualitie, I know; My sword If hee pay thee not, I will, and I must, old boy. Thou shalt bee my pothecary too ha'st good *eringo's* M I N O S?

M I N O. The best in *Rome*, sir.

T v c c. Goe too then—Vermine, know the house. 70

P Y R G I warrant you, Collonell.

T v c c. For this gentleman, M I N O S?

M I N O. I'le take your word, Captaine.

T v c c. Thou hast it, my sword—

M I N O. Yes, sir: but you must discharge the arrest, 75 Master C R I S P I N V S.

T v c c. How, M I N O S? looke in the gentlemans face, and but reade his silence. Pay, pay; 'tis honour, M I N O S.

III iv 47 come,] come Q 48 fellow,] Fellowe Q 52 No,] Noe Q  
53 be,] be Q 61 shalt,] shalt Q 62 gentleman,] Gentleman Q  
63 *poetrie*,] *Poetry* Q 67 must,] Q omits the comma in the catch-word  
of E 4 67-8 pothecary] 'pothecary F2 70 too then—] too, then Q  
71 you,] you Q 72 gentleman] *Query*, gent'man (Cf I. ii 28, & 95  
below) 74 it, my] it. My F2 sword—] sword Q

CRIS. By I O V E, sweet Captaine, you doe most infinitely  
80 endeaure, and oblige me to you.

T V C C. Tut, I cannot complement, by M A R S: but  
I V P I T E R loue me, as I loue good wordes, and good  
clothes, and there's an end. Thou shalt giue my boy that  
girdle, and hangers, when thou hast worne them a little  
85 more——

CRIS. O I V P I T E R! Captaine, he shall haue them  
now, presently: please you to be acceptiue, young gentle-  
man.

P Y R G. Yes, sir, feare not, I shall accept. I haue a  
90 prettie foolish humour of taking, if you knew all.

T V C C. Not now, you shall not take, boy.

CRIS. By my truth, and earnest, but hee shall, Captaine,  
by your leaue.

T V C C. Nay, and a' sweare by his truth, and earnest,  
95 take it boy: doe not make a gent'man forsworne.

L I C T. Well, sir, there is your sword, but thanke master  
M I N O S. you had not carried it as you doe, else.

T V C C. M I N O S is iust, and you are knaues, and——

L I C T. What say you, sir?

100 T V C C. Passe on, my good scoundrell, passe on, I honour  
thee: But, that I hate to haue action with such base rogues  
as these; you should ha' seene me vnrip their noses now,  
and haue sent 'hem to the next barbers, to stitching: for,  
doe you see—I am a man of humour, and I doe loue the  
105 varlets, the honest varlets, they haue wit, and valour:  
and are indeed good profitable——errant rogues, as any liue  
in an empire. Doest thou heare, P O E T A S T E R? second  
me. Stand vp (M I N O S) close, gather, yet, so. Sir (thou

III iv 84 girdle,] girdle Q 85 more—] more. Q 86 he shall Fa:  
he 'shall Q. Fr. Jonson probably wrote a' shall originally as in 94.  
89 Yes,] Yes Q 90 humour] humor Q 92 hee shall] a' shal Q  
94 and] an G and earnest, not in Q 95 gent'man] Gentleman Q  
96 Well,] Well Q 99 you,] you Q 101 After 'thee'] Errant  
Lictors G Penniman, with more probability, after 'profitable' (106)  
104 see—) see? Q humour] Humor Q 105 valour] Valor, Q  
106 errant] Arrant Q 108 vp (MINOS)] vp, Minos, Q yet,]  
yet, Q

shalt haue a quarter share, bee resolute) you shall, at my request, take M I N O S by the hand, here, little M I N O S, 110 I will haue it so ; all friends, and a health : Be not inexorable. And thou shalt impart the wine, old boy, thou shalt do't, little M I N O S, thou shalt : make vs pay it in our physicke. What ? we must liue, and honour the gods, sometimes ; now B A C C H V S, now C O M V S, now P R I - 115 A P V S : euery god, a little. What's he, that stalkes by, there ? boy, P Y R G V S, you were best let him passe, sirrah ; doe, ferret, let him passe, doe.

P Y R G. 'Tis a player, sir.

T V C C. A player ? Call him, call the lowsie slaue hither : 120 what, will he saile by, and not once strike, or vaile to a *Man of warre* ? ha ? doe you heare ? you, player, rogue, stalker, come backe here : no respect to men of worship, you slaue ? What, you are proud, you rascall, are you proud ? ha ? you grow rich, doe you ? and purchase, you 125 two-penny teare-mouth ? you haue *fortune*, and the good yeere on your side, you stinkard ? you haue ? you haue ?

H I S T. Nay, sweet Captaine, be confin'd to some reason ; I protest I saw you not, sir.

T V C C. You did not ? where was your sight, O E D I P V S ? 130 you walke with hares eies, doe you ? I'le ha' 'hem glas'd, rogue ; and you say the word, they shall be glaz'd for you come, we must haue you turne fiddler againe, slaue, get a base violin at your backe, and march in a tawnie coate, with one sleeue, to Goose-faire, and then you'll know vs ; you'll 135 see vs then ; you will, gulch, you will ? Then, wil't please your worship to haue any musicke, Captaine ?

H I S T. Nay, good Captaine.

T V C C. What ? doe you laugh, *Owleglas* ? death, you  
 111 114 109-10 shall, . request,] shal. request Q 110 here,]  
 here. Q 111 Be] be *Fa* 111-12 inexorable And] inexorable: and  
 Q 114 lue,] lue Q gods,] Gods Q 116 god,] God Q After  
 'little' *Histrion passes by* Q 118 doe, ferret] do Leueret Q  
 121 what, will] what'1 Q 123 After 'here' *Enter Histrion. G*  
 124 proud] ptoude Q 125 purchase,] purchase ? Q 125-6 you .  
 teare-mouth ? *not in* Q 131 glas'd] glaz'd *Fa* 133 get] 'get Q, *Fr*  
 134 and *om* *F3* 136 Then,] Then, Q 139 *Owleglas* ? death]  
*Howleglas* ? 'death Q

140 perstemptuous varlet, I am none of your fellowes : I haue  
commanded a hundred and fiftie such rogues, I.

I. P Y R. I, and most of that hundred and fiftie, haue  
beene leaders of a legion

H I S T. If I haue exhibited wrong, I'll tender satisfaction,  
145 Captaine.

T V C C. Sai'st thou so, honest vermine? Giue me  
thy hand, thou shalt make vs a supper one of these  
nights.

H I S T. When you please, by I O V E, Captaine, most  
150 willingly.

T V C C. Doest thou sweare? to morrow then; say, and  
hold slaue. There are some of you plaiers honest gent'man-  
like scoundrels, and suspected to ha' some wit, as well as  
your *poets*; both at drinking, and breaking of iests · and  
155 are companions for gallants. A man may skelder yee, now  
and then, of halfe a dozen shillings, or so. Doest thou not  
know that P A N T O L A B V S there?

H I S T. No, I assure you, Captaine.

T V C C. Goe, and bee acquainted with him, then; hee  
160 is a gent'man, parcell-*poet*, you slaue. his father was a man  
of worship, I tell thee Goe, he pens high, loftie, in a new  
stalking straine; bigger then halfe the rimers i' the towne,  
again · he was borne to fill thy mouth, M I N O T A V R V S,  
he was · hee will teach thee to teare, and rand, Rascall, to  
165 him, cherish his *muse*, goe thou hast fortie, fortie, shillings,  
I meane, stinkard, giue him in earnest, doe, he shall write  
for thee, slaue. If hee pen for thee once, thou shalt not need  
to trauell, with thy pumps full of grauell, any more, after

III IV 141 commanded] commaunded Q 142 fiftie,] fiftie Q 143  
beene] bin F<sub>2</sub> 151 sweare] 'sweare Ff (the printer of F<sub>1</sub> misreading the  
mark of a lead in Q) 152 gent'man-] Gent'men- F<sub>3</sub> 153 scoun-  
drels,] Scoundrels Q 153-5 and. gallants, not in Q 156 then]  
than Q 157 PANTOLABVS] PANTALABVS Ff (but see III. v. 39):  
Caprichio Q 161 thee Goe] thee goe Q 162 then] than F<sub>2</sub>  
towne,] towne Q 163 MINOTAVRVS,] Minotaurus, Q 164  
teare,] teare Q rand,] rand F<sub>2</sub> Rascall,] Rascall, Q 165  
muse,] Muse, Q fortie, shillings] fortie, shillings Q 166 stin-  
kard,] Stinkard; Q earnest,] earnest, Q 168 trauell]  
travaille F<sub>2</sub>

a blinde iade and a hamper · and stalke vpon boords, and  
barrell heads, to an old crackt trumpet— 170

H I S T. Troth, I thinke I ha' not so much about me,  
Captaine.

T V C C. It's no matter giue him what thou hast : *Stiffe*  
*toe*, I'll giue my word for the rest . though it lacke a shilling,  
or two, it skils not : Goe, thou art an honest shifter, I'll 175  
ha' the *statute* repeal'd for thee. M I N O S, I must tell thee,  
M I N O S, thou hast deieted yon gent'mans spirt exceed-  
ingly do'st obserue ? do'st note, little M I N O S ?

M I N O Yes, sir.

T V C C Goe to then, raise ; recouer, doe. Suffer him 180  
not to droop, in prospect of a player, a rogue, a stager put  
twentie into his hand, twentie, sesterces, I meane, and let  
no bodie see : goe, doe it, the worke shall commend it selfe,  
be M I N O S, I'll pay.

M I N O. Yes forsooth, Captaine.

185

2. P Y R. Doe not we serue a notable sharke ?

T V C C. And what new matters haue you now afoot,  
sirrah ? ha ? I would faine come with my cockatrice one  
day, and see a play ; if I knew when there were a good  
bawdie one · but they say, you ha' nothing but *humours*, 190  
*reuells*, and *satyres*, that girde, and fart at the time, you  
slaue.

H I S T. No, I assure you, Captaine, not wee. They are  
on the other side of *Tyber* · we haue as much ribaldrie in  
our playes, as can bee, as you would wish, Captaine : All the 195  
sinners, i' the suburbs, come, and applaud our action, daily.

T V C C. I heare, you'll bring me o' the stage there ;  
you'll play me, they say · I shall be presented by a sort of  
copper-lac't scoundrels of you · life of P L V T O, and you

III iv 169 hamper ] Hamper Q 169-70 and stalke . trumpet—  
not in Q 170 barrell heads] barrel-heads F2 173-4 *Stiffe toe*,]  
Paunch, Q *Stiffe-toe* F2 174 shilling,] shilling Q 175 shifter,]  
Twentie i' the hundred, Q 176 thee MINOS] thee, MINOS Q 177  
yon] yon' Q 179 Yes,] Yes Q 180 recouer, doe Suffer] recouer,  
do, suffer Q 182 hand, twentie,] hand, twentie, Q sesterces]  
Drachmes Q 183 it,] it, Q selfe,] selfe: Q: selfe, F2 184 MINOS,]  
MINOS Q 187 matters] Playes Q you] wee F2 afoot] a foote Q  
199 life] Death Q and] an' F2



200 stage me, stinkard ; your mansions shall sweat for't, your  
tabernacles, varlets, your *Globes*, and your *Triumphs*.

HIST. Not we, by PHÆBUS, Capitaine : doe not doe  
vs imputation without desert.

TVCC. I wu' not, my good two-penny rascall : reach  
205 mee thy neufe. Do'st heare ? What wilt thou giue mee a  
weeke, for my brace of beagles, here, my little point-  
trussers ? you shall ha' them act among yee Sirrah, you,  
pronounce. Thou shalt heare him speake, in king DARIVS  
dolefull straine.

210 I. PYR. *O dolefull dayes ! O direfull deadly dump !  
O wicked world ! and worldly wickednesse !  
How can I hold my fist from crying, thump,  
In rue of this right rascall wretchednesse !*

TVCC. In an amorous vaine now, sirrah, peace.

215 I. PYR. *O, shee is wilder, and more hard, withall,  
Then beast, or bird, or tree, or stonie wall.  
Yet might shee loue me, to vpreare her state :  
I, but perhaps, shee hopes some nobler mate.  
Yet might shee loue me, to content her sire :*

220 *I, but her reason masters her desire.  
Yet might shee loue me as her beauties thrall :  
I, but I feare, shee cannot loue at all.*

TVCC. Now, the horrible fierce Souldier, you, sirrah.

I. PYR. *What ? will I braue thee ? I, and beard thee too.*  
225 *A roman spirit scornes to beare a braine,  
So full of base pusillanimitie.*

DEMET. HIST. Excellent.

TVCC. Nay, thou shalt see that, shall rauish thee anon :  
prick vp thine eares, stinkard . the Ghost, boies.

230 I. PYR. *Vindicta.*

2. PYR. *Timoria.*

III. iv 201 varlets,] Varlettes Q Globes,] Globes : Q 204 wu']  
woo' Q two-penny] two pennie Q 212 crying, thump] crying  
thumpe Q 214 now,] now, F2 sirrah,] sirrah, Q 216 beast,]  
Beast Q 219 sire] Fire F3, W 223 horrible] orrible Souldier,]  
Souldier, F2 you,] you Q 224 I PYR.] Query, '2 PYR.' Cf. 'you,  
sirrah' in 223.

1. P Y R. *Vindicta.*

2. P Y R. *Timoria.*

1. P Y R. *Veni.*

2. P Y R. *Veni.* 235

T v c c. Now, thunder, sirrah, you, the rumbling plaier.

2. P Y R. I, but some bodie must crie (*murder*) then, in a small voice.

T v c c. Your fellow-sharer, there, shall do't; Crie, sirrah, crie 240

1. P Y R. *Murder, murder.*

2. P Y R. *Who calls out murder? lady, was it you?*

D E M E T. H I S T. O, admirable good, I protest.

T v c c. Sirrah, boy, brace your drumme a little straighter, and doe the t'other fellow there, hee in the——what sha' 245 call him—and yet, stay too.

2. P Y R. *Nay, and thou dalliest, then I am thy foe, And feare shall force, what friendship cannot win, Thy death shall burie what thy life conceales, Villaine! thou diest, for more respecting her——* 250

1. P Y R. *O, stay my Lord.*

2. P Y R. *Then me: yet speake the truth, and I will guer- don thee:*

*But if thou dally once againe, thou diest.*

T v c c. Enough of this, boy. 255

2. P Y R. *Why then lament therefore: damn'd be thy guts Vnto king P L V T O E S hell, and princely E R E B V S; For sparrowes must haue foode.*

H I S T. 'Pray, sweet Captaine, let one of them doe a little of a ladie. 260

T v c c. O! he will make thee eternally enamour'd of him, there: doe, sirrah, doe: 'twill allay your fellowes furie a little.

III IV. 237 2. P Y R. *corr* F1: 1 P Y R Q, F1 originally, F2 crie (*murder*) cry murder, Q 239 fellow-sharer] fellowe Sharer Q Crie, Cry Q 244 straighter] straiter F2 250 her—] her, than me. Q 251 O... Lord roman in Q 252 Then me: yet] Yet Q: F3 prints 'Than me' as a separate line 256-8 Prose in Q, Ff; verse in G 262 him,] him Q doe, sirrah,] doe Sirrah, Q

1. P Y R. *Master, mocke on : the scorne thou giuest me,*  
 265 *Pray I O V E, some lady may returne on thee.*
2. P Y R. No · you shall see mee doe the *Moore* : Master,  
 lend me your scarfe a little.

268 T v c c. Here, 'tis at thy seruice, boy.

*They  
with-  
draw  
to make  
them-  
selues  
ready*

2. P Y R. You, master M I N O S, harke hither a little.

T v c c How do'st like him? art not rapt? art not  
 tickled now? do'st not applaud, rascall? do'st not  
 applaud?

H I S T. Yes · what will you aske for 'hem a weeke,  
 Captaine?

- 275 T v c c. No, you manganizing slaue, I will not part from  
 'hem you'll sell 'hem for enghles you · let's ha' good cheere  
 to morrow-night at supper, stalker, and then wee'll talke,  
 good capon, and plouer, doe you heare, sirrah? and doe  
 not bring your eating plaier with you there, I cannot away  
 280 with him He will eate a legge of mutton, while I am in my  
 porridge, the leane P O L V P H A G V S, his belly is like  
*Baraihrum*, he lookes like a mid-wife in mans apparell,  
 the slaue Nor the villanous-out-of-tune fiddler Æ N O -  
 B A R B V S, bring not him. What hast thou there? sixe  
 285 and thirtie? ha?

H I S T No, here's all I haue (Captaine) some fiue and  
 twentie Pray, sir, will you present, and accommodate it  
 vnto the gentleman · for mine owne part, I am a meere  
 stranger to his humour · besides, I haue some businesse  
 290 inutes me hence, with Master A S I N I V S L V P V S, the  
*tribune*.

T v c c. Well goe thy waies · pursue thy proiects, let  
 mee alone with this desscigne, my P O E T A S T E R shall  
 make thee a play, and thou shalt be a man of good parts,  
 295 in it. But stay, let mee see. Doe not bring your Æ S O P E,  
 your polititian; vnlesse you can ram vp his mouth with

III IV 265 IOVE.] *Ioue* Q *thee*] *thee* Q 266 PYR.] *Pyrgus*, Q  
 268 boy.] *Boy* Q 269 *Exeunt* add Q Stage-direction *They with-draw*  
 . not in Q 275 No.] *No* Q 277 talke.] *talke*, F2 283 slaue.  
 Nor] slaue, nor Q 283-4 ÆNOBARBUS] *OEnobarbus* Q 287 Pray,]  
 'Pray Q 293 desseigne] *designe* F2 295 ÆSOP] *Father AEsops* Q

cloudes · the slaue smells ranker then some sixteene dung-  
hills, and is seuteene times more rotten : Mary, you may  
bring FRISKER, my *zany* : Hee's a good skipping  
swaggerer ; and your fat foole there, my MANGO, bring 300  
him too but let him not begge rapiers, nor scarfes, in his  
ouer-familiar playing face, nor rore out his barren bold iests,  
with a tormenting laughter, betweene drunke, and drie.  
Doe you heare, stiffe-toe ? Giue him warning, admonition,  
to forsake his sawcy glauering grace, and his goggle eie : 305  
it does not become him, sirrah : tell him so. I haue stood  
vp and defended you I, to gent'men, when you haue beene  
said to prey vpon pu'ness, and honest citizens, for socks,  
or buskins : or when they ha' call'd you vsurers, or brokers,  
or said, you were able to helpe to a peece of flesh—I 310  
haue sworne, I did not thinke so. Nor that you were the  
common retrcats for punkes decai'd i' their practice. I  
cannot beleeeue it of you——

HIST. 'Thanke you, Captaine IVPITER, and the  
rest of the gods confine your moderne delights, without 315  
disgust.

TVC C. Stay, thou shalt see the *Moore*, ere thou goest :  
what's he, with the halfe-arnes there, that salutes vs out of  
his cloke, like a *motion* ? ha ?

HIST. O, sir, his dubblet's a little decai'd ; hee is other- 320  
wise a very simple honest fellow, sir, one DEMETRIVS,  
a dresser of plaies about the towne, here , we haue hir'd him  
to abuse HORACE, and bring him in, in a play, with all his  
gallants : as, TIBVLLVS, MECÆNAS, CORNELIVS  
GALLVS, and the rest. 325

TVC C. And why so, stinkard ?

HIST. O, it will get vs a huge deale of money (Captaine)  
and wee haue need on't ; for this winter ha's made vs all

III IV 297 then] than F2 299 FRISKER] *Friskin* Q 301  
scarfes,] scarfes Q 302 rore] roare Q 303 drunke,] drunke Q  
304 stiffe-toe] Rascall Q 306-13 I haue you—not in Q 314  
'Thanke you,] Yes Q 317 Stay,] Stay Q After 'goest' Enter  
*Demetrius at a distance* G 318 halfe-arnes] halfe Armes Q 319  
cloke] cloake Q 320 O,] O Q 320-1 otherwise] otherwayes F2  
321 sir,] Sir Q 322 dresser] *dresser* Q

poorer, then so many staru'd snakes : No bodie comes at  
330 vs ; not a gentleman, nor a——

T v c c. But, you know nothing by him, doe you, to  
make a play of ?

H i s t. Faith, not much, Captaine : but our Author will  
deuise, that, that shall serue in some sort.

335 T v c c. Why, my P A R N A S S V S, here, shall helpe him,  
if thou wilt : Can thy Author doe it impudently enough ?

H i s t. O, I warrant you, Captaine, and spitefully inough,  
too ; hee ha's one of the most ouer-flowing ranke wits, in  
Rome. He will slander any man that breathes, if he disgust  
340 him.

T v c c. I'll know the poore, egregious, nitty rascall, and  
he haue these commendable qualities, I'll chersish him (stay,  
here comes the *Tartar*) I'll make a gathering for him, I :  
344 a purse, and put the poore slaue in fresh rags. Tell him so,  
to comfort him . well said, boy.

*The boy  
comes in  
on Mimos  
shoulders,  
who  
stalkes, as  
he acts*

2. P Y R *Where art thou, boy ? where is CALIPOLIS ?  
Fight earth-quakes, in the entrailes of the earth,  
And easterne whirle-windes in the hellish shades ;  
Some foule contagion of th'infected heauens*

350 *Blast all the trees ; and in their cursed tops  
The dismall night-rauen, and tragicke owle  
Breed, and become fore-runners of my fall*

T v c c. Well, now fare thee well, my honest penny-  
biter . Commend me to seuen-shares and a halfe, and  
355 remember to morrow—if you lacke a seruice, you shall play  
in my name, rascals, but you shall buy your owne cloth,  
and I'll ha' two shares for my countenance. Let thy author  
stay with mee.

III IV 329 then] than F2 331 him,] him, Q 334 that, . . .  
sort] inough . Q 337 Captaine,] Captaine Q inough,] inough Q  
enough, F2 338 ranke] villanous Q 339 breathes, if] breathes .  
If Q 341 and] an' G2 342 these] such Q him (stay,] him .  
stay ; Q 343 *Tartar*] *Tartar*, Q 344 rags Tell] ragges, tell Q  
345 Stage-direction not in Q After 'him' *Demetrius comes forward*.  
G 351 *-rauen,*] *-rauen* Q 354 seuen-shares] seuen Shares  
Q halfe,] halfe Q 355 morrow—] morrow . Q 356 rascals,]  
Rascalls ; Q cloth,] cloth Q 357 countenance Let] Countenance :  
let Q 358 *Exit Histrion* G

DEME. Yes, sir.

TVCC. 'Twas well done, little MINOS, thou didst 360  
stalke well; forgiue me that I said thou stunkst, MINOS:  
'twas the sauour of a poet, I met sweating in the street,  
hangs yet in my nostrills.

CRIS. Who? HORACE?

TVCC. I, he; do'st thou know him? 365

CRIS. O, he forsooke me most barbarously, I protest.

TVCC. Hang him fustie satyre, he smells all goate, hee  
carries a ram, vnder his arme-holes, the slaue. I am the  
worse when I see him. Did not MINOS impart?

CRIS. Yes, here are twentie drachmes, he did conuey. 370

TVCC. Well said, keepe 'hem, wee'll share anon; come,  
little MINOS.

CRIS. Faith, Captaine, I'll be bold to show you a  
mistris of mine, a iewellers wife, a gallant, as we goe along.

TVCC. There spoke my Genius. MINOS, some 375  
of thy eringoes, little MINOS; send. come hither,  
PARNASSVS, I must ha' thee famihar with my little  
locust, here, 'tis a good vermine, they say. See, here's  
HORACE, and old TREBATVS, the great lawier, in  
his companie, let's auoid him, now: He is too well 380  
seconded.

### Act III. Scene v.

HORACE, TREBATVS.

There are, to whom I seeme excessiue sower;  
And past a satyres law, t'extend my power.  
Others, that thinke what euer I haue wnt  
Wants pith, and matter to eternise it;

Hor. Sat.  
1 h 2.

III. IV. 360 done,] done Q MINOS,] Minos Q 361 forgiue]  
for-giue Q 363 nostrills] nostrills. Q 365 I, he; F2 I, he,  
Q, Fr 367 satyre,] Satyre, Q 370 here are] here's Q 371 come,]  
come Q 373 Faith,] Faith Q bold] bould Q 374 mistris] Mistres Q  
376-7 hither, PARNASSVS,] hither Parnassus Q 377 ha'] ha Q  
378-81 See. seconded not in Q 378 After 'say' Exeunt] Fms  
Actus tertij Q III v Act III Scene v not in Q printed by G as an  
appendix to the play, with the title 'Horace and Trebatius. A Dialogue'.

- 5 And that they could, in one daies light, disclose  
 A thousand verses, such as I compose.  
 What shall I doe, T R E B A T I V S ? say. T R E B. Surcease.  
 H O R A. And shall my *Muse* admit no more encrease ?  
 T R E B. So I aduise. H O R A. An ill death let mee die,  
 10 If 'twere not best ; but sleepe auoids mine eye :  
 And I vse these, lest nights should tedious seeme.  
 T R E B. Rather, contend to sleepe, and lue like them,  
 That holding golden sleepe in speciall price,  
 Rub'd with sweet oiles, swim siluer *Tyber* thrice,  
 15 And euery eu'en, with neat wine steeped be  
 Or, if such loue of writing rauish thee,  
 Then dare to sing vnconquer'd C A E S A R S deeds ;  
 Who cheeres such actions, with abundant meeds.  
 H O R A. That, father, I desire ; but when I trie,  
 20 I feele defects in euery facultie :  
 Nor is't a labour fit for euery pen,  
 To paint the horid troupes of armed men ;  
 The launces burst, in G A L L I A 's slaughtred forces ;  
 Or wounded *Parthians*, tumbled from their horses  
 25 Great C A E S A R S warres cannot be fought with words.  
 T R E B. Yet, what his vertue in his peace affords,  
 His fortitude, and iustice thou canst show ;  
 As wise L V C I L I V S, honor'd S C I P I O.  
 H O R A. Of that, my powers shall suffer no neglect,  
 30 When such sleight labours may aspire respect :  
 But, if I watch not a most chosen time,  
 The humble wordes of F L A C C V S cannot clime  
 The' attentue eare of C A E S A R ; nor must I  
 With lesse obseruance shunne grosse flatterie :  
 35 For he, reposed safe in his owne merit,  
 Spurnes backe the gloses of a fawning spirit.  
 T R E B. But, how much better would such accents sound,  
 Then, with a sad, and serious verse to wound

III. v. 9 die.] die. F1    10 eye.] eye, F2    15 be ] bee. F2  
 18 abundant] abundant F2    22 troupes] troops F2    30 sleight]  
 slight F3    33 The' attentue] Th' attentive F2    38 Then] Than F2

PANTOLABVS, railing in his sawcie iests ?  
 Or NOMENTANVS spent in riotous feasts ? 40  
 "In *satyres*, each man (though vntoucht) complaines  
 "As he were hurt ; and hates such biting straines.  
 HORA. What shall I doe ? MILONIVS shakes his  
 heeles  
 In ceaslesse dances, when his braine once feeles  
 The stirring feruour of the wine ascend ; 45  
 And that his eyes false number apprehend.  
 CASTOR his horse ; POLLVX loues handie fights :  
 <A> thousand heads, a thousand choise delights.  
 My pleasure is in feet, my words to close,  
 As, both our better, old LVCIIVS does : 50  
 He, as his trustie friends, his bookes did trust  
 With all his secrets ; nor, in things vnust,  
 Or actions lawfull, ran to other men :  
 So, that the old mans life, describ'd was seene  
 As in a votiuë table in his lines , 55  
 And to his steps my *Genius* inclines,  
*Lucanian*, or *Apulian*, I not whether ;  
 For the *Venusian* colonie plowes either :  
 Sent thither, when the *Sabines* were forc'd thence  
 (As old fame sings) to giue the place defence 60  
 'Gainst such, as seeing it emptie, might make rode  
 Vpon the empire ; or there fixe abode :  
 Whether th' *Apulian* borderer it were,  
 Or the *Lucanian* violence they feare.  
 But this my stile no liuing man shall touch, 65  
 If first I be not forc'd by base reproch ,  
 But, like a sheathed sword, it shall defend  
 My innocent life ; for, why should I contend  
 To draw it out, when no malicious thiefe  
 Robs my good name, the treasure of my life ? 70  
 O IVPITER, let it with rust be eaten,  
 Before it touch, or insolently threaten

III. v. 46 number] numbers F2 48 A F2 56 inclines,]  
 inclines, F2 63 th'] the F2 66 reproch] reproach F2 (so 138)



- The life of any with the least disease ;  
 So much I loue, and woe a generall peace.
- 75 But, he that wrongs me (better, I proclame,  
 He neuer had assai'd to touch my fame.)  
 For he shall weepe, and walke with euery tongue  
 Throughout the citic, infamously song.  
 S E R V I V S, the *Prætor*, threats the lawes, and vrne,
- 80 If any at his deeds repine or spurne ;  
 The witch, C A N I D I A, that A L B V C I V S got,  
 Denounceth witch-craft, where shee loueth not ·  
 T H V R I V S, the iudge, doth thunder worlds of ill,  
 To such, as strue with his iudicall will ;
- 85 " All men affright their foes in what they may,  
 " Nature commands it, and men must obey.  
 Obserue with me ; " The wolfe his tooth doth vse :  
 " The bull his horne. And, who doth this infuse,  
 " But nature ? There's luxurious S C A E V A ; Trust
- 90 His long-liu'd mother with him ; His so iust  
 And scrupulous right hand no mischief will ;  
 No more, then with his heele a wolfe will kill,  
 Or Oxe with iaw : Mary, let him alone  
 With temper'd poison to remoue the croane.
- 95 But, briefly, if to age I destin'd bee,  
 Or that quick deaths black wings inuiron me ;  
 If rich, or poore ; at *Rome* ; or fate command  
 I shall be banish't to some other land,  
 What hiew soeuer, my whole state shall beare,
- 100 I will write *satyres* still, in spite of feare  
 T R E B. H O R A C E ; I feare, thou draw'st no lasting  
 breath :  
 And that some great mans friend will be thy death.  
 H O R A. What ? when the man that first did *satyrise*,  
 Durst pull the skin ouer the eares of vice ;
- 105 And make, who stood in outward fashion cleare,

III v. 75 me [better] me, better *F2* 76 fame.]] fame *F2* 78  
 song] sung *F2* 81 ALBVCIVS] ALBUTIVS *F2* 92 then] than *F2*  
 93 Mary] Marry *F2* 99 hiew] hew *F3*

Giue place, as foule within ; shall I forbear ?  
 Did L A E L I V S, or the man, so great with fame,  
 That from sackt *Carthage* fetcht his worthy name,  
 Storme, that L V C I L I V S did M E T E L L V S pierce ?  
 Or bury L V P V S quick, in famous verse ? 110  
 Rulers, and subiects, by whole tribes he checkt ;  
 But vertue, and her friends did still protect :  
 And when from sight, or from the iudgement seat,  
 The vertuous S C I P I O, and wise L A E L I V S met,  
 Vnbrac't, with him in all light sports, they shar'd ; 115  
 Till, their most frugall suppers were prepar'd.  
 What e're I am, though both for wealth, and wit,  
 Beneath L V C I L I V S, I am pleas'd to sit ;  
 Yet, enuy (spight of her empoisoned brest)  
 Shall say, I liu'd in grace here, with the best , 120  
 And, seeking in weake trash to make her wound,  
 Shall find me solid, and her teeth vnsound .  
 'Lesse, learn'd T R E B A T I V S censure disagree.

T R E B. No, H O R A C E, I of force must yeeld to thee ,  
 Only, take heed, as being aduis'd by mee, 125  
 Lest thou incurre some danger : Better pause,  
 Then rue thy ignorance of the sacred lawes ,  
 There's iustice, and great action may be su'd  
 'Gainst such, as wrong mens fames with verses lewd

H O R A. I, with lewd verses ; such as libels bee, 130  
 And aym'd at persons of good qualitie.  
 I reuerence and adore that iust decree .  
 But if they shall be sharp, yet modest rimes  
 That spare mens persons, and but taxe their crimes,  
 Such, shall in open court, find currant passe ; 135  
 Were C A E S A R iudge, and with the makers grace.

T R E B. Nay, I'le adde more ; if thou thyselfe being cleare,  
 Shalt taxe in person a man, fit to beare  
 Shame, and reproch ; his sute shall quickly bee  
 Dissolu'd in laughter, and thou thence sit free. 140

III. v. 117 wit, F2. wit, F1 118 sit, F2. sit, F1 126 pause,  
 F2: pause F1 127 Then] Than F2

## Act IIII. Scene I.

CHLOE, CYTHERIS.

B Vt, sweet ladie, say : am I well inough attir'd for the court, in sadnesse ?

CYTH. Well inough ? excellent well, sweet Mistris  
CHLOE, this straight-bodied city attire (I can tell you)  
5 will stir a courtiers bloud, more, then the finest loose sacks  
the ladies vse to be put in, and then you are as well  
iewell'd as any of them ; your ruffe, and linnen about you,  
is much more pure then theirs . And for your beautie, I  
can tell you, there's many of them would defie the painter,  
10 if they could change with you Mary, the worst is, you must  
looke to be enuied, and endure a few court-frumps for it.

CHLO. O I O V E, Madam, I shall buy them too cheape !  
Giue me my muffle, and my dogge there And will the ladies  
be any thing familiar with me, thinke you ?

15 CYTH O I V N O ! why, you shall see 'hem flock about  
you with their puffle wings, and aske you, where you bought  
your lawne ? and what you paid for it ? who starches you ?  
and entreat you to helpe 'hem to some pure landresses, out  
of the citie.

20 CHLO. O C V P I D ! giue me my fanne, and my masque  
too : And will the lords, and the *poets* there, vse one well  
too, ladie ?

CYTH. Doubt not of that : you shall haue kisses from  
them, goe pit-pat, pit-pat, pit-pat, vpon your lips, as thick  
25 as stones out of slings, at the assault of a citie. And  
then your eares will be so furd with the breath of their

IV 1 Act IIII Scene 1] ACTVS QVARTVS [ SCENA PRIMA Q ACT IV  
SCENE I | A Room in Albius's House | Enter Chloe, Cytheris, and  
Attendants G CHLOE, CYTHERIS] Chloe Cytheris Q 1 But,  
Chloe BVT Q 1, 3 inough] enough F2 3-4 sweet Mistris  
CHLOE, this] sweet Chloe This Q 4 straight-bodied] hyphen  
not clear in some copies of F1 strait-bodied F2 5 bloud] blood Q  
5, 8 then] than F2 7 them,] them, F1 10 Mary] Marry F2  
12 I O V E,] God ! Q cheape !] cheape Q 15 I V N O] Hercules Q 20  
O] O, Q

complements, that you cannot catch cold of your head (if you would) in three winters after.

CHLO. Thanke you, sweet ladie. O heauen ! And how must one behaue her selfe amongst 'hem ? you know all. 30

CYTH. Faith, impudently inough, mistris CHLOE, and well inough. Carrie not too much vnder-thought betwixt your selfe and them ; nor your citie mannerly word (forsooth) vse it not too often in any case ; but plaine, I, Madam ; and, No, Madam . Nor neuer say, your Lordship, 35 nor your Honor, but, you, and you my Lord, and my Ladie . the other, they count too simple, and minsitue. And though they desire to kisse heauen with their titles, yet they will count them fooles that giue them too humbly.

CHLO. O intolerable, IVPITER ! By my troth, ladie, 40 I would not for a world, but you had lyen in my house . and i' faith you shall not pay a farthing, for your boord, nor your chambers.

CYTH O, sweet Mistresse CHLOE !

CHLO. I faith, you shall not ladie, nay, good ladie, doe 45 not offer it.

### Act IIII. Scene II.

COR GALLVS, TIBVLLVS, CY-

THERIS, CHLOE.

COME, where be these ladies ? By your leaue, bright starres, this gentleman and I are come to man you to court : where your late kind entertainment is now to bee requited with a heavenly banquet.

CYTH. A heavenly banquet, GALLVS ? 5

COR. GALL. No lesse, my deare CYTHERIS

TIBV. That were not strange, ladie, if the *epithete* were

iv. 1 31 inough] enough F2 (twice) mistris] Mistresse Q 33-4  
(forsooth) *italicized in Q* so I, Madam, and No, Madam Lordship,  
Honor ; Lord, Lady in 34-7 36 Honor] Honour F2 40 intoler-  
able,] intollerable Q troth,] troth Q 41 lyen] lain F3 42 boord,]  
boord. Q 44 O.] O Q 45 not ladie,] not Lady. Q iv 11  
Act IIII Scene II.] SCENA SECVNDA Q Enter Gallus and Tibullus  
G, continuing the scene i Come] Cor. Gallus Come Q 2  
starres,] Starres, Q 5 GALLVS] Gallus Q, Ff 6 deare] deare, Q Ff

onely giuen for the companie inuited thither ; your selfe,  
and this faire gentlewoman.

10 CHLO. Are we inuited to court, sir?

TIBV. You are, ladie, by the great Princesse, IULIA:  
who longs to greet you with any fauours, that may worthily  
make you an often courtier.

CHLO. In sinceritie, I thanke her, sir. You haue a  
15 coach? ha' you not?

TIBV. The Princesse hath sent her owne, ladie.

CHLO. O VENVS! that's well: I doe long to ride in  
a coach most vehemently.

CYTH. But, sweet GALLVS, pray you, resolute mee,  
20 why you giue that heauenly prayse, to this earthly banquet?

COR. GALL. Because (CYTHERIS) it must bee  
celebrated by the heauenly powers: All the Gods, and  
Goddesses will bee there; to two of which, you two must  
bee exalted.

25 CHLO. A prettie fiction in truth.

CYTH. A fiction indeed, CHLOE, and fit, for the fit  
of a *poet*.

COR. GALL. Why, CYTHERIS, may not *poets* (from  
whose diuine spirits, all the honours of the gods haue beene  
30 deduc't) intreate so much honor of the gods, to haue their  
diuine presence at a *poeticall* banquet?

CYTH. Suppose that no fiction: yet, where are your  
habilities to make vs two goddesses, at your feast?

COR. GALL. Who knowes not (CYTHERIS) that the  
35 sacred breath of a true *poet*, can blow any vertuous humani-  
tie, vp to *deitie*?

TIBV. To tell you the femall truth (which is the simple  
truth) ladies; and to shew that *poets* (in spite of the  
world) are able to *defie* themselues: At this banquet, to  
40 which you are inuited, wee intend to assume the figures of  
the Gods; and to giue our seuerall Loues the formes of

17 II II are,] are Q  
29 honours] honors Q  
them selues Q

19 But,] But Q  
30 honor] honour F2

26 indeed,] indeed Q  
39 themselues]

Goddesses. OVID will be IVPITER; the Princesse IVLIA, IVNO; GALLVS here APOLLO; you CYTHERIS, PALLAS; I will bee BACCHVS; and my Loue PLAVTIA, CERES: And to install you, and 45 your husband, faire CHLOE, in honours, equall with ours; you shall be a Goddesse, and your husband a God.

CHLO. A God? O my god!

TIBV. A God, but a lame God, ladie: for he shall be VULCAN, and you VENVS. And this will make our 50 banquet no lesse then heavenly.

CHLO. In sinceritie, it will bee sugred. Good LOVE, what a prettie foolish thing it is to be a *poet*! But harke you, sweet CYTHERIS; could they not possibly leaue out my husband? mee thinkes, a bodie's husband do's not 55 so well at Court: A bodie's friend, or so—but husband, 'tis like your clog to your *marmaset*, for all the world, and the heauens.

CYTH. Tut, neuer feare, CHLOE: your husband will be left without in the lobby, or the great chamber, when you 60 shall be put in, i' the closet, by this lord, and by that lady.

CHLO. Nay, then I am certified: he shall goe.

### Act IIII. Scene III.

GALLVS, HORACE, TIBVLLVS, ALBIVS, CRISPINVS, TVCCA, DEMETRIVS, CYTHERIS, CHLOE.

HORACE! Welcome.

HORA. Gentlemen, heare you the newes?

TIBV. What newes, my QVINTVS?

HORA. Our melancholike friend, PROPERTIVS,

iv. ii 42 OVID] *Ovid*, Q 44 BACCHVS.] *Bacchus*, Q 45 CERES.] *Ceres*.  
Q 46 honours] honors Q 49 A God, *corr. F1* A God, Q.  
A God; *F1 originally, F2* 51 then] than *F2* 55 thinkes,] thinks Q  
56 Court *corr F1*. Court, Q, *F1 originally, F2* so—] so Q 60  
chamber,] Chamber; Q 62 certified] satisfied *F3* iv. iii. Act  
IIII. Scene III.] SCENA TERTIA Q Enter Horace G, continuing the  
scene. GALLVS... CHLOE.] *Horace, Albius, Crispinus, Tucca, Demetrius,*  
*Gallus, Tibullus, Cytheris, Chloe.* Q ALBIVS, *om. F2* I HORACE]  
*Gallus. Horace* Q

5 Hath clos'd himselfe, vp, in his CYNTHIAS tombe ;  
And will by no intreaties be drawne thence.

ALBI. Nay, good master CRISPINVS, pray you,  
bring neere the gentleman.

HORA CRISPINVS? Hide mee, good GALLVS:  
10 TIBVLLVS, shelter mee.

CRIS. Make your approach, sweet Captaine.

TIBV. What meanes this, HORACE?

HORA. I am surpriz'd againe, farewell GALL. Stay,  
HORACE.

HORA. What, and be tir'd on, by yond' vulture? No:  
15 PHÆBVS defend me. TIBV. 'Slight! I hold my life,  
This same is he met him in *holy-street*.

GALL. Troth, 'tis like enough. This act of PRO-  
PERTIVS relisheth very strange, with me.

TVCC. By thy leaue, my neat scoundrell: what, is this  
20 the mad boy you talk't on?

CRIS. I: this is master ALBIVS, Captaine

TVCC. Giue me thy hand, AGAMEMNON; we heare  
abroad, thou art the HECTOR of citizens: what sayest  
thou? are we welcome to thee, noble NEOPTOLEMVS?

25 ALBI. Welcome, Captaine? by IOVE, and all the  
Gods! the capitoll——

TVCC. No more, we conceiue thee. Which of these  
is thy wedlocke, MENELAVS? thy HELLEN? thy  
LVCRECE? that wee may doe her honor; mad boy?

30 CRIS. Shee! the little fine dressing, sir, is my Mistris.

ALBI. For fault of a better, sir.

TVCC. A better, prophane rascall? I crie thee mercy  
(my good scroile) was't thou?

ALBI. No harme, Captaine

IV III. 5 himselfe] himselfe Q CYNTHIAS] CYNTHIA'S Fa After 6  
Enter Albus, introducing Crispinus and Demetrius, followed by Tucca  
G 7 CRISPINVS, pray] Crispinus, Pray Q 11 approach] approach  
Q, Fa 13 againe,] againe, Q GALL. HORACE a separate line in  
Q 15 (after 'me') Exit. add Q 16 *holy-street*] *holy street* some  
copies of F1, in which the hyphen is faintly printed Via sacra Q  
24 NEOPTOLEMVS] Pyrrhus Q 25 IOVE,] Ioue Q 26 capitoll—]  
Capitoll Q 29 honor] honour Fa 30 fine dressing, sir,] veluet  
Cap, Sir, Q Mistris] Mistres Q

T v c c. Shee is a V E N U S, a V E S T A, a M E L P O M E N E: 35  
Come hither, P E N E L O P E; what's thy name, I R I S?

C H L O. My name is C H L O E, sir; I am a gentlewoman.

T v c c. Thou art in merit to be an emperesse (C H L O E)  
for an eye, and a lip; thou hast an emperors nose. kisse me  
again: 'tis a vertuous punke; So. Before I O V E, the 40  
gods were a sort of goslings, when they suffred so sweet a  
breath, to perfume the bed of a stinkard: thou hadst ill  
fortune, T H I S B E; the fates were infatuate; they were,  
punke; they were.

C H L O. That's sure, sir: let me craue your name, I pray 45  
you, sir.

T v c c. I am know'n by the name of Captaine T v c c A,  
punke; the noble *Roman*, punke: a gent'man, and a  
commander, punke.

C H L O. In good time: a gentleman, and a commander? 50  
that's as good as a *poet*, me thinkes.

C R I S. A prettie instrument! It's my cousin C Y T H E R I S  
violl, this: is't not?

C Y T H. Nay, play cousin, it wants but such a voice, and  
hand, to grace it, as yours is. 55

C R I S. Alas, cousin, you are merrily inspir'd.

C Y T H. 'Pray you play, if you loue me.

C R I S. Yes, cousin: you know, I doe not hate you.

T I B V. A most subtill wench! How she hath baited him  
with a violl yonder, for a song! 60

C R I S. Cousin, 'pray you call mistris C H L O E; shee  
shall heare an essay of my *poetrie*.

T v c c. I'll call her. Come hither, cockatrice: here's  
one, will set thee vp, my sweet punke; set thee vp.

C H L O. Are you a puet, so soone, sir? 65

A L B I. Wife: mum.

iv. iii 40 punke:] Punque, Q: punke, Fr: punk, F2 41 suffred]  
suffered F2 47 know'n] knowne F2 48 gent'man] gentlewoman F2  
49, 50 commander] Commaunder Q 51 poet.] Poet? Q me thinkes.  
not in Q G adds [Walks aside. 54 cousin.] Cousin; Q 56 Alas,]  
Alas Q 58 Yes, cousin] Yes cosin Q 61 mistris] Mistresse Q  
63 hither,] hither Q



## SONG.

**L**oue is blinde, and a wanton ;  
In the whole world, there is scant-  
one such another :

70

No, not his Mother.

He hath pluckt her doues, and sparrows,  
To feather his sharpe arrowes,  
And alone preuarleth,  
Whilst sicke VENVS waileth.

75

But if CYPRIUS once recouer  
The wag ; it shall behoue her  
To looke better to him :  
Or shee will vndoe him.

ALBI. O, most odoriferous musicke !

80 TVCC. A, ha ! stinkard. Another ORPHEVS, you  
slaue, another ORPHEVS ! an ARION, riding on the  
backe of a dolphin, rascall !

GALL. Haue you a copy of this dittie, sir ?

CRIS. Master ALBIUS ha's.

85 ALBI. I, but in truth, they are my wiues verses ; I must  
not shew 'hem.

TVCC. Shew 'hem, bankrupt, shew 'hem ; they haue  
salt in 'hem, and will brooke the aire, stinkard.

GALL. How ? to his bright mistress, CANIDIA ?

90 CRIS. I, sir, that's but a borrowed name ; as OVIDS  
CORINNA, or PROPERTIUS his CYNTHIA, or your  
NEMESIS, or DELIA, TIBVLLVS.

GALL. It's the name of HORACE his witch, as a  
remember.

95 TIBV. Why ? the dittie's all borrowed ; 'tis HORACES :  
hang him *plagiary*.

TVCC. How ? he borrow of HORACE ? hee shall  
pawne himselfe to ten brokers, first. Doe you heare,

IV. III. SONG] CANTVS Q. *Crispinus plays and sings.* G 68-9  
scant-| one] scant | One F2. scant one | G 80 ha |] ha ; Q  
81 ORPHEVS | an] *Orpheus*, an Q 87 Shew 'hem,] Shew 'hem Q 89  
mistris] mistresse Q 95 dittie's] Dittie's Q. dittie's Ff

POETASTERS? I know you to be men of worship—  
 He shall write with HORACE, for a talent: and let 100  
 MECÆNAS, and his whole collodge of *criticks* take his  
 part: thou shalt do't, young PHÆBUS: thou shalt,  
 PHAETON; thou shalt.

DEME. Alas, sir, HORACE! hee is a meere sponge;  
 nothing but humours, and obseruation; he goes vp and 105  
 downe sucking from euery societie, and when hee comes  
 home, squeezes himselfe drie againe. I know him, I.

TVC. Thou saiest true, my poore *poeticall Furie*, hee  
 will pen all hee knowes. A sharpe thornie-tooth'd *satyricall*  
 rascall, flie him; hee carries hey in his horne: he wil sooner 110  
 lose his best friend, then his least iest. What he once drops  
 vpon paper, against a man, lues eternally to vpbraid him  
 in the mouth of euery slaue tankerd-bearer, or water-man;  
 not a bawd, or a boy that comes from the bake-house, but  
 shall point at him: 'tis all dogge, and scorpion; he carries 115  
 poison in his teeth, and a sting in his taile. Fough, body of  
 I O V E! I'le haue the slaue whipt one of these daies for his  
*satyres*, and his humours, by one casheer'd clarke, or another.

CRIS. Wee'll vnder-take him, Captaine.

DEME. I, and tickle him i' faith, for his arrogancie, and 120  
 his impudence, in commending his owne things; and for  
 his translating: I can trace him i' faith. O, he is the most  
 open fellow, luing; I had as lieue as a new sute, I were at it.

TVC. Say no more then, but doe it; 'tis the only way  
 to get thee a new sute, sting him, my little neufts; I'le 125  
 giue you instructions. I'le bee your intelligencer, we'll all  
 ioyne, and hang vpon him like so many horse-leaches, the  
 plaiers and all. We shall sup together, soone; and then  
 wee'll conspire, i' faith.

iv. iii. 99 men] Knights, and men Q worship—] worshuppe. Q  
 101 MECÆNAS,] *Mecenas* Q 102 do't.] do't Q 104 HORACE!] *Horace*? Q  
 105 humours,] *Humours* Q obseruation:] obseruation,  
*Fi* 106 societie,] societie, Q 110 horne ] *colon faint in some*  
*copies of Fi*: horne, Q 111 lose] loose Q then] than *F2* 113  
 slaue] slave, *F2* 114 bake-house] bake house Q 116 taile Fough,  
 body] taile, fough Bodie Q 119 vnder-take] vndertake Q 122 translat-  
 ing:] translating *F2* faith O] faith O Q 124 but doe it *italicised in*  
 Q 127 horse-leaches,] horseleaches Q 128 together,] together Q

- 130 GALL. O, that HORACE had staid still, here.  
 TIBV. So would I: for both these would haue turn'd  
*Pythagoreans*, then.  
 GALL. What, mute?  
 TIBV. I, as fishes i'faith · come, ladies, shall we goe?  
 135 CYTH. We await you, sir. But mistris CHLOE askes,  
 if you haue not a god to spare, for this gentleman.  
 GALL. Who, Captaine TVCCA?  
 CYTH. I; hee.  
 GALL. Yes, if we can inuite him along, he shall be  
 140 MARS.  
 CHLO. Ha's MARS any thing to doe with VENVS?  
 TIBV. O, most of all, ladie.  
 CHLO. Nay, then, I pray' let him bee inuited: and  
 what shall CRISPINS be?  
 145 TIBV. MERCURY, mistris CHLOE.  
 CHLO. MERCURY? that's a *Poet*? is't?  
 GALL. No, ladie; but somewhat inclining that way:  
 hee is a *Herald* at *armes*.  
 CHLO. A *Herald* at *armes*? good · and MERCURY?  
 150 pretty: hee ha's to doe with VENVS, too?  
 TIBV. A little, with her face, ladie; or so.  
 CHLO. 'Tis very well; pray' let's goe, I long to be at it.  
 CYTH. Gentlemen, shall we pray your companies  
 along?  
 155 CRIS. You shall not only pray, but preuaile, ladie.  
 Come, sweet Captaine.  
 TVCC. Yes, I follow: but thou must not talke of this  
 now, my little bankrupt.  
 ALBI. Captaine, looke here: mum.  
 160 DEME. I'll goe write, sir.  
 TVCC. Doe, doe, stay: there's a drachme, to purchase  
 ginger-bread, for thy *muse*.

iv. iii 132 *Pythagoreans*,] *Pythagoreans* Q 134 come,] come Q 135  
 await] wait F2 mistris] Mistrisse Q (so 145) 143 I pray'] *Query*, pray'  
 (as in 152) 146 *Poet*?] *Poet*, F2 147 No,] No Q inclining]  
 enclyning Q 150 VENVS,] *Venus* Q 161 doe,] doe Q 162  
*Exeunt*. add Q

Act IIII. Scene IIII.

LVPVS, HISTRIO, LICTOR, MINOS, ME-  
CÆNAS, HORACE.

Come, let vs talke, here ; here we may bee priuate : shut  
the dore, L I C T O R. You are a plaier, you say.

H I S T. I, and't please your worship.

L V P V. Good : and how are you able to giue this intelli-  
gence ?

H I S T. Mary, sir, they directed a letter to me, and my  
fellow-sharers.

L V P V. Speake lower, you are not now i' your *theater*,  
Stager : my sword, knaue They directed a letter to you,  
and your fellow-sharers : forward.

H I S T. Yes, sir ; to hire some of our properties ; as a  
scepter, and a crowne, for I O V E ; and a *caduceus* for  
M E R C V R Y : and a *petasus*—

L V P V. *Caduceus* ? and *petasus* ? Let me see your letter.  
This is a coniuration , a conspiracy, this. Quickly, on with  
my buskins : I'll act a *tragædie*, i' faith Will nothing but  
our gods serue these *poets* to prophane ? dispatch. Plaier,  
I thanke thee. The Emperour shall take knowledge of thy  
good seruice. Who's there now ? Looke, knaue. A *crowne*,  
and a *scepter* ? this is good : rebellion, now ?

L I C T. 'Tis your pothecary, sir, master M I N O S.

L V P V. What tell'st thou me of pothecaries, knaue ?  
Tell him ; I haue affaires of state, in hand ; I can talke to  
no pothecaries, now. Heart of me ! Stay the pothecary  
there.

IV. IV. Act IIII. Scene IIII ] SCENA QVARTA Q · SCENE II | A Room in  
Lupus's House. | Enter Lupus, Histrion, and Lictors G LICTOR]  
LICTORS F2 i Come] Lup Come Q talke,] talke Q 2 dore,] dore F2  
3 and't] an't F2 6 Mary,] Mary Q Marry, F2 7 fellow-sharers]  
fellow Sharers Q 8 lower,] lower, Q 16 *tragædie*] *Tragedy* Q 17  
gods] Gods, Q dispatch *stanzied in* Q 19 Looke,] Looke Q knaue,]  
knaue. [Exit Lictor] G 20 good ] good F2 After 20 Re-enter  
Lictor. G 21 pothecary] 'pothecary F2 (so 24, 36) 22, 24  
pothecaries] 'pothecaries F2 23 him ; Q (catchword of G4 verso), F1 :  
him Q (text of H) 25 after ' there ' Walks in a musing posture. G

You shall see, I haue fish't out a cunning peece of plot now : They haue had some intelligence, that their proiect is discover'd, and now haue they dealt with my pothecary, to poison me ; 'tis so ; knowing, that I meant to take physick  
 30 to day : As sure as death, 'tis there. IVPITER, I thanke thee, that thou hast yet made me so much of a politician. You are welcome, sir ; take the potion from him there, I haue an *antidote* more then you wote off, sir : throw it on the ground there So. Now fetch in the dogge ; And yet  
 35 we cannot tarrie to trie experiments now : arrest him, you shall goe with me, sir ; I'll tickle you, pothecarie ; I'll giue you a glister, i' faith. Haue I the letter ? I : 'tis here. Come, your *fascies*, LICTORS : The halfe pikes, and the halberds, take them downe from the *lares*, there. Plaier, assist me.  
 40 MECÆ. Whither now, ASINIVS LVPVVS, with this armorie ?

LVPV. I cannot talke now ; I charge you, assist me : Treason, treason.

HORA. How ? treason ?

45 LVPV. I : if you loue the Emperour, and the state, follow me.

### Act IIII. Scene v.

OVID, IVLIA, GALLVS, CYTHERIS, TIBVLLVS,  
 PLAVTIA, ALBIVS, CHLOE, TVCCA,  
 CRISPINVS, HERMOGENES,  
 PYRGVS.

GOds, and Goddesses, take your seuerall seates. Now, MERCVRV, moue your *caduceus*, and in IVPITER'S name command silence.

CRIS. In the name of IVPITER ; silence.

iv iv 31 After 'politician' Enter Minos G 32 there,] there ; Fa  
 33 then] than Fa off] of Q 36 you,] you Q 39 there ] there ; Q  
 After 39 As they are going out, enter Mecænas and Horace G 40  
 MECÆ.] MECÆ FI Whither] Whether Q 43 treason ] Treason, Q  
 46 Exeunt add Q iv. v Act IIII Scene v.] SCENA QVINTA Q SCENE III ]  
 An Apartment in the Palace. | Enter Ovid, . . . Pyrgus, characteristically  
 habited, as gods and goddesses. G CRISPINVS,] Crispinus Q 1 Gods]  
 Ouid Gods Q 2 moue] moue Q 3 command] commande Q

HERM. The cryer of the court hath too clarified a voice. 5

GALL. Peace, *Momus*.

OVID. Oh, he is the God of reprehension ; let him alone.  
'Tis his office. MERCURY, goe forward, and proclaime  
after PHœBUS, our high pleasure, to all the *Deities* that  
shall partake this high banquet. 10

CRIS. Yes, sir.

GALL. The great God, IVPITER,	CRIS. The great, &c.	
Of his licentious goodnesse,	Of his, &c.	
Willing to make this feast, no fast	Willing, &c.	
From any manner of pleasure ;	From any, &c.	15
Nor to bind any God or Goddess,	Nor to, &c.	
To be any thing the more god or goddess,	To be, &c.	

for their names :

He giues them all free licence,	He giues, &c.	
To speake no wiser, then persons of baser titles ;	To speake, &c.	
And to be nothing better, then common men, or women.	And to, &c.	20
And therefore no God	And there &c	
Shall need to keep himselfe more strictly to his Goddess,	Shall need, &c.	
Then any man do's to his wife	Then any, &c.	
Nor any Goddess	Nor any, &c.	
Shall need to keepe her selfe more strictly to her God,	Shall need, &c.	25
Then any woman do's to her husband.	Then any, &c.	
But, since it is no part of wisdom,	But, since, &c.	
In these daies, to come into bonds ;	In these, &c.	
It shall be lawfull for euery louer,	It shall, &c.	
To breake louing oathes,	To breake, &c.	30
To change their louers, and make loue to others,	To change, &c.	
As the heate of euery ones bloud,	As the, &c.	

rv. v. 6 Peace,] Peace Q 8 forward,] forward, Q 17 god]  
God, Q 19, 20 then] than F2 21 there] ther. Q; there, Ff  
26 Then] Than F2 28 these, &c] these. Q 32 bloud] Bloode Q

- And the spirit of our *nectar* shall inspire. And the, &c.  
 And IVPITER, saue IVPITER. And IVP I. &c.
- 35 TIBV. So: now we may play the fooles, by authoritie.  
 HERM. To play the foole by authoritie, is wisdom.
- IVLI. Away with your matterie sentences, MOMVS;  
 they are too graue, and wise, for this meeting
- OVID. MERCVRV, giue our iester a stoole, let him  
 40 sit by; and reach him of our cates
- TVC C. Do'st heare, mad IVPITER? Wee'll haue it  
 enacted; He, that speakes the first wise word, shall be  
 made cuckold. What sai'st thou? Is't not a good motion?
- OVID. *Deities*, are you all agreed?
- 45 ALL. Agreed, great IVPITER.
- ALBI. I haue read in a booke, that to play the foole  
 wisely, is high wisdom.
- GALL. How now, VULCAN! will you be the first  
 wizard?
- 50 OVID. Take his wife, MARS, and make him cuckold,  
 quickly,
- TVC C. Come, cockatrice.
- CHLO. No, let me alone with him, IVPITER. I'll  
 make you take heed, sir, while you lue againe; if there be  
 55 twelue in a companie, that you bee not the wisest of 'hem.
- ALBI. No more, I will not indeed, wife, hereafter, I'll  
 be here: mum.
- OVID. Fill vs a bowle of *nectar*, GANYMEDE. we  
 will drinke to our daughter VENVS.
- 60 GALL. Looke to your wife, VULCAN: IVPITER  
 begins to court her.
- TIBV. Nay, let MARS looke to it: VULCAN must  
 doe, as VENVS doe's, beare.
- TVC C. Sirrah, boy: catamite. Looke, you play  
 65 GANYMEDE well now, you slaue. Doe not spill your  
*nectar*; Carrie your cup euen. so. You should haue rub'd
- IV. v. 34 IVPITER,] *Iupiter* Q 38 too] to Q 39 iester] iester Q  
 42 enacted, He,] enacted, Hee F2 45 ALL] *Omnes* Q 53 No,]  
 No Q 56 more,] more Q. more; F2 63 doe,] do Q 65 slaue,]  
 slaue Q

your face, with whites of egges, you rascall ; till your browes  
had shone like our sooty brothers here, as sleeke as a horn-  
booke : or ha' steept your lips in wine, till you made 'hem  
so plump, that I V N O might haue beene ieaious of 'hem. 70  
Punke, kisse me, punke.

O V I D. Here, daughter V E N V S, I drinke to thee.

C H L O. 'Thanke you, good father I V P I T E R.

T V C C. Why, mother I V N O ! gods and fiends ! what,  
wilt thou suffer this ocular temptation ? 75

T I B V. M A R S is enrag'd, hee lookes bigge, and begins  
to stut, for anger.

H E R M. Well plaid, Captaine M A R S.

T V C C. Well said, minstrell M O M V S : I must put you  
in ? must I ? When will you be in good fooling of your 80  
selfe, fiddler ? neuer ?

H E R M. O, 'tis our fashion, to be silent, when there is a  
better foole in place, euer.

T V C C. 'Thanke you, rascall.

O V I D. Fill to our daughter V E N V S, G A N Y M E D E, 85  
who fills her father with affection

I V L I. Wilt thou be ranging, I V P I T E R, before my  
face ?

O V I D. Why not, I V N O ? why should I V P I T E R  
stand in awe of thy face, I V N O ? 90

I V L I. Because it is thy wiues face, I V P I T E R.

O V I D. What, shall a husband be afraid of his wiues  
face ? will shee paint it so horribly ? Wee are a King, cot-  
queane ; and we will raigne in our pleasures ; and wee will  
cudgell thee to death, if thou finde fault with vs. 95

I V L I. I will find fault with thee, King cuckold-maker :  
what, shall the King of gods turne the King of good fellowes,  
and haue no fellow in wickednesse ? This makes our *poets*,  
that know our prophanenesse, lue as prophane, as we : By  
my god-head, I V P I T E R ; I will ioyne with all the other 100  
gods, here ; bind thee hand and foot ; throw thee downe

iv. v. 76 enrag'd,] enrag'd ; Q 84 'Thanke] Thank F2 85 GANY-  
MEDE,] Ganymede, Q 87 ranging] raunging Q 89 IVPITER] Iupiter, Q



into earth ; and make a poore *poet* of thee, if thou abuse me thus.

GALL. A good smart-tongu'd Goddess ; a right I V N O.  
105 OVID. I V N O, we will cudgell thee, I V N O : we told thee so yesterday, when thou wert iealous of vs, for T H E T I S.

P Y R G. Nay, to day shee had me in inquisition too.

T V C C. Well said, my fine *Phrygian* frie, informe, in-  
110 forme. Giue mee some wine (*King of Herald's*) I may drinke to my cockatrice.

OVID. No more, G A N Y M E D E, wee will cudgell thee, I V N O : by S T Y X, we will.

I V L I. I, 'tis well, Gods may grow impudent in iniquitie,  
115 and they must not be told of it——

OVID. Yea, we will knocke our chinne against our brest ; and shake thee out of *Olympus*, into an oyster-bote, for thy scolding.

I V L I. Your nose is not long enough to doe it, I V P I T E R,  
120 if all thy strumpets, thou hast among the starres, tooke thy part. And there is neuer a starre in thy fore-head, but shall be a horne, if thou persist to abuse me.

C R I S. A good iest, i' faith.

OVID. We tell thce, thou anger'st vs, cot-queane ; and  
125 we will thunder thee in pecces, for thy cot-queanitie.

C R I S. Another good iest.

A L B I. O, my hammers, and my *Cyclops* ! this boy fills not wine enough, to make vs kind enough, to one another.

T V C C. Nor thou hast not collied thy face enough,  
130 stinkard.

IV. v 102 earth] the earth *Fz* 104 -tongu'd] -tounge'd *Fz* 110 wine (*King . Herald's*) wine, *King . Herald's*, *Q* 112 GANYMEDE,] *Ganymede*, *Q* 114 I, 'tis well,] I'ts well, *Q* 115 it—] it *Q* 117 brest,] breast, *Fz* *Olympus*] *Olimpus* *Q* 118 scolding] scoulding *Q* 119 IVPITER,] *Iupiter*, *Q* 120 starres,] Starres *Q* 121 thy] my *Fz* 123 iest] least *Q* 125 cot-queanitie] Cotqueanitie. we will lay this City desolate, and fiat as this hand, for thy offences These two fingers are the Walls of it, these within, the people, which People, shall all be throwne downe thus, and nothing left standing in this City, but these walls. *Q* 128 another] another: *Q*

ALB. I'll ply the table with *nectar*, and make them friends.

HERM. Heauen is like to haue but a lame skinker, then.

ALB. "Wine, and good liuers, make true louers: I'll sentence them together. Here father, here mother, for <sup>135</sup> shame, drinke your selues *drunke*, and forget this dissention: you two should cling together, before our faces, and giue vs example of vntie.

GALL. O, excellently spoken, VULCAN, on the sodaine!

TIBV. IVPITER, may doe well to preferre his tongue to some office, for his eloquence.

TVC. His tongue shall bee gent'man vsher to his wit, and still goe before it.

ALB. An excellent fit office!

CRIS. I, and an excellent good iest, besides.

HERM. What, haue you hired MERCURY, to cry your iests you make?

OVID. MOMVS, you are enuious.

TVC. Why, you whoreson block-head, 'tis your only <sup>150</sup> blocke of wit in fashion (now adaies) to applaud other folkes iests.

HERM. True: with those that are not artificers themselves. VULCAN, you nod; and the mirth of the feast droops.

PYRG. He ha's fild *nectar* so long, till his braine swims in it.

GALL. What, doe we nod, fellow Gods? sound musicke, and let vs startle our spirits with a song.

TVC. Doe, APOLLO: thou art a good musician.

GALL. What saies IVPITER?

OVID. Ha? ha?

iv. v. 135, 137 together] together Q 135 father, . . . mother,]  
 Father: . . . Mother. Q 140 sodaine] sudden F<sub>2</sub> 145 office ]  
 office. Q 146 iest, besides ] iest, besides Q 148, 152 iests]  
 iastes Q 149 enuious ] enuious. Q 151 adaies] a dayes F<sub>2</sub>  
 153-4 themselves] them selues Q 154 feast Q iest F<sub>1</sub>. iest F<sub>2</sub> (a  
 misreading in F<sub>1</sub> due to 146, 152)

GALL. A song.

OVID. Why, doe, doe, sing.

165 PLAV. BACCHVS, what say you ?

TIBV. CERES ?

PLAV. But, to this song ?

TIBV. Sing, for my part. .

Ivli. Your belly weighes downe your head, BACCHVS :  
170 here's a song toward.

TIBV. Being, VULCAN——

ALBI. What else ? what else ?

TVCC. Say, IVPITER——

OVID. MERCVRV——

175 CRIS. I, say, say——

SONG.

**W**Ake, our mirth begins to die :  
Quicken it with tunes, and wine :  
Raise your notes, you're out : fie, fie,  
This drouzinesse, is an ill signe.

180 We banish him the queere of Gods,  
That droops agen :  
Then all are men,  
For here's not one, but nods.

OVID. I like not this sodaine and generall heauinesse,  
185 amongst our Godheads : 'Tis somewhat ominous. APOLLO,  
command vs lowder musicke, and let MERCVRV, and  
MOMVS contend to please, and reuiue our senses.

SONG.

HERM. **T**Hen, in a free and lofty straine,  
Our broken tunes we thus repaire ,

190 CRIS. And we answere them againe,  
Running diuision on the panting aire :

IV. V 164 sing ] sing : Q 171 VULCAN—] Vulcan Q 173  
IVPITER—] Iupiter Q 174 MERCVRV—] Mercury Q 175 say—]  
say Q After 175, 187 SONG] CANTVS Q 176 Wake,] WAKE; Q  
Alb Wake! G 178 notes,] notes; Q fie, fie,] fie, fie; Q 179  
drouzinesse, corr FI: Drouzinesse Q drouzinesse FI originally: drouz-  
nesse F2 180 queere] Quire F2 184 sodaine] sudden F2  
185 'Tis] 'tis F2

AMBO. *To celebrate this feast of sense,  
As free from scandall, as offence.*  
HERM. *Here is beautie, for the eye ;*  
CRIS. *For the eare, sweet melodie ;* 195  
HERM. *Ambrosiack odours, for the smell ;*  
CRIS. *Delicious nectar, for the taste ;*  
AMBO. *For the touch, a ladies waste ;*  
*Which doth all the rest excell !*

OVID I: This hath wak't vs. MERCVRV, our 200  
Herald ; Goe from our selfe, the great God IVPITER, to  
the great Emperour, AVGVSTVS CAESAR: And com-  
mand him, from vs (of whose bountie he hath receued his  
sir-name, AVGVSTVS) that for a thanke-offring to our  
beneficence, he presently sacrifice as a dish to this banquet, 205  
his beautifull and wanton daughter IVLIA Shee's a  
curst queane, tell him ; and plaies the scold behind his  
backe: Therefore, let her be sacrific'd. Command him  
this, MERCVRV, in our high name of IVPITER  
ALTITONANS. 210

IVLI. Stay, feather-footed MERCVRV, and tell  
AVGVSTVS, from vs, the great IVNO SATVRNIA ;  
if he thinke it hard to doe, as IVPITER hath commanded  
him, and sacrifice his daughter, that hee had better to doe  
so ten times, then suffer her to loue the well-nos'd poet, 215  
OVID: whom he shall doe well to whip, or cause to bee  
whipt, about the capitoll, for soothing her, in her follies.

iv. v 201 Goe] goe F2 selfe,] selfe Q 203 receued] receaned Q  
206 IVLIA ] Iulsa Q 207 scold] scould Q 208 Therefore,]  
Therefore Q Command] Commaund Q 215 then] than F2 216  
OVID: corr F1 Ouid, Q OVID, F1 originally, F2

## Act IIII. Scene VI.

CÆSAR, MECÆNAS, HORACE, LUPVS, HISTRIO,  
MINOS, LICTORS, OVID, GALLVS,  
TIBVLLVS, TVCCA, CRISPINVS, AL-  
BIVS, HERMOGENES, PYRGVS,  
IVLIA, CYTHERIS, PLAV-  
TIA, CHLOE.

What sight is this? MECÆNAS! HORACE! say!  
Haue we our senses? Doe we heare? and see?

Or, are these but imaginarie obiects  
Drawne by our phantasie? Why speake you not,

5 Let vs doe sacrifice? Are they the Gods?

Reuerence, amaze, and furie fight in me.

What? doe they kneele? Nay, then I see 'tis true

I thought impossible: ô, impious sight!

Let me diuert mine eyes; the very thought

10 Euerts my soule, with passion: looke not, man.

There is a panther, whose vnnaturall eyes

Will strike thee dead: turne then, and die on her

With her owne death.

MECÆ. HORACE. What meanes imperiall CÆSAR?

15 CÆSAR. What, would you haue me let the strumpet liue,  
That, for this pageant, eames so many deaths?

TVCC. Boy, slinke boy.

PYRG. 'Pray IVPITER, we be not follow'd by the  
sent, Master.

20 CÆSAR. Say, sir, what are you?

ALBI. I play VULCAN, sir.

CÆSAR. But, what are you, sir?

IV. vi. Act IIII Scene VI.] SCENA SEXTA. Q: Enter Augustus Cæsar, Mecænas, Horace, Lupus, Histrio, Minos, and Lictors G, continuing the scene 1 What] Cæsar What Q MECÆNAS . . . say 1] Mecænas, Horace, say, Q 4 Why] Why, Q not,] not? Q, Ff 6 Reuerence, amaze,] Reuerence. Amaze. Q 8 ô, ô Q 10 not,] not Q 12 then,] then; Q Stage-direction not in Q 16 pageant] Pageant Q 19 Exeunt. add Q: Exeunt Tucca and Pyrgus. G

ALBI. Your citizen, and ieweller, sir.  
 CAESA. And what are you, dame?  
 CHLO. I play VENVS, forsooth. 25  
 CAESA. I aske not, what you play? but, what you are?  
 CHLO. Your citizen, and iewellers wife, sir.  
 CAESA. And you, good sir?  
 CRIS. Your gentleman, parcell-poet, sir.  
 CAESA. O, that prophaned name! 30  
 And are these seemely companie for thee,  
 Degenerate monster? all the rest I know,  
 And hate all knowledge, for their hatefull sakes.  
 Are you, that first the *deities* inspir'd  
 With skill of their high natures, and their powers, 35  
 The first abusers of their vse-full light;  
 Prophaning thus their dignities, in their formes:  
 And making them like you, but counterfeits?  
 O, who shall follow vertue, and embrace her,  
 When her false bosome is found nought but aire? 40  
 And yet, of those embraces, *centaures* spring,  
 That warre with humane peace, and poyson men.  
 Who shall, with greater comforts, comprehend  
 Her vnseene being, and her excellence;  
 When you, that teach, and should eternize her, 45  
 Liue, as shee were no law vnto your liues:  
 Nor liu'd her selfe, but with your idle breaths?  
 If you thinke gods but fain'd, and vertue painted,  
 Know, we sustaine an actuall residence;  
 And, with the title of an Emperour, 50  
 Retaine his spirit, and imperiall power:  
 By which (in imposition too remisse,  
 Licentious NASO, for thy violent wrong,  
 In soothing the declin'd affections  
 Of our base daughter) we exile thy feete 55  
 From all approach, to our imperiall court,

iv. v. 27 sir] Sir: Q 29 sir.] sir. [Exit. G The exit of Albus,  
 Chloe, and Crispinus should probably take place at 32, after 'monster'.  
 32 know,] know; Q 47 breaths] breathes Q 55 our] my Q  
 we] I Q 56 approach] approach Q, Fa

- On paine of death : and thy mis-gotten loue  
 Commit to patronage of iron doores ;  
 Since her soft-hearted sire cannot containe her.
- 60 M E C Œ. O, good my lord ; forgiue : be like the Gods.  
 H O R A. Let royall bountie (C A E S A R) mediate.  
 C A E S A. There is no bountie to be shew'd to such,  
 As haue no reall goodnesse . Bountie is  
 A spice of vertue · and what vertuous act  
 65 Can take effect on them, that haue no power  
 Of equall habitude to apprehend it,  
 But liue in worship of that idoll, vice,  
 As if there were no vertue, but in shade  
 Of strong imagination, meerely enforc't ?
- 70 This shewes, their knowledge is meere ignorance ;  
 Their farre-fetcht dignitie of soule, a phansy ;  
 And all their square pretext of grautie  
 A meere vaine glorie : hence, away with 'hem.  
 I will preferre for knowledge, none, but such
- 75 As rule their lues by it, and can becalme  
 All sea of humour, with the marble *trident*  
 Of their strong spirits . Others fight below  
 With gnats, and shaddowes, others nothing know.

### Act IIII. Scene VII.

TUCCA, CRISPINVS, PYRGVS, HORACE, ME-  
 CŒNAS, LVPVS, HISTRIO.

What's become of my little punke, VENVS ? and the  
 poultfoot stinkard, her husband ? ha ?

CRIS. O, they are rid home i' the coach, as fast as the  
 wheelles can runne.

iv vi 62 shew'd F2: shewed Q, FI 66 it,] it; Q 67 idoll, F2  
 Idole Q: idoll FI 71 farre-fetcht] farre fetcht Q farfetch F3  
 73 hence,] hence Q 78 shaddowes,] shadowes, Q Exeunt add Q  
 iv. vii Act IIII. Scene VII ] SCENA SEPTIMA. Q: SCENE IV | A Street  
 before the Palace | Enter Tucca, Crispinus, and Pyrgus G I What's]  
 Tucca What's Q VENVS ?] Venus, Q. VENVS! FI. VENUS, F2

TVCC. God IVPITER is banisht, I heare: and his 5  
cockatrice, IVNO, lockt vp. 'Hart, and all the *poetrie* in  
*Parnassus* get me to bee a player againe, I'll sell 'hem my  
share for a sesterce. But this is *humours*, HORACE, that  
goat-footed enuious slaue; hee's turn'd fawne now, an  
informer, the rogue: 'tis hee has betraid vs all. Did you 10  
not see him, with the Emperour, crouching?

CRIS. Yes.

TVCC. Well, follow me. Thou shalt libell, and I'll  
cudgell the rascall. Boy, provide me a truncheon. Reuenge  
shall gratulate him, *tam* MARTI, *quam* MERCVRIO. 15

PYRG. I, but Master; take heed how you giue this out,  
HORACE is a man of the sword.

CRIS. 'Tis true, in troth: they say, he's valiant.

TVCC. Valiant? so is mine arse; gods, and fiends!  
I'll blow him into aire, when I meet him next: He dares 20  
not fight with a puck-fist.

PYRG. Master, here he comes.

*Horace  
passes by.*

TVCC. Where? IVPITER saue thee, my good *poet*, my  
noble *prophet*, my little fat HORACE. I scorne to beate the  
rogue i' the court; and I saluted him, thus faire, because hee 25  
should suspect nothing, the rascall. Come, wee'll goe see how  
forward our iourney-man is toward the vntrussing of him.

CRIS. Doe you heare, Captaine? I'll write nothing in it  
but innocence. because I may sweare I am innocent.

HORA. Nay, why pursue you not the Emperor 30  
For your reward, now, LVPVS? MECÆ. Stay, ASINIVS;  
You, and your stager, and your band of *Lictors*.

iv. vii 5 banisht] banish't F<sub>2</sub> 6 lockt] lock't F<sub>2</sub> vp 'Hart.]  
vp 'Hart, Q and] and Q, F<sub>1</sub> an' F<sub>2</sub> 8 a sesterce]  
six pence Q *humours*, corr. F<sub>1</sub> *humours*, F<sub>1</sub> originally *Humours*,  
Q *humorous* F<sub>2</sub> 9 now,] now, Q 10 all] all, Q 14  
truncheon corr. F<sub>1</sub>, F<sub>2</sub> Truncheon, Q truncheon F<sub>1</sub> originally  
15 *quam*] *quam* Q 16 out,] out, F<sub>2</sub> 18 in troth] introth Q  
22 *Stage-direction* not in Q 24 noble not in Q little fat] noble Q  
25 because] because Q 26 Come,] Come Q 29 *Exeunt*. add Q 30  
G, who marks a new scene 'Scene vi | Enter Horace, Mecænas, Lupus,  
Histrion, and Lictors' 30-1 HORA. LVPVS?] *Prose* in Q, Ff.  
*verse* in G 30 Emperor] Emperour Q 31 now,] now, Q 31-2  
Stay . . . *Lictors* one line in Q, and originally in F<sub>1</sub> F<sub>1</sub> corrected here,  
but not in the preceding speech



I hope your seruice merits more respect,  
Then thus, without a thanks, to be sent hence?

35 H I S T. Well, well, iest on, iest on.

H O R A. Thou base vnworthy groome. L V P V. I, I, 'tis good.

H O R A. Was this the treason? this, the dangerous plot,  
Thy clamorous tongue so bellow'd through the court?  
Hadst thou no other proiect to encrease

40 Thy grace with C A E S A R, but this woluish traine;

To prey vpon the life of innocent mirth,  
And harmelesse pleasures, bred, of noble wit?

Away, I lothe thy presence. such as thou,  
They are the moths, and scarabes of a state;

45 The bane of empires; and the dregs of courts;  
Who (to endeare themselues to any'employment)

Care not, whose fame they blast; whose life they endanger:  
And vnder a disguis'd, and cob-web masque  
Of loue, vnto their soueraigne, vomit forth

50 Their owne prodigious malice; and pretending

To be the props, and columnes of his safety,  
The guards vnto his person, and his peace,  
Disturbe it most, with their false lapwing-cries.

L V P V. Good. C A E S A R shall know of this; belecue it.

55 M E C C E. C A E S A R doth know it (wolfe) and to his knowledge,

Hee will (I hope) reward your base endeuours.

"Princes that will but heare, or giue accesse

"To such officious spies, can ne're be safe:

"They take in poyson, with an open eare,

60 "And, free from danger, become slaues to feare.

rv. vii. 34 Then] Than F<sub>2</sub> 35 iest] least Q 36 LVPV. I, I,]  
(Lupus) I Q 37 HORA.] 'Horace' om Q, owing to its confusion in  
36 38 bellow'd] bellowed Q, Ff 40 woluish] Wooluish Q 41  
prey] pray Q 42 bred.] bred F<sub>2</sub> 43 Away.] Away Q 44 moths]  
Moathes Q 45 empres] Kingdomes Q 46 any'employment] any  
'mploiment Q: any employment F<sub>2</sub> 49 forth] foorth Q 53  
lapwing-cries] Lapwing-cries Q 54 Exeunt. add Q 58 ne're] nere Q  
60 Exeunt add Q.

## Act IIII. Scene VIII.

OVID.

**B**Anisht the court? Let me be banisht life;  
 Since the chiefe end of life is there concluded:  
 Within the court, is all the kingdome bounded,  
 And as her sacred spheare doth comprehend  
 Ten thousand times so much, as so much place 5  
 In any part of all the empire else;  
 So euery body, moouing in her spheare,  
 Containes ten thousand times as much in him,  
 As any other, her choice orbe excludes.  
 As in a circle, a magician, then 10  
 Is safe, against the spirit, he excites;  
 But out of it, is subiect to his rage,  
 And loseth all the vertue of his arte:  
 So I, exil'd the circle of the court,  
 Lose all the good gifts, that in it I ioy'd. 15  
 "No vertue currant is, but with her stamp:  
 "And no vice vicious, blaunch't with her white hand.  
 The court's the abstract of all *Romes* desert;  
 And my deare *I V L I A*, th'abstract of the court.  
 Mee thinkes, now I come neere her, I respire 20  
 Some aire of that late comfort, I receiu'd:  
 And while the euening, with her modest vaile,  
 Giues leaue to such poore shaddowes as my selfe,  
 To steale abroad, I, like a heart-lesse ghost,  
 Without the liuing body of my loue, 25  
 Will here walke, and attend her. For I know,  
 Not farre from hence, shee is imprisoned,  
 And hopes, of her strict guardian, to bribe  
 So much admittance, as to speake to me,  
 And cheere my fainting spirits, with her breath. 30

IV. VIII. Act IIII Scene VIII ] SCENA OCTAVA. Q. Scene v. | An open  
 Space before the Palace | Enter Ovid. G 1 Banisht] Ouid Banisht  
 Q: Banish't F2 banisht] banish't F2 3 bounded,] bounded; Q  
 7 moouing] moving F2 8 as much] asmuch Q 13 loseth] looseth Q  
 15 Lose] Loose Q 16 ioy'd] 'oy'd F2 17 And] Nor Q 19 th'abstract]  
 the Abstract Q 21 aire] aire, Q 24 abroad,] abroad; Q 26 her.] her. Q

## Act IIII. Scene IX.

Shee  
appeareth  
aboue, as  
at her  
chamber  
window

I V L I A, O V I D.

- O V I D? my loue? O V I D Here, heavenly I V L I A.  
I V L I. Here? and not here? O, how that word doth  
play  
With both our fortunes, differing, like our selues,  
Both one; and yet diuided, as oppos'd?  
5 I high, thou low? O, this our plight of place  
Doubly presents the two lets of our loue,  
Locall, and ceremoniall height, and lownesse  
Both waies, I am too high, and thou too low.  
Our mindes are euen, yet. O, why should our bodies,  
10 That are their slaues, be so without their rule?  
I'll cast my selfe downe to thee; If I die,  
I'll euer lue with thee: no height of birth,  
Of place, of dutie, or of cruell power,  
Shall keepe mee from thee, should my father locke  
15 Thus body vp within a tombe of brasse,  
Yet I'll be with thee. If the formes, I hold  
Now in my soule, be made one substance with it;  
That soule immortall; and the same 'tis now,  
Death cannot raze th'affects, shee now retayneth:  
20 And then, may shee be any where shee will  
The soules of parents rule not childrens soules,  
When death sets both in their dissolu'd estates;  
Then is no child, nor father: then eternitie  
Frees all, from any temporall respect.  
25 I come, my O V I D, take me in thine armes.  
And let me breathe my soule into thy brest.  
O V I D. O, stay, my loue: the hopes thou do'st conceiue  
Of thy quicke death, and of thy future life,  
Are not autenticall. Thou choosest death,

IV IX Act IIII Scene IX] SCENA NONA Q: G continues the scene  
1 OVID?] Iul Ouid? Q 5 low?] Lowe Q 7 Locall.] Locall Q  
8 high.] high, Q thou] thou, Q 16 thee] thee Q 25 OVID.] Ouid,  
Q 26 breathe] breath Q, F2 29 autenticall] authenticall Fa

So thou might'st ioy thy loue, in th'other life. 30  
 But know (my princely loue) when thou art dead,  
 Thou onely must suruiue in perfect soule ;  
 And in the soule, are no affections :  
 We powre out our affections with our blood ;  
 And with our blouds affections, fade our loues. 35  
 " No life hath loue in such sweet state, as this ;  
 " No essence is so deare to moodie sense,  
 " As flesh, and blood ; whose quintessence is sense.  
 " Beautie, compos'd of blood, and flesh, moues more,  
 " And is more plausible to blood, and flesh, 40  
 " Then spirituall beautie can be to the spirit.  
 Such apprehension, as we haue in dreames  
 (When sleepe, the bond of senses, locks them vp)  
 Such shall we haue, when death destroies them quite.  
 If loue be then thy object, change not life ; 45  
 Liue high, and happy still · I still below,  
 Close with my fortunes, in thy height, shall ioy.  
 I v l i. Ay me, that vertue, whose braue eagles wings  
 With euery stroke, blow starres, in burning heauen ,  
 Should like a swallow (preying towards stormes) 50  
 Fly close to earth : and with an eager plume,  
 Pursue those objects, which none else can see,  
 But seeme to all the world, the emptie aire.  
 Thus thou (poore O v i d) and all vertuous men  
 Must prey like swallowes, on inuisible foode ; 55  
 Pursuing flies, or nothing : and thus loue,  
 And euery worldly phansie, is transpos'd,  
 By worldly tyrannie, to what plight it list.  
 O, father, since thou gau'st me not my mind,  
 Striue not to rule it : Take, but what thou gau'st 60  
 To thy disposeure. Thy affections

iv ix 30 ioy] 'joy G (cf iii viii 15) 34 blood] Bloode Q (so 35, 38)  
 35 affections,] affections, Q 39, 40 blood] Blood Q 40 flesh,]  
 Flesh : Q 41 Then] Than F<sub>2</sub> 45 life,] life, Q 50 preying]  
 praying Q (so 55) 51 plume,] plume Q 57 phansie] Fancie Q  
 59 father,] Father, Q 60 gau'st] gav'st' F<sub>2</sub> (perhaps a misprint  
 for gav'st,) 61 disposeure. Thy] disposeure, thy Q. disposeure.  
 Thy F<sub>2</sub>

Rule not in me ; I must beare all my griefes,  
 Let me vse all my pleasures : vertuous loue  
 Was neuer scandall to a Goddesses state.

65 But, hee's inflexible ! and, my deare loue,  
 Thy life may chance be shortned, by the length  
 Of my vnwilling speeches to depart.

Farewell, sweet life : though thou be yet exil'd  
 Th'officious court, enioy me amply, still :

70 My soule, in this my breath, enters thine eares,  
 And on this turrets floore, will I lie dead,  
 Till we may meet againe. In this proud height,  
 I kneele beneath thee, in my prostrate loue,  
 And kisse the happy sands, that kisse thy feet.

75 " Great I o v e submits a scepter, to a cell ;

" And louers, ere they part, will meet in hell.

O v i d. Farewell, all companie ; and if I could  
 All light with thee : hells shade should hide my browes,

79 Till thy deare beauties beames redeem'd my vows

*Shee calls  
 him  
 backe*

I v l i. O v i d, my loue : alas, may we not stay  
 A little longer (think'st thou) vndiscern'd ?

O v i d. For thine owne good, faire Goddesses, doe not  
 stay :

Who would ingage a firmament of fires,  
 Shining in thee, for me, a falling starre ?

85 Be gone, sweet life-bloud : if I should discern  
 Thy selfe but toucht, for my sake, I should die.

I v l i. I will be gone, then ; and not heauen it selfe

*He calls  
 her backe.*

Shall draw me backe. O v i d. Yet I v l i a, if thou wilt,  
 A little longer, stay. I v l i. I am content

90 O v i d. O, mightie O v i d ! what the sway of heauen  
 Could not retire, my breath hath turned back.

iv. ix. 62 griefes,] griefes ; F2 63 vertuous] " Vertuous Q  
 (which should have printed " Was in 64 65 But,] But Q inflexible !]  
 inflexible ; Q 68 exil'd] exil'd, Q 69 amply,] amply Q 72 againe.  
 In] againe ; in Q 73 thee,] thee Q 77 Farewell,] Farewell Q 80  
 Ovid,] Ouid ; Q 80-1 Stage-dir corr F1 : not in Q or in F1 originally ;  
 not in F2 81 vndiscern'd corr F1 vndescern'd Q, F1 originally.  
 undiscern'd F2 85 -bloud] -bloode Q discern corr. F1, F2 .  
 deacerne Q, F1 originally 87 gone,] gone Q selfe] selfe, Q 88-9  
 Stage-dir. corr. F1, not in Q or in F1 originally : not in F2 90 O,] O Q

I V L I. Who shall goe first, my loue ? my passionate eyes  
Will not endure to see thee turne from mee.

O V I D. If thou goe first, my soule will follow thee.

I V L I. Then we must stay. O V I D. Ay me, there is 95  
no stay

In amorous pleasures : if both stay, both die.

I heare thy father ; hence, my *deitie*.

Feare forgeth sounds in my deluded eares ;

I did not heare him : I am mad with loue.

There is no spirit, vnder heauen, that workes 100

With such illusion : yet such witchcraft kill mee,

Ere a sound mind, without it, saue my life.

Here, on my knees, I worship the blest place

That held my goddesse , and the louing aire,

That clos'd her body in his silken armes : 105

Vaine O V I D ! kneele not to the place, nor aire ;

Shee's in thy heart : rise then, and worship there.

" The truest wisdome silly men can haue,

" Is dotage, on the follies of their flesh.

### Act v. Scene I.

CÆSAR, MECÆNAS, GALLVS, TIBVLLVS,

HORACE, EQVITES RO.

WE, that haue conquer'd still, to saue the conquer'd,  
And lou'd to make inflictions feard, not felt ;

Griev'd to reprove, and ioyfull to reward,

More proud of reconclement, then reuenge,

Resume into the late state of our loue, 5

Worthy CORNELIVS GALLVS, and TIBVLLVS.

You both are gentlemen ; <and> you, CORNELIVS,

IV. ix. 95 me, Q 97 Exit. Iulia. add Q: Julia retires from the  
window G 106 OVID !] Ouid, Q 109 Exit. | Finit Actus Quartus.  
add Q v. 1 Act v. Scene I ] ACTVS QVINTVS | SCENA PRIMA Q ACT V.  
SCENE I. | An Apartment in the Palace. | Enter Cæsar . . and Equites  
Romani. G CÆSAR, GALLVS] Cesar Pallus Q I WE] Ces.  
WE Q 3 reprove] reprove Q 4 then] than F2 7 gentlemen, you  
F2: Knights; and you, Q gentlemen, you F1: gentlemen, and you G

- A souldier of renowne ; and the first *prouost*,  
 That euer let our *Roman* eagles flie
- 10 On swarthy *Ægypt*, quarried with her spoiles.  
 Yet (not to beare cold formes, nor mens out-termes,  
 Without the inward fires, and hues of men)  
 You both haue vertues, shining through your shapes ;  
 To shew, your titles are not writ on posts,
- 15 Or hollow statues, which the best men are,  
 Without *Promethean* stuffings reacht from heauen !  
 Sweet *poesies* sacred garlands crowne your gentrie :  
 Which is, of all the faculties on earth,  
 The most abstract, and perfect , if shee bee
- 20 True borne, and nurst with all the sciences.  
 Shee can so mould *Rome*, and her monuments,  
 Within the liquid marble of her lines,  
 That they shall stand fresh, and miraculous,  
 Euen, when they mixe with innouating dust ;
- 25 In her sweet streames shall our braue *Roman* spirits  
 Chace, and swim after death, with their choise deeds  
 Shining on their white shoulders , and therein  
 Shall *Tyber*, and our famous riuers fall  
 With such attraction, that th'ambitious line
- 30 Of the round world shall to her center shrinke,  
 To heare their musicke . And, for these high parts,  
 C A E S A R shall reuerence the *Pierian* artes.  
 M E C Œ. Your Maiestics high grace to *poesie*,  
 Shall stand 'gainst all the dull detractions
- 35 Of leaden soules , who (for the vaine assumings  
 Of some, quite worthlesse of her soucraigne wreaths)  
 Containe her worthiest *prophets* in contempt.  
 G A L L. Happy is *Rome* of all earths other states,  
 To haue so true, and great a president,
- 40 For her inferiour spirits to imitate,  
 As C A E S A R is ; who addeth to the sunne,

v 1 reacht] reach't *Fz* heauen ] Heauen *Q* 17 garlands]  
 Gyrlands *Q* gentrie] Knighthoodes *Q* 20 sciences ] Sciences ; *Q*  
 31 And.] And *Q* 32 CAESAR] *Cesar* *Q* 37 Containe] Containe *Q*

Influence, and lustre : in encreasing thus  
His inspirations, kindling fire in vs.

H O R A. P H æ B V S himselfe shall kneele at C A E S A R S  
shrine,  
And deck it with *bay*-garlands dew'd with wine, 45  
To quite the worship C A E S A R does to him :  
Where other Princes, hoisted to their thrones  
By fortunes passionate and disordered power,  
Sit in their height, like clouds, before the sunne,  
Hindring his comforts ; and (by their excesse 50  
Of cold in vertue, and crosse heate in vice)  
Thunder, and tempest, on those learned heads,  
Whom C A E S A R with such honour doth aduance.

T I B V. All humane businesse fortune doth command  
Without all order ; and with her blinde hand, 55  
Shee, blinde, bestowes blinde gifts : that still haue nurst  
They see not who, nor how, but still, the worst.

C A E S. C A E S A R, for his rule, and for so much stuffe  
As fortune puts in his hand, shall dispose it  
(As if his hand had eyes, and soule, in it) 60  
With worth, and iudgement. " Hands, that part with gifts,  
" Or will restraîne their vse, without desert ;  
" Or with a miserie, numm'd to vertues right,  
" Worke, as they had no soule to gouerne them,  
" And quite reiect her . seu'ring their estates 65  
" From humane order. Whosoeuer can,  
" And will not cherish vertue, is no man.

E Q V E S. V I R G I L is now at hand, imperiall C A E S A R.

C A E S. *Romes* honour is at hand then. Fetch a chaire,  
And set it on our right hand ; where 'tis fit, 70  
*Romes* honour, and our owne, should euer sit.  
Now he is come out of *Campania*,  
I doubt not, he hath finisht all his *Æneids*,  
Which, like another soule, I long t'enioy. 74

v. 1. 45 *bay*-garlands dew'd] *Bay* Gyrlands deaw'd Q 46 quite] quit Fa 52 Thunder.] Thunder Q 54 businesse] businesse, Q 62 desert.] desert, Fa 65 seu'ring] seuering Q After 67 Enter some of the Equestrian order. G 70 right hand] right-hand Fa 73 not.] not Q



\**Viz.* What thinke \*you three, of VIRGIL, gentlemen,  
*Mecenas,* (That are of his profession, though rankt higher)  
*Gallus,* Or HORACE, what saist thou, that art the poorest,  
*Tibullus* And likeliest to enuy, or to detract ?

HORACE. CAESAR speakes after common men, in this,  
 80 To make a difference of me, for my poorenesse : \*

As if the filth of pouertie sunke as deepe  
 Into a knowing spirit, as the bane  
 Of riches doth, into an ignorant soule  
 No, CAESAR, they be path-lesse, moorish minds,

85 That being once made rotten with the dung  
 Of damned riches, euer after sinke  
 Beneath the steps of any villanie.

But knowledge is the *nectar*, that keepes sweet  
 A perfect soule, euen in this graue of sinne ,

90 And for my soule, it is as free, as CAESARS :  
 For, what I know is due, I'll giue to all.

" He that detracts, or enuies vertuous merit,  
 " Is still the couetous, and the ignorant spirit.

CAESAR. Thanks, HORACE, for thy free, and holsome  
 sharpnesse :

95 Which pleaseth CAESAR more, then seruile fawnes.  
 " A flattered prince soone turnes the prince of fooles.

And for thy sake, wee'll put no difference more  
 Betweene the great, and good, for being poore.

Say then, lou'd HORACE, thy true thought of VIRGIL.

100 HORA. I iudge him of a rectified spirit,  
 By many reuolutions of discourse  
 (In his bright reasons influence) refin'd  
 From all the tartarous moodes of common men ;  
 Bearing the nature, and similitude

105 Of a right heauenly bodie · most seuer  
 In fashion, and collection of himselfe,

v. 1 73 \*you] you Q *Marginal note not in Q* 84 No, CAESAR,  
 No Casar, Q 89 soule,] Soule Q 94 holsome] wholesome Fa  
 95 then] than Fa 98 Betweene good] Twixt Knights, and Knightly  
 spirits Q 102 reasons Q, corr. Fa, Fa reason Fa originally 105  
 bodie corr. Fa. Bodie; Q bodie, Fa originally, Fa 106 himselfe,  
 corr. Fa himselfe, Q : himselfe Fa originally, Fa

And then as cleare, and confident, as I O V E.

G A L L. And yet so chaste, and tender is his eare,  
In suffering any syllable to passe,  
That, he thinkes, may become the honour'd name 110  
Of issue to his so examin'd selfe ;  
That all the lasting fruits of his full merit  
In his owne *poemes*, he doth still distaste :  
As if his mindes peece, which he stroue to paint,  
Could not with fleshly pencils haue her right. 115

T I B V. But, to approue his workes of soueraigne worth,  
This obseruation (me thinkes) more then serues :  
And is not vulgar. That, which he hath writ,  
Is with such iudgement, labour'd, and distill'd  
Through all the needfull vses of our liues, 120  
That could a man remember but his lines,  
He should not touch at any serious point,  
But he might breathe his spirit out of him.

C A E S. You meane, he might repeat part of his workes,  
As fit for any conference, he can vse ? 125

T I B V. True, royall C A E S A R. C A E S. Worthily  
obseru'd :

And a most worthie vertue in his workes.  
What thinks materiall H O R A C E, of his learning ?

H O R A. His learning labours not the schoole-like  
glosse,  
That most consists in *echoing* wordes, and termes, 130  
And soonest wins a man an empty name :  
Nor any long, or far-fetcht circumstance,  
Wrapt in the curious generalities of artes :  
But a direct, and *analyticke* summe  
Of all the worth and first effects of artes. 135  
And for his *poesie*, 'tis so ramm'd with life,  
That it shall gather strength of life, with being,  
And liue hereafter, more admir'd, then now.

v. 1. 109 any] in any Q 117 then] than F<sub>2</sub> 123 breathe] breath Q  
126 True] Trew Q Worthily] 'Tis worthily Q 128 thinks] thinks, Q  
129 labours] savours F<sub>2</sub> 132 far-fetcht] far-fetch F<sub>3</sub> 133  
generalities] General'ties Q 137 being,] being; Q 138 then] than F<sub>2</sub>

CAES. This one consent, in all your doomes of him,  
 140 And mutuall loues of all your seuerall merits,  
 Argues a trueth of merit in you all.

*Act v. Scene II.*

CAESAR, VIRGIL, MECÆNAS, GAL-  
 LVS, TIBVLLVS, HORACE,  
 EQVITES RO.

SEe, here comes VIRGIL; we will rise and greet him :  
 Welcome to CAESAR, VIRGIL. CAESAR, and  
 VIRGIL

Shall differ but in sound; to CAESAR, VIRGIL  
 (Of his expressed greatnesse) shall be made

5 A second sur-name, and to VIRGIL, CAESAR.

Where are thy famous *Aeneids*? doe vs grace  
 To let vs see, the surfet on their sight.

VIRG Worthlesse they are of CAESARS gracious eyes,  
 If they were perfect; much more with their wants :  
 10 Which yet are more, then my time could supply.  
 And, could great CAESARS expectation  
 Be satisfied with any other seruice,  
 I would not shew them CAES. VIRGIL is too modest ;  
 Or seekes, in vaine, to make our longings more.  
 15 Shew them, sweet VIRGIL. VIRG. Then, in such due  
 feare,

As fits presenters of great workes, to CAESAR,  
 I humbly shew them CAES. Let vs now behold  
 A humane soule made visible in life ;  
 And more refulgent in a senselesse paper,  
 20 Then in the sensuall complement of Kings.  
 Read, read, thy selfe, deare VIRGIL, let not me  
 Prophane one accent, with an vtun'd tongue :

v. II *Act v Scene II* ] SCENA SECVNDA Q *Enter Virgil. G. continuing*  
*the scene* 1 See] *Caesar* See Q 5 sur-name,] *Sir-name*, Q :  
 sur-name, F2 9 more] *more*, Q 10 then] *than* F2 supply.]  
 supply. Q 17 them ] *them*. Q 20 Then] *Than* F2 21 VIRGIL,]  
 VIRGIL; F2 22 vtun'd] *untuned* F2

" Best matter, badly showne, shewes worse, then bad.  
See then, this chaire, of purpose set for thee  
To reade thy *poeme* in : refuse it not. 25  
" Vertue, without presumption, place may take  
" Aboue best Kings, whom onely she should make.

VIRG. It will be thought a thing ridiculous  
To present eyes, and to all future times  
A grosse vntruth ; that any *poet* (void 30  
Of birth, or wealth, or temporall dignity)  
Should, with *decorum*, transcend CÆSARS chaire.

" Poore vertue rais'd, high birth and wealth set vnder,  
" Crosseth heau'ns courses, and makes worldlings wonder.  
CÆS. The course of heauen, and fate it selfe, in this 35  
Will CÆSAR crosse ; much more all worldly custome.

HOR. " Custome, in course of honour, euer erres :  
" And they are best, whom fortune least preferres.

CÆS. HORACE hath (but more strictly) spoke our  
thoughts.

The vast rude swinge of generall confluence 40  
Is, in particular ends, exempt from sense :  
And therefore reason (which in right should be  
The speciall rector of all *harmonie*)  
Shall shew we are a man, distinct by it,  
From those, whom custome rapteth in her preasse. 45  
Ascend then, VIRGIL : and where first by chance  
We here haue turn'd thy booke, doe thou first reade.

VIRG. Great CÆSAR hath his will · I will ascend.  
'Twere simple iniurie to his free hand,  
That sweepes the cobwebs, from vn-vs'd vertue, 50  
And makes her shine proportion'd, to her worth,  
To be more nice to entertaine his grace ;  
Then he is choise, and liberall to afford it.

CÆS. Gentlemen of our chamber, guard the doores,  
And let none enter ; peace. Begin, good VIRGIL. 55

v. ii 23 then] than *F2* 34 heau'ns] Heauens *Q* 45 those, whom]  
those that *Q* 46 then,] then *Q* chance] Chaunce *Q* 50 vn-vs'd]  
vnused *Q* 53 Then] Than *F2* 55 enter ; peace *F2* : enter.  
Peace *Q* : enter, peace *F1*. enter, [*Exeunt Equites.*] peace *G*

Virg  
lib 4.  
Æneid

- VIRG. Meane while, the skies 'gan thunder ; and in taile  
Of that, fell powing stormes of sleet, and haile :  
The Tyrian lords, and Trojan youth, each where  
\*Iulus With VENVS Dardane \* nephew, now, in feare  
60 Seeke out for seuerall shelter through the plaine ;  
Whil'st flouds come rowling from the hills amaine.  
\*Æneas DIDO a caue, The Trojan \* Prince the same  
\*Iuno. Lighted vpon. There, earth, and heauens great \* dame,  
That hath the charge of marriage, first gaue signe  
65 Vnto this contract ; fire, and aire did shine,  
As guilth of the match ; and from the hill  
The nymphs, with shriekings, doe the region fill.  
Here first began their bane ; This day was ground  
Of all their ills : For now, nor rumours sound,  
70 Nor nice respect of state mooues DIDO ought ;  
Her loue, no longer now, by stealth is sought :  
Shee calls this wedlocke, and with that faire name  
Couers her fault Forth-with the bruit, and fame,  
Through all the greatest Lybian townes, is gone ;  
75 Fame, a fleet euill, then which is swifter none :  
That mousing growes, and flying gathers strength ;  
Little at first, and fearefull ; but at length  
Shee dares attempt the skies, and stalking proud  
With feet on ground, her head doth pierce a cloud !  
80 This child, our parent earth, stird vp with spight  
Of all the gods, brought forth ; and, as some wright,  
Shee was last sister of that Giant \* race,  
That thought to scale LOVES court ; right swift of pase,  
And swifter, far, of wing : a monster vast,  
85 And dreadfull. Looke, how many plumes are plac't  
On her huge corps, so many waking eyes  
Sticke vnderneath : and (which may stranger rise  
In the report) as many tongues shee beares,  
As many mouthes, as many listning eares.

\*Carus,  
Encela-  
dus, &c

v 11. 56 'gan] gan Q 63 vpon] vpon, Q earth,] earth F2 65  
fire] Fier Q 66 hill] Hill, Q 67 shriekings] shriekings Q (80 91)  
75 then] than F2 76 mousing] moousing Q 79 pierce] pearce Q  
81 forth] foorth Q wright] write F2 85 dreadfull] dreadfull : Q

Nightly, in midst of all the heauen, shee flies, 90  
 And through the earths darke shadow, shrieking, cries ;  
 Nor doe her eyes once bend, to taste sweet sleepe :  
 By day, on tops of houses, shee doth keepe,  
 Or on high towers ; and doth thence affright  
 Cities, and townes of most conspicuous site. 95  
 As couetous shee is of tales, and lies,  
 As prodigall of truth : This monster, &c.

Act v. Scene III.

LVPVS, TVCCA, CRISPINVS, DEMETRIVS,  
 HISTRIO, LICTORS, CÆSAR, VIR-  
 GIL, MECÆNAS, GALLVS,  
 TIBVLLVS, HORACE,  
 EQVITES RO

Come, follow me, assist me, second me : where's the  
 Emperour ?

EQVES I. Sir, you must pardon vs.

EQVES 2. CÆSAR is priuate now, you may not  
 enter. 5

TVCC. Not enter ? Charge 'hem, vpon their allegeance,  
 crop-shin.

EQVES I. We haue a charge to the contrary, sir.

LVPV. I pronounce you all traytors, horrible traytors :  
 What ? doe you know my affaires ? 10

I haue matter of danger, and state, to impart to CÆSAR.

CAES. What noise is there ? who's that names CÆSAR ?

LVPV. A friend to CÆSAR One that for CÆSARS  
 good, would speake with CÆSAR.

CAES. Who is't ? looke, CORNELIVS. 15

EQVES I. ASINIVS LVPVS.

v. iii Act v. Scene III.] SCENA TERTIA. Q G continues the scene.  
 1 Come] Lupus Come Q Lup. [within] Come G, who marks the speeches  
 of Lupus and the Equites to 28' within 4 now,] now ; Fg 12  
 What] What, Q that] that, Q 14 good,] good Q

CAES. O, bid the turbulent informer hence ;  
 We haue no vacant eare, now, to receiue  
 The vnseason'd fruits of his officious tongue.

20 MECÆ. You must auoid him there.

LVPV. I coniure thee, as thou art CAESAR, or  
 respect'st thine owne safetie ; or the safetie of the state,  
 CAESAR : Heare mee, speake with mee, CAESAR ;  
 'tis no common businesse, I come about ; but such as, being  
 25 neglected, may concerne the life of CAESAR.

CAES. The life of CAESAR ? Let him enter.  
 VIRGIL, keepe thy seat.

EQVITES. Beare backe there : whither will you ?  
 keepe backe.

30 TVCC. By thy leaue good man vs her · mend thy  
 perruke, so.

LVPV. Lay hold on HORACE there ; and on  
 MECÆNAS, *Lictors*. *Romans*, offer no rescue, vpon your  
 allegiance : Reade, royall CAESAR ; I'le tickle you,  
 35 *Satyre*.

TVCC. He will, *humours*, he will : He will squeeze you,  
*Poet* puckfist.

LVPV. I'le lop you off, for an vnprofitable branch, you  
*satyricall* varlet.

40 TVCC. I, and EPAMINONDAS your patron, here,  
 with his flaggon chaine ; Come, resigne : Though 'twere  
 your great-grand-fathers, the law ha's made it mine now,  
 sir. Looke to him, my party-colour'd rascalls ; looke to him.

CAES. What is this, ASINIVS LVPVS ? I vnder-  
 45 stand it not.

LVPV. Not vnderstand it ? A libell, CAESAR. A  
 dangerous, seditious libell. A libell in picture.

CAES. A libell ?

LVPV. I, I found it in this HORACE his studie, in

v. iii. 21 thee,] thee, Q 28 whither] whether Q After 29 Enter  
*Lupus, Tucca, and Lictors* G 31 perruke,] Perwig, Q : perruke,  
*Fa* 34 Reade,] Read Q 36 *humours*] *Humors* Q 38 branch]  
 braunch Q 42 great-grand-] great Graund- Q · great grand- *Ff* 49  
 studie,] study ; Q

M E C Æ N A S his house, here ; I challenge the penaltie of 50  
the lawes against 'hem.

T V C C. I, and remember to begge their land betimes ;  
before some of these hungrie court-hounds sent it out.

C A E S. Shew it to H O R A C E : Aske him, if he know it.

L V P V. Know it ? His hand is at it, C A E S A R. 55

C A E S. Then 'tis no libell.

H O R A. It is the imperfect body of an *emblem*,  
C A E S A R, I began for M E C Æ N A S.

L V P V. An *emblem* ? right : That's *greeke* for a libell. Doe  
but marke, how confident he is 60

H O R A. A iust man cannot feare, thou foolish *Tribune* ;  
Not, though the malice of traducing tongues,  
The open vastnesse of a tyrannes eare,  
The senselesse rigour of the wrested lawes,  
Or the red eyes of strain'd authoritie 65  
Should, in a point, meet all to take his life.  
His innocence is armour 'gainst all these.

L V P V. Innocence ! ô, impudence ! Let mee see, let mee  
see. Is not here an Eagle ? And is not that Eagle meant by  
C A E S A R ? ha ? Doe's not C A E S A R giue the eagle ? 70  
Answer me ; what saist thou ?

T V C C. Hast thou any euasion, stinkard ?

L V P V. Now hee's turn'd dumbe. I'll tickle you, *Satyre*.

H O R A. Pish. Ha, ha

L V P V. Dost thou pish me ? Giue me my long-sword. 75

H O R A. With reuerence to great C A E S A R, worthy  
*Romans*,

Obserue but this ridiculous commenter :

The soule to my *deuice*, was in this *distich*.

*Thus, oft, the base and rauenuous multitude*

*Suruiue, to share the spoiles of fortitude.* 80

Which in this body, I haue figur'd here,

A VULTURE——

v. iii. 53 sent] scent F3 58 Doe begins a new line in Ff. 63  
tyrannes] Tyrants Q 64 rigour] Rigor Q 66 life.] life. Q 68  
ô,] ô Q 78 distich] Distich F2 80 Suruiue] Suruiues F2 fortitude.]  
Fortitude : Q 81 here,] here, Q



LVPV. A Vulture? I; now, 'tis a Vulture. O, abominable! monstrous! monstrous! ha's not your Vulture a  
85 beake? ha's it not legges? and tallons? and wings?  
and feathers?

TVCC. Touch him, old *Buskins*.

HORA. And therefore must it be an Eagle?

MECÆ. Respect him not, good HORACE: Say your  
90 *device*.

HORA. AVULTVRE, and a WOLFE—

LVPV. A Wolfe? good. That's I; I am the wolfe. My  
name's LVPVS, I am meant by the wolfe. On, on, a  
Vulture, and a Wolfe—

95 HORA. Preying vpon the carcassee of an ASSE—

LVPV. An Asse? Good still: That's I, too. I am the  
asse. You meane me by the asse—

MECÆ. 'Pray thee, leaue braying then.

HORA. If you will needes take it, I cannot with modestie  
100 gue it from you.

MECÆ. But, by that beast, the old *Ægyptians*

Were wont to figure in their *hieroglyphicks*,

Patience, frugalitie, and fortitude;

For none of which, we can suspect you, *Tribune*.

105 CAES. Who was it, LVPVS, that inform'd you first,  
This should be meant by vs? or was't your comment?

LVPV. No, CAESAR: A player gaue mee the first  
light of it, indeede

TVCC. I, an honest sycophant-like slaue, and a politician,  
110 besides.

CAES. Where is that player?

TVCC. He is without, here.

CAES. Call him in.

TVCC. Call in the player, there: Master *Æsop*,  
115 call him.

v. iii. 83-4 abominable] abominable Q 91 VULTVRE,] VULTVRE  
Q 93 LVPVS,] *Lupus*, Q on,] on, Q 95 Preying]  
Praying Q 97 You begins a new line in Ff asse—]  
Asse. Q 98 'Pray thee] 'Pr'y thee F2 101 *Ægyptians*  
*Egyptians* F2

E Q V I T E S. Player? where is the player? Beare backe :  
None, but the player, enter.

T V C C. Yes : this gent'man, and his *Achates* must.

C R I S. 'Pray you, master vsher ; wee'll stand close, here.

T V C C. 'Tis a gent'man of qualitie, this ; though he be <sup>120</sup>  
somewhat out of clothes, I tell yee. Come *Æsop* : hast  
a bay-leafe i' thy mouth? Well said, be not out, stinkard.  
Thou shalt haue a *monopoly* of playing, confirm'd to thee  
and thy couey, vnder the Emperours broad seale, for this  
seruice. 125

C A E S. Is this hee?

L V P V. I, C A E S A R : this is hee.

C A E S. Let him be whipt. L I C T O R S, goe take him  
hence.

And L V P V S, for your fierce credulitie,  
One fit him with a paire of larger eares : 130  
'Tis C A E S A R S doome, and must not be reuok't.  
We hate, to haue our court, and peace disturb'd  
With these quotidian clamours. See it done.

L V P V. C A E S A R. C A E S. Gag him, we may haue his  
silence.

V I R G. C A E S A R hath done like C A E S A R. Faire, <sup>135</sup>  
and iust

Is his award, against these brainelesse creatures.  
'Tis not the wholesome sharpe moralitie,  
Or modest anger of a *satyricke* spirit,  
That hurts, or wounds the bodie of a state ;  
But the sinister application 140  
Of the malicious, ignorant, and base  
Interpreter : who will distort, and straine  
The generall scope and purpose of an authour,  
To his particular, and priuate spleene.

C A E S. We know it, our deare V I R G I L, and esteeme it <sup>145</sup>

v. iii. After 117 Enter *Æsop*, followed by *Crispinus* and *Demetrius*. G  
118, 120 gent'man] gentleman F2 122 bay-leafe] Bay leafe Q  
said,] said, Q 124 coney] convey F2: Convoy F3 128 goe] Goe,  
Q 134 After 'CÆSAR' *Exeunt some of the Lictors, with Lupus and*  
*Æsop*. G we] that we G 141 malicious] malicious Q 143 authour]  
Author Q 145 VIRGIL,] *Virgill*: Q

A most dishonest practice, in that man,  
Will seeme too wittie in anothers worke.

*This  
while the  
rest  
whisper  
Cæsar*

What would CORNELIVS GALLVS, and TIBVLLVS?

T V C C. Nay, but as thou art a man, do'st heare? a man  
of worship; and honourable: Holde, here, take thy chaine  
agaïne. Resume, mad MECÆNAS. What? do'st thou  
152 thinke, I meant t' haue kept it, bold boy? No; I did it but  
to fright thee, I, to try how thou would'st take it. What?  
will I turne sharke, vpon my friends? or my friends  
155 friends? I scorne it with my three soules. Come, I loue  
bully HORACE, as well as thou do'st, I: 'tis an honest  
*hieroglyphick*. Giue mee thy wrist, *Helicon*. Do'st thou  
thinke, I'le second e're a *rhinoceros* of them all, against thee?  
ha? or thy noble *Hippocrene*, here? I'le turne stager first,  
160 and be whipt too: do'st thou see, bully?

CAES. You haue your will of CAESAR: vse it  
*Romanes*.

VIRGIL shall be your *Prætor*; and our selfe  
Will here sit by, spectator of your sports;  
And thinke it no impeach of royaltie.

165 Our eare is now too much prophan'd (graue MARO)  
With these distates, to take thy sacred lines.  
Put vp thy booke, till both the time and wee  
Be fitted with more hallow'd circumstance  
For the receiuing so diuine a worke.

170 Proceede with your desseigne.

MECÆ. GALL. TIBV. Thankes, to great CAESAR.

GALL. TIBVLLVS, draw you the inditement then,  
whilst HORACE arrests them, on the *statute* of *Calumny*:  
MECÆNAS, and I, will take our places here. *Lictors*,  
175 assist him.

HORACE. I am the worst accuser, vnder heauen.

GALL. Tut, you must do't: 'Twill be noble mirth.

v. iii. 148 *Stage-direction not in Q* 151 againe] againe: Q  
152 bold] *old Q*, G 153 I, to] I to Q 155 Come,] Come; Q  
157 wrist,] wrist Q 168 hallow'd] hallowed Q, Ff 169 worke]  
Labour Q 170 desseigne] *designe F2* 171 Thankes,] Thanks Q  
174 I,] I Q here,] here; Q 177 do't] —do it G

H O R A. I take no knowledge, that they doe maligne me.

T I B V. I, but the world takes knowledge. H O R A.

'Would the world knew,

How heartily I wish, a foole should hate me. 180

T V C C. Body of I V P I T E R ! What ? Will they arraigne  
my briske P O E T A S T E R, and his poore journey-man, ha ?  
Would I were abroad skeldring for a drachme, so I were out  
of this labyrinth againe . I doe feele my selfe turne stinkard,  
already. But I must set the best face I haue, vpon't now : 185  
well said, my diuine, deft H O R A C E, bring the whorson  
detracting slaues to the barre, doe. Make 'hem hold vp  
their spread golls : I'le giue in euidence for thee, if thou  
wilt. Take courage, C R I S P I N V S, would thy man had  
a cleane band. 190

C R I S. What must we doe, Captaine ?

T V C C. Thou shalt see anon . Doe not make diuision  
with thy legs, so

C A E S. What's he, H O R A C E ?

H O R A. I only know him for a motion, C A E S A R. 195

T V C C. I am one of thy Commanders, C A E S A R ; A  
man of seruice, and action ; My name is P A N T I L I V S  
T V C C A. I haue seru'd i' thy warres against M A R K E  
A N T O N Y, I.

C A E S. Doe you know him, C O R N E L I V S ? 200

G A L L. Hee's one, that hath had the mustring, or conuoy  
of a companie, now, and then . I neuer noted him by any  
other imployment.

C A E S. We will obserue him better.

T I B V. L I C T O R, proclaime silence, in the court. 205

L I C T. In the name of C A E S A R, silence.

T I B V. Let the parties, the accuser, and the accused,  
present themselves.

v. iii. 179 H O R A. 'Would begins a new line in Ff 'Would] Would F2  
knew,] knew Q 183 a drachme] Twopence Q 184 this] his F2  
stinkard,] Stinkard Q 186 H O R A C E,] Horace ; Q 187 doe] doe,  
Q 189 courage, C R I S P I N V S,] courage Crispinus, Q. courage,  
C R I S P I N U S, F2 199 A N T O N Y,] Antony ; Q 208 themselves]  
them selues Q

LICT. The accuser, and the accused; present your  
210 selues in court.

CRIS. DEMETRIVS. Here.

VIRG. Reade the inditement.

TIBV. RVFVS LABERIVS CRISPINVS, and  
DEMETRIVS FANNIVS, hold vp your hands. You are,  
215 before this time, ioynly and seuerally indited, and here  
presently to be arraigned, vpon the Statute of Calumny, or  
Lex Remmia (The one by the name of RVFVS LABERIVS  
CRISPINVS, aliàs CRISPINAS, Poetaster, and plagi-  
ary. the other, by the name of DEMETRIVS FANNIVS,  
220 play-dresser, and plagiary) That you (not hauing the feare of  
PHÆBUS, or his shafts, before your eyes) contrary to the  
peace of our liege lord, AVGVSTVS CAESAR, his crowne  
and dignitie, and against the forme of a Statute, in that case  
made, and prouided; haue most ignorantly, foolishly, and  
225 (more like your selues) maliciously, gone about to depraue, and  
calumniate the person and writings of QVINTVS HORA-  
CIVS FLACCVS, here present, poet, and priest to the  
Muses: and to that end haue mutually conspir'd, and plotted,  
at sundry times, as by seuerall meanes, and in sundry places,  
230 for the better accomplishing your base and enuious purpose;  
taxing him, falsly, of selfe-loue, arrogancy, impudence,  
rayling, filching by translation, &c. Of all which calumnies,  
and euery of them, in manner and forme aforesaid, what  
answere you? Are you guiltie, or not guiltie?

235 TVCC. Not guiltie, say.

CRIS. DEMET. Not guiltie.

TIBV. How will you be tryed?

TVCC. By the *Romane* Gods, and the noblest *Romanes*.

CRIS. DEMET. By the *Romane* Gods, and the noblest  
240 *Romanes*.

VIRG. Here sits MECÆNAS, and CORNELIVS  
GALLVS:

v.iii. 215 *indited*,] *indited*, Q 219 *other*,] *other* Q 220 *-dresser*,] *-dresser* Q  
221 PHÆBUS,] Phœbus Q 223 Statute,] Statute Q 226-7 HORACIVS]  
Horatius Q (cf. 596) 231 *falsly*] *falsely* Q selfe-loue] Sefe loue Q  
233 *them*,] *ihem* Q aforesaid,] aforesaid, F2 241 GALLVS:] GALLUS. F2

Are you contented to be tryed by these ?

T v c c. I, so the noble Captaine may bee ioyn'd with them in commission, say.

C R I S. D E M E T. I, so the noble Captaine may bee 245  
ioyn'd with them in commission.

V I R G. What sayes the plaintife ?

H O R A. I am content.

V I R G. Captaine, then take your place.

T v c c. Alas, my worshipfull *Prætor* ! 'tis more of thy 250  
gent'nesse, then of my deseruing, Iwusse. But, since it  
hath pleas'd the court to make choice of my wisdome, and  
grautie, come, my calumnious varlets : Let's heare you  
talke for your selues, now, an houre or two. What can you  
say ? Make a noise. Act, act. 255

V I R G. Stay, turne, and take an oath first. *You shall  
swear,*

*By thunder-darting I O V E, the King of gods ;  
And by the Genius of A V G V S T V S C A E S A R ;  
By your owne white, and uncorrupted soules ;  
And the deepe reuerence of our Romane iustice ; 260  
To iudge this case, with truth and equitie :  
As bound, by your religion, and your lawes.*

Now reade the euidence : But first demand

Of either prisoner, if that *writ* be theirs.

T I B V. Shew this vnto C R I S P I N V S. Is it yours ? 265

T v c c. Say I what ? dost thou stand vpon it, pimpe ?  
Doe not denie thine owne M I N E R V A, thy P A L L A S, the  
issue of thy braine.

C R I S. Yes, it is mine.

T I B V. Shew that vnto D E M E T R I V S. Is it yours ? 270

D E M E. It is.

T v c c. There's a father, will not denie his owne bastard,  
now, I warrant thee.

V. III. 243, 245 I.] I, Q 244 commission.] Commission ; Q 247  
plaintife?] Plaintife Q 249 then] than F2 253 grautie.] gravitie ;  
F2 come.] Come Q 254 selues.] selues Q 256 Stay.] Stay ; Q  
262 bound.] The comma is faint in some copies of F1 263 demand]  
demaund Q 266 I ] I. Q 267 MINERVA, .. PALLAS.] *Minerua ;  
... Pallas*, Q

VIRG. Reade them aloud.

- 275 TIBV. *Rampe vp, my genius ; be not retrograde :  
But boldly nominate a spade, a spade.  
What, shall thy lubricall and glibberie Muse  
Lue, as shee were defunct, like punke in stewes ?  
(TVCC. Excellent !)*
- 280 *Alas ! That were no moderne consequence,  
To haue cothurnall buskins frighted hence  
No , teach thy incubus to poetize ,  
And throw abroad thy spurious snotteries,  
Vpon that puffed-up lump of barmy froth,*
- 285 *(TVCCA. Ah, ha !)*  
*Or clumsie chil-blain'd iudgement , that, with oath,  
Magnificates his merit , and bespawles  
The conscous time, with humorous some, and  
brawles,  
As if his organons of sense would crack*
- 290 *The sinewes of my patience. Breake his back,  
O Poets all, and some : For now we list  
Of strenuous venge-ance to clutch the fist.*

Subscri CRIS.

- TVCC. I mary, this was written like a HERCVLES  
295 in *poetrie*, now.

CAES. Excellently well threatned !

VIRG. I, and as strangely worded, CAESAR.

CAES. We obserue it.

VIRG. The other, now.

- 300 TVCC. This's a fellow of a good prodigall tongue too ;  
this'll doe wel

TIBV. *Our Muse is in mind for th'untrussing a poet,  
I slip by his name , for most men doe know it :*

v iii 279 (TVCC Q. F1 —(TVCC F2 (to harmonize with 285 foll.)  
Excellent !] Excellent Q 282 No.] No, F2 285-315 F1, followed  
by F2, at first prefixed a dash to Tucca's interjections, except in 279, but  
cancelled it 288 some,] Some, Q brawles, corr F1 brawles Q, F1  
originally brawles F2 290 Breake] Break, F2 291 all,] all Q  
292 venge-ance] vengeance F2 293 CRIS] Cris ahàs, Innocence. Q  
294 mary] marry F2 296 threatned !] threatned. Q 297 I,  
and] And F2 300 too,] too, F2 302 poet, corr F1: Poet: Q:  
poet. F1 originally Poet, F2

*A critick, that all the world bescumbers  
With satyricall humours, and lyricall numbers :* 305

(T v c c. Art thou there, boy ?)

*And for the most part, himselfe doth aduance  
With much selfe-loue, and more arrogance.*

(T v c c. Good againe.)

*And (but that I would not be thought a prater)* 310

*I could tell you, he were a translator.*

*I know the authors from whence he ha's stole,  
And could trace him too, but that I vnderstand 'hem  
not full and whole.*

(T v c c. That line is broke loose from all  
his fellowes' chaine him vp shorter, doe ) 315

*The best note I can giue you to know him by,*

*Is, that he keepes gallants company ;*

*Whom I would wish, in time should him feare,*

*Lest after they buy repentance too deare.*

Subscri. D E M E. F A N. 320

T v c c. Well said. This carries palme with it.

H o r a. And why, thou motly gull ? why should they  
feare ?

When hast thou knowne vs wrong, or taxe a friend ?

I dare thy malice, to betray it. Speake.

Now thou curl'st vp, thou poore, and nasty snake, 325

And shrink'st thy poys'nous head into thy bosome :

Out viper, thou that eat'st thy parents, hence.

Rather, such speckled creatures, as thy selfe,

Should be eschew'd, and shund . such, as will bite

And gnaw their absent friends, not cure their fame, 330

Catch at the loosest laughter, and affect

To be thought iesters, such, as can deuise

Things neuer seene, or heard, t' impaire mens names,

v. iii. 305 *humours*] *Humors* Q 308 *arrogance* corr F1, F2 .

*Arrogance* Q . *arrogance* F1 originally 309 *Good againe*] *Good :*

*Againe* Q 318 *would*] *could* F2 319 *Lesf*] *Least* Q 320 D E M E.

F A N.] De. Fannius Q 321 *palme*] *'palme* F2, F3 325 *poore,*

*poore* Q . *snake,* corr F1, F2 *Snake,* Q . *snake,* F1 originally

326 *poys'nous*] *poysnous* Q 327 *viper,*] *Viper,* Q 330 *fame,*]

*Fame,* Q . *fame,* F2 332 *iesters,*] *iesters,* Q . *jesters ;* F2



- And gratifie their credulous aduersaries,  
 335 Will carrie tales, doe basest offices,  
 Cherish diuided fires, and still increase  
 New flames, out of old embers, will reueale  
 Each secret that's committed to their trust,  
 These be black slaues · *Romans*, take heed of these.
- 340 T v c c. Thou twang'st right, little H o r a c e ; they be  
 indeed a couple of chap-falne curre. Come, We of the  
 bench, let's rise to the *vrne*, and condemne 'hem, quickly.  
 V i r g. Before you goe together (worthy *Romans*)  
 We are to tender our opinion ;
- 345 And giue you those instructions, that may adde  
 Vnto your euen iudgement in the cause :  
 Which thus we doe commence. First, you must know  
 That where there is a true, and perfect merit,  
 There can bee no deiection ; and the scorne
- 350 Of humble basenesse, oftentimes, so workes  
 In a high soule vpon the grosser spirit,  
 That to his bleared, and offended sense,  
 There seemes a hideous fault blaz'd in the obiect;  
 When only the disease is in his eyes.
- 355 Here-hence it comes, our H o r a c e now stands taxt  
 Of impudence, selfe-loue, and arrogance,  
 By these, who share no merit in themselues ;  
 And therefore, thinke his portion is as small.  
 For they, from their owne guilt, assure their soules,
- 360 If they should confidently praise their workes,  
 In them it would appeare inflation :  
 Which, in a full, and wel-digested man,  
 Cannot receiue that foule abusiue name,  
 But the faire title of erection.
- 365 And, for his true vse of translating men,

v.iii. 334 aduersaries,] Aduersaries, Q. aduersaries; F2 335 tales, .  
 offices,] Tales, . . offices, Q 336 still not in Q 337 embers,]  
 Embers, Q. embers, F2 338 trust,] Trust Q trust; F2 340-2  
 Three lines of verse in Q, Ff divided at 'indeed A . . bench, Let's'  
 340 HORACE, F2. Horace, Q HORACE, F1 341 indeed F2 indeed:  
 Q, F1 347 commence ] Commence' Q First, Q First Ff 348 true,  
 Q: true Ff 351 spirit,] Spirit; Q 355 taxt] tax't F2 365 true] trew Q

It still hath bin a worke of as much palme  
 In clearest iudgements, as t' inuent, or make.  
 His sharpenesse, that is most excusable ;  
 As being forc't out of a suffering vertue,  
 Oppressed with the licence of the time : 370  
 And howsoever fooles, or ierking *pedants*,  
 Players, or such like *buffon*, barking wits,  
 May with their beggerly, and barren trash,  
 Tickle base vulgar eares, in their despight ,  
 Thus (like I o v e s thunder) shall their pride controule, 375  
 " The honest *Satyre* hath the happiest soule.  
 Now, *Romans*, you haue heard our thoughts. With-draw,  
 when you please.

T I B V. Remoue the accused from the barre.

T v c c. Who holds the *vrne* to vs ? ha ? Feare nothing : 380  
 I'll quit you, mine honest pittifull stinkards. I'll do't.

C R I S. Capitaine, you shall eternally girt me to you, as  
 I am generous.

T v c c. Goe to.

C A E S. T I B V L L V S, let there be a case of vizards 385  
 priuately prouided : we haue found a subiect to bestow  
 them on.

T I B V. It shall be done, C A E S A R.

C A E S Here be wordes, H O R A C E, able to bastinado a  
 mans eares. 390

H O R A. I. Please it great C A E S A R, I haue pills  
 about me

(Mixt with the whitest kind of *ellebore*)

Would giue him a light vomit ; that should purge  
 His braine, and stomack of those tumorous heates :  
 Might I haue leaue to minister vnto him. 395

C A E S. O ! be his Æ s c v l a p i v s, gentle H O R A C E ;  
 You shall haue leaue, and he shall be your patient.

V I R G I L, vse your authoritie, command him forth.

v. iii 366 bin] beene Q, Fa 372 *buffon*, barking] *Buffonary* Q.  
*buffons*, barking Fa 374 despight] despite Fa 375 controule,]  
 controule Q 376 italicized in Q 377 thoughts ] thoughts ; Fa  
 396 his] as Q 398 command] commaund Q

VIRG. CAESAR is carefull of your health, CRISPINS;

400 And hath himselfe chose a physitian

To minister vnto you : take his pills.

HOR. They are somewhat bitter, sir, but very wholesome ;

Take yet another, so : Stand by, they'll worke anon.

TIBV. *Romans*, returne to your seuerall seates *Lictors*,  
405 bring forward the *vrne* ; and set the accused at the barre.

TVCC. Quickly, you whorson egregious varlets ; Come forward. What ? shall we sit all day vpon you ? you make no more haste, now, then a begger vpon pattins : or a physitian to a patient that ha's no money, you pilchers

410 TIBV. RVFVS LABERIVS CRISPINS, and DEMETRIVS FANNIVS, *hold vp your hands. You haue (according to the Roman custome) put your selues vpon triall to the vrne, for diuers and sundrie calumnies, whereof, you haue before this time beene indited, and are now presently*  
415 *arraigned : Prepare your selues to harken to the verdict of your Tryers.* CAIVS CILNIVS MECÆNAS *pronounceth you, by this hand-writing, Guiltie* CORNELIVS GALLVS, *Guiltie.* PANTILIVS TVCCA——

TVCC. Parcell-guiltie, I.

420 DEME. He meanes himselfe : for it was he indeed, Suborn'd vs to the calumnie.

TVCC. I, you whorson *cantharides* ? was't I ?

DEME. I appeale to your conscience, Captaine.

TIBV. Then, you confesse it, now.

425 DEME. I doe, and craue the mercy of the court.

TIBV. What saith CRISPINS ?

CRIS. O, the Captaine, the Captaine——

HOR. My physicke begins to worke with my patient, I see.

V. III 402 SIR, not in Q very not in Q 403 yet another, so } another, yet, so Q yet another; so F2 404-5 as verse in Q, divided at 'Lictors, Bring . . . 409 then] than F2 417-19 Confused in Q, which prints— *Guiltie* Corneli-] *Tuc.* Gallus, *Guiltie.* Pantilius Tucca --- ] us Parcell guiltie, I. 427 Captaine—] Captaine Q

VIRG. Capitaine, stand forth and answer. 430

TVCC. Hold thy peace, *Poet Prætor* : I appeale from thee, to CÆSAR, I. Doe me right, royall CÆSAR.

CÆS. Mary, and I will, sir. *Lictors*, gag him : doe. And put a case of vizards o're his head, That he may looke *bi-fronted*, as he speakes. 435

TVCC. Gods, and fiends ! CÆSAR ! thou wilt not, CÆSAR ? wilt thou ? Away, you whorson vultures ; away. You thinke I am a dead *corps* now, because CÆSAR is dispos'd to iest with a man of marke, or so. Hold your hook't talons out of my flesh, you inhumane *Harpies* Goe 440 to, do't. What ? will the royall AVGVSTVS cast away a gent'man of worship, a Capitaine, and a Commander, for a couple of condemn'd cartiue calumnious *Cargo's* ?

CÆS. Dispatch, *Lictors*.

TVCC. CÆSAR. 445

CÆS. Forward, TIBVLLVS.

VIRG. Demand, what cause they had to maligne HORACE

DEME. In troth, no great cause, not I ; I must confesse · but that hee kept better company (for the most part) then 450 I : and that better men lou'd him, then lou'd me : and that his writings thriu'd better then mine, and were better lik't, and grac't · nothing else

VIRG. Thus, enuius soules repine at others good.

HORA. If this be all ; faith, I forgiue thee freely. 455 Enuy me still, so long as VIRGIL loues me, GALLVS, TIBVLLVS, and the best-best CÆSAR, My deare MECÆNAS : while these, with many more. (Whose names I wisely slip) shall thinke me worthy Their honour'd, and ador'd societie, 460

v m. 430 Capitaine, *corr. F1, F2* Capitaine, *Q, F1 originally* 433  
him doe *corr F1, F2* him *Q, F1 originally* 436 Friends !  
*corr. F1* Friends *Q* · fiends *F1 originally* friends ! *F2* Friends !  
*F3* not,] not *Q* 438 now, *corr F1, F2* now, *Q, F1 originally*  
440 *Harpies*] *Gorboduckes* *Q* 442 Commander, *corr F1* Cōmaunder,  
*Q* Commander, *F1 originally* 445 [*The vizards are put upon him.* *G*  
447 Demand] Demaund *Q* 450, 451 then] than *F2* 452 lik't,]  
lik't *Q* 456 still, *corr. F1, F2* still, *Q, F1 originally* 460 honour'd,  
honour'd *Q*

And reade, and loue, proue, and applaud my *poemes* ;  
I would not wish but such as you should spight them.

CRIS. O——

TIBV. How now, CRISPINVS?

465 CRIS. O, I am sicke——

HORA. A bason, a bason, quickly ; our physick works.

Faint not, man.

CRIS. O—*retrograde—reciprocall—incubus*.

CAES. What's that, HORACE?

470 HORA. *Retrograde, reciprocall* and *Incubus* are come vp.

GALL. Thankes be to IVPITER.

CRIS. O—*glibbery—lubricall—defunct—ô——*

HORA. Well said . here's some store.

VIRG. What are they?

475 HORA. *Glibbery, lubricall, and defunct*.

GALL. O, they came vp easie.

CRIS. O—ô——

TIBV. What's that?

HORA. Nothing, yet.

480 CRIS. *Magnificate*.

MECÆ. *Magnificate* ? that came vp somewhat hard.

HORA. I. What cheere, CRISPINVS?

CRIS. O, I shall cast vp my—*spurious—snottories——*

HORA. Good. Againe.

485 CRIS. *Chilblaind—ô—ô—clumsie——*

HORA. That *clumsie* stucke terribly.

MECÆ. What's all that, HORACE?

HORA. *Spurious snottories, chilblain'd, clumsye*.

TIBV. O IVPITER!

490 GALL. Who would haue thought, there should ha' beene  
such a deale of filth in a *poet*?

CRIS. O—*barmy froth——*

CAES. What's that?

CRIS. —*Puffy—inflate—turgidous—ventositous*.

v. iii 461 proue] prooue Q 463 O—] O Q 465 sicke—] sicke. Q  
470 *reciprocall*. *Incubus*] *Reciprocall*, and *Incubus* Q and *reciprocall*,  
*Incubus* F1 originally and *reciprocall Incubus* corr F1, F2 488  
*Spurious*] *Spurious*, Q 494, 495 *ventositous*] *Ventosity* Q

H O R A. *Barmy froth, puffy, inflate, turgidous, and vento- 495*  
*sitous* are come vp.

T I B V. O, terrible, windie wordes !

G A L L. A signe of a windie braine.

C R I S. O—*oblatrant—furibund—fatuate—strenuous—*

H O R A. Here's a deale · *oblatrant, furibund, fatuate, 500*  
*strenuous.*

C A E S. Now, all's come vp, I trow. What a tumult hee  
had in his belly !

H O R A. No : there's the often *conscious dampe* behind,  
still. 505

C R I S. O—*conscious—dampe.*

H O R A. It's come vp, thanks to A P O L L O, and  
Æ S C V L A P I V S · Yet, there's another ; you were best  
take a pill more ?

C R I S. O, no : ô—ô—ô—ô. 510

H O R A. Force your selfe then, a little with your  
finger.

C R I S. O—ô—*prorumped.*

T I B V. *Prorumped* ? What a noise it made ! as if his  
spirit would haue prorump with it. 515

C R I S. O—ô—ô.

V I R G. Helpe him : it stickes strangely, what euer  
it is.

C R I S. O—*clutcht.*

H O R A. Now it's come . *clutcht.* 520

C A E S. *Clutcht* ? It's well, that's come vp ! It had but  
a narrow passage.

C R I S. O—

V I R G. Againe, hold him : hold his head there.

C R I S. *Snarling gusts—quaking custard.* 525

H O R A. How now, C R I S P I N V S ?

C R I S. O—*obstupefact.*

T I B V. Nay : that are all we, I assure you.

v. iii. 499 *oblatrant*] *Oblatrant—Obcæcate* Q 500 *oblatrant*] *Oblatrant,*  
*Obcæcate* Q 504 *dampe* not in Q 506 *conscious—dampe*] *Conscious* Q  
508 Yet begins a new line in Ff 525 *Snarling . . . custard*] *Tropological*  
—*Anagogicall—Loquacity—Pinnosity* Q

- H O R A. How doe you feele your selfe ?
- 530 C R I S. Pretty, and well, I thanke you.
- V I R G. These pills can but restore him for a time ;  
 Not cure him quite of such a maladie,  
 Caught by so many surfets ; which haue fill'd  
 His bloud, and braine, thus full of crudities :
- 535 'Tis necessary, therefore, he obserue  
 A strict and holosome dyet. Looke, you take  
 Each morning, of old C A T O E S principles  
 A good draught, next your heart , that walke vpon,  
 Till it be well digested Then come home,
- 540 And taste a piece of T E R E N C E, sucke his phrase  
 In stead of lycorice ; and, at any hand,  
 Shun P L A V T V S, and old E N N I V S, they are meates  
 Too harsh for a weake stomacke Vse to reade  
 (But not without a *tutor*) the best *Greekes* :
- 545 A S O R P H E V S, M V S A E V S, P I N D A R V S,  
 H E S I O D, C A L L I M A C H V S, and T H E O C R I T E,  
 High H O M E R, but beware of L Y C O P H R O N .  
 He is too darke, and dangerous a dish.  
 You must not hunt for wild, out-landish termes,
- 550 To stuffe out a peculiar *dialect* ,  
 But let your *matter* runne before your *words* :  
 And if, at any time, you chaunce to meet  
 Some *Gallo-belgick* phrase, you shall not straight  
 Racke your poore verse to gue it entertainment ;
- 555 But let it passe and doe not thinke your selfe  
 Much damnified, if you doe leaue it out ;  
 When, nor your vnderstanding, nor the sense  
 Could well receiue it. This faire abstinence,  
 In time, will render you more sound, and cleere ;
- 560 And this haue I prescrib'd to you, in place  
 Of a strict sentence : which till he performe,

v m	534 bloud]	Blood Q	536 holosome]	wholsome F <sub>2</sub>	538
	that walke vpon]	and walk upon't F <sub>2</sub>	540 TERENCE,]	Terence . Q	
541	lycorice]	Liquorish F <sub>3</sub>	542 ENNIVS,]	Ennius . Q	547
	HOMER,]	HOMER . F <sub>2</sub>	LYCOPHRON ]	LYCOPHRON, F <sub>2</sub>	552
	chaunce]	chance F <sub>2</sub>			

Attire him in that robe. And hence-forth, learne  
To beare your selfe more humbly ; not to swell,  
Or breathe your insolent, and idle spight,  
On him, whose laughter, can your worst affright. 565

TIBV. Take him away. CRIS. IVPITER guard

CAESAR.

VIRG. And, for a weeke, or two, see him lockt vp  
In some darke place, remoou'd from companie :  
He will talke idly else after his physicke.  
Now, to you, sir Th'extremitie of law 570  
Awards you to be branded in the front,  
For this your *calumny* ; But, since it pleaseth  
HORACE (the partie wrong'd) t'intreat, of CAESAR,  
A mitigation of that iuster doome ;  
With CAESARS tongue, thus we pronounce your 575  
sentence.

DEMETRIVS FANNIVS, thou shalt here put on  
That coate, and cap ; and henceforth, thinke thy selfe  
No other, then they make thee · vow to weare them  
In euery faire, and generous assembly,  
Till the best sort of minds shall take to knowledge 580  
As well thy satisfaction, as thy wrongs

HORA Only (graue *Prætor*) here, in open court,  
I craue the oath, for good behauiour,  
May be administered vnto them both.

VIRG HORACE, it shall : TIBVLLVS, giue it 585  
them.

TIBV. RVFVS LABERIVS CRISPINVS, and  
DEMETRIVS FANNIVS, Lay your hands on your hearts.  
You shall here solemnely attest, and sweare ; That neuer  
(after this instant) either, at Booke-sellers stalls, in tauernes, 590  
two-penny roomes, 'tyring-houses, noble-mens buttries,  
puisne's chambers (the best, and farthest places, where you  
are admitted to come) you shall once offer, or dare (thereby to

566 CAESAR.] Some copies of F1 are defective, printing only CAES 577  
henceforth] hencefoorth Q 578 then] than F2 589 attest]  
contest Q



*endeare your selfe the more to any player, enghle, or guiltie gull,*  
 595 *in your companie) to maligne, traduce, or detract the person, or*  
*writings of Q VINTVS HORACIVS FLACCVS; or any*  
*other eminent man, transcending you in merit, whom your*  
*enuy shall find cause to worke vpon, either, for that, or for*  
*keeping himselfe in better acquaintance, or enioying better*  
 600 *friends: Or if (transported by any sodaine and desperate*  
*resolution) you doe, That then, you shall not vnder the bastoun,*  
*or in the next presence, being an honorable assembly of his*  
*fauourers, bee brought as voluntary gent. to vndertake the for-*  
*swearing of it. Neither shall you at any time (ambitiously,*  
 605 *affecting the title of the vntrussers, or whippers of the age)*  
*suffer the itch of writing to ouer-run your performance in*  
*libell; vpon paine of being taken vp for lepers in wit, and*  
*(losing both your time, and your papers) bee irreouerably*  
*forfeited to the hospitall of Fooles. So helpe you our Roman*  
 610 *gods, and the Genius of great CAESAR.*

VIRG So · now dissolve the court.

HORA. TIBV. GALL MECÆ. VIRG. And thanks  
to CAESAR,

That thus hath exercis'd his patience.

CAES. We haue, indeed, you worthiest friends of  
CAESAR.

615 It is the bane, and torment of our cares,  
 To heare the discords of those iangling rimers,  
 That, with their bad and scandalous practices,  
 Bring all true arts, and learning in contempt  
 But let not your high thoughts descend so low,  
 620 As these despised objects; Let them fall,  
 With their flat groueling soules. Be you your selues.  
 And as with our best fauours you stand crown'd.  
 So let your mutuall loues be still renown'd.  
 Enuy will dwell, where there is want of merit,  
 625 Though the deseruing man should cracke his spirit.

V. III 596 HORACIVS] Horatius Q 597 merit.] merit; F2 599  
 himselfe] him selfe Q 603 gent.] Gentlemen F3 607 libell:] libell,  
 F2 608 losing] loosing Q

## SONG.

**B**Lush, folly, blush : here's none that feares  
 The wagging of an asses eares,  
 Although a wooluish case he weares.  
 Detraction is but basenesse varlet ;  
 And apes are apes, though cloth'd in scarlet.

630

## THE END.

Rumpatur, quisquis rumpitur inuidia.

## TO THE READER.

**I**F, by looking on what is past, thou hast deseru'd that name,  
 I am willing thou should'st yet know more, by that which  
 followes ; an apologeticall Dialogue which was only once  
 spoken vpon the stage, and all the answere I euer gaue, to  
 sundry impotent libells then cast out (and some yet remayning) 5  
 against me, and this Play. Wherein I take no pleasure to  
 reuiue the times, but that Posteritie may make a difference,  
 betweene their manners that prouok'd me then, and mine  
 that neglected them euer. For, in these strifes, and on such  
 persons, were as wretched to affect a victorie, as it is unhappy 10  
 to be committed with them. Non annorum canicies est  
 laudanda, sed morum.

## The Persons.

NASVTVS, POLYPOSVS, AVTHOR.

**I**Pray you let's goe see him, how he lookes  
 After these libells. **P O L Y.** O, vex'd, vex'd, I warrant  
 you.

15

**N A S V.** Doe you thinke so? I should be sorry for him,

V IN SONG] CANTVS Q 628 wooluish] woluish F2 631 THE END ]  
 Finis Actus quinti & vltimi | Exeunt Q Epil. 1-12 IF . morum]  
 HERE(Reader) in place of the Epilogue, was meant to thee an Apology from  
 the Author, with his reasons for the publishing of this booke but (since he  
 is no lesse restrain'd, then thou depriv'd of it, by Authoritie) hee praises thee  
 to thinke charitably of what thou hast read, till thou maist heare him speake  
 what he hath written. | FINIS Q 11 canicies] canities F2 13-240  
 not in Q The Persons . . . AVTHOR] SCENE, The Author's Lodgings. |  
 Enter Nasutus and Polyposus. G

If I found that. P O L Y. O, they are such bitter things,  
He cannot choose. N A S. But, is he guilty of 'hem?

P O L. Fuh! that's no matter. N A S. No? P O L. No.

Here's his lodging;

20 Wee'll steale vpon him: or, let's listen, stay.

He has a humor oft to talke t' himselfe.

N A S. They are your manners lead me, not mine owne.

A v r. The *Fates* haue not spun him the coarsest thred

That (free from knots of perturbation)

25 Doth yet so liue, although but to himselfe,

As he can safely scorne the tongues of slaues,

And neglect *Fortune*, more then she can him.

It is the happiest thing, this not to be

Within the reach of malice, It prouides

30 A man so well, to laugh of iniuries.

And neuer sends him farder for his vengeance

Then the vex'd bosome of his enemy.

I, now, but thinke, how poore their spight sets oft

Who, after all their waste of sulphurous tearmes,

35 And burst-out thunder of their charged mouthes,

Haue nothing left, but the vnsau'ry smoake

Of their blacke vomit, to vpbrayd themselues:

Whilst I, at whom they shot, sit here shot-free,

And as vn-hurt of enuy, as vn-hit.

40 P O L. I, but the Multitude, they thinke not so, sir,

They thinke you hit, and hurt. and dare giue out

Your silence argues it, in not reioyning

To this, or that late libell? A v r. 'Lasse, good rout!

I can afford them leaue, to erre so still:

45 And, like the barking students of Beares-Colledge,

To swallow vp the garbadge of the time

With greedy gullets, whilst my selfe sit by,

Pleas'd, and yet tortur'd, with their beastly feeding.

20 listen,] listen, F2 21 to talke F2 t' talke F1 After

22 They come forward; the scene opens, and discovers the Author in his

study. G 27 then] than F2 30 of] off F2 31 farder] farther F2

32 Then] Than F2 39 vn-hit] vnhit F1 un-hit F2 After 39

Pol and Nas discover themselves. G 44 afford] afford F2 46

garbadge] garbage F2 47 by, F2 . by F1

'Tis a sweet madnesse runnes along with them,  
 To thinke, all that are aym'd at, still are strooke · 50  
 Then, where the shaft still lights, make that the marke,  
 And so, each feare, or feauer-shaken foole  
 May challenge T E V C E R S hand in archery.  
 Good troth, if I knew any man so vile,  
 To act the crimes, these whippers reprehend, 55  
 Or what their seruile apes gesticulate,  
 I should not then much muse, their shreds were lik'd ;  
 Since ill men haue a lust t' heare others sinnes,  
 And good men haue a zeale to heare sinne sham'd.  
 But when it is all excrement, they vent, 60  
 Base filth, and offall : or thefts, notable  
 As *Ocean* pyracies, or high-way stands .  
 And not a crime there tax'd, but is their owne,  
 Or what their owne foule thoughts suggested to them,  
 And, that in all their heat of taxing others, 65  
 Not one of them, but lues himselfe (if knowne)  
*Improbior satyram scribente cinædo.*  
 What should I say, more ? then turne stone with wonder !  
 N A S. I neuer saw this play bred all this tumult.  
 What was there in it could so deeply offend ? 70  
 And stirre so many hornets ? A V T. Shall I tell you ?  
 N A S. Yes, and ingenuously. A V T. Then, by the hope,  
 Which I preferre vnto all other obiects,  
 I can professe, I neuer writ that peece  
 More innocent, or empty of offence. 75  
 Some salt it had, but neyther tooth, nor gall,  
 Nor was there in it any circumstance,  
 Which, in the setting downe, I could suspect  
 Might be peruerted by an enemies tongue.  
 Onely, it had the fault to be call'd mine. 80  
 That was the crime. P O L. No ? why, they say you tax'd  
 The Law, and Lawyers ; Captaines ; and the Players  
 By their particular names. A V T. It is not so.

50 strooke ] struck, F2    55 whippers] Whippers G    64 them,] them, F2    81 why, they F2    why they, F1

- I vs'd no name. My Bookes haue still beene taught  
 85 To spare the persons, and to speake the vices.  
 These are meere slanders, and enforc'd by such  
 As haue no safer wayes to mens disgraces,  
 But their owne lyes, and losse of honesty.  
 Fellowes of practis'd, and most laxatiue tongues,  
 90 Whose empty and eager bellies, i' the yeere,  
 Compell their braynes to many desp'rate shifts,  
 (I spare to name 'hem : for, their wretchednesse,  
 Fury it selfe would pardon ) These, or such,  
 Whether of malice, or of ignorance,  
 95 Or itch, t'haue me their aduersary (I know not)  
 Or all these mixt ; but sure I am, three yceres,  
 They did prouoke me with their petulant stiles  
 On euery stage . And I at last, vnwilling,  
 But weary, I confesse, of so much trouble,  
 100 Thought, I would try, if shame could winne vpon 'hem.  
 And threfore chose A V G V S T V S C A E S A R S times,  
 When wit, and artes were at their height in *Rome*,  
 To shew that V I R G I L, H O R A C E, and the rest  
 Of those great master-spirits did not want  
 105 Detractors, then, or practisers against them :  
 And by this line (although no *parallel*)  
 I hop'd at last they would sit downe, and blush.  
 But nothing could I finde more contrary.  
 And though the impudence of flyes be great,  
 110 Yet this hath so prouok'd the angry waspes,  
 Or as you sayd, of the next nest, the hornets ;  
 That they fly buzzing, mad, about my nostrills :  
 And like so many screaming grasse-hoppers,  
 Held by the wings, fill euery eare with noyse.  
 115 And what ? those former calumnies you mention'd.  
 First, of the Law. Indeed, I brought in O V I D,  
 Chid by his angry father, for neglecting

88 honesty ] honestie F<sub>2</sub> 93 such, F<sub>2</sub> such F<sub>1</sub> 100 'hem.]  
 'hem : F<sub>2</sub> 104 -spirits] -spirits, F<sub>2</sub> 115 mention'd ] mention'd ;  
 F<sub>2</sub>

The study of their lawes, for poetry :	
And I am warranted by his owne words.	119
<i>Sæpe pater dixit, studium quid inutile tentas ?</i>	<i>Trist.</i>
<i>Mæonides nullas ipse reliquit opes.</i>	<i>lib 4.</i>
And in farre harsher termes elsewhere, as these :	<i>Eleg 10</i>
<i>Non me verbosas leges ediscere, non me</i>	<i>Amo.</i>
<i>Ingrato voces prostituisse foro.</i>	<i>lib 1.</i>
But how this should relate, vnto our lawes,	<i>Eleg 15.</i>
Or their iust ministers, with least abuse,	125
I reuerence both too much, to vnderstand !	
Then, for the Captaine ; I will onely speake	
An Epigramme I here haue made : It is	
Vnto true Souldiers That's the lemma. Marke it.	130
<i>Strength of my Countrey, whilst I bring to view</i>	
<i>Such as are misse-call'd Captaines, and wrong you,</i>	
<i>And your high names ; I doe desire, that thence,</i>	
<i>Be nor put on you, nor you take offence :</i>	
<i>I sweare by your true friend, my Muse, I loue</i>	135
<i>Your great profession, which I once did proue ;</i>	
<i>And did not shame it with my actions, then,</i>	
<i>No more then I dare, now, doe with my pen.</i>	
<i>He that not trusts me, hauing vow'd thus much,</i>	
<i>But's angry for the Captaine, still : is such.</i>	140
Now, for the Players, it is true, I tax'd 'hem,	
And yet, but some ; and those so sparingly,	
As all the rest might haue sate still, vnquestion'd,	
Had they but had the wit, or conscience,	
To thinke well of themselues. But, impotent they	145
Thought each mans vice belong'd to their whole tribe :	
And much good doo't 'hem. What th' haue done 'gainst me,	
I am not mou'd with. If it gaue 'hem meat,	
Or got 'hem clothes. 'Tis well. That was their end.	
Onely amongst them, I am sorry for	150

120 *Sæpe* F2. *Sæpe* F1 *inutile* *inutile* F2 121, 124 F2 *insets the pentameter lines which are ranged with the hexameter in Fr.* 131-140 Reprinted in the Epigrammes, no cxiix, with some charges of punctuation . e.g. ' Your great profession, which I once, did proue ' ' No more, then I dare now doe, with my pen.' 138 *then* *than* F2

Some better natures, by the rest so drawne,  
To run in that vile line. P O L. And is this all?  
Will you not answer then the libells? A V T. No.

P O L. Nor the vntrussers? A V T. Neither. P O L.  
Y'are vndone then.

155 A V. With whom? P O L. The world. A V. The baud!  
P O. It wil be taken

To be stupidity, or tamenesse in you.

A V T. But, they that haue incens'd me, can in soule  
Acquit me of that guilt. They know, I dare  
To spurne, or baffull 'hem; or squirt their eyes  
160 With inke, or vrine: or I could doe worse,  
Arm'd with A R C H I L O C H V S fury, write *Iambicks*,  
Should make the desperate lashers hang themselues.  
Rime 'hem to death, as they doe *Irish* rats  
In drumming tunes. Or, liuing, I could stampe  
165 Their foreheads with those deepe, and publike brands,  
That the whole company of *Barber-Surgeons*  
Should not take off, with all their art, and playsters.  
And these my prints should last, still to be read  
In their pale fronts: when, what they write 'gainst me,  
170 Shall like a figure, drawne in water, fleete,  
And the poore wretched papers be employ'd  
To cloth *tabacco*, or some cheaper drug.  
This I could doe, and make them infamous.  
But, to what end? when their owne deedes haue mark'd  
'hem,

175 And, that I know, within his guilty brest  
Each slanderer beares a whip, that shall torment him,  
Worse, then a million of these temporall plagues:  
Which to pursue, were but a feminine humour,  
And, farre beneath the dignitie of a man.

180 N A S. 'Tis true: for to reuenge their iniuries,  
Were to confesse you felt 'hem. Let 'hem goe,

154 vntrussers] Untrussers G 165 brands, F2: brands F1 171  
employ'd] employed Fr. employd F2 177 then] than F2 179  
a om. F2

And vse the treasure of the foole, their tongues,  
Who makes his gayne, by speaking worst, of best.

P o l. O, but they lay particular imputations——

A v t. As what? P o. That all your writing, is meere 185  
rayling.

A v t. Ha! If all the salt in the old *comædy*  
Should be so censur'd, or the sharper wit  
Of the bold *satyre*, termed scolding rage,  
What age could then compare with those, for buffons?  
What should be sayd of A R I S T O P H A N E S? 190  
P E R S I V S? or I U V E N A L? whose names we now  
So glorifie in schooles, at least pretend it.  
Ha' they no other? P o l. Yes: they say you are slow,  
And scarce bring forth a play a yeere. A v t. 'Tis true.  
I would, they could not say that I did that, 195  
There's all the ioy that I take i' their trade,  
Vnlesse such Scribes as they might be proscib'd  
Th' abused theaters. They would thinke it strange, now,  
A man should take but colts-foote, for one day,  
And, betweene whiles, spit out a better *poeme* 200  
Then e're the master of art, or giuer of wit,  
Their belly made. Yet, this is possible,  
If a free minde had but the patience,  
To thinke so much, together, and so vile.  
But, that these base, and beggerly conceits 205  
Should carry it, by the multitude of voices,  
Against the most abstracted worke, oppos'd  
To the stuff'd nostrills of the drunken rout!  
O, this would make a learn'd, and liberall soule,  
To riuē his stayned quill, vp to the back, 210  
And damne his long-watch'd labours to the fire;  
Things, that were borne, when none but the still night,  
And his dumbe candle saw his pinching throes:  
Were not his owne free merit a more crowne  
Vnto his trauailes, then their reeling claps. 215

195 that,] that. *F2* 205 conceits] concerts *F2* 215 trauailes]  
Travels *F3* then] than *F2*



- This 'tis, that strikes me silent, seales my lips,  
 And apt's me, rather to sleepe out my time,  
 Then I would waste it in contemned strifes,  
 With these vile *Ibides*, these vncleane birds,  
 220 That make their mouthes their clysters, and still purge  
 From their hot entrailes. But, I leaue the monsters  
 To their owne fate. And, since the *Comick M v s e*  
 Hath prou'd so ominous to me, I will trie  
 If *Tragædie* haue a more kind aspect.  
 225 Her fauours in my next I will pursue,  
 Where, if I proue the pleasure but of one,  
 So he iudicious be; He shall b' alone  
 A Theatre vnto me: Once, I'll 'say,  
 To strike the eare of time, in those fresh straines,  
 230 As shall, beside the cunning of their ground,  
 Giue cause to some of wonder, some despight,  
 And vnto more, despaire, to imitate their sound.  
 I, that spend halfe my nights, and all my dayes,  
 Here in a cell, to get a darke, pale face,  
 235 To come forth worth the iuy, or the bayes,  
 And in this age can hope no other grace——  
 Leaue me. There's something come into my thought,  
 That must, and shall be sung, high, and aloofe,  
 Safe from the wolues black iaw, and the dull asses hoofe.  
 240 N A s v. I reuerence these raptures, and obey 'hem.

218 Then] Than *F2*      224 aspect] aspect, *F2*      227 b' alone]  
*Jonson probably wrote 'be'alone'.*      228 Theatre] Theater *F2*      'say *F2*:  
 say *F1*      232 vnto om. *G*      239 wolues] wolves *F2*      h      240  
 'hem] them. [*The scene closes.* *G*

This Comickall Satyre was first  
acted, in the yeere  
1601.

*By the then Children of Queene*  
ELIZABETHS  
Chappell.

The principall Comœdians were,

NAT. FIELD.	}	IOH. VNDERWOOD.
SAL. PAVY.		WILL. OSTLER.
THO. DAY.		THO. MARTON.

*With the allowance of the Master of REVELLS.*

*This page was added in F1 In F2 the statements about the date and the company were omitted. 'With the allowance of the Master of REVELLS' was placed on the half-title, and the list of 'The principall Comœdians' was transferred to the back of the half-title, where it followed 'The Persons of the Play'.*



---

SEJANUS HIS FALL

---



## THE TEXT

The tragedy of *Sejanus* was entered on the Stationers' Register by Edward Blount on 2 November 1604. On March 19 he had entered Jonson's part of the King's *Entertainment* on his state entry into London for his coronation on March 15. Blount published this, and evidently accepted *Sejanus*, but on 6 August 1605, he transferred the play to Thomas Thorp. Thorp published it that year. The entries in the Register are as follows ·

2 Novembris [1604]

Edward Blunt putt ouer to Thomas Thorp 6 Augusti 1605	Entred for his copy vnder thandes of Master Pasfeild and the Wardens a booke called the tragedie of Seianus written by Benjamin Johnson.
--	--

vj<sup>d</sup>

Arber, *Transcript*, III. 273.

6 Augusti [1605]

Thomas Thorpe	Entred for his copy by assignement of Edward Blunt the tragedie of Seianus which was entred to the said Edward 2 novembris ultimo.
---------------	--

vj<sup>d</sup>

Ibid. III. 297.

The play was damned when it was produced in 1603, and failure usually stimulated Jonson to publish at once. But delay was forced upon him: the Earl of Northampton summoned him before the Privy Council to answer for treasonable matter which that notorious intriguer detected in the writing.<sup>1</sup> The further delay in publishing after the registration and the transfer of copyright also point to difficulties. These may have been caused by the *Eastward Ho* trouble in 1605.

The collation, ¶, A to M in fours, with two leaves of N, is in detail ¶ 1 Title-page. ¶ 2 'To the Readers'. ¶ 3 to A verso, 'In SEIANUM BEN. IONSONI', by George Chapman. A 2, 'To his worthy Friend, the Author', by Hugh Holland; 'To the deservuing Author', by Cygnus. A 2 verso, 'To his learned and beloued Friend', by Th. R. A 3, 'Amicis,

<sup>1</sup> *Drummond Conversations*, II. 326-7, see vol II, pp. 4, 5.

amici nostri dignissimi, dignissimis', by John Marston; 'Vpon *SEIANVS*', by William Strachey. A 3 verso, 'To him that hath so excell'd on *this excellent subiect*', by *ΦΙΛΟΣ*;<sup>1</sup> 'To the most understanding Poet', by Ev. B. A 4, 'THE ARGUMENT'. A 4 verso, 'The names of the Actors'. B-N 2 recto, the text of the Play. The catchword on K 3 verso is misprinted 'PARE': it should be 'PRÆ.'

This is the first of Jonson's plays to have prefixed to it verse tributes from his friends; in his prefatory note he describes these tributes as 'voluntary labours', but his main object in printing them was to show the public, when the play had failed on the stage, that two contemporary dramatists and a group of judicious friends approved it.

The printer was George Eld (or Elde), who discharged his difficult task with a high degree of accuracy. The Latin historical notes reprinted in Appendix XI appeared in the margins of the Quarto text, and imposed a severe test upon a printer. A few corrections were made in the text while it passed through the press, but, even without this evidence, it is clear, from the small percentage of error in the notes, that a watchful eye supervised the printing.

There are two states of the title-page. The first state, reproduced in facsimile from Mr. Wise's copy, spells the printer's name 'Elld': so the British Museum copy and two of the Dyce copies, at South Kensington. The second state prints the name as 'Elde' and is proved to be a cancel by the watermark *hR*. The watermark in the text is a crowned IP with a quatrefoil ornament inside the H. The cancel is found in one of the Dyce copies and in the perfect Malone copy in Bodley.

Seven copies of the Quarto have been collated for the text of the present edition:

- (1) The British Museum copy, with the press-mark 644. b. 53, lacking sheets M and N (marked A in the list below).
- (2, 3). Two Bodleian copies in the Malone collection, with

<sup>1</sup> Misprinted '*ΦΙΛΟΣ*', the printer misreading *Σ* and substituting the nearest equivalent.

press-marks Malone 222.7 (B1) and Malone 184 (B2). The latter lacks the title-page and the second leaf.

(4) Mr. T. J. Wise's copy on large paper, with autograph inscription and some manuscript corrections (C).

(5-7) Three copies in the Dyce collection: one on large paper, formerly the Heber copy, with the book-plate of John William Cole and some manuscript corrections (D1); a cropped and stained copy with the 'Elde' imprint, with no evidence of former ownership (D2); a copy formerly in the Roxburghe collection (D3). The first of these copies was sold for £1 13s. at the Heber sale in 1834; it is no. 3026 in the Sale Catalogue, part ii. Thomas Thorpe in his *Catalogue for 1837*, part viii (no. 1204) offered it, as the Cole copy, for one guinea. The Roxburghe copy fetched the handsome price of three shillings at the sale in 1812: it is no. 5227 in the Catalogue.

Mr. Wise's copy has on the title-page Jonson's inscription on presenting it to a friend: 'The Testemony of my Affection, & Obseruance to my noble Freind Sr Robert Townseehend<sup>1</sup> w<sup>th</sup> I desire may remayne w<sup>th</sup> him, & last beyond Marble.' The signature 'Ben: Jonson', appended to this, has been cropped by a binder, so that only the tops of the 'B', 'J' and the long 's' survive. The ink has browned, and there are a number of manuscript corrections in the same ink of printer's errors in the text: these are probably Jonson's, but as the corrections are facsimiles of printed letters and not his normal script, it is not possible to certify that they are his. On A 3 verso '*ΦΙΛΟΕ*' is corrected to '*ΦΙΛΟΞ*'. In B 2 line 5 (l. 71) 'accusers' is altered to 'Accusers', to balance the capital letters in 'Flatterers' just before; in line 9 (l. 75) 'of Rome', letters 'f Rom' have not caught the ink; they are supplied; in line 30 (l. 96) 'vnkindly)' has the first bracket inserted; the Folio drops the brackets altogether. In B 2 verso, line 9 (l. 113) 'kinsman' is corrected to 'kinsmen'. In B 4, line 19 (l. 235), 'hard' is corrected to 'heard'. In C 4 verso, line 13 (l. 568)

<sup>1</sup> The patron who befriended Jonson in 1602: see vol. 1, pp. 30-1 n. \*



'dull, Camell' is corrected to 'dull Camell,'—the wrong comma being erased. In E 2, line 30 (II. 403) 'saftly' is corrected to 'safely'. In E 4 verso, line 27 (III. 67) 'These Princes *Fathers*,' a comma has been inserted after 'Princes'. In F 3, line 12 (III. 240) 'SEI.' is corrected to 'SIL.' In G, line 16 (III. 394), 'ARR.' is corrected to 'AFE.'. In G 3, line 4 (III. 530) 'pitty' is corrected to 'piety'.

It is noteworthy that these corrections, with only one addition and that an error—'MIN.' for 'MAC.' on K, line 7 (IV. 515)—are found in the Dyce large paper copy. A number of other errors, such as 'How blist a fate' (I. 402) and 'ARR.' for 'AGR.', which was copied in the Folio (II. 449), are not corrected in either copy. In the Wise copy a modern hand has tried to copy seventeenth-century script in 'Sandforde his Booke' at the top right-hand corner; this ink also is brown, so that 'Sandforde' apparently hoped to claim the corrections.

The Huth copy also had an autograph inscription on the fly-leaf: 'To my perfect Freind, M<sup>r</sup> Francis Crane. / I erect this Altar of Freindship. And leaue it as the eternall Witenesse of my Love. / Ben: Jonson.' Francis Crane in April 1606 had a grant for life of the office of clerk of the Parliament, was secretary to Prince Charles, knighted on 4 September 1617, and became famous as the director of the tapestry works established at Mortlake under the patronage of James I in 1619. Beneath the inscription is a manuscript note in a contemporary hand: 'Hic est Ben: Johnson: ille cui in componendis fabulis parem nec vidit Antiquitas, nec posteritas visura est. F. M.'. This early owner was Francis Mundy, who has written his name on a fly-leaf at the end; Jonson would have appreciated such a tribute. The copy is on large paper and in the original vellum binding; it has the two blank leaves at the beginning, one of which comprises the inscription, and one blank leaf at the end with Mundy's autograph. It also belonged to Richard Rawlinson; Whalley thanks him for the loan of it in the preface to his edition. At the Rawlinson sale in

1757 it fetched 3s. 6d.<sup>1</sup> Later owners were the Rev. John Field, at whose sale in 1827 the price rose to £22. 10s.;<sup>2</sup> and George Daniel, whose library was sold at Sotheby's in July 1864; it is no. 951 in the Sale Catalogue, and fetched £106.

The seven copies collated yield an instructive list of corrections and minor alterations made while the book was passing through the press. The changes in the preliminary sheet are in Chapman's long poem of commendation, and show Jonson's scrupulous care to reproduce the punctuation and emphatic capitals of the manuscript. The adjustment of the capital letters in printing the consul's opening formula in v. 523-4, so as to make it uniform with lines 514-21 and 533, shows how carefully Jonson watched the printer. But the most significant of these press-corrections is the note on 'Spelunca' (iv. 48) '*\*Prætorii* Sueto. *appellat.* Tib. *cap.* 39', which is not found in the British Museum copy. Jonson added it in the proof.

The following is a list of all the corrections which have been traced. It does not include accidents which happened in the printing, such as 'SEI.' in the fourth line of B 3 verso, where the stop is clear in the first and second Dyce copies, faint in the third, and missing in the British Museum copy.

¶2	19	<i>Horace</i> , B1, D2, 3	<i>Horace</i> A, C, D1
¶3 <sup>v</sup>	6	<i>Semicircle</i> B1, D2, 3	<i>Semi-circle</i> A, B2, C, D1
	7	<i>Sphære</i> B1, D2, 3	<i>Sphære</i> , A, B2, C, D1
	8	<i>Lsues</i> , B1, D2, 3	<i>Lsues</i> A, B2, C, D1
	18	<i>And waters</i> B1, D2, 3	<i>And, . waters</i> , A, B2, C, D1
¶4	3	<i>eye . . flame</i> B1, D2, 3	<i>eye, . . flame</i> , A, B2, C, D1
	5	<i>truly</i> , B1, D2, 3	<i>truly</i> A, B2, C, D1
	6	<i>inspireth</i> , B1, D2, 3	<i>inspireth</i> . A, B2, C, D1
	7	<i>unduly</i> , B1, D2, 3	<i>unduly</i> A, B2, C, D1
	21	<i>others</i> , B1, D2, 3	<i>Others</i> A, B2, C, D1
	29	<i>one</i> B1, D2, 3	<i>One</i> A, B2, C, D1
	30	<i>another</i> B1, D2, 3	<i>Another</i> A, B2, C, D1
	31	<i>life</i> , B1, D2, 3	<i>Life</i> A, B2, C, D1
		<i>knowne</i> , B1, D2, 3	<i>knowne</i> A, B2, C, D1

<sup>1</sup> *Catalogue of the . . . Remaining Part of the Books of the late Richard Rawlinson Sold by Samuel Baker.* March 14 [1757] no. 98.

<sup>2</sup> *Bibliotheca Histrionica*, sold at Sotheby's 22-7 January, 1827, p. 12. Douce's copy in Bodley is priced.

¶4	32	<i>Degrees</i> B1, D2, 3	<i>Degrees</i> A, B2, C, D1
	36	<i>deseruing</i> B1, D2, 3	<i>deseruing</i> : A, B2, C, D1
Argument 22 (26)		<i>Tiberias</i> C, D1, 2	<i>Tiberius</i> A, B1, 2, D3
Sig. B 3 <sup>v</sup>	18 (1 195)	On ? C, D1, 3	On. A, B1, 2, D2
Sig. E <sup>v</sup>	27 (11. 363)	he (must D2	(he must A, B1, 2, C, D1, 3
Sig. E 2 <sup>v</sup>	note c (on 11. 420)	<i>claresceere</i> B2, D2	<i>clarescere</i> A, B1, 2, C, D1, 3
Sig. H 2 <sup>v</sup>	note * (on 1v. 48)	not in A	Inserted in the rest
Sig. L 4 <sup>v</sup>	(scene heading, v 480)		
		AANGVINIVS B1, D2, 3	SANGVINIVS B2, C, D1
Sig. M	note a (on v 514)	<i>de formut</i> D2	<i>de formut</i> B2, C, D1, 3
	29. 30 (v 523-4)		
		MAY WHAT I AM TO VTTER, TVRNE GOOD AND HAPPY FOR THE COMMON WEALTH B1, D2	MAY WHAT I AM TO VTTER, TVRNE GOOD AND HAPPY FOR THE COMMON WEALTH. B2, C, D1, 3
Sig. M 3	4 (v 656)	friend B2, C, D1, 3	friends B1, D2
Sig. M 4 <sup>v</sup>	17 (v 774)	too worke B1, D2	to worke B2, C, D1, 3
	27 (v. 784)	slacknesse B1, D2	slacknesse, B2, C, D1, 3

In a few passages the Quarto supplies a correction for the Folio. In 11. 257-9 the Folio reading :

Nought is more high,  
Daring, or desperate, then offenders found ;  
Where guilt is, rage, and courage doth abound.

is possible, but the Quarto has 'rage, and courage both abound', and 'doth' is almost certainly a misprint—it cannot be a correction—in the later text. In lines 266-8 the Quarto reads :

Thus, with slight  
You shall disarm them first, and they (in night  
Of their ambition) not perceiue the Trainee.

The Folio has the second line in the unmetrical form :

' You shall disarm first, and they (in night) . . .

In line 400 the Quarto has 'till all my lets be clear'd' ; the Folio, copied by its successor in 1640, misprints 'my betts'.

In 11. 434 we have accepted the Quarto reading because the Folio printer appears to have misunderstood this punctuation. The Quarto reads :

How can that be, when ther's no gaine, but vertu's ?

The Folio :

How can that be, when there's no gaine, but vertuous ?

Here the later printer attempted to expand the contraction as he supposed it to be, and Jonson overlooked the change.

The text of the 1616 Folio was set up from a corrected copy of the Quarto. But in the course of the printing Jonson made further changes. He corrected no less than eighty passages in this final and authoritative text. Sometimes he improved a reading, more frequently he revised minutiae of spelling, punctuation, and wrong type. One noteworthy feature is that he reduced the number of passages marked as 'sentences' or maxims on life and conduct by inverted commas printed at the beginning of the line: he reserved this pointing, as a rule, for pure *γνώμαι*, for example

" Men are decei'd, who thinke there can be thrall

" Beneath a vertuous prince Wish'd liberty

" Ne're louelier lookes, then vnder such a crowne.

I. 407-9

But, where the effects of these sententious comments was more definitely dramatic, especially in the thrust and parry of dialogue, he seems to have thought it unnecessary to retain the inverted commas, as in II. 173-87, which the Quarto prints thus :

„ State is inough to make th'act iust, them guilty.

„ TIB. Long hate pursues such acts. SEI. Whom hatred  
frights,

„ Let him not dreame on sou'raignty. TIB. Are rites

„ Of faith, loue, pietie, to be trod downe ?

„ Forgotten ? and made vaine ? SEI. All for a Crowne.

„ The Prince, who shames a Tyrannes name to beare,

„ Shall neuer dare do anything, but feare ;

„ All the Command of Sceptres quite doth perish

„ If it begin religious thoughts to cherish :

„ Whole Empires fall, swaid by these nice respects ;

„ It is the licence of darke deeds protects

„ Eu'n states most hated, when no lawes resist  
 „ The sword, but that it acteth what it list.  
 „ TIB. Yet so we may do all things cruelly,  
 „ Not safely : SEI. Yes, and do them throughly.

All Jonson's changes are recorded in the critical apparatus. The most striking of them all, not only in this play, but in the entire text of the Folio, is found in Act iv, lines 434-9, where Laco, Pomponius, and Minutius, overheard by Lepidus and Arruntius, discuss Tiberius' vacillating policy towards Sejanus. Where the winds blow so contrary, these harassed courtiers do not know how to trim their sails. Laco frankly despairs of a solution, but Pomponius, though admittedly puzzled, concludes that it is safe to follow Sejanus : he ' still goes on, And mounts '

In the dialogue that follows, the Folio, following the Quarto, printed at first :

More altars smoke to him, then all the gods :  
 What would wee more ? (ARR. That the deare smoke  
     would choke him )

LAC. But there are letters come (they say) eu'n now,  
 Which do forbid that last. MIN. Doyou heare so ? LAC. Yes.

POM. By CASTOR, that's the worst. (ARR. By POLLVX,  
     best )

This was revised in proof to .

What would wee more ? (ARR. That the deare smoke  
     would choke him,

That would I more. LEP. Peace, good ARRVNTIVS.)

LAC. But there are letters come . . .

POM. By POLLVX, that's the worst (ARR. By HERCVLES,  
     best.)

And this revised text was printed in the Folio of 1640.

The change was made on the authority of Aulus Gellius, who stated that 'in old writings Roman women do not swear by Hercules, nor men by Castor', but that both sexes might swear by Pollux.<sup>1</sup> If Jonson had known this earlier,

<sup>1</sup> 'In veteribus scriptis neque mulieres Romanae per Herculem iurabant, neque viri per Castorem . . . Aedipol autem, quod iusurandum per Pollucem est, et viro et feminae commune est.' (*Noctes Atticae*, xi 6).

he would probably have added a marginal note about it in the Quarto. He observed this nice distinction in *Catiline*, making Curius swear by Hercules, Sempronia and Fulvia by Castor.<sup>1</sup>

The other textual changes are slight. They include the substitution of '*the issue of Germanicus (who were next in hope for the succession)*' for '(who were next in hope)' (Argument, 17); '*retyred life*' for 'separated life' (ibid. 26); '*and with a long doubtfull letter, in one day, hath him suspected*' for '*with one letter and in one day . . .*' (ibid. 36-7); 'Breed out of too fit matter' for 'Breed out of too much humour' (III. 690); 'the ready sword' for 'the facile sword' (IV. 155); 'Mingling his honours' for 'Mixing his honours' (IV. 450); 'As if his statues now were sensiuue growne' for '. . . now were sensitiue' (V. 768). In all these examples the original reading of the Folio agrees with the Quarto text.

In III. 707 the proof seems to have been miscorrected. The Folio alters the 'Sauiour' of the Quarto to 'Sauier'. Jonson apparently intended to write 'Sauer': either he corrected the copy imperfectly, not striking out the 'i', or the compositor misread and contaminated the spellings.

Both the authoritative texts of *Sejanus* show traces of peculiar forms of spelling and punctuation which Jonson affected. He tried to classicize the spelling of Greek and Latin derivatives. On the title-page and in the note on the first performance, printed at the end of the play, the Folio spells 'Tragœdie' and 'Tragœdians', and it prints 'adscribe' in V. 103. Both texts have 'sphære' (I. 3) and 'apprênded' (V. 648), and 'tyran' is a usual spelling. But the Quarto preserves more of these spellings than the Folio: for example, 'æmulation', 'æquall', 'vnæquall', 'vnæquald', 'chord' (for 'cord'), 'phant'sie', 'prætext', 'præscrib'd', 'præcedent', 'præuent'.<sup>2</sup> *The texts are*

<sup>1</sup> *Catiline* II. 210, 232, 293 (Folio, 1616, pp 702-3)

<sup>2</sup> In III. 546; I. 60, III. 428, 570, IV. 275, V. 264; III. 525; II. 55; II. 253; IV. 333, V. 89; Argument 35, V. 589; II. 135; II. 305; II 329.

inconsistent with themselves and each other, probably because the printer rebelled; but Jonson's intention is made clear in *Cynthia's Revels* v. x. 7, 9, where he altered in the proof *comédie* to *comœdie*.

*Sejanus* also yields many examples of a metrical punctuation designed to mark the presence of an extra syllable lightly sounded in the movement of the line.<sup>1</sup> This punctuation appears intermittently in his printed texts, but nowhere so frequently as in this play. Naturally the printer often overlooked it; if he thought about it at all, he probably regarded it as a misprint. Jonson opened the second book of his *English Grammar* with a short chapter 'Of Apostrophus', and defined it as 'an affection of words coupled, and joynd together'; dealing with its use to mark elisions, he complained 'The note whereof, though it many times, through the negligence of Writers and Printers, is quite omitted, yet by right should, and of the learned sort hath his signe and marks, which is such a *Semicircle*' placed in the top.' The frequent appearance—or shall we say, survival?—of this punctuation-mark in *Sejanus* is another indication of Jonson's supervision of the printing of this play. Donne was a poet 'of the learned sort' who employed it; Professor Grierson's text of the *Poems* has over ninety examples.

<sup>1</sup> Mr M. A. Bayfield, in *A Study of Shakespeare's Versification with an Examination of the 1616 Folio of Ben Jonson's Works*, pp. 295-313, subjects the text of *Sejanus* to a minute analysis and classifies these verse elisions. He would expand all the contractions. A number of these expansions we cannot accept, and we do not share his contempt for the printers of the texts of Shakespeare and Jonson. For example, Mr Bayfield consistently ignores the effect of a pause in the line: as in

And now we better thinke—who's there, within? (III 629.)

By trusted messengers If 't be enquired (III 710)

To fright vs from it. ARR. 'T hath so, on SABINVS (IV 283)

Can best deluier you MAC (When h' is away (V. 135)

Jonson in his later work used these looser rhythms which Mr Bayfield would import into the text here, but he did not use them so early as 1605. In such a line as 'Deuided as in time o'th' civill warre' (II 370) Mr Bayfield injures his case by such comment as 'Therwill cannot be said without sounding at least slightly the *e* of "the"', and thus Jonson must have expected to be done' (p. 305). Of course, the 'th' goes with the 'o'. On the general question we may refer to the comments on Jonson's *Grammar* in vol. II, pp. 428-31.

The following are instances in *Sejanus* :

In mites, as small as *atom*, to'vndoe. (I. 257.)  
 And can but deedes of men : 'twere glory' inough. (I. 478.)  
 The meanes that wrought it. How do'I looke to day?  
 (II. 59.)  
 You carry things too—let me borrow' a man. (v. 157.)

The mark is found even at a pause in the line, which would carry the extra syllable :

He was a man most like to vertue' ; In all. (I. 124.)  
 Our mother, great AVGVSTA, 'is strooke with time. (III. 53.)  
 And yet, for any weightie, 'and great affaie. (III. 611.)

All these have their counterpart in Donne, whose handling of verse was much freer than Jonson's .

So to' entergraft our hands, as yet. (*The Extasie*, 9.)  
 So in the country 'is beauty ; to this place. (*To the Countesse of Bedford*, 13 : Grierson, p. 191.)  
 Like one who' in her third widdowhood doth professe. (*To Mr. Rowland Woodward*, 1 : Grierson, p. 185.)  
 His letter at thy pillow 'hath laid (*A Valediction*, 51)  
 Lest that preserve thee' ; and since my love is spent (*The Apparition*, 15.)  
 We' have added to the world Virginia, 'and sent (*To the Countesse of Bedford*, 67 : Grierson, p. 197.)  
 Here's no more newes, then vertue, 'I may as well. (*To S<sup>r</sup> Henry Wotton*, 1 : Grierson, p. 187.)

That the printers were perplexed by this punctuation is shown by their inconsistent treatment of it. In I. 448 the Quarto prints 'To' a Princes state', the Folio 'T' a princes state' ; in III. 69 'he had' (Quarto) becomes 'h' had' in the Folio ; both texts print in v. 8 'my' aduanced head', but in v. 351 'm' instructions' ; 'they' are' is in both texts in II. 405, v. 787, but in II. 232 the Folio abbreviates to 'they're'. Jonson's proof-reading was probably done at the printing-house from fresh pulls supplied to him on the spot ;<sup>1</sup> he worried the printer enough with his more

<sup>1</sup> See the *Oxford Bibliographical Society Proceedings*, vol. II, 'Proof-reading by English Authors of the XVI and XVII Centuries', pp. 10-15.



important corrections, and could not adjust such abbreviations as 'T' a ' and 'they're', which indicated his scansion, if not exactly, yet sufficiently for his purpose; and he either overlooked, or found he could not insist on correcting, lines in which this metrical punctuation had slipped out in his revised text. But there can be no doubt about his practice, and we have, therefore, felt justified in restoring from the Quarto the apostrophe omitted in thirteen lines of the Folio.

beleue me', I loue him. (I. 111.)<sup>1</sup>  
 Had meanes to know' him. (I. 122.)  
 You are vnhappy 'in me (IV. 32.)  
 May' I shake my head. (IV. 308.)  
 So' in trust. (IV. 516.)  
 I'haue waited. (V. 212.)  
 The' amazing wonder. (V. 221.)  
 I alreadie' haue done. (V. 255.)  
 . . . most happy', and ere . . . (V. 335.)<sup>1</sup>  
 . . . thou' hast satisfied. (V. 366.)  
 You' are troublesome. (V. 428.)  
 . . . thy' obsequious fatnesse. (V. 459.)  
 They'are met. (V. 460)

So far the evidence is clear, but the failure of the Folio printer to deal faithfully with these subtleties of the poet's manuscript leaves some doubtful readings. In I. 268 the Folio reading

He's the noblest *Romane*, when he takes—

where the Quarto read 'He' is', is probably correct; 'He' is emphatic. Similarly in line 276, the abrupt

Who's that? SATRIVS—I haue a grieve, sir,

is a hasty parenthesis interrupting Sejanus' measured and calculated speech when he is first probing Eudemus: we cannot substitute the false emphasis of 'Who *is* that? Satrius—'. The pause after 'SATRIVS' amply fills the line.

<sup>1</sup> In these examples the apostrophe has dropped out because of the comma below.

Later in the scene (320-1), Sejanus' description of Livia :

I know, she's quick, and quaintly spirited,  
And will haue strange thoughts, when she's at leasure ;  
the reading raises a doubt, but the Quarto has ' sh' is ', and the Folio is confirmed by Jonson's own correction in proof of the Folio text in *Every Man out of His Humour*, v. ii. 23-4, ' he's a gentleman ' : here Jonson himself corrected the printer's ' h'is '. In *Sejanus* v. 483 the Folio corrects the Quarto ' I, hee' is wise ' to ' I, he is wise '. But the reading in III. 465-6

Meane time, giue order, that his bookes be burn't,  
To the' *Ædiles*. SEI. You haue well aduis'd.

is suspect. Whalley thought that Jonson here pronounced ' *Ædiles* ' as a Latin word of three syllables ; he was probably right, and we can dispense with the apostrophe. In v. 109

You' are a friend most welcome : by, and by  
it certainly seems incorrect. In I. 152, 244, 534, and 559 we have expanded ' temp'rance ', ' Emp'rour ', ' flatt'ring ', and ' emp'rour ' ; and have removed the apostrophe from III. 526,

Of AGRIPPINA ; 'and for dear reguard.

Two difficult examples at the end of the play seem to call for readjustment. Sejanus is sentenced

To lose his head : which was no sooner off,  
But that, and th' vnfortunate trunk were seiz'd  
By the rude multitude. (v. 806-8.)  
Let this example mooue th' insolent man. (v. 898.)

With some hesitation we have expanded the ' the '. The Quarto yields a clue by the spellings ' fauo'ring ', in I. 446, and ' scrupu'lous ', in v. 89, 190 ; and, similarly, the Folio text of Epigram xlviii. 3 reads ' Due'llists '. Jonson seems to have written in the *Sejanus* lines ' the 'vnfortunate ' ' the 'insolent', or possibly even ' the inso'lent ', ' the

vnfortu'nate' and baffled the printer. In III. 421 both texts read 'worthi'st men', which we assume to have been 'worthi'est' in his manuscript.<sup>1</sup>

It is easy to show how subtle Jonson's punctuation could be. Two examples occur in the duel of the two great gladiators at the crisis of the third act. The speech in which Sejanus makes his fatal proposal to marry Livia opens in the Folio with the words (III. 503)—

Sir—I' haue been so long train'd vp in grace.

The Quarto prints 'I haue', and the line, so printed, scans. But after 'Sir', Sejanus pauses or clears his throat before he plunges into the proposal, and this revised punctuation treats the break as equivalent to a syllable. Tiberius' reply contains the second example, unfortunately discarded in the Folio, which reads :

We cannot but commend thy pietie,  
Most-lou'd SEIANVS, in acknowledging  
Those bounties ; which we, faintly, such remember.

The Quarto prints 'Those, bounties', Tiberius affecting modesty : 'Those—well, call them bounties if you like'. In some copies of the Quarto the comma is faintly printed. It is tempting to restore it, but Jonson in the Folio proof corrected the end of the line,<sup>2</sup> and with this evidence that his attention was fixed upon the passage we must accept the text he left us. But we more than suspect that the disappearance of this delicate stroke of dissimulation was due to accident.

Further evidence of Jonson's regard for these fine shades of punctuation is supplied by Macro's words to Tiberius :

The humblest place in CAESARS choice, or trust,  
May make glad MACRO proud ; without ambition :  
Saue to do CAESAR service.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Donne, *The Second Anniversary*, 390, 'And beauty worthy'st is to move' In *Sejanus* III. 680 'worthiest MACRO', and in I. 313 'which was the wittiest ? meriest ? wantonnest ?' are in both texts.

<sup>2</sup> From 'we faintly, such,' to 'we, faintly, such'.

<sup>3</sup> III. 666-8.

and Sejanus' hope that, earthly opposition failing, the gods might fight him.

That were worth  
SEIANVS strife : durst fates but bring it forth.<sup>1</sup>

The colons after 'ambition' and 'strife' were inserted in the proof to mark an emphatic pause: the Quarto had commas, which the Folio reproduced at first.

The Folio of 1640 reprints the 1616 text, with a few corrections,<sup>2</sup> but its changes are usually errors. It follows most of the press-corrections made in 1616, but it reprints the first state of L 13 (III. 661-703), L 14 verso (IV. 34-76) and O o verso (V. 764-807). Its chief blunders are 'and' for 'at' in I. 515; 'ablest' for 'abled' in II. 11, a modernizing suggested by the context, 'the most apt, and abled instrument'; 'soone' for 'some' in IV. 156, 'We might haue some assurance of our vowes'; and, in the same scene, 'I neuer look't' for 'I neerer look't' (line 183), a change which reduces the text to nonsense. On the other hand, the Folio watches the punctuation it tends to modernize. Thus it omits the metrical apostrophe, which is such a marked feature of the two earlier texts; and it freely employs the semicolon in order to get a more logical stopping. This is substituted for the comma fourteen times in the first act.<sup>3</sup> Occasionally the use is effective, as in

Hee hath my heart, and voice,  
When I would curse , he, he. (II. 425-6).

and in

NERO, and DRUSUS, these shall be to you  
In place of parents, these your fathers, these; <sup>4</sup>  
And not unfitly. (III. 78-80.)

<sup>1</sup> V 23-4

<sup>2</sup> It is worth recording that this text is the first to print the accents correctly in 'Εμοὶ θανόντος γαῖα μυχθῆτω πρὸς (II 330) Was this a correction of Sir Kenelm Digby's?

<sup>3</sup> See the critical apparatus at lines 40, 50, 61, 152, 204, 210, 222, 292, 368, 464, 470, 529, 538, 554

<sup>4</sup> The Quarto had achieved the same effect by printing 'These' with an emphatic capital letter.

But these must be offset by a bad blunder in iv. 233,

The fault's not shamefull ; villanie makes a fault.

The stop inserted after 'shamefull' is an intruder: the line means 'The fault which villany makes a fault is not shameful'. It is curious that an idiom so common as the absence of the relative pronoun caused a difficulty.

Francis Cunningham's statement in his reissue of Gifford's text, 1875, Vol. III, p. 485, that the editor of the 1640 Folio, which he rashly describes as 'that almost worthless edition', used a copy of *Sejanus* with a few corrections by the author, is wrong. He found, without knowing it, a number of proof-corrections of the 1616 Folio which were reproduced in the 1640 Folio, in particular the insertion in Act iv, lines 435-6. These finishing touches were not in the copy of the 1616 text which he himself used, and, though he rightly saw their textual importance, he misjudged their origin.

Two sound reprints of the 1616 Folio text have appeared in recent years. The play was included in Professor Bang's reprint of the Folio in his *Materialien zur Kunde der älteren Englischen Dramas* (Louvain, 1908); and in 1911 Professor W. Dinsmore Briggs edited it for Heath's *Belles Lettres* series, with a critical apparatus which recorded a number of the original press-corrections. He collated three copies of the Folio, those in the Harvard Library and in the collections of Mr. Otto Miller and Professor W. L. Phelps. In a note on pages 265-6, the test passage of the Roman oaths (iv. 434-9), he justly criticizes the attempt of Messrs. Bastiaan A. P. Van Dam and Cornelis Stoffel in *Anglia*, xxvi. 377-92 to invalidate the authority of the 1616 Folio. These critics confined their attention to the text of *Every Man out of his Humour* and the differences of the Quartos and the Folio in that single play. They argued that the textual changes were not made by Jonson himself, but were the arbitrary tinkering of a compositor. Their complete ignorance of the Folio text as a whole and of the way in which it was produced makes it unnecessary to enter on a detailed refutation of their theory.

# SEIANVS

HIS FALL.

Written

by

BEN: IONSON.

MART. Non hſc Centauros, non Gorgonas, Harpyasq̃,  
Inuenies : Hominem pagina noſtra ſapit.

AT LONDON  
Printed by *G. Elld*, for *Thomas*  
*Thorpe.* 1605.

The title-page of the Quarto.

# SEIANVS

his

## FALL.

*A Tragædie.*

Acted, in the yeere 1603.

By the K. MAIESTIES  
SERVANTS.

The Author B. I.

MART.

*Non hic Centauros, non Gorgonas, Harpyiasq;  
Inuenies: Hominem pagina nostra sapit.*

---

LONDON,  
Printed by WILLIAM STANSBY,

---

M. DC. XVI.

The title-page of the 1616 Folio.

# SEIANUS

## HIS FALL.

A Tragedie.

First Acted in the yeere 1603. By the  
Kings MAIESTIES Servants.  
With the allowance of the Master  
of REVELLS.

The Author B. J.

MART.  
*Non hic Centaurus, non Gorgonas, Harpyiasque  
Inuenies: Hominem pagina nostra sapit.*



LONDON,  
Printed by RICHARD BISHOP.

M. DC. XL.

The title-page of the 1640 Folio.





# SEIANVS

## HIS FALL.

Written

by

BEN. IONSON.

MART. Non hic Centauros, non Gorgonas, Harpyasque,  
Inuenies: Horum in pagina nostra sapit.

AT LONDON  
Printed by G. Eld, for Thomas  
Thorpe. 1609.

*The Testimony of my Affection, & Obedience  
to my noble Friend Sir Robert Cotton  
wh. I desire may remaine with him, by  
Capt. Leonard Mordaunt.*

The title-page of Mr. J. Wise's copy of the Quarto



TO THE NO LESSE  
NOBLE, BY VERTVE,  
THEN BLOVD:

Esme

L. AVBIGNY.

5

MY LORD,

*I* F euer any ruine were so great, as to suruiue; I  
thinke this be one I send you: the Fal of Seianus.  
It is a poeme, that (if I well remember) in your Lo.  
sight, suffer'd no lesse violence from our people here, <sup>10</sup>  
then the subiect of it did from the rage of the people of  
Rome; but, with a different fate, as (I hope) merit:  
For this hath out-liu'd their malice, and begot it  
selfe a greater fauour then he lost, the loue of good  
men. Amongst whom, if I make your Lo. the first it <sup>15</sup>  
thankes, it is not without a iust confession of the  
bond your benefits haue, and euer shall hold vpon me.

Your Lo. most faithfull honorer,

BEN. IONSON.

DEDICATION not in Q  
9 Lo.] Lordships F<sub>2</sub> (so 18)  
ship F<sub>2</sub>

3 THEN] THAN F<sub>2</sub>  
11, 14 then] than F<sub>2</sub>

8 Fal] Fall F<sub>2</sub>  
15 Lo.] Lord-

## *To the Readers.*

THE following, and voluntary Labours of my Friends, prefixt to my Booke, haue releiued me in much, whereat (without them) I should necessarilie haue touchd: Now, I will onely vse three or foure short, and needfull Notes, and  
 5 so rest.

First, if it be objected, that what I publish is no true *Poëme*; in the strict Lawes of *Time*. I confesse it: as also in the want of a proper *Chorus*, whose Habite, and Moodes are such, and so difficult, as not any, whome I haue seene  
 10 since the *Auntients*, (no, not they who haue most presently affected Lawes) haue yet come in the way off. Nor is it needful, or almost possible, in these our Times, and to such Auditors, as commonly Things are presented, to obserue the ould state, and splendour of *Drammatick Poëmes*, with pre-  
 15 seruation of any popular delight. But of this I shall take more seasonable cause to speake; in my Obseruations vpon *Horace* his *Art of Poetry*, which (with the Text translated) I intend, shortly to publish. In the meane time, if in truth of Argument, dignity of Persons, grauity and height of Elocu-  
 20 tion, fulnesse and frequence of Sentence, I haue discharg'd the other offices of a *Tragick* writer, let not the absence of these *Formes* be imputed to me, wherein I shall giue you occasion hereafter (and without my boast) to thinke I could better prescribe, then omit the due use, for want of a con-  
 25 uenient knowledge.

The next is, least in some nice nostrill, the *Quotations* might sauour affected, I doe let you know, that I abhor nothing more; and haue onely done it to shew my integrity in the *Story*, and saue my selfe in those common Torturers,  
 30 that bring all wit to the Rack: whose Noses are euer like Swine spoyling, and rooting up the *Muses* Gardens, and

TO THE READERS in Q before the commendatory verse by George Chapman,  
 Hugh Holland, 'Cygnus', 'Th R.', John Marston, William Strachey  
 1 'ΦΙΛΟΣ', 'Ev. B'. om. Ff 10 no.] no Q 17 Horace, Q originally

their whole Bodies, like Moles, as blindly working vnder Earth to cast any, the least, hilles vpon *Vertue*.

Whereas, they are in *Latine* and the worke in *English*, it was presupposd, none but the Learned would take the paynes 35 to conferre them, the Authors themselues being all in the learned *Tongues*, saue one, with whose English side I haue had little to doe : To which it may be required, since I haue quoted the Page, to name what Edition I follow'd. *Tacit. Lips.* in 4°. *Antuerp. edit. 600. Dio. Folio Hen. Step. 92.* 40 For the rest, as *Sueton. Seneca. &c.* the Chapter doth sufficiently direct, or the Edition is not varied.

Lastly I would informe you, that this Booke, in all numbers, is not the same with that which was acted on the publike Stage, wherein a second Pen had good share : in 45 place of which I haue rather chosen, to put weaker (and no doubt lesse pleasing) of mine own, then to defraud so happy a *Genius* of his right, by my lothed vsurpation.

Fare you well. And if you read farder of me, and like, I shall not be afraid of it though you praise me out. 50

*Neque enim mihi cornea fibra est.*

But that I should plant my felicity, in your generall saying *Good*, or *Well*, &c. were a weaknesse which the better sort of you might worthily contemne, if not absolutely hate me for. 55

B E N. I O N S O N. and no such,

*Quem Palma negata macrum, donata reducit opimum.*

40 *Folio*] *Folio. Q*    *Step*] *Step Q*    54 contemne] coutenme *Q*    56 such,] such. *Q*

## The Argument.

**Æ**Lius Seianus, sonne to Seius Strabo, a gentleman of Rome, and borne at Vulsinium, after his long service in court; first, under Augustus, afterward, Tiberius: grew into that fauour with the latter, and won him by those artes, as there  
 5 wanted nothing, but the name, to make him a copartner of the Empire. Which greatnesse of his, Drusus, the Emperors sonne, not brooking, after many smother'd dislikes (it one day breaking out) the Prince strooke him publikely on the face. To reuenge which disgrace, Liuia, the wife of Drusus (being before  
 10 corrupted by him to her dishonour, and the discouery of her husbands counsell) Seianus practiseth with, together with her Physitian, called Eudemus, and one Lygdus, an Eunuch, to poyson Drusus. This their inhumane act hauing successefull, and unsuspected passage, it emboldeneth Seianus to farther, &  
 15 more insolent proiects, euen the ambition of the Empire: where finding the lets, he must encounter, to be many, & hard, in respect of the issue of Germanicus (who were next in hope for the succession) he deuiseeth to make Tiberius selfe, his meanes: & instill's into his eares many doubts, and suspicions, both  
 20 against the Princes, and their mother Agrippina: which Cæsar iealously hearkning to, as couetously consenteth to their ruine, and their friends. In this time, the better to mature and strengthen his designe, Seianus labors to marry Liuia, and

THE ARGUMENT Q prints in roman 3 court, corr F1, Court, Q: court F1 originally Court; F2 Augustus,] Augustus; Q Augustus; F2 5 nothing, . name,] nothing . Name Q copartner] copartner F2 6 Emperors] Emperours Q 7 sonne,] sonne Q sonne Ff 7-8 dislikes (it . . out) corr F1, F2: dislikes, it . out; Q: dislikes, it . . out, F1 originally 8 strooke] stroke Q. struck F2 9 Liuia] (Liuia Q Drusus (being] Drusus, beeing Q 10 dishonour] dishonor Q 11 farther,] farther F2 16-17 & hard, in re-|spect corr. F1 and hard, | in respect F1 originally 17-18 in hope for the suc-|cession) he corr. F1, F2: in hope) he Q in hope) he F1 originally 19 & instill's in-|to his eares corr F1. and instill's into his | eares F1 originally 20 and | their mother corr. F1: and their | mother F1 originally 21 co-|uetously corr. F1: coue-|tously F1 originally 21 Seianus labors corr. F1 hee labours Q. he labours F1 originally: Seianus labours F2 marry | Liuia corr F1. marry Li-|uia F1 originally

*worketh (with all his ingine) to remoue Tiberius from the knowledge of publike businesse, with allurements of a quiet and retyred life : the latter of which, Tiberius (out of a pronenesse to lust, and a desire to hide those vnnaturall pleasures, which he could not so publikely practise) embraceth : the former inkindleth his feares, and there, giues him first cause of doubt, or suspect toward Seianus. Against whom, he raiseth (in priuate) a new instrument, one Sertorius Macro, and by him vnderworketh, discouers the others counsell, his meanes, his ends, sounds the affections of the Senators, diuides, distracts them : at last, when Seianus least looketh, and is most secure (with pretext of doing him an vn-wonted honour in the Senate) he traines him from his guardes, and with a long doubtfull letter, in one day, hath him suspected, accused, condemned, and torne in pieces, by the rage of the people.*

24 *with all*] withall Q      26 *retyred* corr F1, F2 · separated Q · *separated* F1 originally      Tiberius] Tiberias Q originally      29 *feares* corr F1 Feares Q      eares F1 originally      there, corr F1 there Q      there F1 originally      31-2 *vnder-worketh*] vnderworketh Q      33 *diuides*] deuides Q      34 *least*] lest Q      35 *pretext*] prætext Q      *honour*] honor Q      36-7 *guardes, and with a long doubtfull | letter, in one day* corr F1, F2      Guardes, with one Letter, & in one Day Q      *guardes, with one letter, and in one | day* F1 originally      37 *accused*] accus'd Q      37-8 *torne | in pieces, by the rage* corr F1      *torne in pieces, by | the rage* F1 originally      After 38 Q adds a final paragraph in larger type, omitted in Ff      This do we aduance as a marke of Terror to all Traytors, & Treasons, to shewe how iust the Heauens are in powring and thundring downe a weighty vengeance on their vnnatural intents, euen to the worst Princes · Much more to those, for guard of whose Pietie and Vertue, the Angels are in continuall watch, and God himself miraculously working



## The Persons of the Play.

TIBERIVS.			
	DRVSVS <i>se.</i>	SEIANVS.	
	NERO.	LATIARIS.	
	DRVSVS <i>th.</i>	VARRO.	
5	CALIGVLA.	MACRO.	20
	ARRVNTIVS.	COTTA.	
	SILIVS.	AFER.	
	SABINVS.	HATERIVS.	
	LEPIDVS.	SANQVINIVS.	
10	CORDVS.	POMPONIVS.	25
	GALLVS.	POSTHVMS.	
	REGVLVS.	TRIO.	
	TERENTIVS.	MINVTIVS.	
	LACO.	SATRIVS.	
15	EVDEMVS.	NATTA.	30
	RVFVS.	OPSIVS.	
TRIBVNI.			
	AGRIPPINA.	LIVIA.	
		SOSIA.	
35	PRAECONES.	LICTORES.	
	FLAMEN.	MINISTRI.	40
	TVBICINES.	TIBICINES.	
	NVNTIVS.	SERVVS.	

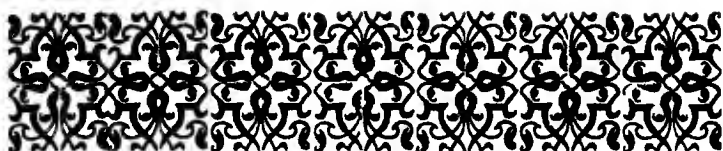
---

## THE SCENE.

## ROME

---

THE PERSONS OF THE PLAY] *The names of the Actors* Q 6  
 ARRVTIVS] Lucius Arruntius G 7 SILIVS] Caius Silius G 8  
 SABINVS] Titius Sabinus G 9 LEPIDVS] Marcus Lepidus G 10 CORDVS] a  
 Cremutius Cordus G 11 GALLVS] Asinius Gallus G 13 TERENTIVS]  
 G *om. to prefix* Marcus 14 LACO] Gracinus Laco G 20 MACRO]  
 Sertorius Macro G 22 AFER] Domitius Afer G 24 SANQVINIVS]  
 SAMQVINIVS F3 26 POSTHVMS] Postvmvs Q Iulius Posthumus G  
 27 TRIO] Fulcinius Trio G 29 SATRIVS] Satrius Secundus G 30  
 NATTA] Pinnarius Natta G 42 SERVVS] Servi, &c. G 43-4 THE  
 SCENE. ROME. *not in Q* After The Scene F2 inserts the names  
 of The principall Tragedians given in F1 at the end of the Play.



## SEIANVS.

### *Act I.*

SABINVS, SILIVS, NATTA, LATIARIS, COR-  
DVS, SATRIVS, ARRVNTIVS, EVDE-  
MVS, HATERIVS, &c.

**H**Aile, CAIVS SILIVS. SIL. TITIVS SABINVS,  
Haile.

Yo'are rarely met in court! S A B. Therefore, well met.

S I L. 'Tis true. Indeed, this place is not our sphære.

S A B. No, S I L I V S, wee are no good inginers;

We want the fine arts, & their thruiing vse, 5  
Should make vs grac'd, or fauour'd of the times.

We haue no shift of faces, no cleft tongues,  
No soft, and glutinous bodies, that can sticke,  
Like snailes, on painted walls; or, on our breasts,  
Creepe vp, to fall, from that proud height, to which 10  
We did by slauerie, not by seruice, clime

We are no guilty men, and then no great;  
We haue nor place in court, office in state,  
That we can say, we owe vnto our crimes:  
We burne with no black secrets, which can make 15

Vs deare to the authors; or liue fear'd  
Of their still waking realosies, to raise  
Our selues a fortune, by subuerting theirs.  
We stand not in the lines, that doe aduance  
To that so courted point. S I L. But yonder leane 20

I. Act I | SABINVS, SILIVS, . . . HATERIVS, &c | ACTVS PRIMVS. |  
SABINVS. SILIVS . HATERIVS &c Q ACT I. SCENE I | A State  
Room in the Palace | Enter Sabinus and Silius, followed by Latiaris G  
Act] Act. Fr. Act Fa 1 Haile.] SAB Haile Q 4 No.] No Q  
inginers ;] Inginers. Fa 6 fauour'd] fauor'd Q 13 nor] no Fa  
20 Enter Satrius and Natta at a distance. G

A paire that doe. (SAB. Good cousin LATIARIS.)  
 SIL. SATRIVS SECVNDVS, and PINNARIVS  
 NATTA,

- The great SEIANVS clients: There be two,  
 Know more, then honest counsell: whose close breasts  
 25 Were they rip'd vp to light, it would be found  
 A poore, and idle sinne, to which their trunkes  
 Had not beene made fit organs. These can lye,  
 Flatter, and sweare, forswear, deprave, infirme,  
 Smile, and betray; make guilty men; then beg  
 30 The forfeit liues, to get the liuing; cut  
 Mens throates with whisprings; sell to gaping sutors  
 The emptie smoake, that flies about the Palace;  
 Laugh, when their patron laughes, sweat, when he sweates;  
 Be hot, and cold with him; change euery moode,  
 35 Habit, and garbe, as often as he varies;  
 Obserue him, as his watch obserues his clocke;  
 And true, as turkise in the deare lords ring,  
 Looke well, or ill with him: ready to praise  
 His lordship, if he spit, or but pisse faire,  
 40 Haue an indifferent stoole, or breake winde well,  
 Nothing can scape their catch. SAB. Alas! these things  
 Deserue no note, confer'd with other vile,  
 And filthier flatteries, that corrupt the times:  
 When, not alone our gentries chiefe are faine  
 45 To make their safety from such sordide acts,  
 But all our *Consuls*, and no little part  
 Of such as haue beene *Prætors*, yea, the most  
*Pedarij.* Of *Senators* (that else not vse their voyces)  
 Start vp in publique *Senate*, and there striue  
 50 Who shall propound most abiect things, and base,  
 So much, as oft TIBERIVS hath beene heard,  
 Leauing the court, to crie, O race of men,

1. 21 cousin] Cossen Q      24 then] than F<sub>2</sub>      breasts] breasts, F<sub>2</sub>  
 25 rip'd] rip't F<sub>2</sub>      31 whisprings] whisperings F<sub>2</sub>      40 well.] well;  
 F<sub>2</sub>      43 flatteres] flatterers F<sub>2</sub>      44 chiefe] Chiefe, Q      48  
*Senators* (that . . . voyces)] *Senators*, that . . . voyces, Q      50 base.]  
 base; F<sub>2</sub>

Prepar'd for seruitudel which shew'd, that, he  
Who least the publique liberty could like,  
As loathly brook'd their flat seruilitie. 55

S I L. Well, all is worthy of vs, were it more,  
Who with our ryots, pride, and ciuill hate,  
Haue so prouok'd the iustice of the gods.  
We, that (within these fourescore yeeres) were borne  
Free, equall lords of the triumphed world, 60  
And knew no masters, but affections,  
To which betraying first our liberties,  
We since became the slaues to one mans lusts;  
And now to many: euery ministring spie  
That will accuse, and sweare, is lord of you, 65  
Of me, of all, our fortunes, and our liues.  
Our lookes are call'd to question, and our wordes,  
How innocent soeuer, are made crimes;  
We shall not shortly dare to tell our dreames,  
Or thinke, but 'twill be treason. S A B. "Tyrannes artes 70  
"Are to giue flatterers, grace; accusers, power;  
"That those may seeme to kill whom they deuoure.  
Now good C R E M V T I V S C O R D V S. C O R. Haile, to  
your lordship.

N A T. Who's that salutes your cousin? L A T. 'Tis one *They*  
C O R D V S, *whisper*  
A gentleman of Rome one, that has writ 75  
Annal's of late, they say, and very well.

N A T. Annal's? of what times? L A T. I thinke of  
P O M P E I 'S,  
And C A I V S C A E S A R S; and so downe to these.

N A T. How stands h'affected to the present state?  
Is he or *Drusian*? or *Germanican*? 80  
Or ours? or neutrall? L A T. I know him not so far.

1 53 which] Which F2 that, he] that He Q 58 gods.]  
Gods Q 60 equall] æquall Q 61 affections,] affections;  
F2 66 all,] all F3 70 Tyrannes] Tyrants F3 71 grace;  
accusers, power,] grace, accusers power, Q Before 73 Enter Cordus  
and Arruntus G 74 Stage-dir. not in Q cousin] Cosin Q 78  
these ] these, Q

N A T. Those times are somewhat queasie to be toucht.  
Haue you or seene, or heard part of his worke?

L A T. Not I, he meanes they shall be publike shortly.

85 N A T. O. C O R D V S do you cal him? L A T. I. S A B. But  
these our times

Are not the same, A R R V N T I V S. A R R. Times? the men,  
The men are not the same: 'tis we are base,  
Poore, and degenerate from th'exalted streine  
Of our great fathers. Where is now the soule

90 Of god-like C A T O? he, that durst be good, /  
When C A E S A R durst be euill; and had power,  
As not to liue his slaue, to dye his master.  
Or where the constant B R V T V S, that (being prooffe  
Against all charme of benefits) did strike

95 So braue a blow into the monsters heart  
That sought vnkindly to captiue his countrie?  
O, they are fled the light. Those mightie spirits  
Lye rak'd vp, with their ashes, in their vrnes,  
And not a sparke of their eternall fire

100 Glowes in a present bosome. All's but blaze,  
Flashes, and smoke, wherewith we labour so,  
There's nothing *Romane* in vs; nothing good,  
Gallant, or great. 'Tis true, that C O R D V S say's,

104 *Braue C A S S I V S was the last of all that race.*

*Drusus  
passeth  
by.*

S A B. Stand by, lord D R V S V S. H A T. Th'Emp'rours  
son, giue place.

S I L. I like the prince well. A R R. A riotous youth,  
There's little hope of him. S A B. That fault his age  
Will, as it growes, correct. Me thinkes, he beares  
Himselfe, each day, more nobly then other:

110 And wins no lesse on mens affections,  
Then doth his father lose. Beleeue me', I loue him;

1. 85 O.] O, Fz I.] *Exeunt Natta and Satrius.* add G 86 same,]  
same Q 88 streine] straine Fz 93 where] where's Fz 96  
vnkindly] vnkindly) Q MS corr in Wise copy, to '(vnkindly)' 97  
O.] O Q 98 ashes, Q ashes Ff 100 bosome] bosome. Q  
105 Emp'rours] Emperours Fz Stage-dr. not in Q. Drusus passes  
over the stage, attended by Haterius, &c G 109 then] than Fz  
& 111 Then] Than Fz loose] loose Q me'] me' Q: me, Fz: mee, Fz

And chiefly for opposing to SEIANVS.

SIL. And I, for gracing his yong kinsmen so,  
The sonnes of Prince GERMANICVS: It shewes  
A gallant cleerenesse in him, a streight minde, 115  
That enuies not, in them, their fathers name.

A R R. His name was, while he liu'd, aboue all enuie;  
( And being dead, without it. O, that man!  
If there were seedes of the old vertue left,  
They liu'd in him. SIL. He had the fruits, A R R V N T I V S, 120  
More then the seedes: S A B I N V S, and my selfe  
Had meanes to know' him, within; and can report him.  
We were his followers, (he would call vs friends.)  
He was a man most like to vertue'; In all,  
And euery action, neerer to the gods, 125  
Then men, in nature; of a body' as faire  
As was his mind, and no lesse reuerend  
In face, then fame: He could so vse his state,  
Temp'ring his greatnesse, with his grauitie,  
As it auoyded all selfe-loue in him, 130  
And spight in others. What his funeralls lack'd  
In images, and pompe, they had supply'd  
With honourable sorrow, souldiers sadnesse,  
A kind of silent mourning, such, as men  
(Who know no teares, but from their captiues) vse 135  
To shew in so great losses. C O R. I thought once,  
Considering their formes, age, manner of deaths,  
The neerenesse of the places, where they fell,  
T'haue paralell'd him with great A L E X A N D E R:  
For both were of best feature, of high race, 140  
Yeer'd but to thirtie, and, in forraine lands,  
By their owne people, alike made away.

S A B. I know not, for his death, how you might wrest it:  
But, for his life, it did as much disdaine

1. 113 I,] I Q kinsmen] kinsman Q, corrected in MS in Wise copy  
115 streight] straight F2 118 O,] O Q 120 fruits] fruits Q  
121 then] than F2 (so 128) 122 know' him,] know' him. Q: know  
him, Ff 124 vertue'; In] vertue; In F2 126 Then] Than F2  
body'] body F2 141 forraine] foreign F3

- 145 Comparison, with that voluptuous, rash,  
Giddy, and drunken *Macedon's*, as mine  
Doth with my bond-mans. All the good, in him,  
(His valour, and his fortune) he made his ;  
But he had other touches of late *Romanes*,
- 150 That more did speake him : *P O M P E I ' s* dignitie,  
The innocence of *C A T O*, *C A E S A R ' s* spirit,  
Wise *B R V T V S* temperance, and euery vertue,  
Which, parted vnto others, gaue them name,  
Flow'd mixt in him. He was the soule of goodnesse :
- 155 And all our praises of him are like streames  
Drawn from a spring, that still rise full, and leaue  
The part remayning greatest. *A R R.* I am sure  
He was too great for vs, and that they knew  
Who did remoue him hence. *S A B.* When men grow  
fast
- 160 Honor'd, and lou'd, there is a tricke in state  
(Which iealous princes neuer faile to vse)  
How to decline that growth, with faire pretext,  
And honourable colours of employment,  
Either by embassie, the war, or such,
- 165 To shift them forth into another aire,  
Where they may purge, and lessen ; so was he .  
And had his second's there, sent by *T I B E R I V S*,  
And his more subtile damme, to discontent him ;  
To breede, and cherish mutinies ; detract
- 170 His greatest actions ; giue audacious check  
To his commands ; and worke to put him out  
In open act of treason. All which snares  
When his wise cares preuented, a fine poyson  
Was thought on, to mature their practices.
- 175 *C O R.* Here comes *S E I A N V S*. *S I L.* Now obserue the  
stoupes,  
The bendings, and the falls. *A R R.* Most creeping base !

1 147 bond-mans] Bondmans Q 152 temperance,] temp'rance, Q.  
Fr temp'rance; F2 158 too] to Q 159 remoue] remoooue Q  
162 growth] growth Q 163 colours] coulours Q 167 second's]  
Secon'ds Q. secon'ds Fr seconds F2 175 stoupes] stoopes F2

SEIANVS, SATRIVS, TERENTIVS. &amp;c.

*They  
pass  
over the  
stage.*

**I**Note 'hem well: No more. Say you. SAT. My lord,  
There is a gentleman of Rome would buy——

SEI. How cal you him you talk'd with? SAT. 'Please  
your lordship,

It is EVDEMVS, the physitian 180

To LIVIA, DRVS's wife. SEI. On with your sute.

Would buy, you said—— SAT. A Tribunes place, my lord.

SEI. What will he gue? SAT. Fiftie *sestertia*.

SEI LIVIA's physitian, say you, is that fellow?

SAT. It is, my lord; your lordships answe're? SEI. To 185  
what?

SAT. The place, my lord. 'Tis for a gentleman,

Your lordship will well like off, when you see him;

And one, you may make yours, by the grant.

SEI. Well, let him bring his money, and his name.

SAT. Thanke your lordship. He shall, my lord. SEI. 190  
Come hither.

Know you this same EVDEMVS? Is he learn'd?

SAT. Reputed so, my lord and of deepe practice.

SEI. Bring him in, to me, in the gallerie;

And take you cause, to leaue vs there, together:

I would confer with him, about a grieffe.—On. 195

ARR. So, yet! another? yet?  $\delta$  desperate state

Of grou'ling honour! Seest thou this,  $\delta$  sunne,

And doe wee see thee after? Me thinkes, day

Should lose his light, when men doe lose their shames,

And, for the emptie circumstance of life, 200

<sup>1</sup> Before 177 stage-dir not in Q Enter Sejanus talking to Terentius, followed by Satrius, Natta, &c G (before 175), continuing the scene 177 I] Sxi I Q 'hem] 'em F3 (*passim*) well ] well, Q 179 'Please] Please Q 180 EVDEMVS] EVDEMVS Q, which usually prints names in lower-case italic 182 buy, you said——] buy you said Q 183 *sestertia*] *Sestertia*, Q 184 physitian,] Phisitian Q 187 off] of F2 188 grant] graunt Q 189 his om F2 190 Thanke] 'Thank F2 shall,] shal Q 192 lord ] lord, F2 194 cause,] cause F2 together] together F2 195 On] On? Q originally. begins a new line in G Exeunt Sejanus, Satrius, Terentius, &c. add G: Some clients remain add W D. Briggs 197 honour] Honor Q 199 lose . . . lose] loose . . . loose Q



- Betray their cause of liuing. S I L. Nothing so.  
 S E I A N V S can repaire, if I O V E should ruine.  
 He is the now court-god ; And well applyed  
 With sacrifice of knees, of crookes, and cringe,  
 205 He will doe more then all the house of heau'n  
 Can, for a thousand *hecatombes*. 'Tis he  
 Makes vs our day, or night ; Hell, and *Elysium*  
 Are in his looke : We talke of R H A D A M A N T H,  
 Furies, and fire-brands ; But 'tis his frowne  
 210 That is all these, where, on the aduerse part,  
 His smile is more, then ere (yet) *Poets* fain'd  
 Of blisse, and shades, *nectar*—— A R R. A seruing boy ?  
 I knew him, at C A I V S trencher, when for hyre,  
 He prostituted his abused body  
 215 To that great gourmond, fat A P I C I V S ;  
 And was the noted *pathick* of the time.

- S A B. And, now, the second face of the whole world.  
 The partner of the empire, hath his image  
 Rear'd equall with T I B E R I V S, borne in ensignes,  
 220 Command's, disposes euery dignitie,  
*Centurions, Tribunes, Heads of prouinces,*  
*Prætors, and Consuls,* all that heretofore  
*Romes* generall suffrage gaue, is now his sale.  
 The gaine, or rather spoile, of all the earth,  
 225 One, and his house, receiues. S I L. He hath of late  
 Made him a strength too, strangely, by reducing  
 All the *Prætorian* bands into one campe,  
 Which he command's : pretending, that the souldier  
 By liuing loose, and scattered, fell to ryot ;  
 230 And that if any sodaine enterprise  
 Should be attempted, their vnited strength  
 Would be far more, then seuer'd ; and their life  
 More strict, if from the citie more remou'd.

1. 204 cringe.] cringe; F2 cringes, G 205 then] than F2' (so  
 211, 232, 252) 210 these.] these, F2 212 boy ?] boy. Q:  
 boy ! F2 213 CAIVS] Caiu's Q 219 ensignes.] Ensignes ; Q  
 222 Consuls.] Consuls, F2 224 spoile.] Spoile Q 228 pretending,]  
 pretending F2 230 sodaine] sudden F2 233 More] More, Q  
 , remou'd.] remou'd, Q

S A B. Where, now, he builds, what kind of fort's he please,  
Is hard to court the souldier, by his name, 235  
Wooes, feasts the chiefest men of action,  
Whose wants, not loues, compell them to be his.  
And, though he ne're were liberall by kind,  
Yet, to his owne darke ends, hee's most profuse,  
Lauish, and letting flye, he cares not what 240  
To his ambition. A R R. Yet, hath he ambition ?  
Is there that step in state can make him higher ?  
Or more ? or any thing he is, but lesse ?

S I L. Nothing, but Emperour. A R R. The name  
T I B E R I V S

I hope, will keepe ; how ere he hath fore-gone 245  
The dignitie, and power S I L. Sure, while he liues.

A R R. And dead, it comes to D R V S V S. Should he fayle,  
To the braue issue of G E R M A N I C V S ;  
And they are three : Too many (ha ?) for him  
To haue a plot vpon ? S A B. I doe not know 250  
The heart of his designs ; but, sure, their face  
Lookes farther then the present. A R R. By the gods,  
If I could gesse he had but such a thought,  
My sword should cleaue him downe from head to heart,  
But I would finde it out and with my hand 255  
I'd hurle his panting braine about the ayre,  
In mites, as small as *atomi*, to'vndoe

The knotted bed—— S A B. You are obseru'd, A R R V N-  
T I U S.

A R R. Death ! I dare tell him so ; and all his spies : *He turnes*  
You, sir, I would, doe you looke ? and you. S A B. Forbear. *to Seianus*  
*clients.*

1 235 hard] heard MS corr in Wise copy 236 Wooes] Woes Q 241  
Yet] yet Q 244 Emperour] Emp'rour Q, Ff 247 Should] should  
Q 249 Too] To Q 251 designs] dissigns Q 253 gesse] guesse  
F2 thought,] thought Q 257 *atomi*, to'vndoe] *atomes*, to undoe F2  
258 You are] You're Q 259-60 *Stage-dir.* not in Q 259 dare]  
dare to F2 260 You,] You Q

SATRIVS, EVDEMVS, SEIANVS.

**H**Eere, he will instant be ; Let's walke a turne.  
Yo're in a muse, EVDEMVS ? EV D. Not I, sir.  
I wonder he should marke me out so ! well,  
I O V E, and A P O L L O forme it for the best.

265 SAT. Your fortune's made vnto you now, EVDEMVS,  
If you can but lay hold vpon the meanes ;  
Doe but obserue his humour, and —— beleeeue it——  
He's the noblest *Romane*, where he takes——  
Here comes his lordship. SEI. Now, good SATRIVS.

270 SAT. This is the gentleman, my lord. SEI. Is this ?  
Giue me your hand, we must be more acquainted.  
Report, sir, hath spoke out your art, and learning :  
And I am glad I haue so needfull cause,  
(How euer in it selfe painefull, and hard)

275 To make me knowne to so great vertue. Looke,  
Who's that ? SATRIVS—I haue a grieffe, sir,  
That will desire your helpe. Your name's EVDEMVS ?  
EV D. Yes. SEI. Sir ? EV D. It is, my lord. SEI. I  
heare, you are

Physitian to L I V I A, the princesse ?

280 EV D. I minister vnto her, my good lord.

SEI. You minister to a royall lady, then.

EV D. She is, my lord, and fayre. SEI. That's vnderstood  
Of all their sexe, who are, or would be so ;

And those, that would be, physicke soone can make 'hem :

285 For those that are, their beauties feare no colours.

EV D. Your lordship is conceited. SEI. Sir, you know it.  
And can (if need be) read a learned lecture,  
On this, and other secrets. Pray you tell me,  
What more of ladies, besides L I V I A,

290 Haue you your patients ? EV D. Many, my good lord.

I. Before 261 SATRIVS, SEIANVS ] SCENE II | (The former scene continued ) | A Gallery discovered opening into the State Room G 261  
Heere,] SAT. Here, Q Here' F2 be,] be F2 turne ] turne; F2 268  
He's] He's Q: He is G Enter *Seianus* add G 272 spoke ] spoken F2  
276 (after SATRIVS) Exit Sat. G 282 lord,] Lord; Q 285 colours  
F2. coullors Q: collours F1 286 Sir,] Sir Q 288 Pray] 'Pray F2

The great AVGVSTA, VRGVLANIA,  
MVTILIA PRISCA, and PLANCINA, diuers—

SEI. And, all these tell you the particulars  
Of euery seuerall grieve? how first it grew,  
And then encreas'd, what action caused that; 295  
What passion that: and answer to each point  
That you will put 'hem. EV D. Else, my lord, we know not  
How to prescribe the remedies. SEI. Goe to,  
Yo'are a subtill nation, you Physitians!  
And growne the onely cabinets, in court, 300  
To ladies priuacies. Faith which of these  
Is the most pleasant lady, in her physicke?  
Come, you are modest now. EV D. 'Tis fit my lord.

SEI. Why, sir, I doe not aske you of their vrines,  
Whose smel's most violet? or whose seige is best? 305  
Or who makes hardest faces on her stool?  
Which lady sleeps with her owne face, a nights?  
Which puts her teeth off, with her clothes, in court?  
Or, which her hayre? which her complexion?  
And, in which boxe she puts it? These were questions 310  
That might, perhaps, haue put your grauity  
To some defence of blush. But, I enquir'd,  
Which was the wittiest? meriest? wantonnest?  
Harmelesse intergatories, but concepts.  
Me thinks, AVGVSTA should be most peruerse, 315  
And froward in her fit? EV D. She's so, my lord.

SEI. I knew it. And MVTILIA the most iocund?

EV D. 'Tis very true, my lord. SEI. And why would you  
Conceale this from me, now? Come, what's LIVIA?  
I know, she's quick, and quaintly spirited, 320  
And will haue strange thoughts, when she's at leasure;  
She tells 'hem all to you? EV D. My noblest lord,

I. 291 VRGVLANIA, F2 Vrgulania, Q. VRGVLANIA F1 292  
PLANCINA,] PLANCINA; F2 295 encreas'd] increas'd F2 301  
Faith] Faith; Q Faith, F2 304 Why,] Why Q 305 smel's)  
smels F2 306 her] the Q 307 face,] face Q 308 off]  
of Q 312 But,] But Q 313 meriest] merriest F2 316  
She's] Shee's Q 318 And,] And Q 321 she's] sh's Q: she is G

- He breaths not in the empire, or on earth,  
Whom I would be ambitious to serue
- 325 (In any act, that may preserue mine honour)  
Before your lordship. S E I. Sir, you can loose no honor,  
By trusting ought to me. The coursest act  
Done to my seruice, I can so requite,  
As all the world shall stile it honorable :
- 330 "Your idle, vertuous *definitions*  
"Keepe honor poore, and are as scorn'd, as vaine :  
"Those deeds breathe honor, that do sucke in gaine.  
E v D. But, good my lord, if I should thus betray  
The counsels of my patient, and a ladies
- 335 Of her high place, and worth ; what might your lordship,  
(Who presently are to trust me with your owne)  
Iudge of my faith ? S E I. Only the best, I sweare.  
Say now, that I should vtter you my grieffe ;  
And with it, the true cause ; that it were loue ;
- 340 And loue to L I V I A : you should tell her this ?  
Should she suspect your faith ? I would you could  
Tell me as much, from her ; see, if my braine  
Could be turn'd iealous. E v D. Happily, my lord,  
I could, in time, tell you as much, and more ;
- 345 So I might safely promise but the first,  
To her, from you. S E I. As safely, my E v D E M V S,  
(I now dare call thee so) as I haue put  
The secret into thee. E v D. My lord—S E I. Protest not.  
Thy lookes are vowes to me, vse onely speed,
- 350 And but affect her with S E I A N V S loue,  
Thou art a man, made, to make *Consuls*. Goe.  
E v D. My lord, Ile promise you a pruate meeting  
This day, together. S E I. Canst thou ? E v D. Yes. S E I.  
The place ?  
E v D. My gardens, whither I shall your lordship.

1. 323 breaths] breathes *F2* on] the *Q* 325 honour] honor *Q*  
 326 loose . . honor] lose . . honour *F2* 329 honorable] honourable  
*F2* 331, 332 honor] honour *F2* 332 breathe] breath *Q* 342  
 much.] much *Q* 345 first.] first *Q* 346 you ] you : *Q* 350  
 1 SEIANVS] SEIANVS'S *F2* 354 gardens, whither] Gardens. whether *Q*

SEI. Let me adore my *ÆSCVLAPIVS*. 355  
 Why, this indeed is physick! and out-speakes  
 The knowledge of cheape drugs, or any vse  
 Can be made out of it! more comforting  
 Then all your *opiates, iulebes, apozemes,*  
*Magistrall syrripes,* or—Be gone, my friend, 360  
 Not barely stiled, but created so;  
 Expect things, greater then thy largest hopes,  
 To ouertake thee: Fortune, shall be taught  
 To know how ill she hath deseru'd thus long,  
 To come behinde thy wishes. Goe, and speed. 365  
 "Ambition makes more trusty slaues, then need.  
 These fellows, by the fauour of their arte,  
 Haue, still, the meanes to tempt, oft-times, the power.  
 If *LIVIA* will be now corrupted, then  
 Thou hast the way, *SEIANVS*, to worke out 370  
 His secrets, who (thou knowest) endures thee not,  
 Her husband *DRVSVS*. and to worke against them.  
 Prosper it, *PALLAS*, thou, that betterst wit;  
 For *VENVS* hath the smallest share in it.

TIBERIVS, SEIANVS, DRVSVS.

WEE not endure these flatteries, let him stand;  
 Our empire, ensignes, axes, roddes, and state  
 Take not away our humane nature from vs:  
 Looke vp, on vs, and fall before the gods.

One  
kneeles to  
him

SEI. How like a god, speakes *CAESAR*! *ARR*. There,  
 obserue!

He can indure that second, that's no flattery. 380  
 O, what is it, proud slime will not beleewe

1. 356 physick [] Physick. Q out-speakes] out speakes Q 358  
 it [] it, Q 359 iulebes] iulepes F2 362 then] than F2 (so 366)  
 363 thee ] thee Q 365 speed ] speed Q After 365 Exit Eudemus  
 G 366 need. F2: Need Q need, Fr 367 fauour] fauor Q 368  
 tempt.] tempt, F2 oft-times] oftumes Q power] power, Q 371  
 knowest] know'st F2 Before 375 TIBERIVS, DRVSVS ] Enter  
*Tiberius and Drusus, attended* G, who continues the scene 375-6  
*Stage-dir. not in Q* to Haterius, who kneels to him G 375  
 flatteries, let] flatteries, Let Q stand,] stand Q 376 Our] our Q  
 379 god.] God Q 380 indure] endure F2 381 O.] O Q

Of his owne worth, to heare it equall prais'd  
Thus with the gods? C O R. He did not heare it, sir.

A R R. He did not? Tut, he must not, we thinke meanelly.  
385 'Tis your most courtly, knowne confederacy,

To haue your priuate parasite redeeme  
What he, in publique subtilty, will lose  
To making him a name. H A T. Right mighty lord——

T I B. We must make vp our eares, 'gainst these assaults  
390 Of charming tongues; we pray you vse, no more,

These contumelies to vs: stile not vs  
Or lord, or mighty, who professe our selfe  
The seruant of the *Senate*, and are proud  
T'enioy them our good, iust, and fauouring lords.

395 C O R. Rarely dissembled. A R R Prince-like, to the life.

"S A B. When power, that may command, so much descends,  
"Their bondage, whom it stoupes to, it intends.

T I B. Whence are these letters? H A T. From the *Senate*.

T I B. So.

Whence these? L A. From thence too. T I B. Are they  
sitting, now?

400 L A T. They stay thy answer, C A E S A R. S I L. If this man

Had but a minde allied vnto his words,  
How blest a fate were it to vs, and *Rome*?

We could not thinke that state, for which to change,  
Although the ayme were our old liberty:

405 The ghosts of those that fell for that, would grieve  
Their bodies liu'd not, now, againe to serue.

"Men are decer'd, who thinke there can be thrall

"Beneath a vertuous prince. Wish'd liberty

"Ne're louelier lookes, then vnder such a crowne.

410 But, when his grace is meerely but lip-good,

And, that no longer, then he aires himselfe

i. 387 he, in publique subtilty,] he in publick subtilly W lose]  
loose Q 388 lord——] Lord Q lod F2 Gives him letters. G  
390 vse,] vse Q, F2 more,] more Q, Ff 392 mighty,] mighty; Q  
394 them] them, Q 395 Prince-like] Princelike Q 397 stoupes]  
stoupes F2 399 sitting,] sitting Q 400 LAT] Lat, Q 401  
minde] mind, Q words,] wordes. Q 402 blest] blist Q were]  
4 where Q 409, 411 then] than F2 411 longer,] longer F2

Abroad in publique, there, to seeme to shun  
 The strokes, and stripes of flatterers, which within  
 Are lechery vnto him, and so feed  
 His brutish sense with their afflicting sound, 415  
 As (dead to vertue) he permits himselfe  
 Be carried like a pitcher, by the eares,  
 To euery act of vice : this is a case  
 Deserues our feare, and doth presage the nigh,  
 And close approach of bloud and tyranny. 420

"Flattery is midwife vnto princes rage :  
 "And nothing sooner, doth helpe forth a tyranne,  
 "Then that, and whisperers grace, who haue the time,  
 "The place, the power, to make all men offenders.

A R R. He should be told this : and be bid dissemble 425  
 With fooles, and blinde men : We that know the euill,  
 Should hunt the Palace-rattes, or giue them bane ;  
 Fright hence these worse then rauens, that deuoure  
 The quicke, where they but prey vpon the dead :  
 He shall be told it. S A B. Stay, A R R V N T I V S, 430  
 We must abide our oportunity :

And practise what is fit, as what is needfull.

"It is not safe t'enforce a soueraigne's eare :

"Princes heare well, if they at all will heare.

A R R. Ha? Say you so? well. In the meane time, 435

I O V E,

(Say not, but I doe call vpon thee now.)

Of all wilde beasts, preserue me from a tyranne ;

And of all tame, a flatterer. S I L. 'Tis well pray'd.

T I B. Returne the lords this voyce, we are their creature :

And it is fit, a good, and honest prince, 440

Whom they, out of their bounty, haue instructed

With so dilate, and absolute a power,

I. 415 sense] sense, Q 419 nigh,] nigh F2 420 bloud] Bloud, Q  
 422 forth] forth Q 423 Then] Than F2 425 He] Hc Q 426  
 blinde men] blindmen Q 428 then] than F2 431 oportunity]  
 opportunitie Q : opportunity F2 436 now ] now,) F2 438  
 flatterer ] Flatterer. Q 440 good,] good F2 442 dilate,]



- Should owe the office of it, to their seruice ;  
 And good of all, and euery citizen.
- 445 Nor shall it e're repent vs, to haue wish'd  
 The *Senate* iust, and fau'ring lords vnto vs,  
 "Since their free loues doe yeeld no lesse defence  
 "T' a princes state, then his owne innocence.  
 Say then, there can be nothing in their thought
- 450 Shall want to please vs, that hath pleased them ;  
 Our suffrage rather shall preuent, then stay  
 Behind their wills : 'tis empire, to obey  
 Where such, so great, so graue, so good determine.  
 Yet, for the sute of *Spaine*, t'erect a temple
- 455 In honour of our mother, and our selfe,  
 We must (with pardon of the *Senate*) not  
 Assent thereto. Their lordships may obiect  
 Our not denying the same late request  
 Vnto the *Asian* cities : We desire
- 460 That our defence, for suffering that, be knowne  
 In these brieft reasons, with our after purpose.  
 Since deified A v g v s t v s hindred not  
 A temple to be built, at *Pergamum*,  
 In honour of himselfe, and sacred *Rome*,
- 465 We, that haue all his deedes, and wordes obseru'd  
 Euer, in place of lawes, the rather follow'd  
 That pleasing precedent, because, with ours,  
 The *Senates* reuerence also, there, was ioyn'd.  
 But, as, t'haue once receiu'd it, may deserue
- 470 The gaine of pardon, so, to be ador'd  
 With the continew'd stile, and note of gods,  
 Through all the *prouinces*, were wild ambition,  
 And no lesse pride : Yea, eu'n A v g v s t v s name  
 Would early vanish, should it be prophan'd
- 475 With such promiscuous flatteries. For our part,

1. 443 seruice,] service, *Fz* 446 fau'ring] fauo'ring *Q* 448 T'a]  
 To'a *Q* then] than *Fz* (so 451) 464 *Rome*,] *Rome*, *Fz* 467  
 precedent] president *Fz* 469 as,] as *Q* 470 pardon,] pardon;  
*Fz* 471 continew'd] continu'd *Fz* 473 Yea, eu'n] Yea even *Fz*  
 Avgvstrvs] Augustu's] *Fz*

We here protest it, and are couetous  
 Posteritie should know it, we are mortall ;  
 And can but deedes of men : 'twere glory' inough,  
 Could we be truely a prince. And, they shall adde  
 Abounding grace, vnto our memorie, 480  
 That shall report vs worthy our fore-fathers,  
 Carefull of your affaires, constant in dangers,  
 And not afraid of any priuate frowne  
 For publike good. These things shall be to vs  
 Temples, and statues, reared in your mindes, 485  
 The fairest, and most during imag'rie :  
 For those of stone, or brasse, if they become  
 Odious in iudgement of posteritie,  
 Are more contemn'd, as dying sepulchres,  
 Then tane for liuing monuments. We then 490  
 Make here our suite, alike to gods, and men,  
 The one, vntill the period of our race,  
 T'inspire vs with a free, and quiet mind,  
 Discerning both diuine, and humane lawes ;  
 The other, to vouchsafe vs after death, 495  
 An honourable mention, and faire praise,  
 T'accompanie our actions, and our name .  
 The rest of greatnesse princes may command,  
 And (therefore) may neglect, only, a long.  
 A lasting, high, and happy memorie 500  
 They should, without being satisfied, pursue.  
 Contempt of fame begets contempt of virtue.

N A T. Rare ! S A T. Most diuine ! S E I. The *Oracles* are  
 ceas'd,

That only C A E S A R, with their tongue, might speake.

A R R. Let me be gone, most felt, and open this ! 505

C O R. Stay. A R R. What ? to heare more cunning, and  
 fine wordes,

1. 478 glory' inough] glory enough F2 479 And,] And Q 482  
 dangers] daungers Q 484 publike] pnbluke Q 485 your] our F2  
 489 contemn'd,] contemn'd F2 490 tane] tane Q 498-502  
*Gnomic pointing in Q* "The . . . "And "A. . . "They . . . "Con-  
 tempt . . . 499 neglect, only] neglect, Only Q . neglect, only F2  
 503 Most diuine!] most diuine Q

With their sound flatter'd, ere their sense be meant ?  
 T I B. Their choise of *Antium*, there to place the guift  
 509 Vow'd to the goddesse, for our mothers health,  
*Fortuna* We will the *Senate* know, we fairely like ;  
*aquestrus.* As also, of their grant to L E P I D V S,  
 For his repaying the *Emilian* place,  
 And restauration of those monuments :  
 Their grace too in confining of S I L A N V S,  
 515 To th'other Is'le *Cithera*, at the sute  
 Of his religious sister, much commends  
 Their policie, so temp'red with their mercy.  
 But, for the honours, which they haue decreed  
 To our S E I A N V S, to aduance his statue  
 520 In P O M P E I 's theatre (whose ruining fire  
 His vigilance, and labour kept restrain'd  
 In that one losse) they haue, therein, out-gone  
 Their owne great wisdomes, by their skilfull choise,  
 And placing of their bounties, on a man,  
 525 Whose merit more adornes the dignitie,  
 Then that can him : and giues a benefite,  
 In taking, greater, then it can receiue.  
 Blush not, S E I A N V S, thou great aide of *Rome*,  
 Associate of our labours, our chief helper,  
 530 Let vs not force thy simple modestie  
 With offering at thy praise, for more we cannot,  
 Since there's no voice can take it. No man, here,  
 Receiue our speeches, as *hyperbole's* ;  
 For we are far from flattering our friend,  
 535 (Let enuy know) as from the need to flatter.  
 Nor let them aske the causes of our praise ;  
 Princes haue still their grounds rear'd with themselues,

1. 507 With] with Q 508 guift] gift F<sub>2</sub> 511 also,] also Q  
 512 place] palace 1811 reprint of W 515 Cithera, at] Cithera. at Q  
 Cithera; and F<sub>2</sub> 518 honours] honors Q 521 labour] labor Q  
 522 haue, therein,] haue therein Q haue, therein F<sub>2</sub> 526 Then]  
 Than F<sub>2</sub> 527 then] than F<sub>2</sub> 529 labours] labors Q helper,]  
 helper; F<sub>2</sub> 531 offering] offering F<sub>2</sub> 533 hyperbole's] Hyperboles F<sub>2</sub>  
 534 flattering F<sub>2</sub>. flatt'ning Q. flatt'ning F<sub>1</sub> 537-40 Gnomie pointing  
 in Q. "Princes . . ." Aboue "And. "Must . . .

About the poore low flats of common men,  
And, who will search the reasons of their acts,  
Must stand on equall bases. Lead, away. 540

Our loues vnto the *Senate*. *ARR. Cæsar. S A B. Peace.*

*COR.* Great *POMPEI*'s theatre was neuer ruin'd  
Till now, that proud *SEIANVS* hath a statue  
Rear'd on his ashes. *ARR.* Place the shame of souldiers,  
About the best of generalls? cracke the world! 545

And bruise the name of *Romanes* into dust,  
Ere we behold it! *SIL.* Checke your passion;  
Lord *DRVSVS* tarries. *DRV.* Is my father mad?  
Wearie of life, and rule, lords? thus to heaue  
An idoll vp with praise! make him his mate! 550

His ruall in the empire! *ARR.* O, good prince!

*DRV.* Allow him statues? titles? honours? such,  
As he himselfe refuseth? *ARR.* Braue, braue *DRVSVS*!

*DRV.* The first ascents to soueraigntie are hard,  
But, entred once, there neuer wants or meanes, 555  
Or ministers, to helpe th'aspirer on.

*ARR.* True, gallant *DRVSVS*. *DRV.* We must shortly  
pray

To *Modestie*, that he will rest contented——

*ARR.* I, where he is, and not write emperour. 559

*SEIANVS, DRVSVS, ARRVNTIVS, &c.*

*He enters,  
followed  
with  
clients.*

**T**Here is your bill, and yours; Bring you your man:  
I haue mou'd for you, too, *LATIARIS*. *DRV.* What?  
Is your vast greatnesse growne so blindly bold,

1. 538 men,] men, *F2* 541 (after *Senate*) Exeunt Tib Sejan  
Natta, Hat Lat Officers, &c *G* 543 *SEIANVS*] *Seianus* *Q* 544  
souldiers,] souldier some copies of *F2* 545 world l] world *Q*  
547 it l] it. *Q* 550 praise l] praise? *Q* mate l] mate? *Q*  
551 empire l] Empire? *Q* O.] O *Q* prince l] prince *F2* 552  
honours] honors *Q* 554-6 Gnostic pointing in *Q* „ *DRV* The  
„But „ Or . . . 554 hard,] hard *Q*, *Fr.* hard, *F2* 555  
But,] But *F2* 558 contented—] contented *Q* 559 emperour]  
Emp'rou *Q*, *F2* emp'rou *Fr* Emperor *F3* Before 560 *SEIANVS*,]  
*SEIANVS* *Q* *DRVSVS, ARRVNTIVS*, not in *Q* Stage-dir. He enters . . .  
clients. not in *Q* Re-enter *Sejanus, Satruius, Latarius, Clients, &c* *G*, con-  
tinuing the scene 560 man ] to *Satruius* add *G* 561 I' haue *Q*  
I haue *Ff* you,] you *Q*

That you will ouer vs? S E I. Why, then giue way.

564 D R V. Giue way, *Colossus*? Doe you lift? Aduance  
you?

*Drusus  
strikes  
him.*

Take that. A R R. Good! braue! excellent braue prince!

D R V. Nay, come, approach. What? stand you off? at  
gaze?

It lookes too full of death, for thy cold spirits.

Auoid mine eye, dull camell, or my sword

Shall make thy brau'rie fitter for a graue,

570 Then for a triumph. I'll aduance a statue,

O'your owne bulke; but 't shall be on the crosse:

Where I will naile your pride, at breadth, and length,

And cracke those sinnewes, which are yet but stretch'd

With your swolne fortunes rage. A R R. A noble prince!

575 ALL. A CASTOR, a CASTOR, a CASTOR, a  
CASTOR!

#### S E I A N V S.

H E that, with such wrong mou'd, can beare it through

With patience, and an euen mind, knowes how

To turne it backe. Wrath, couer'd, carries fate:

Reuenge is lost, if I professe my hate.

580 What was my practice late, I'll now pursue

As my fell iustice. This hath stil'd it new.

#### CHORVS—Of Musicians.

1 563 Why,] Why Q 565 Stage-dw not in Q 566 approach]  
approach Q, F2 approach [Draws his sword G off] of Q 567  
spirits] spirit Q 568 dull camell,] dull, Camell Q, corr in MS in  
Wise copy 570 Then] Than F2 571 crosse.] Crosse, Q 572  
breadth] bredth F2 573 sinnewes] sinewes Q, F2 575 a  
CASTOR I] &c. Q Before 576 SEIANVS ] *Exeunt all but Seianus* G  
576 He] SEI He Q 578 Wrath] "Wrath Q 579 Reuenge]  
"Reuenge Q 581 iustice.] Iustice; Q After 581 Exit G CHORVS  
—Of Musicians] MV CHORVS Q add to 581

Act. II.

SEIANVS, LIVIA, EVDEMVS.

**P**hysitian, thou art worthy of a prouince,  
For the great fauours done vnto our loues ;  
And, but that greatest LIVIA beares a part  
In the requitall of thy seruices,  
I should alone, despaire of ought, like meanes, 5  
To giue them worthy satisfaction.

LIV. EVDEMVS, (I will see it) shall receiue  
A fit, and full reward, for his large merit.  
But for this potion, we intend to DRVSVS,  
(No more our husband, now) whom shall we choose 10  
As the most apt, and abled instrument,  
To minister it to him ? EV D. I say, LYGDVS.

SEI. LYGDVS ? what's he ? LIV. An Eunuch  
DRVSVS loues.

EV D. I, and his cup-bearer. SEI. Name not a second.  
If DRVSVS loue him, and he haue that place, 15  
We cannot thinke a fitter. EV D. True, my lord,  
For free accesse, and trust, are two maine aides.

SEI. Skilfull physitian ! LIV. But he must be wrought  
To th'vndertaking, with some labour'd arte.

SEI. Is he ambitious ? LIV. No. SEI. Or couetous ? 20

LIV. Neither. EV D. Yet, gold is a good generall  
charme.

SEI. What is he then ? LIV. Faith, only wanton, light.

SEI. How ! Is he young ? and faire ? EV D. A delicate  
youth.

SEI. Send him to me, I'll worke him. Royall ladie,  
Though I haue lou'd you long, and with that height 25

II. Act II | SEIANVS, LIVIA, EVDEMVS | ACTVS SECVNDVS | SEIANVS.  
LIVIA. EVDEMVS Q ACT II SCENE I | The Garden of Eudemus. | Enter  
Sejanus, LIVIA, and Eudemus G 1 Physitian] SEI Physitian Q 2  
fauours] fauours Q 5 ought,] ought F2 7 EVDEMVS,] EVDEMUS F2  
11 abled] ablest F2 16 lord,] lord F2 17 trust,] Trust Q 18  
SEI] SEI, Q 21 gold] "Gold Q 22 Faith,] Faith Q

- Of zeale, and dutie, (like the fire, which more  
 It mounts, it trembles) thinking nought could adde  
 Vnto the feruour, which your eye had kindled ;  
 Yet, now I see your wisdom, iudgement, strength,  
 30 Quicknesse, and will, to apprehend the meanes  
 To your owne good, and greatnesse, I protest  
 My selfe through rarefied, and turn'd all flame  
 In your affection : Such a spirit as yours,  
 Was not created for the idle second  
 35 To a poore flash, as D R V S V S ; but to shine  
 Bright, as the Moone, among the lesser lights,  
 And share the sou'raintie of all the world.  
 Then L I V I A triumphs in her proper spheare,  
 When shee, and her S E I A N V S shall diuide  
 40 The name of C A E S A R ; and A V G V S T A 's starre  
 Be dimm'd with glorie of a brighter beame :  
 When A G R I P P I N A 's fires are quite extinct,  
 And the scarce-seene T I B E R I V S borrowes all  
 His little light from vs, whose folded armes  
 45 Shall make one perfect orbe. Who's that ? E V D E M V S,  
 Looke, 'tis not D R V S V S ? Ladie, doe not feare  
 L I V. Not I, my lord. My feare, and loue of him  
 Left me at once. S E I. Illustrious ladie ! stay——  
 E V D. I'll tell his lordship. S E I. Who is't, E V D E M V S ?  
 50 E V D. One of your lordships seruants, brings you word  
 The Emp'rour hath sent for you. S E I. O ! where is he ?  
 With your faire leaue, deare Princesse. I'll but aske  
*He goes out* A question, and returne. E V D. Fortunate Princesse !  
 How are you blessed in the fruition  
 55 Of this vnequall'd man, this soule of Rome,  
 The empires life, and voice of C A E S A R S world !  
 L I V. So blessed, my E V D E M V S, as to know

11 26 dutie] duty Q      28 feruour] feruor Q      29 now] now, F<sub>2</sub>  
 33 affection ] affection. Q      34 second] second, F<sub>2</sub>      40 CAESAR, ]  
 Caesar, Q      46 Looke . . . Ladie !] Look. [*Exit Eudemus*] 'Tis not  
 Drusus, lady, G      48 Illustrious] Illustrious F<sub>3</sub>      stay—] stay. Q  
 49 EVD] Eud. [*within*] G      is't] is it G      51 O!] O. F<sub>2</sub>      53  
 Stage-dir in F<sub>1</sub> at 52      in F<sub>2</sub> at 54. not in Q      55 vnequall'd]  
 vnequall'd Q

The blisse I haue, with what I ought to owe  
 The meanes that wrought it. How do'I looke to day?  
 E v d. Excellent cleere, beleue it. This same *fucus* 60  
 Was well laid on. L i v. Me thinkes, 'tis here not white.  
 E v d. Lend me your scarlet, lady. 'Tis the sunne  
 Hath giu'n some little taint vnto the *ceruse*,  
 You should haue~~ws~~'d of the white oyle I gaue you.  
 S E I A N V S, for your loue! his very name 65  
 Commandeth aboue C v p i d, or his shafts——  
 (L i v. Nay, now yo'haue made it worse. ' E v d. I'll  
 helpe it straight.)  
 And, but pronounc'd, is a sufficient charme  
 Against all rumour; and of absolute power  
 To satisfie for any ladies honour. 70  
 (L i v. What doe you now, E v d e m v s? E v d. Make  
 a light *fucus*,  
 To touch you ore withall.) Honor'd S E I A N V S!  
 What act (though ne're so strange, and insolent)  
 But that addition will at least beare out,  
 If't doe not expiate? L i v. Here, good physitian. 75  
 E v d. I like this studie to preserue the loue  
 Of such a man, that comes not euery houre  
 To greet the world. ('Tis now well, ladie, you should  
 Vse of the *dentifrice*, I prescrib'd you, too,  
 To cleere your teeth, and the prepar'd *pomatum*, 80  
 To smoothe the skin :) A lady cannot be  
 Too curious of her forme, that still would hold  
 The heart of such a person, made her captiue,  
 As you haue his: who, to endeare him more  
 In your cleere eye, hath put away his wife, 85  
 The trouble of his bed, and your delights,  
 Faire *Apicata*, and made spacious roome  
 To your new pleasures. L i v. Haue not we return'd  
 That, with our hate of D r v s v s, and discouerie

11. 59 do'I] do I F2 66 Commandeth] Commaundeth Q After  
 66 *Painis her cheeks*. G 69 rumour;] rumor: Q 70 honour]  
 honor Q 72 ore] ore Q 73 ne're] nêre Q 81 skun.] skun; Q  
 82 hold] hould Q 84 who.] who Q



- 90 Of all his counsels ? E v D. Yes, and wisely, lady,  
 The ages that succeed, and stand far off  
 To gaze at your high prudence, shall admire  
 And reckon it an act, without your sexe :  
 It hath that rare apparance. Some will thinke
- 95 Your fortune could not yeeld a deeper sound,  
 Then mixt with D R V S V S ; But, when they shall heare  
 That, and the thunder of S E I A N V S meet,  
 S E I A N V S, whose high name doth strike the starres,  
 And rings about the concaue, great S E I A N V S,
- 100 Whose glories, stile, and titles are himselfe,  
 The often iterating of S E I A N V S :  
 They then will lose their thoughts, and be asham'd  
 To take acquaintance of them. S E I. I must make  
 A rude departure, lady. C A E S A R sends
- 105 With all his haste both of command, and prayer.  
 Be resolute in our plot ; you haue my soule,  
 As certayne yours, as it is my bodies.  
 And, wise physitian, so prepare the poyson  
 As you may lay the subtile operation
- 110 Vpon some naturall disease of his.  
 Your eunuch send to me. I kisse your hands,  
 Glorie of ladies, and commend my loue  
 To your best faith, and memorie. L I V. My lord,  
 I shall but change your wordes. Farewell. Yet, this
- 115 Remember for your heed, he loues you not ;  
 You know, what I haue told you : His designes  
 Are full of grudge, and danger : we must vse  
 More then a common speed. S E I. Excellent lady,  
 How you do fire my bloud ! L I V. Well, you must goe ?
- 120 The thoughts be best, are least set forth to shew.  
 E v D. When will you take some physick, lady ? L I V.  
 When

11. 91 off] of Q 92 admire] admire, F2 93 sexe ] Sexe, Q 94  
 apparence] appearance F2 96 Then] Than F2 102 lose] loose Q  
 103 (after them) Re-enter Sejanus G 108 And.] And Q 110 Vpon]  
 vpon Q 116 you ] you ? Q designes] dissignes Q 118 then]  
 , than F2 120 The] "The Q Exit Sejanus add G 121 When] when Q

I shall, E V D E M V S : But let D R V S V S drug  
Be first prepar'd. E V D. Were L Y G D V S made, that's  
done ;

I haue it readie. And to morrow-morning,  
I'll send you a perfume, first to resolute, 125  
And procure sweat, and then prepare a bath  
To cense, and cleere the *cutis* ; against when,  
I'll haue an excellent new *fucus* made,  
Resistiue 'gainst the sunne, the raine, or wind,  
Which you shall lay on with a breath, or oyle, 130  
As you best like, and last some fourteene houres.  
This change came timely, lady, for your health ;  
And the restoring your complexion,  
Which D R V S V S choller had almost burnt vp :  
Wherein your fortune hath prescrib'd you better 135  
Then arte could doe. L I V. Thankes, good physitian,  
I'll vse my fortune (you shall see) with reuerence.  
Is my coach ready? E V D. It attends your highnesse.

S E I A N V S.

I F this be not reuenge, when I haue done  
And made it perfect, let *Egyptian* slaues, 140  
*Parthians*, and bare-foot *Hebrewes* brand my face,  
And print my body full of iniuries.  
Thou lost thy selfe, childe D R V S V S, when thou thought'st  
Thou could'st out-skip my vengeance : or out-stand  
The power I had to crush thee into ayre. 145  
Thy follyes now shall taste what kinde of man  
They haue prouok'd, and this thy fathers house  
Cracke in the flame of my incensed rage,  
Whose fury shall admit no shame, or meane.  
Adultery? it is the lightest ill, 150  
I will commit. A race of wicked acts

II. 124 morrow-morning] morrowemorning Q 126 and om F<sub>2</sub>  
132 health ;] health, F<sub>2</sub> 135 prescrib'd] præscrib'd Q 136  
Then] Than F<sub>2</sub> Thankes,] Thanks Q 138 Exeunt, add G  
Before 139 SEIANVS ] SCENE II | An Apartment in the Palace | Enter  
Sejanus. G 139 If] SEI. If Q 146 taste] tast Q

Shall flow out of my anger, and o're-spread  
 The worlds wide face, which no posterity  
 Shall e're approoue, nor yet keepe silent : Things,  
 155 That for their cunning, close, and cruell marke,  
 Thy father would wish his ; and shall (perhaps)  
 Carry the empty name, but we the prize.  
 On then, my soule, and start not in thy course ;  
 Though heau'n drop sulphure, and hell belch out fire,  
 160 Laugh at the idle terrors : Tell proud I o v e,  
 Betweene his power, and thine, there is no oddes.  
 'Twas onely feare, first, in the world made gods.

## TIBERIVS, SEIANVS.

IS yet SEIANVS come? SEI. He's here, dread  
 CAESAR.

TIB. Let all depart that chamber, and the next :  
 165 Sit downe, my comfort. When the master-prince  
 Of all the world, SEIANVS, saith, he feares ;  
 Is it not fatall? SEI. Yes, to those are fear'd.  
 TIB. And not to him? SEI. Not, if he wisely turne  
 That part of fate he holdeth, first on them.  
 170 TIB. That nature, bloud, and lawes of kinde forbid.  
 SEI. Doe policie, and state forbid it? TIB. No.  
 SEI. The rest of poore respects, then, let goe by :  
 State is inough to make th'act iust, them guilty.  
 TIB. Long hate pursues such acts. SEI. Whom hatred  
 frights,  
 175 Let him not dreame on sou'raignty. TIB. Are rites  
 Of faith, loue, piety, to be trod downe?  
 Forgotten? and made vaine? SEI. All for a crowne.  
 The prince, who shames a tyrannes name to beare,

II. 154 approoue] approve *Fa* Before 163 TIBERIVS, SEIANVS ]  
*Enter Tiberius attended. G. continuing the scene* 163 18] TIB Is Q  
 He's! H's Q dread] dread Q (*a misprint for 'drad'.* cf. iv. 266)  
 After 164 *Exeunt Attendants G* 165 downe,] downe Q master-  
 prince] master Prince Q 168 Not,] Not Q 171 No] no Q  
 173-87 *Gnomic pointing in Q* „ State . . . „ TIB. Long . . . „ Let . . .  
 „ Of . . . „ Forgotten . . . „ The . . . „ Shall . . . „ All . . . „ If . . .  
 „ Whole . . . „ It . . . „ Eu'n . . . „ The . . . „ TIB Yet . . . „ Not . . .  
 174 frights,] frights Q 175 on] of *Fa* 178 tyrannes] Tyrants *F3*

Shall neuer dare doe any thing, but feare ;  
 All the command of scepters quite doth perish 180  
 If it beginne religious thoughts to cherish :  
 Whole Empires fall, swaid by those nice respects.  
 It is the licence of darke deeds protects  
 Eu'n states most hated : when no lawes resist  
 The sword, but that it acteth what it list. 185

T I B. Yet so, we may doe all things cruelly,  
 Not safely : S E I. Yes, and doe them thoroughly.

T I B. Knowes yet, S E I A N V S, whom we point at ?

S E I. I,

Or else my thought, my sense, or both doe erre :  
 'Tis A G R I P P I N A ? T I B. She ; and her proud race. 190

S E I. Proud ? dangerous, C A E S A R. For in them apace  
 The fathers spirit shoots vp. G E R M A N I C V S  
 Liues in their lookes, their gate, their forme, t'vpbraide vs  
 With his close death, if not reuenge the same.

T I B. The act's not knowne. S E I. Not prou'd. But 195  
 whispring fame

Knowledge, and prooffe doth to the iealous giue,  
 Who, then to faile, would their owne thought beleue.  
 It is not safe, the children draw long breath;  
 That are prouoked by a parents death.

T I B. It is as dangerous, to make them hence, 200  
 If nothing but their birth be their offence.

S E I. Stay, till they strike at C A E S A R : then their  
 crime

Will be enough, but late, and out of time  
 For him to punish. T I B. Doe they purpose it ?

S E I. You know, sir, thunder speakes not till it hit. 205  
 Be not secure : none swiftlier are opprest,

11, 182 respects ] respects; Q, F2 184 hated ] hated, Q 186  
 so,] so Q 187 thoroughly] throughly Q, F2 188 yet,] yet F2  
 I] The rhyme would be preserved by reading Sir 195-201 Gnomie  
 pointing in Q " But " Knowledge " Who " It " That  
 ... " Tib. It ... " If 195 whispring] whispring F2 196  
 Knowledge.] Knowledge F2 197 beleue] beleue Q 203 enough]  
 inough Q 205 know,] knowe Q 205-9 Gnomie pointing in Q  
 " Thunder ... " Be ... " Then ... " Let ... " All ...

- Then they, whom confidence betrayes to rest.  
 Let not your daring make your danger such :  
 All power's to be fear'd, where 'tis too much.  
 210 The youth's are (of themselues) hote, violent,  
 Full of great thought ; and that male-spirited dame,  
 Their mother, slackes no meanes to put them on,  
 By large allowance, popular presentings,  
 Increase of traine, and state, suing for titles,  
 215 Hath them commended with like praier, like vowes,  
 To the same Gods, with CAESAR : daies and nights  
 Shee spends in banquets, and ambitious feasts  
 For the Nobilitie ; where CAIVS SILIVS,  
 TITIVS SABINVS, olde ARRVNTIVS,  
 220 ASINIVS GALLVS, FVRNIVS, REGVLVS,  
 And others, of that discontented list,  
 Are the prime guests. There, and to these, she tels  
 Whose niece she was, whose daughter, and whose wife,  
 And then must they compare her with AVGVSTA,  
 225 I, and preferre her too, commend her forme,  
 Extoll her fruitfulnessse ; at which a showre  
 Fals for the memorie of GERMANICVS,  
 Which they blow ouer straight, with windie praise,  
 And puffing hopes of her aspiring sonnes .  
 230 Who, with these hourelly ticklings, g<sup>th</sup> let, pleas'd,  
 And wantonly conceited of themsel<sup>em</sup> gu  
 As now, they sticke not to beleue they<sup>e</sup> I<sup>2</sup> such,  
 As these doe giue 'hem out : and would be thought  
 (More then competitors) immediate heires.  
 235 Whilest to their thirst of rule they winne the rout  
 (That's still the friend of noueltie) with hope  
 Of future freedome, which on euerie change,  
 That greedily, though emptily, expects.

11, 207 ~<sup>th</sup> Than F2 rest ] rest . Q 208 such ] such, Q  
 210 youth & F<sup>2</sup> uths F2 214 increase] Encrease Q titles, ] titles,  
 F2 ] y<sup>th</sup> whose] and whose Q 223 wife, ] wife, F2 224  
 AVGVST 23 and ot<sup>h</sup> ITA, F2 225 I, ] I Q too, ] too, F2 226  
 fruitfull August<sup>e</sup> . ~<sup>th</sup>fulnessse Q 232 they're] they're Q 234  
 then] these] fr<sup>u</sup> Q 58, 271  
 F2 (so 2.

CAESAR, 'tis age in all things breeds neglects,  
 And princes that will keepe olde dignitie, 240  
 Must not admit too youthfull heires stand by ;  
 Not their owne issue : but so darkely set  
 As shadowes are in picture, to giue height,  
 And lustre to themselues. TIB. We will command  
 Their ranke thoughts downe, and with a stricter hand 245  
 Then we haue yet put forth, their traines must bate,  
 Their titles, feasts and factions. SEI. Or your state.  
 But how sir, will you worke? TIB Confine 'hem, SEI. No.  
 They are too great, and that too faint a blow,  
 To giue them now : it would haue seru'd at first, 250  
 When, with the weakest touch, their knot had burst.  
 But, now, your care must be, not to detect  
 The smallest cord, or line of your suspect,  
 For such, who know the weight of princes feare,  
 Will, when they find themselues discover'd, reare 255  
 Their forces, like seene snakes, that else would lye  
 Rould in their circles, close : Nought is more high,  
 Daring, or desperate, then offenders found ;  
 Where guilt is, rage, and courage both abound.  
 The course must be, to let 'hem still swell vp, 260  
 Riot, and surfet on blind fortunes cup ;  
 Giue 'hem more place, more dignities, more stile,  
 Call 'hem to *court*, to *senate* : in the while,  
 Take from their strength some one or twaine, or more  
 Of the maine Fautors ; (It will fright the store) 265  
 And, by some by-occasion. Thus, with slight  
 You shall disarme <them> first, and they (in night  
 Of their ambition) not perceiue the traine,  
 Till, in the ingine, they are caught, and slaine.

II. 239-44 *Gnomic pointing in Q* " Caesar " And " Must .  
 " Not . . . " As " And 240 princes] Princes, Q olde]  
 ould Q 246 Then] Than F2 247 feasts] feasts, F2 249 too  
 great] to great Q 253 cord] chord Q suspect.] suspect ; F2  
 257 circles.] circles Q 257-9 *Gnomic pointing in Q* " Nought .  
 " Daring . . . " Where . . . 259 rage.] rage F2 both Q (so W, G).  
 doth Ff 265 store)] store ) Q 267 them Q (so W, G) . om.  
 Ff first.] first, F2 268 traine.] Traine Q

- 270 T I B. We would not kill, if we knew how to saue ;  
 Yet, then a throne, 'tis cheaper giue a graue.  
 Is there no way to bind them by deserts ?  
 S E I. Sir, wolues do change their haire, but not their harts.  
 While thus your thought vnto a meane is tied,  
 275 You neither dare inough, nor doe prouide.  
 All modestie is fond ; and chiefly where  
 The subiect is no lesse compeld to beare,  
 Then praise his sou'raignes acts. T I B. We can no longer  
 Keepe on our masque to thee, our deare S E I A N V S ;  
 280 Thy thoughts are ours, in all, and we but prou'd  
 Their voice, in our designes, which by assenting  
 Hath more confirm'd vs, then if heartning I O V E  
 Had, from his hundred statues, bid vs strike,  
 And at the stroke clickt all his marble thumb's.  
 285 But, who shall first be strooke ? S E I. First, C A I V S  
 S I L I V S ;  
 He is the most of marke, and most of danger :  
 In power, and reputation equall strong,  
 Hauing commanded an imperiall armie  
 Seuen yeeres together, vanquish'd S A C R O V I R  
 290 In *Germanie*, and thence obtain'd to weare  
 The ornaments triumphall. His steep fall,  
 By how much it doth giue the weightier crack,  
 Will send more wounding terrour to the rest,  
 Command them stand aloofe, and giue more way  
 295 To our surprising of the principall.  
 T I B. But what, S A B I N V S ? S E I. Let him grow  
 awhile,  
 His fate is not yet ripe : we must not plucke  
 At all together, lest wee catch our selues.  
 And ther's A R R V N T I V S too, he only talkes.

II. 271, 273-8 *Gnomic pointing in Q* "Yet . . ." S E I. Sir, . . . "While  
 . . . "You . . . "All "The . . . "Then . . . 273 harts] hearts *Q, F2*  
 278 Then] Than *F2* 280 prou'd] prov'd *F2* 281 designes]  
 dissignes *Q* 285 strooke] struck *F3* First] first *Q* 289  
 together] together *Q* S A C R O V I R *corr F1, F2*. *Sacrovir Q, F1* originally  
 293 terrour] terror *Q* 296 what,] what *Q* 298 together, lest]  
 together, least *Q* 299 ther's] there's *F2*

But S O S I A, S I L I V S wife, would be wound in 300  
 Now, for she hath a furie in her brest  
 More, then hell euer knew ; and would be sent  
 Thither in time. Then, is there one C R E M V T I V S  
 C O R D V S, a writing fellow, they haue got  
 To gather notes of the precedent times, 305  
 And make them into Annal's ; a most tart  
 And bitter spirit (I heare) who, vnder colour  
 Of praysing those, doth taxe the present state,  
 Censures the men, the actions, leaues no tricke,  
 No practice vn-examin'd, paralels 310  
 The times, the gouernments, a profest champion,  
 For the old libertie—— T I B. A perishing wretch.  
 As if there were that *chaos* bred in things,  
 That lawes, and libertie would not rather choose  
 To be quite broken, and tane hence by vs, 315  
 Then haue the staine to be preseru'd by such.  
 Haue we the meanes, to make these guiltie, first ?  
 S E I. Trust that to me : let C A E S A R, by his power,  
 But cause a formall meeting of the *Senate*,  
 I will haue matter, and accusers readie. 320  
 T I B. But how ? let vs consult. S E I. Wee shall  
 mispend  
 The time of action. Counsels are vnfit  
 In businesse, where all rest is more pernicious  
 Then rashnesse can be. Acts of this close kind  
 Thriue more by execution, then aduice. 325  
 There is no lingring in that worke begun,  
 Which cannot praised be, vntill through done.

ii. 300 SILIUS] SILIUS'S F2 301 brest] brest, F2 302  
 then] than F2 303 Then.] Then Q 305 precedent] præcedent  
 Q 306 Annal's] Annals F2 307 heare)] heare, ) F2 colour]  
 coulour Q 310 paralels] parallels Q parallels F2 311  
 gouernments.] gouernments, Q governments, F2 champion,]  
 Champion Q 312 libertie—] liberty Q 314 choose]  
 chuse F3 315 tane] tane Q 316, 324 Then] Than F2  
 322-7 Gnomie pointing in Q "Councells "In "Then . . .  
 "Thriue "There "Which . . . 325 then] than F2  
 aduice.] aduise. Q 326 begun] begonne Q 327 done]  
 donne Q



TIB. Our edict shall, forthwith, command a court.  
While I can liue, I will preuent earths furie :

330 'Εμοῦ θανόντος γαῖα μυχθήτω πυρί.

POSTHVMVS, SEIANVS.

MY Lord SEIANVS——SEI. IVLIVS POSTHVMVS,

Come with my wish! what newes form AGRIPPINA'S?

POS. Faith none. They all locke vp themselues  
a'late ;

Or talke in character : I haue not seene

335 A companie so chang'd. Except they had

Intelligence by augurie' of our practice.

SEI. When were you there? POS. Last night. SEI.  
And what ghests found you?

POS. SABINVS, SILIVS, (the olde list,) ARRVNTIVS,

FVRNIVS, and GALLVS. SEI. Would not these  
talke? POS. Little

340 And yet we offer'd choice of argument.

SATRIVS was with me. SEI. Well : 'tis guilt inough

Their often meeting. You forgot t' extoll

The hospitable ladie? POS. No, that tricke

Was well put home, and had succeeded too,

345 But that SABINVS cougth a caution out ;

For she began to swell : SEI. And may she burst.

IVLIVS, I would haue you goe instantly,

Vnto the palace of the great AVGVSTA,

And, (by your kindest friend,) get swift accesse ;

*Mutilla  
Prisca.*

Acquaint her, with these meetings : Tell the words

ii. 328 shall,] shall Q command] commaund Q 329 preuent] præuent Q 330 'Εμοῦ F2. Ε'μοῦ Q, Fr γαῖα F2. γαῖα Q, Fr Eni. add G Before 331 POSTHVMVS, SEIANVS] POSTHVMVS, SEIANVS Q. Enter Julius Posthumus G, continuing the scene 331 My] Pos My Q SEIANVS—] Seianus? Q SEI] SEI Q POSTHVMVS,] Postumus, Q (so 375) 332 AGRIPPINA'S?] Agrippina's, Q 333 themselves] themselves, Q 336 augurie' of] augurie of F2 337 ghests] guests F2 340 offer'd F2 offered Q, Fr 345 cougth] caught F2 349 And, (by] And, by Q friend,)] friend, Q Stage-dir. in Fr at 348 not in Q 350 meetings] meetings. Q

You brought me, (th'other day) of SILIVS, 351  
 Adde somewhat to 'hem. Make her vnderstand  
 The danger of SABINVS, and the times,  
 Out of his closenesse. Giue ARRVNTIVS words  
 Of malice against CAESAR; so, to GALLVS: 355  
 But (aboue all) to AGRIPPINA. Say,  
 (As you may truely) that her infinite pride,  
 Propt with the hopes of her too fruitfull wombe,  
 With popular studies gapes for soueraigntie;  
 And threatens CAESAR. Pray AVGVSTA then, 360  
 That for her owne, great CAESARS, and the pub-  
 lique safetie, she be pleas'd to vrge these dangers.  
 CAESAR is too secure (he must be told,  
 And best hee'll take it from a mothers tongue.)  
 Alas! what is 't for vs to sound, t' explore, 365  
 To watch, oppose, plot, practise, or preuent,  
 If he, for whom it is so strongly labour'd,  
 Shall, out of greatnesse, and free spirit, be  
 Supinely negligent? Our citi's now  
 Deuided as in time o'th'ciuill warre, 370  
 And men forbear not to declare themselues  
 Of AGRIPPINA's partie. Euery day,  
 The faction multiplies; and will doe more  
 If not resisted - you can best inlarge it  
 As you find audience. Noble POSTHVMS, 375  
 Commend me to your PRISCA. and pray her,  
 Shee will sollicite this great busnesse  
 To earnest, and most present execution,  
 With all her vtmost credit with AVGVSTA.  
 P o s. I shall not faile in my instructions. 380  
 S E I. This second (from his mother) will well vrge  
 Our late designe, and spur on CAESARS rage:

II. 354 ARRVNTIVS] *Arruntius*, Q 358 too fruitfull] too-fruitfull Q  
 359 soueraigntie] sou'raigntie, Q 360 AVGVSTA] *Augusta*, Q 363  
 secure] secure, Q (he must] he (must Q *originally* 369 citi's]  
 Citty's Q: Citie's F<sub>2</sub> 370 Deuided] Deuided, Q Divided F<sub>2</sub>  
 warre,] *Warre* Q 373 more] more, F<sub>2</sub> 374 inlarge] enlarge Q  
 it] it, F<sub>2</sub> 377 busnesse] busnesse, F<sub>2</sub> 378 earnest.] earnest  
 F<sub>2</sub> 380 *Ent.* add G 382 designe] dissigne Q

Which else might grow remisse. The way, to put  
 A prince in bloud, is to present the shapes  
 385 Of dangers, greater then they are (like late,  
 Or early shadowes) and, sometimes, to faine  
 Where there are none, onely, to make him feare;  
 His feare will make him cruell: And once entred,  
 He doth not easily learne to stop, or spare  
 390 Where he may doubt. This haue I made my rule,  
 To thrust TIBERIVS into tyrannie,  
 And make him toile, to turne aside those blockes,  
 Which I alone, could not remooue with safetie.  
 DRVSVS once gone, GERMANICVS three sonnes  
 395 Would clog my way; whose guardes haue too much faith  
 To be corrupted and their mother knowne  
 Of too-too vnreproou'd a chastitie,  
 To be attempted, as light LIVIA was.  
 Worke then, my art, on CAESAR'S feares, as they  
 400 On those they feare, till all my letts be clear'd:  
 And he in ruines of his house, and hate  
 Of all his subiects, bury his owne state:  
 When, with my peace, and safty, I will rise,  
 By making him the publike sacrifice

## SATRIVS, NATTA.

405 **T**hey're growne exceeding circumspect, and wary.  
 NAT. They haue vs in the wind: And yet,  
 ARRVNTIVS  
 Cannot contayne himselfe. SAT. Tut, hee's not yet  
 Look'd after, there are others more desir'd,  
 That are more silent. NAT. Here he comes. Away.

11. 383-90 *Gnomic pointing in Q* "The .." A "Of..." Or...  
 "Where . " His " He "Where 385 then] than F2 393  
 remooue] remove F2 397 vnreproov'd] unreprov'd F2 399  
 then, my art.] then my Art Q 400 letts] lets Q betts Ff 402 state.]  
 State F2 403 safty] saftly Q, *corr in MS. in Wise copy* 404  
 Exit add G Before 405 SATRIVS, NATTA ] SATRIVS NATTA Q · SCENE  
 III | A room in Agrippina's House | Enter Satrus and Natta G 405  
 They] SAT They Q 407 Tut,] Tut Q 409 *Exeunt.* add G

SABINVS, ARRVNTIVS, CORDVS.

How is it, that these beagles haunt the house 410

Of AGRIPPINA? ARR. O, they hunt, they hunt.

There is some game here lodg'd, which they must rouse,

To make the great-ones sport. COR. Did you obserue

How they inueigh'd 'gainst CAESAR? ARR. I, baytes,

baytes,

For vs to bite at : would I haue my flesh 415

Torne by the publique hooke, these qualified hang-men

Should be my company. COR. Here comes another.

(Afer  
passet)  
by.)

ARR. I, there's a man, A FER the oratour !

One, that hath phrases, figures, and fine flowres,

To strew his *rethorique* with, and doth make haste 420

To get him note, or name, by any offer

Where bloud, or gaine be objects ; steepes his wordes,

When he would kill, in artificiall teares :

The Crocodile of *Tyber* ! him I loue,

That man is mine. He hath my heart, and voice, 425

When I would curse, he, he. SAB. Contemne the slaues,

Their present liues will be their future graues.

SILIVS, AGRIPPINA, NERO,

SOSIA.

May't please your highnesse not forget your selfe,

I dare not, with my manners, to attempt

Your trouble farder. AGR. Farewell, noble SILIVS. 430

SIL. Most royall princesse. AGR. SOSIA staves with vs?

SIL. Shee is your seruant, and doth owe your grace

An honest, but vnprofitable loue.

II. Before 410 SABINVS, CORDVS ] Enter Sabinus, Arruntius, and Cordus. G, continuing the Scene 410 How] SAB How Q 411

O.] O Q 413 great-ones] great ones Q 414 I.] I, F2 415 at.]

at, Q 417 Stage-dir. cf 1 105 s d Dom Afer passes over the stage.

G 418 oratour.] Oratour, Q Orator ! F2 419 flowres] flowers

Q. flowers F2 424 Tyber ] Tyber, Q 425 mine ] mine, F2

426 curse, he] curse, he F2 427 Their ] Their Q After 427

Exeunt G Before 428 SILIVS SOSIA ] SCENE IV ] Another Apart-

ment in the same. ] Enter Silus, Agrippina, Nero, and Sosia G 428

May't] SIL May't Q 430 farder] farther F3 Farewell.] Farewell Q

AGR. How can that be, when there's no gaine, but  
vertu's?

- 435 SIL. You take the morall, not the politique sense.  
I meant, as shee is bold, and free of speech,  
Earnest to vtter what her zealous thought  
Trauailes withall, in honour of your house ;  
Which act, as it is simply borne in her,  
440 Pertakes of loue, and honesty, but may,  
By th'ouer-often, and vnseason'd vse,  
Turne to your losse, and danger . For your state  
Is wayted on by enuies, as by eyes ;  
And euery second ghest your tables take,  
445 Is a fee'd spie, t'obserue who goes, who comes,  
What conference you haue, with whom, where, when,  
What the discourse is, what the lookes, the thoughts  
Of eu'ry person there, they doe extract,  
And make into a substance. AGR. Heare me, SILIVS,  
450 Were all TIBERIVS body stuck with eyes,  
And eu'ry wall, and hanging in my house  
Transparent, as this lawne I weare, or ayre ;  
Yea, had SEIANVS both his eares as long  
As to my in-most closet : I would hate  
455 To whisper any thought, or change an act,  
To be made I VN O 's riual. Vertues forces  
Shew euer noblest in conspicuous courses  
SIL. 'Tis great, and brauely spoken, like the spirit  
Of AGRIPPINA yet, your highnesse knowes,  
460 There is nor losse, nor shame in prouidence :  
Few can, what all should doe, beware inough.  
You may perceiue with what officious face,  
SATRIVS, and NATTA, AFER, and the rest  
Visite your house, of late, t'enquire the secrets ;  
465 And with what bold, and priuilegd'd arte, they raile

11. 434 vertu's *Q* vertuous *Ff* virtue's *G* 440 Pertakes] Partakes  
*F2* honesty,] honestie; *F2* 444 ghest] guest, *Q*: guest *F2* 449  
AGR. *F2*. ARR. *Q*. *F1* 451 wall,] wall *F2* 454 in-most] inmost *Q*  
456-7. 460-1 *Gnomic pointing in Q*. "Vertues ... "Shew ... " There ...  
"Few ... 459 yet,] yet *Q*

Against AVGVSTA: yea, and at TIBERIVS,  
Tell tricks of LIVIA, and SEIANVS, all  
T'excite, and call your indignation on,  
That they might heare it at more libertie.

A GR. Yo'are too suspicious, SILIVS. SIL. Pray the 470  
gods,

I be so AGRIPPINA: But I feare  
Some subtill practice. They, that durst to strike  
At so examp'lesse, and vn-blam'd a life,  
As, that of the renown'd GERMANICVS,  
Will not sit downe, with that exploit alone · 475  
" He threatens many, that hath iniur'd one.

N ER. 'Twere best rip forth their tongues, seare out their  
eies,  
When next they come. S O S. A fit reward for spies.

DRVSVS in: AGRIPPINA, NERO, SILIVS.

H Eare you the rumour? A GR. What? DRV. DRVSVS  
is dying.

A GR. Dying? N ER. That's strange! A GR. Yo' were 480  
with him, yesternight.

DRV. One met EVDEMVS, the Physician,  
Sent for, but now: who thinkes he cannot lue.

SIL. Thinkes? if't be arriu'd at that, he knowes,  
Or none. A GR. This's quicke! what should bee his disease?

SIL. Poyson. Poyson—A GR. How, SILIVS! N ER. 485  
What's that?

SIL. Nay, nothing. There was (late) a certaine blow  
Giu'n o' the face. N ER. I, to SEIANVS? SIL. True.

DRV. And, what of that? SIL. I'am glad I gaue it not.

N ER. But, there is somewhat else? SIL. Yes, priuate  
meetings,

With a great ladie, at a physicians, 490

II. 466 AVGVSTA ] *Augusta*, Q TIBERIVS,] TIBERIUS, F2 467  
SEIANVS,] SEIANUS, F2 470 gods,] Gods Q 473 examp'lesse]  
examp'lesse Q examp'lesse Ff (cf v 120) 476 threatens] threatents Q  
Before 479 DRVSVS .. SILIVS ] *Enter Drusus jun* G, continuing the scene  
479 Heare] DRV. Heare Q dying] dying Q 480 Yo'] yo' Q  
hum,] hum Q 485 Poyson.] Poyson, F2 Poyson—] poyson. Q

And, a wife turn'd away——N E R. Ha! S I L. Toyes,  
meere toyes :

What wisdom's now i'th' streets? i'th' common mouth?

D R V. Feares, whisp'rings, tumults, noyse, I know not  
what :

They say, the *Senate* sit. S I L. I'll thither, straight ;  
495 And see what's in the forge. A G R. Good S I L I U S doe.  
S O S I A, and I will in. S I L. Haste you, my lords,  
To visit the sicke prince : tender your loues,  
And sorrowes to the people. This S E I A N V S  
(Trust my diuining soule) hath plots on all :  
500 No tree, that stops his prospect, but must fall.

CHORVS—*Of Musicians.*

### *Act* III.

## THE SENATE.

S E I A N V S, V A R R O, L A T I A R I S.

C O T T A, A F E R.

<S A B I N V S,> G A L L V S, L E P I D V S, A R R V N T I V S.

P R A E C O N E S, L I C T O R E S.

**T**IS only you must vrge against him, V A R R O,

Nor I, nor C A E S A R may appeare therein,

Except in your defence, who are the *Consul* :

And, vnder colour of late en'mitie

5 Betweene your father, and his, may better doe it,

As free from all suspicion of a practice.

Here be your notes, what points to touch at ; read :

Bee cunning in them. A F E R ha's them too.

11. 491 And,] And *F2* away—] away *Q* 494 sit] sits *F2* ' thither]  
thether *Q* 495 SILIUS doe] SILIUS, doe, *F2* 500 No] "No  
*Q* After 500 *Exeunt* G CHORVS—*Of Musicians*]. Mv. CHORVS. *Q*  
III. *Act* III | THE SENATE | S E I A N V S, L I C T O R E S | A C T V S T E R T I V S | THE  
SENATE | P R A E C O N E S L I C T O R E S | V A R R O S E I A N V S L A T I A R I S | C O T T A.  
A F E R. | G A L L V S L E P I D V S A R R V N T I V S *Q* A C T III S C E N E I | The  
Senate House. | Enter P r a e c o n e s, L i c t o r e s, S e j a n u s, V a r r o, L a t i a r i s, C o t t a,  
and A f e r G: S A B I N V S, add *W D Briggs* 1 Tis] S E I T I S *Q* V A R R O,]  
V A R R O; *F2* 3 *Consul* i] *Consul*, *Q* 4 en'mitie] enmitie *Q*

V A R. But is he summon'd? S E I. No. It was debated  
By C A E S A R, and concluded as most fit 20  
To take him vnprepar'd. A F E. And prosecute  
All vnder name of treason. V A R. I conceiue.

S A B. D R V S V S being dead, C A E S A R will not be here.

G A L. What should the businesse of this *Senate* bee?

A R R. That can my subtile whisperers tell you: We, 15  
That are the good-dull-noble lookers on,  
Are only call'd to keepe the marble warme.  
What should we doe with those deepe mysteries,  
Proper to these fine heads? let them alone.

Our ignorance may, perchance, helpe vs be sau'd 20  
From whips, and *furies* G A L. See, see, see, their action!

A R R. I, now their heads doe trauaile, now they worke;  
Their faces runne like shittles, they are weauing  
Some curious cobweb to catch flies. S A B. Obserue,  
They take their places A R R. What so low? G A L. O yes, 25  
They must be seene to flatter C A E S A R S grieffe  
Though but in sitting. V A R. Bid vs silence. P R A E  
Silence

V A R *Fathers Conscript, may this our present meeting  
Turne faire, and fortunate to the Common-wealth.*

<S E I A N V S,> S I L I V S, S E N A T E.

S E E, S I L I V S enters. S I L. Haile graue *Fathers*. L I C. 30  
Stand.

S I L I V S, forbear thy place. S E N. How! P R A E.

S I L I V S stand forth,

The *Consul* hath to charge thee. L I C. Roome for C A E S A R

A R R. Is he come too? nay then expect a tricke.

S A B. S I L I V S accus'd? sure he will answere nobly.

III. II take him Q, F2 him take F1 Before 13 Enter Sabinus, Gallus,  
Lepidus, and Arruntius G 15 subtile] subtile Q 22 trauaile] travell F2  
25 What] What, F2 26 grieffe] grieffe, F2 28 *Fathers Conscript,*  
FATHERS CONSCRIPT Q 29 *Common-wealth*] COMMON  
WEALTH Q Before 30 S E I A N V S added to mark the first speaker:  
S I L I V S, S E N A T E Ff. S I L I V S, &c Q Enter Silius, and other Senators.  
G, continuing the scene 30 See] S E I See Q W D Briggs  
assigns to Varro and adds 'Speaks to Lictors' 31 S I L I V S stand]  
Silus, stand Q



## TIBERIVS, SENATE.

- 35 **W**E stand amazed, *Fathers*, to behold  
 This generall deiection. Wherefore sit  
*Romes Consuls* thus dissolu'd, as they had lost  
 All the remembrance both of stile, and place?  
 It not becomes. No woes are of fit waight,  
 40 To make the honour of the empire stoope:  
 Though I, in my peculiar selfe, may meete  
 Iust reprehension, that so suddenly,  
 And, in so fresh a griefe, would greet the *Senate*,  
 When priuate tongues, of kinsmen, and allies,  
 45 (Inspir'd with comforts) lothly are indur'd,  
 The face of men not seene, and scarce the day,  
 To thousands, that communicate our losse.  
 Nor can I argue these of weaknesse, since  
 They take but naturall wayes: yet I must seeke  
 50 For stronger aides, and those faire helps draw out  
 From warme imbraces of the common-wealth  
 Our mother, great A V G V S T A, 'is strooke with time,  
 Our selfe imprest with aged characters,  
 D R V S V S is gone, his children young, and babes,  
 55 Our aimes must now reflect on those, that may  
 Giue timely succour to these present ill,  
 And are our only glad-suruiuing hopes,  
 The noble issue of G E R M A N I C V S,  
 N E R O, and D R V S V S: might it please the *Consul*  
 60 Honour them in, (they both attend without)  
 I would present them to the *Senates* care,  
 And raise those sunnes of ioy, that should drinke vp  
 These floods of sorrow, in your drowned eyes.

- A R R. By I O V E, I am not O E D I P V S inough,  
 65 To vnderstand this S P H Y N X. S A B. The princes come.

III. Before 35 TIBERIVS, SENATE ] TIBERIVS, &c Q: Enter *Tiberius*  
*attended* G, continuing the scene 35 We] TIB We Q 37 *Romes*]  
*ROMES* Q 40 honour] honor Q stoope] stoupe Q 42  
suddenly] sodainely Q 51 imbraces] embraces Q 52 strooke]  
struck F<sub>2</sub> 54 babes,] babes, F<sub>2</sub> 60 Honour] Honor Q 62  
sunnes] springs Q. Sums F<sub>3</sub> 10y.] joy F<sub>2</sub> drinke vp] exhaust Q

TIBERIVS, NERO, DRVSVS *junior*.

**A**pproch you noble NERO, noble DRVSVS,  
 These princes, *Fathers*, when their parent dyed,  
 I gaue vnto their vncke, with this prayer,  
 That, though h'had proper issue of his owne,  
 He would no lesse bring vp, and foster these, 70  
 Then that selfe-bloud ; and by that act confirme  
 Their worths to him, and to posteritie :  
 DRVSVS tane hence, I turne my prayers to you,  
 And, 'fore our countrie, and our gods, beseech  
 You take, and rule AVGVSTVS nephewes sonnes, 75  
 Sprung of the noblest ancestors ; and so  
 Accomplish both my dutie, and your owne.  
 NERO, and DRVSVS, these shall be to you  
 In place of parents, these your fathers, these,  
 And not vnfitly : For you are so borne, 80  
 As all your good, or ill's the common-wealths.  
 Receyue them, you strong guardians , and blest gods,  
 Make all their actions answere to their blouds :  
 Let their great titles find increase by them,  
 Not they by titles. Set them, as in place, 85  
 So in example, aboue all the *Romanes* :  
 And may they know no riuals, but themselues.  
 Let fortune giue them nothing ; but attend  
 Vpon their vertue and that still come forth  
 Greater then hope, and better then their fame. 90  
 Relieue me, Fathers, with your generall voyce.

SEN. *May all the gods consent to CAESAR'S wish,*

III. Before 66 TIBERIVS not in Q Enter Nero and Drusus junior.  
 G, continuing the scene 66 Approach] Tib. Approach Q DRVSVS,  
 Drusus Fa 67 princes,] Princes Q comma added in MS. in  
 Wise copy 69 h'had] he had Q 71 Then] Than Fa 73  
 tane] tane Q 75 rule] rule, Q 76 ancestors] Auncestors Q  
 78 these] (these Fr, an error due to a note in Q '(a)' with a reference to  
 Tacitus 79 fathers, these,] Fathers, These, Q fathers, these ;  
 Fa 82 gods,] god's Fr originally 84 increase] encrease Q  
 85 titles.] Titles . Q them,] them Q 90 then.. then] than...  
 than Fa (so 98, 101)

A forme  
of speak-  
ing they  
had.

And adde to any honours, that may crowne

The hopefull issue of GERMANICVS.

TIB. We thanke you, reuerend Fathers, in their right.

96 ARR. If this were true now! but the space, the  
space

Betweene the brest, and lips—TIBERIVS heart

Lyes a thought farder, then another mans.

TIB. My comforts are so flowing in my ioyes,

100 As, in them, all my streames of grieve are lost,

No lesse then are land-waters in the sea,

Or showres in riuers; though their cause was such,

As might haue sprinkled eu'n the gods with teares.

Yet since the greater doth embrace the lesse,

105 We couetously obey. (ARR. Well acted, CAESAR.)

TIB. And, now I am the happy wisse made

Of your so much desir'd affections,

To this great issue, I could wish, the fates

Would here set peacefull period to my dayes;

110 How euer, to my labours, I intreat

(And beg it of this *Senate*) some fit ease.

(ARR. Laugh, Fathers, laugh: Ha' you no spleenes  
about you?)

TIB. The burden is too heauy, I sustayne

On my vnwilling shoulders; and I pray

115 It may be taken off, and re-confer'd

Vpon the *Consuls*, or some other *Romane*,

More able, and more worthy. (ARR. Laugh on, still.)

SAB. Why, this doth render all the rest suspected!

GAL. It poysons all. ARR. O, do' you taste it then?

120 SAB. It takes away my faith to any thing

He shall hereafter speake. ARR. I, to pray that,

Which would be to his head as hot as thunder,

III. 93 honours] honors Q 93-4 Marginal note not in Q had]  
The a has disappeared in most copies of F1 95 you,] you F2  
97 brest,] brest F2 98 farder,] farder Q farther F3 105  
couetously obey] couetously obey Q 109 set] set' F2 111  
ease.] ease: Q 113 sustayne] susteine Q 115 off] of Q 117  
worthy] worthy. Q still,] still Q 119 do' you] doe you F2

('Gainst which he weares that charme) should but the *A wreath<sup>a</sup>*  
court *of lawrell.*

Receiue him at his word. G A L. Heare. T I B. For my  
selfe,

I know my weakenesse, and so little couet 125  
(Like some gone past) the waight that will oppresse me,  
As my ambition is the counter-point.

(A R R. Finely maintain'd ; good still.) S E I. But *Rome*,  
whose bloud,

Whose nerues, whose life, whose very frame relies  
On C A E S A R ' s strength, no lesse then heau'n on A T L A S, 130  
Cannot admit it but with generall ruine.

(A R R. Ah ! are you there, to bring him of ?) S E I. Let  
C A E S A R

No more then vrge a point so contrary  
To C A E S A R ' s greatnesse, the grieu'd *Senates* vowes,  
Or *Romes* necessitie. (G A L. He comes about. 135

A R R. More nimbly then V E R T V M N V S.) T I B. For  
the publike,

I may be drawne, to shew, I can neglect  
All priuate aymes ; though I affect my rest :  
But, if the *Senate* still command me serue,  
I must be glad to practise my obedience. 140

(A R R. You must, and will, sir. We doe know it.) S E N.

C A E S A R,

*Liue long, and happy, great, and royall* C A E S A R, *Another*  
*The gods preserue thee, and thy modestie,* *forme.*

*Thy wisdome, and thy innocence.* (A R R. Where is't ?  
The prayer's made before the subiect.) S E N. *Guard* 145

*His meeknesse, I O V E, his pretie, his care,*  
*His bountie*—— A R R. And his subtlety, I'll put in :  
Yet hee'll keepe that himselfe, without the gods.  
All prayer's are vaine for him. T I B. We will not hold

III. 123 'Gainst] 'Gayn'st Q (the first apostrophe faint) Gain'st F1  
123 Marginal note not in Q 128 maintain'd] maintain'd Q  
130 then] than F2 (so 136) ATLAS,] Atlas Q 132 of] off F2  
142 Marginal note not in Q CAESAR,] CAESAR; F2 144 Where]  
where Q 149 prayer's] prayers F2 We] we Q

- 150 Your patience, *Fathers*, with long answer; but  
 Shall still contend to be, what you desire,  
 And worke to satisfie so great a hope :  
 Proceed to your affaires. ARR. Now, SILIVS, guard  
 thee ;  
 The curtin's drawing. A FER aduanceth. PRAE. Silence.
- 155 A FE. Cite CAIVS SILIVS. PRAE. CAIVS  
 SILIVS. SIL. Here.  
 A FE. The triumph that thou hadst in *Germanie*  
 For thy late victorie on SACROVIR,  
 Thou hast enioy'd so freely, CAIVS SILIVS,  
 As no man it enuy'd thee ; nor would CAESAR,  
 160 Or *Rome* admit, that thou wert then defrauded  
 Of any honours, thy deserts could clayme,  
 In the faire seruice of the common-wealth :  
 But now, if, after all their loues, and graces,  
 (Thy actions, and their courses being discover'd)  
 165 It shall appeare to CAESAR, and this *Senate*,  
 Thou hast defil'd those glories, with thy crimes——  
 SIL. Crimes ? A FE. Patience, SILIVS. SIL. Tell  
 thy moile of patience,  
 I' am a *Romane*. What are my crimes ? Proclaime them.  
 Am I too rich ? too honest for the times ?
- 170 Haue I or treasure, iewels, land, or houses  
 That some informer gapes for ? Is my strength  
 Too much to be admitted ? Or my knowledge ?  
 These now are crimes. A FE. Nay, SILIVS, if the name  
 Of crime so touch thee, with what impotence  
 175 Wilt thou endure the matter to be search'd ?  
 SIL. I tell thee, A FER, with more scorne, then feare :  
 Employ your mercenarie tongue, and arte.  
 Where's my accuser ? VAR. Here. ARR. VARRO ?  
 The *Consul* ?  
 Is he thrust in ? VAR. 'Tis I accuse thee, SILIVS.
- 180 Against the maiestie of *Rome*, and CAESAR,

III. 152 hope ] hope Q 154 curtin's] Curtain's F3 PRAE ] PRAE, Q  
 162 common-wealth] Common wealth Q 176 then] than F2

I doe pronounce thee here a guiltie cause,  
 First, of beginning, and occasioning,  
 Next, drawing out the warre in *Gallia*,  
 For which thou late triumph'st ; dissembling long  
 That S A C R O V I R to be an enemye, 185  
 Only to make thy entertainment more,  
 Whil'st thou, and thy wife S o s i A poll'd the prouince ;  
 Wherein, with sordide-base desire of gaine,  
 Thou hast discredited thy actions worth  
 And beene a traytor to the state S I L. Thou lvest. 190

A R R. I thanke thee, S I L I V S, speake so still, and often.

V A R. If I not proue it, C A E S A R, but iniustly  
 Haue call'd him into tryall, here I bind  
 My selfe to suffer, what I claime 'gainst him ;  
 And yeeld, to haue what I haue spoke, confirm'd 195  
 By iudgement of the court, and all good men.

S I L. C A E S A R, I craue to haue my cause defer'd,  
 Till this mans Consulship be out. T I B. We cannot,  
 Nor may we graunt it. S I L. Why ? shall he designe  
 My day of tryall ? is he my accuser ? 200

And must he be my iudge ? T I B. It hath beene usuall,  
 And is a right, that custome hath allow'd  
 The magistrate, to call forth priuate men ;  
 And to appoint their day : Which priuiledge  
 We may not in the *Consul* see infring'd, 205  
 By whose deepe watches, and industrious care  
 It is so labour'd, as the common-wealth  
 Receue no losse, by any oblique course.

S I L. C A E S A R, thy fraud is worse then violence.

T I B. S I L I V S, mistake vs not, we dare not vse 210  
 The credit of the *Consul*, to thy wrong,  
 But only doe preserue his place, and power,  
 So farre as it concernes the dignitie,  
 And honor of the state. A R R. Beleeue him, S I L I V S.

111. 189 worth] worth, F<sub>2</sub> 193 tryall,] tryall, F<sub>2</sub> 198 Consul-  
 ship] Consul-ship Q out] out, Q 199 graunt] grant F<sub>2</sub>  
 207 labour'd] labor'd Q 209 then] than F<sub>2</sub> 211 wrong,]  
 wrong ; F<sub>2</sub> 214 honor] honour Q, F<sub>2</sub> him,] him Q

- 215 C O T. Why, so he may, A R R V N T I V S. A R R. I say so.  
 And he may choose too. T I B. By the *capitoll*,  
 And all our gods, but that the deare republick,  
 Our sacred lawes, and iust authoritie  
 Are interest'd therein, I should be silent.
- 220 A F E. Please' C A E S A R to giue way vnto his tryall.  
 He shall haue iustice. S I L. Nay, I shall haue law ;  
 Shall I not A F E R ? speake. A F E. Would you haue  
 mo(re?)  
 S I L. No, my well-spoken man, I would no more ;  
 Nor lesse : might I inioy it naturall,
- 225 Not taught to speake vnto your present ends,  
 Free from thine, his, and all your vnkind handling,  
 Furious enforcing, most vniust presuming,  
 Malicious, and manifold applying,  
 Foule wresting, and impossible construction.
- 230 A F E. He raues, he raues. S I L. Thou durst not tell me  
 so,  
 Had'st thou not C A E S A R S warrant. I can see  
 Whose power condemnes me. V A R. This betrayes his  
 spirit.  
 This doth inough declare him what he is.  
 S I L. What am I ? speake. V A R. An enemie to the  
 state.
- 235 S I L. Because I am an enemie to thee,  
 And such corrupted ministers o' the state,  
 That here art made a present instrument  
 To gratifie it with thine owne disgrace.  
 S E I. This, to the *Consul*, is most insolent !
- 240 And impious ! S I L. I, take part. Reueale your selues.  
 Alas, I sent not your confed'racies ?  
 Your plots, and combinations ? I not know  
 Minion S E I A N V S hates me ; and that all  
 This boast of law, and law, is but a forme,

III. 215 Why, may.] Why . . . may Q 216 choose] chuse F3  
 222 more ?] In Fr ' mo', the end letters failing to print 223 No.] No  
 Q 236 o'] of Q 240 SIL.] SEI Q, corr in MS. in Wise copy  
 241 sent] scent Fa

A net of VULCANES filing, a meere ingine, 245  
 To take that life by a pretext of iustice,  
 Which you pursue in malice? I want braine,  
 Or nostrill to perswade me, that your ends,  
 And purposes are made to what they are,  
 Before my answer? O, you equall gods, 250  
 Whose iustice not a world of wolfe-turn'd men  
 Shall make me to accuse (how ere prouoke)  
 Haue I for this so oft engag'd my selfe?  
 Stood in the heate, and feruor of a fight,  
 When P H Œ V S sooner hath forsooke the day 255  
 Then I the field? Against the blue-ey'd *Gaules*?  
 And crisped *Germanes*? when our *Romane* Eagles  
 Haue fann'd the fire, with their labouring wings,  
 And no blow dealt, that left not death behind it?  
 When I haue charg'd, alone, into the troopes 260  
 Of curl'd *Sicambrians*, routed them, and came  
 Not off, with backward ensignes of a slaue,  
 But forward markes, wounds on my brest, and face,  
 Were meant to thee, ō C A E S A R, and thy *Rome*?  
 And haue I this returne? did I, for this, 265  
 Performe so noble, and so braue defeate,  
 On S A C R O V I R? (Ō I O V E, let it become me  
 To boast my deedes, when he, whom they concerne,  
 Shall thus forget them.) A F E. S I L I V S, S I L I V S,  
 These are the common customes of thy bloud, 270  
 When it is high with wine, as now with rage:  
 This well agrees, with that intemperate vaunt,  
 Thou lately mad'st at A G R I P P I N A 's table,  
 That when all other of the troopes were prone  
 To fall into rebellion, only yours 275  
 Remain'd in their obedience. You were he,  
 That sau'd the empire; which had then beene lost,

III. 245 meere] mere Q 250 O.] O Q 252 accuse] accuse, Q  
 prouoke] provoke,) F2 254 feruor] fervour F2 256 Then] Than  
 F2 blue-] blew- Q 259 it?] it Q 262 off] of Q slaue,]  
 alave, F2 264 thee,] thee Q 266 braue] brave' F2 267  
 SACROVIR ?] Sacrovir, Q 272 vaunt] vant Q 275 yours] thine Q  
 276 You were] Thou wert Q 277 sau'd] sau'dst Q



- Had but your legions, there, rebell'd, or mutin'd.  
 Your vertue met, and fronted euery perill.
- 280 You gaue to C A E S A R, and to *Rome* their surety.  
 Their name, their strength, their spirit, and their state,  
 Their being was a donatiue from you.
- A R R. Well worded, and most like an Orator.
- T I B. Is this true, S I L I V S? S I L. Saue thy question,  
 C A E S A R.
- 285 Thy spie, of famous credit, hath affirm'd it.  
 A R R. Excellent *Romane*! S A B. He doth answere  
 stoutly.
- S E I. If this be so, there needes no farder cause  
 Of crime against him. V A R. What can more impeach  
 The royall dignitie, and state of C A E S A R,
- 290 Then to be vrged with a benefit  
 He cannot pay? C O T. In this, all C A E S A R S fortune  
 Is made vnequall to the courtesie.
- L A T. His meanes are cleane destroy'd, that should  
 requite.
- G A L. Nothing is great enough for S I L I V S merit.
- 295 A R R. G A L L V S on that side to? S I L. Come, doe not  
 hunt,  
 And labour so about for circumstance,  
 To make him guiltie, whom you haue fore-doom'd :  
 Take shorter wayes, I'll meet your purposes.  
 The wordes were mine, and more I now will say :
- 300 Since I haue done thee that great seruice, C A E S A R,  
 Thou still hast fear'd me ; and, in place of grace,  
 Return'd me hatred so soone, all best turnes,  
 With doubtfull Princes, turne deepe iniuries  
 In estimation, when they greater rise,
- 305 Then can be answer'd Benefits, with you,  
 Are of no longer pleasure, then you can

III. 278 your] thy Q 279 Your] Thy Q 280 You gaue] Thou gau'st  
 Q 282 you] thee Q 287 farder] farther F3 290 Then] Than F2 (so  
 305) 294 SILIUS], SILIUS' F2 295 on] o' Q 297  
 -doom'd] -dom'd Q 299 mine,] mine; Q 303 With doubtfull  
 Princes, turne deepe] With *Princes*, do conuert to Q 305 answer'd.]  
 answer'd: Q 306 then] than F2

With ease restore them ; that transcended once,  
 Your studies are not how to thanke, but kill.  
 It is your nature, to haue all men slaues  
 To you, but you acknowledging to none. 310  
 The meanes that makes your greatnesse, must not come  
 In mention of it ; if it doe, it takes  
 So much away, you thinke : and that, which help'd,  
 Shall soonest perish, if it stand in eye,  
 Where it may front, or but vpbraide the high. 315  
 C O T. Suffer him speake no more. V A R. Note but his  
 spirit.  
 A F E. This shewes him in the rest. L A T. Let him be  
 censur'd.  
 S E I. He' hath spoke inough to proue him C A E S A R S  
 foe.  
 C O T. His thoughts looke through his words. S E I. A  
 censure S I L Stay,  
 Stay, most officious *Senate*, I shall straight 320  
 Delude thy furie. S I L I V S hath not plac'd  
 His guards within him, against fortunes spight,  
 So weakely, but he can escape your gripe  
 That are but hands of fortune . Shee her selfe  
 When vertue doth oppose, must lose her threats. 325  
 All that can happen in humanitie,  
 The frowne of C A E S A R, proud S E I A N V S hatred,  
 Base V A R R O ' s spleene, and A F E R S bloudying tongue,  
 The *Senates* seruile flatterie, and these  
 Mustred to kill, I'am fortified against ; 330  
 And can looke downe vpon . they are beneath me.  
 It is not life whereof I stand enamour'd :  
 Nor shall my ende make me accuse my fate.  
 The coward, and the valiant man must fall,  
 Only the cause, and manner how, discernes them : 335  
 Which then are gladdest, when they cost vs dearest.

III. 311 makes] make Q      greatnesse,] greatnesse Q      313 that,]  
 .hat Q      320 Stay,] Stay Q      straight] streight Q      325 lose] loose Q  
 327 SEIANVS] SJANU'S F2

*Romanes*, if any here be in this *Senate*,  
 Would know to mock TIBERIVS tyrannie,  
 Looke vpon SILIVS, and so learne to die.

340 V A R. O, desperate act! A R R. An honorable hand!

T I B. Looke, is he dead? S A B. 'Twas nobly strooke,  
 and home.

A R R. My thought did prompt him to it. Farewell,  
 S I L I V S.

Be famous euer for thy great example.

T I B. We are not pleas'd, in this sad accident,  
 345 That thus hath stalled, and abus'd our mercy,  
 Intended to preserue thee, noble *Romane*  
 And to preuent thy hopes. A R R. Excellent wolfe!  
 Now he is full, he howles. S E I. C A E S A R doth wrong  
 His dignitie, and safetie, thus to mourne  
 350 The deseru'd end of so profest a traytor,  
 And doth, by this his lenitie, instruct  
 Others as factious, to the like offence.

T I B. The confiscation meere of his state  
 Had beene inough. A R R. O, that was gap'd for then?

355 V A R. Remoue the body. S E I. Let citation  
 Goe out for S O S I A. G A L. Let her be proscrib'd.  
 And for the goods, I thinke it fit that halfe  
 Goe to the treasure, halfe vnto the children.

L E P. With leaue of C A E S A R, I would thinke, that  
 fourth

360 Part, which the law doth cast on the informers,  
 Should be inough; the rest goe to the children:  
 Wherein the Prince shall shew humanitie,  
 And bountie, not to force them by their want  
 (Which in their parents trespasse they deseru'd)

365 To take ill courses. T I B. It shall please vs. A R R. I,  
 Out of necessitie. This L E P I D V S  
 Is graue and honest, and I haue obseru'd

III 339 *Stabs himself* add F3 340 honorable] honourable Q, F2  
 341 strooke] struck F3 342 Farewell.] Farewell Q 346 thee.] thee Q  
 360 Part, which] The which Q 363 want] want, Q

A moderation still in all his censures.

SAB. And bending to the better—Stay, who's this?

CREMVTIVS CORDVS? what? is he brought in? 370

ARR. More blood vnto the banquet? Noble CORDVS,  
I wish thee good: Be as thy writings, free,

And honest. TIB. What is he? SEI. For th'Annal's,

CAESAR.

PRÆCO, CORDVS, SATRIVS, NATTA.

CREMVTIVS CORD<sup>9</sup>. COR. Here. PRAE.  
SATRIVS SECVND<sup>9</sup>,

PINNARIVS NATTA, you are his accusers. 375

ARR. Two of SEIANVS blood-hounds, whom he  
breeds

With humane flesh, to bay at citizens.

A FE. Stand forth before the *Senate*, and confront him.

SAT. I doe accuse thee here, CREMVTIVS CORDVS,  
To be a man factious, and dangerous, 380

A sower of sedition in the state,

A turbulent, and discontented spirit,

Which I will proue from thine owne writings, here,

The Annal's thou hast publish'd; where thou bit'st

The present age, and with a vipers tooth, 385

Being a member of it, dar'st that ill

Which neuer yet degencrous bastard did

Vpon his parent. NAT. To this, I subscribe;

And, forth a world of more particulars,

Instance in only one: Comparing men, 390

And times, thou praysest BRVTVS, and affirm'st

That CASSIVS was the last of all the *Romanes*.

COT. How! what are we then? VAR. What is

CAESAR? nothing?

A FE. My lords, this strikes at euery *Romanes* priuate,

III. 373 Annal's] Annals F2 (so 384) Before 369 Enter Satrivs  
and Natta, with Cremutius Cordus guarded G, continuing the scene  
Before 374. PRÆCO, not in Q 375 SEIANVS] SEIANUS'S F2 383  
proue] proue Q 384 hast] last Q 390 one ] one Q 394  
AFE] ARR. Q, corr in MS in Wise copy

- 395 In whom raignes gentrie, and estate of spirit,  
 To haue a B R V T V S brought in paralell,  
 A parricide, an enemy of his countrie,  
 Rank'd, and preferr'd to any reall worth  
 That *Rome* now holds. This is most strangely inuectiue.
- 400 Most full of spight, and insolent vpbraiding.  
 Nor is't the time alone is here dispris'd,  
 But the whole man of time, yea C A E S A R 's selfe  
 Brought in disualew; and he aym'd at most  
 By oblique glance of his licentious pen.
- 405 C A E S A R, if C A S S I V S were the last of *Romanes*,  
 Thou hast no name. T I B. Let's heare him answer.  
 Silence.
- C O R. So innocent I am of fact, my lords,  
 As but my words are argu'd; yet those words  
 Not reaching eyther prince, or princes parent:
- 410 The which your law of treason comprehends.  
 B R V T V S, and C A S S I V S, I am charg'd, t' haue prayd:  
 Whose deedes, when many more, besides my selfe,  
 Haue writ, not one hath mention'd without honour.  
 Great T I T V S L I V I V S, great for eloquence,
- 415 And faith, amongst vs, in his historie,  
 With so great prayes P O M P E Y did extoll,  
 As oft A V G V S T V S call'd him a P O M P E I A N:  
 Yet this not hurt their friendship. In his booke  
 He often names S C I P I O, A F R A N I V S,
- 420 Yea, the same C A S S I V S, and this B R V T V S too,  
 As worthi' <e>st men; not theeues, and parricides,  
 Which notes, vpon their fames, are now impos'd.  
 A S I N I V S P O L L I O 's writings quite throughout  
 Giue them a noble memorie; So M E S S A L L A
- 425 Renown'd his generall C A S S I V S: yet both these  
 Liu'd with A V G V S T V S, full of wealth, and honours.

in 396 paralell] paralell F2 397 enemy] Enemy Q 399  
 inuectiue] inuective, F2 404 glance] glaunce Q pen] pen? Q  
 409 parent] Parent, Q 411 prayd] prayd Q 413 honour]  
 honor Q 416 With] with Q 420 Yea,] Yea Q 425 Renown'd]  
 Renown'd Q 426 honours] honors Q

To C I C E R O ' s booke, where C A T O was heau'd vp  
 Equall with heau'n, what else did C A E S A R answere,  
 Being then *Dictator*, but with a penn'd oration,  
 As if before the iudges ? Doe but see 430  
 A N T O N I V S letters ; read but B R V T V S pleadings :  
 What vile reproch they hold against A V G V S T V S,  
 False I confesse, but with much bitterness.  
 The *Epigram's* of B I B A C V L V S, and C A T V L L V S,  
 Are read, full stuff with spight of both the C A E S A R S ; 435  
 Yet deified I V L I V S, and no lesse A V G V S T V S !  
 Both bore them, and contemn'd them : (I not know  
 Promptly to speake it, whether done with more  
 Temper, or wisdom) for such obloquies  
 If they despised bee, they dye suppress, 440  
 But, if with rage acknowledg'd, they are confest.  
 The *Greekes* I slip, whose licence not alone,  
 But also lust did scape vnpunished :  
 Or where some one (by chance) exception tooke,  
 He words with words reueng'd. But, in my worke, 445  
 What could be aim'd more free, or farder of  
 From the times scandale, then to write of those,  
 Whom death from grace, or hatred had exempted ?  
 Did I, with B R V T V S, and with C A S S I V S,  
 Arm'd, and possess'd of the P H I L I P P I fields, 450  
 Incense the people in the ciuill cause,  
 With dangerous speeches ? or doe they, being slaine  
 Seuentie yeeres since, as by their images  
 (Which not the conquerour hath defac'd) appeares,  
 Retaine that gultie memorie with writers ? 455  
 Posteritie payes euerie man his honour.  
 Nor shall there want, though I condemned am,  
 That will not only C A S S I V S well approue,

III 428 Equall] Æquall Q 431 ANTONIVS.. BRVTVS] ANTONIVS  
 ... BRVTVS F2 pleadings ] pleadings, Q 432 reproch] reproach  
 Q, F2 434 *Epigram's*] *Epigramms* F2 436 AVGVSTVS ] Augustus,  
 Q 439-41 *Gnomic pointing in* Q "For . . ." If . . . " But . . .  
 440 suppress.] suppress ; F2 446 farder] farther F3 of] off F2  
 447 then] than F2 453 Seuentie] Sev'nty F2 456 Posteritie]  
 "Posterity Q 457 there] their Q

- And of great BRVTVS honour mindfull be,  
 460 But that will, also, mention make of me.  
 ARR. Freely, and nobly spoken. SAB. With good  
 temper,  
 I like him, that he is not moou'd with passion.  
 ARR. He puts 'hem to their whisper. TIB. Take him  
 hence,  
 We shall determine of him at next sitting.  
 465 COT. Meane time, giue order, that his bookes be burn't,  
 To the' *Ædiles*. SEI. You haue well aduis'd.  
 AFE. It fits not such licentious things should liue  
 T' vpbraid the age. ARR. If th' age were good, they might.  
 LAT. Let 'hem be burnt. GAL. All sought, and burnt,  
 to day.  
 470 PRAE. The court is vp, *Lictors*, resume the *fascēs*.

ARRVNTIVS, SABINVS, LEPIDVS.

- LET 'hem be burnt! ô, how ridiculous  
 Appeares the *Senate's* brainlesse diligence,  
 Who thinke they can, with present power, extinguish  
 The memorie of all succeeding times!  
 475 SAB. 'Tis true, when (contrarie) the punishment  
 Of wit, doth make th'authoritie increase.  
 Nor doe they ought, that vse this crueltie  
 Of interdiction, and this rage of burning;  
 But purchase to themselues rebuke, and shame,  
 480 And to the writers an eternall name.  
 LEF. It is an argument the times are sore,  
 When vertue cannot safely be aduanc'd;  
 Nor vice reproou'd ARR. I, noble LEPIDVS,  
 AVGVSTVS well foresaw, what we should suffer,

III 459 BRVTVS] Brutus's F2 462 moou'd] mov'd F2 After  
 464 Exeunt Officers with Cordus G 466 the' *Ædiles* Q, F1: the  
*Ædiles* F2 469 burnt, to] burnt To Q 470 vp,] up, F2  
 Lictors.] Lictors Q After 470 Exeunt all but Arruntius, Sabinus, and  
 Lepidus G, who continues the scene Before 471 SABINVS] SABINVS  
 Q 471 Let] ARR Let Q ô,] ô Q 474 times!] times Q  
 475 true, Q: true Ff 476 increase] encrease Q 483 LEPIDVS,]  
 Lepidus. Q 484 foresaw,] foresaw Q

Vnder TIBERIVS, when he did pronounce 485  
The *Roman* race most wretched, that should liue  
Betweene so slow iawes, and so long a bruising.

## TIBERIVS, SEIANVS.

T His businesse hath succeeded well, SEIANVS :  
And quite remoou'd all realousie of practice  
'Gainst AGRIPPINA, and our nephewes. Now, 490  
We must bethinke vs how to plant our ingines  
For th'other paire, SABINVS, and ARRVNTIVS,  
And GALLVS too (how ere he flatter vs,)  
His heart we know. SEI. Giue it some respite, CAESAR.  
Time shall mature, and bring to perfect crowne, 495  
What we, with so good vultures, haue begunne :  
SABINVS shall be next. TIB. Rather ARRVNTIVS.

SEI. By any meanes, preserue him. His franke tongue  
Being lent the reines, will take away all thought  
Of malice, in your course against the rest. 500  
We must keep him to stalke with TIB. Dearest head,  
To thy most fortunate designe I yeeld it.

SEI. Sir—— I' haue beene so long train'd vp in grace,  
First, with your father, great AVGVSTVS, since,  
With your most happie bounties so familiar, 505  
As I not sooner would commit my hopes  
Or wishes to the gods, then to your eares  
Nor haue I euer, yet, beene couetous  
Of ouer-bright, and dazling honours. rather  
To watch, and trauaile in great CAESAR'S safetie, 510  
With the most common souldier. TIB. 'Tis confest.

SEI. The only gaine, and which I count most faire

III. 485 pronounce] pronounce *Fr* After 487 *Exeunt. G* Before 488  
SCENE II | A Room in the Palace | Enter Tiberius and Sejanus *G*  
488 This] TIB. This *Q* 489 remoou'd] remou'd *Q* remov'd *F2*  
493 too] too ; *Q* 496 we.] we *Q* vultures.] *Vultures Q* 499  
reines] reines *Q* 502 fortunate] fortunate *Fr* 503 I' haue]  
I haue *Q* 504 First.] First *Q* 505 With . . . familiar] To . . .  
mur'd *Q* 507 then] than *F2* 509 ouer-bright.] ouer bright, *Q*  
ouer-bright *F2* honours.] honors, *Q* 510 trauaile] trauell *Q*



*His  
daughter  
was  
betroth'd  
to  
Clausus,  
his sonne.*

Of all my fortunes, is that mightie C A E S A R  
Hath thought me worthie his alliance. Hence  
Beginne my hopes. T I B. H'mh? S E I. I haue heard,  
A V G V S T V S

- In the bestowing of his daughter, thought  
517 But euen of gentlemen of *Rome*: If so,  
(I know not how to hope so great a fauour)  
But if a husband should be sought for L I V I A,  
520 And I be had in minde, as C A E S A R S freind,  
I would but vse the glorie of the kindred.  
It should not make me slothfull, or lesse caring  
For C A E S A R S state; it were inough to me  
It did confirme, and strengthen my weake house,  
525 Against the-now-vnequall opposition  
Of A G R I P P I N A; and for deare regard  
Vnto my children, this I wish: my selfe  
Haue no ambition farder, then to end  
My dayes in seruice of so deare a master.  
530 T I B. We cannot but commend thy pietie,  
Most-lou'd S E I A N V S, in acknowledging  
Those bounties; which we, faintly, such remember.  
But to thy suit. The rest of mortall men,  
In all their drifts, and counsels, pursue profit:  
535 Princes, alone, are of a different sort,  
Directing their maine actions still to fame.  
We therefore will take time to thinke, and answere.  
For L I V I A, she can best, her selfe, resolute  
If she will marrie, after D R V S V S, or  
540 Continue in the family; besides  
She hath a mother, and a grandame yet,

III 513-16 *Marginal note in Latin in Q* 513 18] 18, F2 515  
AVGVSTVS] Augu some copies of F2 517 *Rome* 1] *Rome*. Q 520  
freind] friend Q, F2 521 kindred] Kindred, Q 523 state:] state,  
Q 525 -vnequall] -vnæquall Q 526 and F2: 'And Q:  
'and F1 528 farder] farther F3 then] than F2 529  
master] Prince Q 530 pietie.] pitty Q (*corr in MS. in Wise copy*):  
pietie F1: piety F2 532 Those] Those, Q we, faintly, such  
remember *corr* F1, F2. we faintly, such, remember Q, F1 *originally*  
539 marrie, *corr*. F1, F2: marry Q: marrie F1 *originally* 540  
family] Famely Q

Whose neerer counsels she may guide her by :  
 But I will simply deale. That enmitie,  
 Thou fear'st in AGRIPPINA, would burne more,  
 If LIVIA's marriage should (as 'twere in parts) 545  
 Deuide th' imperiall house ; an emulation  
 Betweene the women might break forth : and discord  
 Ruine the sonnes, and nephues, on both hands.  
 What if it cause some present difference ?  
 Thou art not safe, SEIANVS, if thou prooue it. 550  
 Canst thou beleuee, that LIVIA, first the wife  
 To CAIVS CAESAR, then my DRVSVS, now  
 Will be contented to grow old with thee,  
 Borne but a priuate gentleman of Rome ?  
 And rayse thee with her losse, if not her shame ? 555  
 Or say, that I should wish it, canst thou thinke  
 The Senate, or the people (who haue seene  
 Her brother, father, and our ancestors,  
 In highest place of empire) will indure it ?  
 The state thou hold'st alreadie, is in talke ; 560  
 Men murmure at thy greatnesse, and the nobles  
 Sticke not, in publike, to vpbraid thy climbing  
 About our fathers fauours, or thy scale :  
 And dare accuse me, from their hate to thee.  
 Be wise, deare friend. We would not hide these things 565  
 For friendships deare respect. Nor will we stand  
 Aduerse to thine, or LIVIA's designements.  
 What we had purpos'd to thee, in our thought,  
 And with what neere degrees of loue to bind thee,  
 And make thee equall to vs ; for the present, 570  
 We will forbear to speake. Only, thus much  
 Beleuee, our lou'd SEIANVS, we not know

III 545 LIVIAS] LIVIA's F2 546 Deuide] Divide F3 emulation]  
 Emulation Q 547 forth: corr FI forth, Q, FI originally 550  
 prooue] proue Q: prove F2 551 LIVIA, first the wife corr FI, F2:  
 Livia, who was wife Q LIVIA who was wife FI originally 552 my  
 corr. FI, F2: to Q, FI originally 559 indure] endure Q 570  
 equall] equall Q vs; corr. FI, F2 vs, Q, FI originally present.]  
 present Q 571 Only, corr FI, F2. Only Q, FI originally 572  
 Beleuee, Q, corr. FI: Beleuee FI originally Believe, F2

That height in bloud, or honour, which thy vertue,  
 And minde to vs, may not aspire with merit.  
 575 And this wee'll publish, on all watch'd occasion  
 The *Senate*, or the people shall present.

SEI. I am restor'd, and to my sense againe,  
 Which I had lost in this so blinding suit.

CAESAR hath taught me better to refuse,  
 580 Then I knew how to aske. How pleaseth CAESAR  
 T'imbrace my late aduice, for leauing *Rome*?

TIB. We are resolu'd. SEI. Here are some motiues  
 more,

Which I haue thought on since, may more confirme.

TIB. Carefull SEIANVS! we will straight peruse  
 them:  
 585 Goe forward in our maine designe, and prosper.

## SEIANVS.

IF those but take, I shall: dull, heauie CAESAR!  
 Would'st thou tell me, thy fauours were made crimes?  
 And that my fortunes were esteem'd thy faults?  
 That thou, for me, wert hated? and not thinke  
 590 I would with winged haste preuent that change,  
 When thou might'st winne all to thy selfe againe,  
 By forfeiture of me? Did those fond words  
 Fly swifter from thy lips, then this my braine,  
 This sparkling forge, created me an armor  
 595 T' encounter chance, and thee? Well, read my charmes,  
 And may they lay that hold vpon thy senses,  
 As thou had'st snuft vp hemlocke, or tane downe  
 The iuice of poppie, and of mandrakes. Sleepe,  
 Voluptuous CAESAR, and securitie  
 600 Seize on thy stupide powers, and leaue them dead

III. 574 merit. *corr.* Fr, F2: merit, Q, Fr originally 575 watch'd]  
 watcht F2 580 Then] Than F2 582 more,] more Q, Ff Gives  
 him a paper. add G 585 designe] dissigne Q After 585 Exit.  
 G, who continues the scene 586 If] SEI If Q shall dull *corr.*  
 Fr, F2. shall. Dull Q, Fr originally 593 then] than F2 597  
 tane] tane Q

To publike cares, awake but to thy lusts.  
 The strength of which makes thy libidinous soule  
 Itch to leaue *Rome* ; and I haue thrust it on :  
 With blaming of the citie businesse,  
 The multitude of suites, the confluence 605  
 Of suitors, then their importunacies,  
 The manifold distractions he must suffer,  
 Besides ill rumours, enuies, and reproches,  
 All which, a quiet and retired life,  
 (Larded with ease, and pleasure) did auoid ; 610  
 And yet, for any weightie, 'and great affaire,  
 The fittest place to giue the soundest counsels.  
 By this, shall I remooue him both from thought,  
 And knowledge of his owne most deare affaires ;  
 Draw all dispatches through my priuate hands ; 615  
 Know his designements, and pursue mine owne ;  
 Make mine owne strengths, by giuing suites, and places ;  
 Conferring dignities, and offices .  
 And these, that hate me now, wanting accesse  
 To him, will make their enuie none, or lesse. 620  
 For when they see me arbiter of all,  
 They must obserue : or else, with C A E S A R fall.

T I B E R I V S, S E R V U S.

T O marry L I V I A ? will no lesse, S E I A N V S,  
 Content thy aimes ? no lower object ? well !  
 Thou know'st how thou art wrought into our trust ; 625  
 Wouen in our designe ; and think'st, we must  
 Now vse thee, whatsoere thy proiects are :  
 'Tis true. But yet with caution, and fit care.  
 And, now we better thinke—who's there, within ?

III. 601 cares,] cares ; F2 lusts ] lusts, F2 608 reproches]  
 reproaches F2 611 weightie, 'and] weightie, and F2 613 remooue]  
 remoue Q, F2 620 lesse ] lesse, F2 622 CAESAR] *Caesar*, Q  
 Before 623 TIBERIVS, SERVUS ] SCENE III | Another Room in the  
 same. | Enter Tiberius G 623 To] TIB To Q 624 well!] well? Q  
 626 designe] dissigne Q 627 whatsoere] whatsoere Q 629 thinke—]  
 thinke, Q After 629 Enter an Officer. G

- 630 SER. CAESAR? TIB. To leaue our iourney off, were sin  
 'Gainst our decree'd delights; and would appeare  
 Doubt: or (what lesse becomes a prince) low feare.  
 Yet, doubt hath law, and feares haue their excuse,  
 Where princes states plead necessarie vse;
- 635 As ours doth now: more in SEIANVS pride,  
 Then all fell AGRIPPINA's hates beside.  
 Those are the dreadfull enemies, we raise  
 With fauours, and make dangerous, with prayse;  
 The iniur'd by vs may haue will alike,
- 640 But 'tis the fauourite hath the power, to strike:  
 And furie euer boyles more high, and strong,  
 Heat' with ambition, then reuenge of wrong.  
 'Tis then a part of supreme skill, to grace  
 No man too much; but hold a certaine space
- 645 Betweene th'ascenders rise, and thine owne flat,  
 Lest, when all rounds be reach'd, his aime be that.  
 'Tis thought—Is MACRO in the palace? See:  
 If not, goe, seeke him, to come to vs—Hee  
 Must be the organ, we must worke by now;
- 650 Though none lesse apt for trust: Need doth allow  
 What choise would not. I' haue heard, that *aconite*  
 Being timely taken, hath a healing might  
 Against the scorpions stroke; the prooffe wee'll giue:  
 That, while two poysons wrastle, we may liue.
- 655 Hee hath a spirit too working, to be vs'd  
 But to th' encounter of his like; excus'd  
 Are wiser sou'raignes then, that raise one ill  
 Against another, and both safely kill:  
 The prince, that feeds great natures, they will sway him;
- 660 Who nourisheth a lyon, must obey him.

III 630 SER ] Off. G 633 Yet.] Yet F<sub>2</sub> law,] law; Q 636  
 all] in all F<sub>2</sub> 637 Those] "They Q 637-46 *Gnomic pointing*  
 in Q "They . . "With . . "The "But . . "And . . "Heat . .  
 "Tis . . "No . . "Betweene . . "Least . . 638 fauours] fauors Q  
 642 Heat] Heat Q, F<sub>2</sub> then] than F<sub>2</sub> 646 Lest] Least Q 647  
 thought—] thought Q 648 vs—] vs Q After 'vs'] Exit Officer. G  
 649 by] by, Q 650-1 *Gnomic pointing in Q*. "Neede . . "What . .  
 651 I' haue] I haue F<sub>2</sub> 659-60 *Gnomic pointing in Q*: "The . .  
 "Who . .

TIBERIVS, MACRO.

MACRO, we sent for you. MAC. I heard so, CAESAR.  
TIB. (Leaue vs awhile.) When you shal know, good  
MACRO,

The causes of our sending, and the ends ;  
You then will harken neerer : and be pleas'd  
You stand so high, both in our choice, and trust. 665

MAC. The humblest place in CAESARS choice, or  
trust,  
May make glad MACRO proud ; without ambition :  
Saue to doe CAESAR seruice. TIB. Leaue our court-  
ings.

We are in purpose, MACRO, to depart  
The citie for a time, and see *Campania* ; 670

Not for our pleasures, but to dedicate  
A paire of temples, one, to IVPITER  
At *Capua*, th'other at *Nola*, to AVGVSTVS :  
In which great worke, perhaps, our stay will be  
Beyond our will produc't. Now, since we are 675

Not ignorant what danger may be borne  
Out of our shortest absence, in a state  
So subiect vnto enuie, and embroild  
With hate, and faction ; we haue thought on thee,  
(Amongst a field of *Romanes*,) worthiest MACRO, 680

To be our eye, and eare, to keepe strict watch  
On AGRIPPINA, NERO, DRVSVS, I,  
And on SEIANVS Not, that we distrust  
His loyaltie, or doe repent one grace,  
Of all that heape, we haue conferrd on him. 685

III Before 661 TIBERIVS, MACRO ] *Re-enter Officer with Macro* G, con-  
tinuing the scene 661 MACRO] TIB. Macro Q 662 awhile )  
When corr F1 a while l) When Q awhile l) when F1 originally, F2  
After 'awhile'] Exit Off. G 663 our Q, corr F1: your F1 originally, F2  
F2 666 choise, corr F1 choise, Q choise F1 originally, F2 667  
ambition corr F1 ambition, Q, F1 originally, F2 668 seruice ]  
seruice Q our] your F2 672 one.] one F2 673 *Capua*,  
th'other corr F1. *Capua*, Th'other Q, F1 originally, F2 681  
eare, corr. F1 Eare, Q. eare, F1 originally, F2 682 DRVSVS,  
corr. F1 Drusus, Q DRVSVS, F1 originally, F2 685 hum. corr.  
F1. hum. Q, F1 originally, F2

- (For that were to disparage our election,  
 And call that iudgement now in doubt, which then  
 Seem'd as vnquestion'd as an oracle,)  
 But, greatnesse hath his cankers. Wormes, and moaths  
 690 Breed out of too fit matter, in the things  
 Which after they consume, transferring quite  
 The substance of their makers, int'themselues.  
 M A C R O is sharpe, and apprehends. Besides,  
 I know him subtle, close, wise, and wel-read  
 695 In man, and his large nature. He hath studied  
 Affections, passions, knowes their springs, their ends,  
 Which way, and whether they will worke 'tis prooffe  
 Enough, of his great merit, that we trust him.  
 Then, to a point ; (because our conference  
 700 Cannot be long without suspicion)  
 Here, M A C R O, we assigne thee, both to spie,  
 Informe, and chastise ; thinke, and vse thy meanes,  
 Thy ministers, what, where, on whom thou wilt ;  
 Explore, plot, practise . All thou doost in this,  
 705 Shall be, as if the *Senate*, or the *Lawes*  
 Had giu'n it priuiledge, and thou thence stil'd  
 The sauer both of C A E S A R, and of *Rome*.  
 We will not take thy answer, but in act .  
 Whereto, as thou proceed'st, we hope to heare  
 710 By trusted messengers If't be enquir'd,  
 Wherefore we call'd you, say, you haue in charge  
 To see our chariots readie, and our horse :  
 Be still our lou'd, and (shortly) honor'd M A C R O.

III 689-92 *Gnomic pointing in Q* " But . " Breed . . " Which . .  
 " The 689 moaths] Moths F3 690 too fit matter *corr* F1 :  
 too much humor Q too much humour F1 originally, F2 692  
 int'themselues] into themselves G 693 apprehends *corr*. F1 :  
 apprehends Q, F1 originally, F2 695 nature *corr* F1 . Nature ; Q :  
 nature F1 originally, F2 696 Affections, *corr* F1 . affections F1  
 originally (the comma being faint in Q), F2 702 thinke *corr*. F1 . Thinke  
 Q, F1 originally 704 doost] dost F2 707 sauer Ed conj sauer  
 F1 . Sauour Q, F2 710 messengers ] Messengers Q 711 you,  
 say] you ; say Q 712 horse ] horse F2 713 honor'd] honour'd  
 F2 After 713 *Exit* G, who continues the scene

MACRO.

I Will not aske, why C A E S A R bids doe this :  
 But ioy, that he bids me. It is the blisse 715  
 Of courts, to be imploy'd ; no matter, how :  
 A princes power makes all his actions vertue.  
 We, whom he workes by, are dumbe instruments,  
 To doe, but not enquire : His great intents  
 Are to be seru'd, not search'd. Yet, as that bow 720  
 Is most in hand, whose owner best doth know  
 T'affect his aymes, so let that states-man hope  
 Most vse, most price, can hit his princes scope.  
 Nor must he looke at what, or whom to strike,  
 But loose at all , each marke must be alike. 725  
 Were it to plot against the fame, the life  
 Of one, with whom I twin'd ; remoue a wife  
 From my warme side, as lou'd, as is the ayre ;  
 Practise away each parent ; draw mine heyre  
 In compasse, though but one ; worke all my kin 730  
 To swift perdition , leaue no vntrain'd engin,  
 For friendship, or for innocence ; nay, make  
 The gods all guiltie . I would vndertake  
 This, being impos'd me, both with gaune, and ease.  
 The way to rise, is to obey, and please. 735  
 He that will thrue in state, he must neglect  
 The trodden paths, that truth and right respect ;  
 And proue new, wilder wayes : for vertue, there,  
 Is not that narrow thing, shee is else-where.  
 Mens fortune there is vertue , reason, their will : 740  
 Their licence, law ; and their obseruance, skill.  
 Occasion, is their foile ; conscience, their staine ;  
 Profit, their lustre . and what else is, vaine.

III. 714 I] MAC. I Q 715 ioy.] ioy Q 715-16 Gnostic pointing  
 in Q. " It . . . " Of . . . 717 actions] Actions, Q 722 aymes.]  
 aymes ; F<sub>2</sub> 725 loose Q lose Ff 735-43 Gnostic pointing  
 in Q. " The . . . " He . . . " The . . . " And " Is . . . " Mens . . .  
 " Their . . . " Occasion " Profit 735 please.] please, Q  
 739 else-where] elsewhere. Q else-where, F<sub>2</sub> 742 Occasion.]  
 Occasion Q



If then it be the lust of C A E S A R S power,  
 745 T'haue rais'd S E I A N V S vp, and in an hower  
 O're-turne him, tumbling, downe, from height of all ;  
 We are his ready engine : and his fall  
 May be our rise. It is no vncouth thing  
 To see fresh buildings from old ruines spring.

CHORVS—*Of Musicians.*

*Act* IIII.

GALLVS, AGRIPPINA, NERO, DRVSVS,  
 CALIGVLA.

**Y**OU must haue patience, royall AGRIPPINA.

A GR. I must haue vengeance, first and that were  
*nectar*

Vnto my famish'd spirits. O, my fortune,  
 Let it be sodaine thou prepar'st against me ;  
 5 Strike all my powers of vnderstanding blind,  
 And ignorant of destinie to come :  
 Let me not feare, that cannot hope. G A L. Deare Princesse,  
 These tyrannies, on your selfe, are worse then C A E S A R ' S.

A GR. Is this the happnesse of being borne great ?  
 10 Still to be aim'd at ? still to be suspected ?  
 To liue the subiect of all ielousies ?  
 At the least colour made, if not the ground  
 To euery painted danger ? who would not  
 Choose once to fall, then thus to hang for euer ?

15 G A L. You might be safe, if you would—A GR. What, my  
 GALLVS ?

Be lewd S E I A N V S strumpet ? Or the baud

III 745 hower] *houre* Q *howre* F<sub>2</sub> 746 O're-turne] *Ore turne* Q  
 748-9 *Gnomic pointing in Q* : " It . . . " To . . . After 749 *Exit. G*  
 CHORVS—*Of Musicians* ] MV CHORVS Q IV. Act IIII | GALLVS, . .  
 CALIGVLA ] ACTVS QVARTVS | GALLVS . . . CALIGVLA Q : ACT IV.  
 SCENE I. | An Apartment in Agrippina's House | Enter Gallus and  
 Agrippina G I You] GAL. You Q 3 O.] O Q 4 sodaine]  
 sudden F<sub>2</sub> 8 tyrannies selfe,] Tyrannies . . selfe Q then]  
 a than F<sub>2</sub> (so 15)

To CAESARS lusts, he now is gone to practise?  
 Not these are safe, where nothing is. Your selfe,  
 While thus you stand but by me, are not safe.  
 Was SILIVS safe? or the good SOSIA safe? 20  
 Or was my niece, deare CLAVDIA PVLCHRA, safe?  
 Or innocent FVRNIVS? They, that latest haue  
 (By being made guiltie) added reputation  
 To AFERS eloquence? O, foolish friends,  
 Could not so fresh example warne your loues, 25  
 But you must buy my fauours, with that losse  
 Vnto your selues: and, when you might perceiue  
 That CAESARS cause of raging must forsake him,  
 Before his will? Away, good GALLVS, leaue me.  
 Here to be seene, is danger; to speake, treason. 30  
 To doe me least obseruance, is call'd faction  
 You are vnhappy' in me, and I in all.  
 Where are my sonnes? NERO? and DRVSVS? We  
 Are they, be shot at; Let vs fall apart.  
 Not, in our ruines, sepulchre our friends. 35  
 Or shall we doe some action, like offence,  
 To mocke their studies, that would make vs faultie?  
 And frustrate practice, by preuenting it?  
 The danger's like: for, what they can contriue,  
 They will make good. No innocence is safe, 40  
 When power contests Nor can they trespasse more,  
 Whose only being was all crime, before  
 NER. You heare, SEIANVS is come backe from  
 CAESAR?  
 GAL. No. How? Disgrac'd? DRV. More graced now,  
 then euer.  
 GAL. By what mischance? CAL. A fortune, like inough 45

iv. 18 Not] "Not Q 21 niece] Neice Q originally, miscorrected Neice  
 PVLCHRA,] Pulchra Q PVLCHRA FI PULCHRA F2 22 FVRNIVS]  
 Furius F3 They,] They Q 26 fauours] Fauors Q 30 danger]  
 Danger Q (so 39) 32 vnhappy' in Q vnhappy in FI unhappie  
 in F2 34 they, corr FI they Q, FI originally, F2 39 for corr.  
 FI. For Q, FI originally 40-2 Gnomie pointing in Q. "No  
 "When . . ." Whose . . . Before 43 Enter Nero, Drusus, and Caligula  
 G 44 graced] grac'd F2 then] than F2

Once to be bad. DRV. But turn'd too good, to both.

GAL. What was't? NER. TIBERIVS sitting at his meat,

In a farme house, they call *Spelunca*, sited

By the sea-side, among the *Fundane* hills,

50 Within a naturall caue, part of the grot

(About the entrie) fell, and ouer-whelm'd

Some of the wayters; others ran away:

Only SEIANVS, with his knees, hands, face,

Ore-hanging CAESAR, did oppose himselfe

55 To the remayning ruines, and was found

In that so labouring posture, by the souldiers

That came to succour him. With which aduenture,

He hath so fixt himselfe in CAESAR'S trust,

As thunder cannot mooue him, and is come

60 With all the height of CAESARS praise, to *Rome*.

AGR. And power, to turne those ruines all on vs;

And bury whole posterities beneath them.

NERO, and DRVSVS, and CALIGVLA,

Your places are the next, and therefore most

65 In their offence. Thinke on your birth, and bloud,

Awake your spirits, meete their violence,

'Tis princely, when a tyran doth oppose;

And is a fortune sent to exercise

Your vertue, as the wind doth trie strong trees:

70 Who by vexation grow more sound, and firme.

After your fathers fall, and vnles fate,

What can you hope, but all the change of stroke

That force, or slight can giue? then stand vpight;

And though you doe not act, yet suffer nobly.

75 Be worthy of my wombe, and take strong cheare;

What we doe know will come, we should not feare.

iv. 52 others corr FI. Others Q, FI originally, Fa 59 mooue]  
move Fa 67-70 Gnomie pointing in Q "Tis ... " And .. "Your  
... " Who ... 67 tyran] tyrant Fa 68 to] to to Fa 76 What]  
" What Q

MACRO.

**R**eturn'd so soone ? renew'd in trust, and grace ?  
**I**s C A E S A R then so weake ? or hath the place  
 But wrought this alteration, with the aire ;  
 And he, on next remoue, will all repaire ? 80  
**M**A C R O, thou art ingag'd : and what before  
 Was publique ; now, must be thy priuate, more.  
 The weale of C A E S A R, fitnessse did imply ;  
 But thine own fate confers necessity  
 On thy employment : and the thoughts borne nearest 85  
 Vnto our selues, moue swiftest still, and dearest  
 If he recouer, thou art lost yea, all  
 The weight of preparation to his fall  
 Will turne on thee, and crush thee Therefore, strike  
 Before he settle, to preuent the like 90  
 Vpon thy selfe. He doth his vantage know,  
 That makes it home, and giues the foremost blow.

L A T I A R I S, R U F U S, O P S I V S.

**I**T is a seruice, great S E I A N V S will  
 See well requited, and accept of nobly.  
 Here place your selues, betweene the rooffe, and seeling, 95  
 And when I bring him to his wordes of danger,  
 Reueale your selues, and take him. R V F. Is he come ?  
 L A T. I'll now goe fetch him. O P S With good speed  
 I long  
 To merit from the state, in such an action  
 R V F. I hope, it will obtayne the *Consul*-ship 100  
 For one of vs O P S We cannot thinke of lesse,  
 To bring in one, so dangerous as S A B I N V S.

IV. Before 77 MACRO ] SCENE II | The Street | Enter Macro G 77  
 Return'd] MAC Return'd Q 82 publique ] publique, Q 85-6  
 Gnomie pointing in Q " And " Vnto 91-2 Gnomie pointing  
 in Q " He " That After 92 Exit G Before 93  
 L A T I A R I S, O P S I V S ] SCENE III | An upper Room of Agrippina's  
 House | Enter Latiaris Rufus, and Opsius G 93 It] LAT It  
 Q great] Lord Q 95 seeling] seeling F2 96 danger] daunger Q  
 98 After 'him'] Exit G 99 state.] State F2 100 Consul-ship]  
 Consulship Q

- R v f. He was a follower of GERMANICVS,  
 And still is an obseruer of his wife,  
 105 And children, though they be declin'd in grace ;  
 A daily visitant, keepes them companie  
 In priuate, and in publique ; and is noted  
 To be the only client, of the house :  
 Pray I o v e, he will be free to LATIARIS.  
 110 O P s. H'is alli'd to him, and doth trust him well.  
 R v f. And he'll requite his trust ? O P s. To doe an  
 office  
 So gratefull to the state, I know no man  
 But would straine neerer bands, then kindred— R v f. List,  
 I heare them come. O P s. Shift to our holes, with silence.

LATIARIS, SABINVS.

- 115 I T is a noble constancie you shew  
 I To this afflicted house : that not like others,  
 (The friends of season) you doe follow fortune,  
 And in the winter of their fate, forsake  
 The place, whose glories warm'd you. You are iust,  
 120 And worthy such a princely patrones loue,  
 As was the worlds-renown'd GERMANICVS .  
 Whose ample merit when I call to thought,  
 And see his wife and issue, objects made  
 To so much enuie, iealousie, and hate ;  
 125 It makes me ready to accuse the gods  
 Of negligence, as men of tyrannie.  
 S A B. They must be patient, so must we. L A T. O  
 I o v e.  
 What will become of vs, or of the times,  
 When, to be high, or noble, are made crimes ?  
 130 When land, and treasure are most dangerous faults ?

iv 110 H'is] He' is Q 113 then] than F2 kindred—] kindred.  
 Q After 114 They retire | Re-enter Latiaris with Sabinus G con-  
 tinuing the scene 115 It] LAT It Q 120 loue,] loue Q  
 121 worlds-renown'd] worlds renown'd F2 123 wife] Wife, Q wife,  
 F2 issue,] Issue Q 124 hate, corr F1, F2 : hate, Q, F1 originally  
 127 I o v e ] IOVE, F2

S A B. Nay, when our table, yea our bed assaults  
 Our peace, and safetie ? when our writings are,  
 By any enuious instruments (that dare  
 Apply them to the guiltie) made to speake  
 What they will haue, to fit their tyrannous wreake ? 135  
 When ignorance is scarcely innocence :  
 And knowledge made a capitall offence ?  
 When not so much, but the bare emptie shade  
 Of libertie, is reft vs ? and we made,  
 The prey to greedie vultures, and vile spies, 140  
 That first, transfixe vs with their murdering eyes ?

L A T. Me thinks, the *Genius* of the *Romane* race  
 Should not be so extinct, but that bright flame  
 Of libertie might be reuiu'd againe,  
 (Which no good man but with his life, should lose) 145  
 And we not sit like spent, and patient fooles,  
 Still puffing in the darke, at one poore coale,  
 Held on by hope, till the last sparke is out.  
 The cause is publique, and the honour, name,  
 The immortalitie of euery soule 150  
 That is not bastard, or a slaue in *Rome*,  
 Therein concern'd : Whereto, if men would change  
 The weari'd arme, and for the waightie shield  
 So long sustain'd, employ the ready sword,  
 We might haue some assurance of our vowes. 155  
 This asses fortitude doth tyre vs all.  
 It must be actiue valour must redeeme  
 Our losse, or none. The rocke, and our hard steele  
 Should meete, t'enforce those glorious fires againe,  
 Whose splendor cheer'd the world, and heat gaue life 160  
 No lesse then doth the sunne's. S A B. 'Twere better stay,  
 In lasting darkenesse, and despaire of day.

iv. 131 Nay,] Nay Q 132 peace,] peace Fa 140 vultures  
 corr. Fr, Fa. Vultures Q, Fr originally 141 first, corr. Fr, Fa :  
 first Q, Fr originally 145 lose] loose Q 146 fooles, corr.  
 Fr, Fa: fooles Fr originally Fooles Q 149 honour] Honor Q 154  
 ready corr. Fr, Fa: facile Q, Fr originally 155 some] soone Fa  
 160 splendor] splendour Q 161 then] than Fa (so 164, 166) stay,]  
 stay Fa

- No ill should force the subiect vndertake  
 Against the soueraigne, more then hell should make  
 165 The gods doe wrong. A good man should, and must  
 . Sit rather downe with losse, then rise vniust.  
 Though, when the *Romanes* first did yeeld themselues  
 To one mans power, they did not meane their liues,  
 Their fortunes, and their liberties, should be  
 170 His absolute spoile, as purchas'd by the sword.  
 L A T. Why we are worse, if to be slaues, and bond  
 To C A E S A R S slaue, be such, the proud S E I A N V S !  
 He that is all, do's all, gues C A E S A R leaue  
 To hide his vlcereous, and anointed face,  
 175 With his bald crowne at *Rhodes*, while he here stalkes  
 Vpon the heads of *Romanes*, and their Princes,  
 Familiarly to empire. S A B. Now you touch  
 A point indeed, whercin he shewes his arte,  
 As well as power. L A T. And villany in both.  
 180 Doe you obserue where L I V I A lodges ? How  
 D R V S V S came dead ? What men haue beene cut off ?  
 S A B. Yes, those are things remou'd . I neerer look't,  
 Into his later practice, where he stands  
 Declar'd a master in his mysterie.  
 185 First, ere T I B E R I V S went, he wrought his feare  
 To thinke that A G R I P P I N A sought his death.  
 Then put those doubts in her ; sent her oft word,  
 Vnder the show of friendship, to beware  
 Of C A E S A R , for he laid to poyson her .  
 190 Draue them to frownes, to mutuall iealousies,  
 Which, now, in visible hatred are burst out.  
 Since, he hath had his hyred instruments  
 To worke on N E R O , and to heaue him vp ;  
 To tell him C A E S A R ' s old ; that all the people,

iv. 163-6 *Gnomic pointing in Q* " No . . . " Against . . . " The . . .  
 " Sit . . . 164 soueraigne, *corr. FI, Fa* Soueraigne, Q soueraigne;  
*FI originally* 172 SEIANVS ! *corr. FI* Seianus ? Q SEIANVS ? *FI*  
*originally* SEIANVS ! *Fa* 173 is all] is All Q 177 empire *corr.*  
*FI, Fa* Empire Q Empire *FI originally* 181 beene] ban Q 182  
 remou'd] remou'd Q neerer] never *Fa* 185 feare] feare, Q 193  
 NERO,] NERO ; *Fa* 194 that *corr FI, Fa* . That Q, *FI originally*

Yea, all the armie haue their eyes on him ; 195  
 That both doe long to haue him vndertake  
 Something of worth, to giue the world a hope ;  
 Bids him to court their grace : The easie youth,  
 Perhaps, giues eare, which straight he writes to C A E S A R ;  
 And with this comment ; See yond' dangerous boy ; 200  
 Note but the practice of the mother, there ;  
 Shee's tying him, for purposes at hand,  
 With men of sword. Here's C A E S A R put in fright  
 'Gainst sonne, and mother. Yet, he leaues not thus.  
 The second brother D R V S V S (a fierce nature, 205  
 And fitter for his snares, because ambitious,  
 And full of enuie) him he clasp's, and hugs,  
 Poysons with praise, tells him what hearts he weares,  
 How bright he stands in popular expectance ;  
 That Rome doth suffer with him, in the wrong 210  
 His mother does him, by preferring N E R O :  
 Thus sets he them asunder, each 'gainst other,  
 Proiects the course, that serues him to condemne,  
 Keeps in opinion of a friend to all,  
 And all driues on to ruine. L A T. C A E S A R sleepes, 215  
 And nods at this ? S A B. Would he might euer sleepe,  
 Bogg'd in his filthy lusts. O P S Treason to C A E S A R.

R v f. Lay hands vpon the traytor, L A T I A R I S,  
 Or take the name thy selfe. L A T. I am for C A E S A R.

S A B. Am I then catch'd ? R v f. How thinke you, sir ? 220  
 you are.

S A B. Spies of this head ! so white ! so full of yeeres !  
 Well, my most reuerend monsters, you may liue  
 To see your selues thus snar'd. O P S Away with him.

L A T. Hale him away. R v f. To be a spie for traytors,  
 Is honorable vigilance. S A B. You doe well, 225

iv. 198 grace : The *corr* F<sub>1</sub>, F<sub>2</sub> grace, the Q grace the F<sub>1</sub>  
*originally* 199 Perhaps,] Perhaps Q straight] strait F<sub>2</sub> 200  
 comment ; *corr*. F<sub>1</sub>. comment Q. F<sub>1</sub> *originally* yond'] yon'd Q,  
 F<sub>1</sub>. yond F<sub>2</sub> 201 there, *corr* F<sub>1</sub>, F<sub>2</sub> there, Q, F<sub>1</sub> *originally*  
 204 thus.] thus, Q 205 DRVSVS] Drusus, F<sub>2</sub> 217 After 'lusts'  
*Opus and Rufus rush in.* G 220 catch'd] catcht F<sub>2</sub> you, sir ?]  
 you sir ? Q 225 honorable] honourable F<sub>2</sub>



My most officious instruments of state ;

Men of all vses : Drag me hence, away.

The yeere is well begun, and I fall fit,

To be an offering to SEIANVS. Goe.

230 O P S. Couer him with his garments, hide his face.

S A B. It shall not need. Forbeare your rude assault,

The fault's not shamefull villanie makes a fault.

#### MACRO, CALIGVLA.

Sir, but obserue how thicke your dangers meete

In his cleare drifts ! Your mother, and your brothers,

235 Now cited to the *Senate* ! Their friend, GALLVS,

Feasted to day by CAESAR, since committed !

SABINVS, here we met, hurried to fetters !

The *Senators* all strooke with feare, and silence,

Saue those, whose hopes depend not on good meanes,

240 But force their priuate prey, from publique spoile !

And you must know, if here you stay, your state

Is sure to be the subiect of his hate,

As now the obiect. CAL. What would you aduise  
me ?

M A C. To goe for *Capreae* presently : and there

245 Giue vp your selfe, entirely, to your vncl.

Tell CAESAR (since your mother is acus'd

To flie for succours to AVGVSTVS statue,

And to the armie, with your brethren) you

Haue rather chose, to place your aides in him,

250 Then liue suspected ; or in hourelly feare

To be thrust out, by bold SEIANV's plots :

Which, you shall confidently vrge, to be

iv. 232 The] " The Q shamefull] shamefull. F2 After 232  
Exeunt G Before 233 MACRO, CALIGVLA] SCENE IV | The  
Street before Agrippina's House | Enter Macro and Caligula. G 233  
Sir] MAC. Sir Q 234 drifts ]] drifts. Q mother. . brothers.]  
Mother . . Brothers Q 235 Senate ]] Senate Q friend.] Friend Q  
236 committed ]] committed Q 237 SABINVS.] Sabinus Q fetters ]]  
Fetters Q 240 spoile ]] spoile. Q 248 brethren) you] Brethren.)  
You Q 250 Then] Than F2

Most full of perill to the state, and C A E S A R,  
 As being laid to his peculiar ends,  
 And not to be let run, with common safety. 255  
 All which (vpon the second) I'll make plaine,  
 So both shall loue, and trust with C A E S A R gaine.  
 C A L. Away then, let's prepare vs for our iourney.

ARRVNTIVS.

S Still, do'st thou suffer heau'n ? will no flame,  
 No heate of sinne make thy iust wrath to boile 260  
 In thy distemp' red bosome, and ore-flow  
 The pitchy blazes of impietie,  
 Kindled beneath thy throne ? Still canst thou sleepe,  
 Patient, while vice doth make an antique face  
 At thy drad power, and blow dust, and smoke 265  
 Into thy nostrils ? I o v e, will nothing wake thee ?  
 Must vile S E I A N v s pull thee by the beard,  
 Ere thou wilt open thy black-lidded eye,  
 And looke him dead ? Well ! Snore on, dreaming gods :  
 And let this last of that proud Giant-race, 270  
 Heaue mountayne vpon mountayne, 'gainst your state—  
 Be good vnto me, fortune, and you powers,  
 Whom I, expostulating, haue profan'd ;  
 I see (what's equall with a prodigie)  
 A great, a noble *Romane*, and an honest, 275  
 Liue an old man ! O, M A R C V S L E P I D V S,  
 When is our turne to bleed ? Thy selfe, and I  
 (Without our boast) are a'most all the few  
 Left, to be honest, in these impious times.

iv. 255 common] commune Q 257 So both] And Both Q  
 loue,] love F2 After 258 Exeunt G Before 259 ARRVNTIVS]  
 SCENE v | Another Part of the Street | Enter Arruntius G 259  
 Still] ARR Still Q 260 sinne] sinne, F2 261 ore-flow] o're  
 flow F2 262 impietie,] impietie Q 265 drad] drad Q dread F2  
 power,] power ; Q 269 Well I] Well Q 274 equall] æquall Q  
 276 man I] man Q Enter Lepidus G, continuing the scene

## LEPIDVS, ARRVNTIVS.

280 **W**Hat we are left to be, we will be, LVCIVS,  
 Though tyrannie did stare, as wide as death,  
 To fright vs from it. ARR. 'T hath so, on SABINVS.

LEP. I saw him now drawne from the *Gemonies*,  
 And (what increas'd the direnesse of the fact)  
 285 His faithfull dogge (vpbraiding all vs *Romanes*)  
 Neuer forsooke the corp's, but, seeing it throwne  
 Into the streame, leap'd in, and drown'd with it.

ARR. O act! to be enui'd him, of vs men!  
 We are the next, the hooke layes hold on, MARCVS:  
 290 What are thy artes (good patriot, teach them me)  
 That haue preseru'd thy haire, to this white die,  
 And kept so reuerend, and so deare a head,  
 Safe, on his comely shoulders? LEP. Arts, ARRVN-  
 TIVS?

None, but the plaine, and passiue fortitude,  
 295 To suffer, and be silent; neuer stretch  
 These armes, against the torrent; lue at home,  
 With my owne thoughts, and innocence about me,  
 Not tempting the wolves iawes: these are my artes.

ARR. I would begin to studie 'hem, if I thought  
 300 They would secure me. May I pray to LOVE,  
 In secret, and be safe? I, or aloud?  
 With open wishes? so I doe not mention  
 TIBERIVS, or SEIANVS? yes, I must,  
 If I speake out. 'Tis hard, that. May I thinke,  
 305 And not be rackt? What danger is't to dreame?  
 Talke in ones sleepe? or cough? who knowes the law?  
 May'I shake my head, without a comment? say  
 It raines, or it holds vp, and not be throwne  
 Vpon the *Gemonies*? These now are things,

iv. 280 What] LEF What Q 281 death,] death F2 282 SABINVS.]  
 Sabinus! Q 288 men! corr Fr, F2. men. Q, F1 originally 289  
 next,] next Q 290 patriot corr. Fr, F2 Patriot Q: patriot F1  
 originally. 303 yes,] yes F2 305 danger] daunger Q 307  
 May'I Q. May I Ff

Whereon mens fortune, yea their fate depends. 310  
 Nothing hath priuiledge 'gainst the violent eare.  
 No place, no day, no houre (we see) is free  
 (Not our religious, and most sacred times)  
 From some one kind of crueltie : all matter,  
 Nay all occasion pleaseth. Mad-mens rage, 315  
 The idlenesse of drunkards, womens nothing,  
 Iesters simplicity, all, all is good  
 That can be catch'd at. Nor is now th'euent  
 Of any person, or for any crime,  
 To be expected ; for, 'tis alwayes one : 320  
 Death, with some little difference of place,  
 Or time—what's this ? Prince NERO ? guarded ?

L A C O, N E R O, L E P I D V S, A R R V N T I V S.

O N, *Lictors*, keepe your way : My lords, forbear.  
 On paine of C A E S A R S wrath, no man attempt  
 Speech with the prisoner N E R Noble friends, be safe : 325  
 To loose your selues for wordes, were as vaine hazard,  
 As vnto me small comfort : Fare you well.  
 Would all *Rome's* sufferings in my fate did dwell.

L A C. *Lictors*, away. L E P. Where goes he, L A C O ?

L A C. Sir,

H'is banish'd into *Pontia*, by the *Senate*. 330

A R R. Do 'I see ? and heare ? and feele ? May I trust  
 sense ?

Or doth my phant'sie forme it ? L E P. Where's his brother ?

L A C. D R V S V S is prisoner in the palace. A R R. Ha ?  
 I smell it now : 'tis ranke. Where's A G R I P P I N A ?

L A C. The princesse is confin'd, to *Pandataria*. 335

A R R. Bolts, V U L C A N ; bolts, for I O V E ! P H O E B V S  
 thy bow ;

iv. 312 houre] Hower Q 316 drunkards] Dronkerds Q 318  
 catch'd] catch't F<sub>2</sub> Before 323 LACO, .. ARRVTIVS] Enter Laco  
 and Nero with guards G, continuing the scene 323 On] LAC. On Q  
 326 loose] lose F<sub>2</sub> 327 Fare] Fare, Q 329 Sir,] Sir Q 330  
 H's] He's F<sub>2</sub> 335 confin'd,] confin'd F<sub>2</sub> 336 love !] Ioue. Q

Sterne M A R S, thy sword ; and *blue-ey'd Maid*, thy speare ;  
 Thy club, A L C I D E S : all the armorie  
 Of heauen is too little !—Ha ? to guard

- 340 The gods, I meant. Fine, rare dispatch ! This same  
 Was swiftly borne ! confin'd ? imprison'd ? banish'd ?  
 Most tripartite ! The cause, sir ? L A C. Treason. A R R. O ?  
 The complement of all accusings ? that  
 Will hit, when all else failes. L E P. This turne is strange !

- 345 But yesterday, the people would not heare  
 Farre lesse obiected, but cry'd, C A E S A R S letters  
 Were false, and forg'd ; that all these plots were malice :  
 And that the ruine of the Princes house  
 Was practis'd 'gainst his knowledge. Where are now

- 350 Their voyces ? now, that they behold his heires  
 Lock'd vp, disgrac'd, led into exile ? A R R. Hush'd.  
 Drown'd in their bellies. Wild S E I A N V S breath  
 Hath, like a whirle-wind, scatter'd that poore dust,  
 With this rude blast. Wee'll talke no treason, sir,

*He turnes  
 to Laco,  
 and the  
 rest*

If that be it you stand for ? Fare you well  
 We haue no need of horse-leeches Good spie,  
 Now you are spi'd, be gone. L E P. I feare, you wrong him.  
 He has the voyce to be an honest *Romane*.

- A R R. And trusted to this office ? L E P I D V S,  
 360 I'd sooner trust *Greeke-S I N O N*, then a man  
 Our state employes. Hee's gone : and being gone,  
 I dare tell you (whom I dare better trust)  
 That our night-ey'd T I B E R I V S doth not see  
 His minions drifts ; or, if he doe, h'is not  
 365 So errant subtill, as we fooles doe take him .  
 To breed a mungrell vp, in his owne house,  
 With his owne bloud, and (if the good gods please)  
 At his owne throte, flesh him, to take a leape.  
 I doe not beg it, heau'n : but, if the fates

iv. 337 *blue-*] *blew-* Q *Maid,*] *Maid* Q 339 little !—] little— Q  
 342 O ?] O ! F<sub>2</sub> 346 cry'd,] cry'd F<sub>2</sub> 354–6 *Stage-dir. not in Q*  
 357 After 'gone' *Exeunt Laco, Nero, and guards.* G 360 then] than  
 F<sub>2</sub> 364 h'is] he's F<sub>2</sub> 366 mungrell] Mungrill Q 368 throte]  
 Throate Q flesh] traine Q

Grant it these eyes, they must not winke. L E P. They 370  
must

Not see it, L V C I V S. A R R. Who should let 'hem? L E P.  
Zeale,

And dutie; with the thought, he is our Prince.

A R R. He is our monster: forfeited to vice

So far, as no rack'd vertue can redeeme him.

His lothed person fouler then all crimes: 375

An Emp'rour, only in his lusts. Retir'd

(From all regard of his owne fame, or *Rome's*)

Into an obscure Iland; where he liues

(Acting his *tragedies* with a *comick* face)

Amid'st his rout of *Chaldee's*. spending houres, 380

Dayes, weekes, and months, in the vnkind abuse

Of graue *astrologie*, to the bane of men,

Casting the scope of mens natiuities,

And hauing found ought worthy in their fortune,

Kill, or precipitate them in the sea, 385

And boast, he can mocke fate Nay, muse not: these

Are farre from ends of euill, scarce degrees.

He hath his slaughter-house, at *Capreae*;

Where he doth studie murder, as an arte:

And they are dearest in his grace, that can 390

Deuise the deepest tortures Thither, too,

He hath his boyes, and beauteous girles tane vp,

Out of our noblest houses, the best form'd,

Best nurtur'd, and most modest: what's their good

Serues to prouoke his bad Some are allur'd, 395

Some threatned; others (by their friends detain'd)

Are rauish'd hence, like captiues, and, in sight

Of their most griued parents, dealt away

Vnto his *spintries*, *sellaries*, and slaues,

Masters of strange, and new-commented lusts, 400

For which wise nature hath not left a name.

iv. 374 rack'd] rackt F<sub>2</sub> 375 then] than F<sub>2</sub> 377 regard]  
regard Q 381 months] moneths F<sub>2</sub> 391 Thither] Thether Q  
392 tane] tane Q 394 good] good, F<sub>2</sub> 395 allur'd.] allur'd Q  
396 others] Others, Q 400 strange.] strange F<sub>2</sub>

To this (what most strikes vs, and bleeding *Rome*,)

He is, with all his craft, become the ward

To his owne vassall, a stale *catamite* :

405 Whom he (vpon our low, and suffering necks)

Hath rais'd, from excrement, to side the gods,

And haue his proper sacrifice in *Rome*

Which I o v e beholds, and yet will sooner riue

A senslesse oke with thunder, then his trunck.

L A C O, P O M P O N I V S, M I N V T I V S,

To them.

T E R E N T I V S

410 T Hese letters make men doubtfull what t'expect,  
Whether his coming, or his death. P o m. Troth,  
both :

And which comes soonest, thanke the gods for. (A r r. List,  
Their talke is C A E S A R, I would heare all voyces.)

M I N. One day, hee's well ; and will returne to *Rome* :

415 The next day, sicke ; and knowes not when to hope it.

L A C. True, and to day, one of S E I A N V S friends

Honour'd by speciall writ ; and on the morrow

Another punish'd— P o m. By more speciall writ.

M I N. This man receues his praises of S E I A N V S,

420 A second, but slight mention : a third, none :

A fourth, rebukes. And thus he leaues the *Senate*

Diuided, and suspended, all vncertayne

L A C. These forked tricks, I vnderstand 'hem not,

Would he would tell vs whom he loues, or hates,

425 That we might follow, without feare, or doubt.

(A r r. Good H E L I O T R O P E ! Is this your honest  
man ?

Let him be yours so still. He is my knaue.)

iv. 409 then] than F<sub>2</sub> Before 410 T E R E N T I V S] &c Q To  
them. not in Q. Re-enter Laco, with Pomponius and Minutus. G,  
continuing the scene 410 These] LAC. These Q 413 CAESAR.]  
CAESAR, F<sub>2</sub> After 413 Arrunt and Lepidus stand aside G 414  
MIN corr F<sub>1</sub>, F<sub>2</sub> MAR Q, F<sub>1</sub> originally (cf. 498). 416 SEIANVS]  
SEJANVS's F<sub>2</sub> 417 Honour'd] Honour'd Q: Honour'd F<sub>2</sub> 419  
SEIANVS,] SEJANUS; F<sub>2</sub> 420 mention.] mention; F<sub>2</sub> third,]  
thurd Q 421 fourth,] fourth Q

P O M. I cannot tell, S E I A N V S still goes on,  
 And mounts, we see : New statues are aduanc'd,  
 Fresh leaues of titles, large inscriptions read, 430  
 His fortune sworne by, himselfe new gone out  
 C A E S A R S colleague, in the fifth *Consulship*,  
 More altars smoke to him, then all the gods :  
 What would wee more? (A R R. That the deare smoke  
 would choke him,  
 That would I more. L E P. Peace, good A R R V N T I V S.) 435  
 L A C. But there are letters come (they say) eu'n now,  
 Which doe forbid that last. M I N. Doe you heare so?  
 L A C. Yes.  
 P O M. By P O L L V X, that's the worst. (A R R. By  
 H E R C V L E S, best.)  
 M I N. I did not like the signe, when R E G V L V S,  
 (Whom all we know no friend vnto S E I A N V S) 440  
 Did, by T I B E R I V S so precise command,  
 Succeed a fellow in the *Consulship* :  
 It boded somewhat. P O M. Not a mote. His partner,  
 F V L C I N I V S T R I O, is his owne, and sure.  
 Here comes T E R E N T I V S. He can giue vs more 445  
 L E P. I'll ne're beleue, but C A E S A R hath some sent  
 Of bold S E I A N V S footing These crosse points  
 Of varying letters, and opposing *Consuls*,  
 Mingling his honours, and his punishments,  
 Fayning now ill, now well, raysing S E I A N V S, 450  
 And then depressing him, (as now of late  
 In all reports we haue it) cannot be  
 Emptie of practice : 'Tis T I B E R I V S arte.

iv. 429 mounts,] mounts Q 432 CAESARS] CAESAR'S Fa  
*Consulship*] *Consul-ship* F2 (so 442) 433 then] than Fa 434  
 him, corr. F1, Fa him Q. him) F1 originally 435 That . .  
 A R R V N T I V S ) not in Q or in F1 originally inserted in F1 as a correction  
 437 M I N. Doe] M I N, do Q 438 P O L L V X corr. F1, Fa Castor, Q:  
 C A S T O R F1 originally H E R C V L E S corr F1, Fa Pollux Q P O L L V X  
 F1 originally best )] best) Fa 440 friend] freind Q 444 owne,  
 corr. F1, Fa : owne, Q, F1 originally 445 After 'T E R E N T I V S '  
 Enter Terentius. G 446 sent] scent F3 Stage-dir corr F1, Fa: not  
 in Q or in F1 originally 449 Mingling corr. F1, Fa Mixing Q,  
 F1 originally honours] honors Q 453 T I B E R I V S] T I B E R I U S Fa



- For (hauing found his fauorite growne too great,  
 455 And, with his greatnesse, strong ; that all the souldiers  
 Are, with their leaders, made at his deuotion ;  
 That almost all the *Senate* are his creatures,  
 Or hold on him their maine dependances,  
 Either for benefit, or hope, or feare ;  
 460 And that himselfe hath lost much of his owne,  
 By parting vnto him ; and by th'increase  
 Of his ranke lusts, and rages, quite disarm'd  
 Himselfe of loue, or other publike meanes,  
 To dare an open contestation)  
 465 His subtilty hath chose this doubling line,  
 To hold him euen in not so to feare him,  
 As wholly put him out, and yet giue checke  
 Vnto his farder boldnesse. In meane time,  
 By his employments, makes him odious  
 470 Vnto the staggering rout, whose aide (in fine)  
 He hopes to vse, as sure, who (when they sway)  
 Beare downe, ore-turne all obiects in their way.  
 ARR. You may be a LINC EVS, LEPI DV S : yet, I  
 See no such cause, but that a politique tyranne  
 475 (Who can so well disguise it) should haue tane  
 A neerer way : fain'd honest, and come home  
 To cut his throte, by law. LE P. I, but his feare  
 Would ne're be masqu'd, all-be his vices were.  
 P O M. His lordship then is still in grace ? TE R. Assure  
 you,  
 480 Neuer in more, either of grace, or power.  
 P O M. The gods are wise, and iust. (ARR. The fiends  
 they are.  
 To suffer thee belie 'hem ?) TE R. I haue here  
 His last, and present letters, where he writes him

iv 455 strong ; *corr* F<sub>1</sub>, F<sub>2</sub> strong, Q, F<sub>1</sub> originally 456  
 deuotion, *corr* F<sub>1</sub>, F<sub>2</sub> deuotion, Q, F<sub>1</sub> originally 461 him ;]  
 him, Q 463 other] rather F<sub>2</sub> 466 in ' in, Q 467 out,]  
 out Q 468 farder] farther F<sub>3</sub> 472 ore-turne] oreturne Q  
 473 yet,] yet Q 477-8 Gnostic pointing in Q: " but . . . " Would . . .  
 481 (ARR.] ARR. Q fiends] fiends, F<sub>2</sub> 482 'hem ?)] 'hem ? Q

The *Partner of his cares*, and his SEIANVS—

L A C. But is that true, it is prohibited, 485

To sacrifice vnto him? T E R. Some such thing

C A E S A R makes scruple of, but forbids it not ;

No more then to himselfe : sayes, he could wish

It were forborne to all. L A C. Is it no other ?

T E R. No other, on my trust. For your more surety, 490

Here is that letter too. (A R R. How easily,

Doe wretched men beleeeue, what they would haue !

Lookes this like plot ? L E P. Noble A R R V N T I V S, stay.)

L A C. He names him here without his titles. (L E P.

Note.

A R R. Yes, and come of your notable foole. I will.) 495

L A C. No other, then SEIANVS. P O M. That's but  
haste

In him that writes. Here he giues large amends.

M I N. And with his owne hand written? P O M. Yes.

L A C. Indeed ?

T E R. Beleeeue it, gentlemen, SEIANVS brest  
Neuer receiu'd more full contentments in, 500

Then at this present. P O M. Takes he well th'escape

Of young CALIGVLA, with MACRO? T E R. Faith,

At the first aire, it somewhat troubled him.

(L E P. Obserue you? A R R. Nothing. Riddles. Till  
I see

SEIANVS strooke, no sound thereof strikes me ) 505

P O M. I like it not. I muse h'would not attempt  
Somewhat against him in the *Consul*-ship,  
Seeing the people 'ginne to fauour him.

T E R. He doth repent it, now ; but h'has employ'd  
P A G O N I A N V S after him : and he holds 510  
That correspondence, there, with all that are

iv 485 it is F2 it 'tis Q, F1 query, if 'tis 488 then] than F2  
(so 496) 490 surety.] surety Q 492 beleeeue.] beleeeue Q 493  
plot] a plot F2 495 of] off F2 496 haste] hast Q 498  
MIN W D Briggs MAR Q, Ff (cf 414) 499 SEIANVS] SEIANVS's  
F2 501 Then] Than F2 503 troubled] mated Q 505  
strooke] struck F2 After 505 Exeunt Arrun and Lepidus G 507  
Consul-ship.] Consulship Q Consul-ship F2

Neere about C A E S A R, as no thought can passe  
Without his knowledge, thence, in act to front him.

P O M. I gratulate the newes. L A C. But, how comes  
M A C R O

515 So' in trust, and fauour, with C A L I G V L A ?

P O M. O sir, he ha's a wife ; and the young Prince  
An appetite : he can looke vp, and spie  
Flies in the rooffe, when there are fleas i' bed ;  
And hath a learned nose to'assure his sleepes.

520 Who, to be fauour'd of the rising sunne,  
Would not lend little of his waning moone ?

'Tis the saf'st ambition. Noble T E R E N T I V S.

T E R The night growes fast vpon vs. At your seruice.

C H O R V S—*Of Musicians.*

### *Act v.*

S E I A N V S.

S Well, swell, my ioyes : and faint not to declare  
Your selues, as ample, as your causes are.

I did not liue, till now ; this my first hower :  
Wherein I see my thoughts reach'd by my power.

5 But this, and gripe my wishes. Great, and high,  
The world knowes only two, that's *Rome*, and I.  
My rooffe receiues me not ; 'tis aire I tread :  
And, at each step, I feele my' aduanced head  
Knocke out a starre in heau'n ! Rear'd to this height,

10 All my desires seeme modest, poore and sleight,  
That did before sound impudent : 'Tis place,  
Not bloud, discernes the noble, and the base.

iv 514 LAC F2 MAC. Q, F1. MIN MS corr in Dyce copy, no. 1  
But,] But Q 515 So' in Q. So in Ff 520 fauour'd] fauor'd Q  
522 'Tis] It is G saf'st] safest F2 After 523 *Exeunt. G*  
CHORVS—*Of Musicians*] Mv CHORVS Q v. Act v. ] SEIANVS ] ACTVS  
QVINTVS ] SEIANUS. Q ACT V. SCENE I. ] An Apartment in Sejanus's  
House ] Enter Sejanus G Act] Act F2 1 Swell] SRI Swell Q  
2 selues, . ample,] selues . ample F2 3 hower'] houre, Q 4  
power.] power: Q 9 heau'n] Heau'n Q height,] height. Q  
11, 12 *Gnomic pointing in Q*—'Tis .. "Not...

Is there not something more, then to be C A E S A R ?  
 Must we rest there ? It yrkes, t' haue come so far,  
 To be so neere a stay. C A L I G V L A, 15  
 Would thou stood'st stiffe, and many, in our way.  
 Windes lose their strength, when they doe emptie flie,  
 Vn-met of woods or buildings ; great fires die,  
 That want their matter to with-stand them ; so,  
 It is our griefe, and will be' our losse, to know 20  
 Our power shall want opposites ; vnlesse  
 The gods, by mixing in the cause, would blesse  
 Our fortune with their conquest. That were worth  
 S E I A N V S strife : durst fates but bring it forth.

TERENTIVS, SEIANVS

Safety, to great S E I A N V S. S E I. Now, T E R E N - 25  
 T I V S ?

T E R. Heares not my lord the wonder ? S E I. Speake  
 it, no.

T E R. I meete it violent in the peoples mouthes,  
 Who runne, in routs, to P O M P E Y 's theatre,  
 To view your statue . which, they say, sends forth  
 A smoke, as from a fornace, black, and dreadfull. 30

S E I. Some traytor hath put fire in : (you, goe see.)  
 And let the head be taken off, to looke  
 What 'tis—Some slaue hath practis'd an imposture,  
 To stirre the people. How now ? why returne you ?

v. 13 then] than *F2* 16 many.] many *Q* 17 lose] loose *Q*  
 18 die, *F2* dye *Q*. die *F1* 19 with-stand] withstand *Q*, *F2* 20  
*corr F1, F2* So *Q*, *F1* originally 20 be' our] be our *F2* 23  
 fortune] fortune, *F2* 24 strife. *corr. F1, F2* strife, *Q*, *F1* originally  
 Before 25 TERENTIVS, SEIANVS ] Enter Terentius G, continuing the  
 scene 25 Safety] TER Safety *Q* 26 no *corr F1, F2* No *Q*,  
*F1* originally 30 fornace *corr F1* furnace *Q*, *F1* originally, *F2*  
 31 (you, goe see) *corr F1, F2* you, goe see *Q*, *F1* originally 33  
 'tis— *corr. F1, F2* : 'tis *Q*, *F1* originally After 'tis ] Exit  
 Terentius. G, continuing the scene: Exit Servus W D Brigg  
 imposture, *corr F1, F2* imposture *Q*, *F1* originally

To them.

SATRIVS, NATTA.

- 35 **T**He head, my lord, already is tane off,  
 I saw it : and, at op'ning, there leap't out  
 A great, and monstrous serpent ! SEI. Monstrous ! why ?  
 Had it a beard ? and hornes ? no heart ? a tongue  
 Forked as flatterie ? look'd it of the hue,  
 40 To such as liue in great mens bosomes ? was  
 The spirit of it MACRO'S ? NAT. May it please  
 The most diuine SEIANVS, in my dayes,  
 (And by his sacred fortune, I affirme it)  
 I haue not seene a more extended, gowne,  
 45 Foule, spotted, venomous, vgly—SEI. O, the fates !  
 What a wild muster's here of attributes,  
 T'expresse a worrne, a snake ? TER. But how that  
 should  
 Come there, my lord ! SEI. What ! and you too, TERE-  
 TIVS ?  
 I thinke you meane to make't a prodigie  
 50 In your reporting ? TER. Can the wise SEIANVS  
 Thinke heau'n hath meant it lesse ? SEI. O, supersti-  
 tion !  
 Why, then the falling of our bed, that brake  
 This morning, burd'ned with the populous weight  
 Of our expecting clients, to salute vs ;  
 55 Or running of the cat, betwixt our legs,  
 As we set forth vnto the *capitol*,  
 Were prodigies. TER. I thinke them ominous !  
 And, would they had not hap'ned. As, to day,  
 The fate of some your seruants ! who, declining

v. Before 35 To them corr F1, F2 not in Q or in F1 originally. Re-  
 enter Terentius, with Satrius and Natta. G. re-enter Servus, with Satrius,  
 and Natta. W. D. Briggs 35 The] SAT The Q tane] tane Q  
 37 serpent ! corr F1, F2 Serpent. Q serpent F1 originally 39  
 look'd] look't F2 41 NAT] NAT, Q 45 vgly] ougly Q O.]  
 O Q (so 51) 48 lord ! corr F1, F2 Lord ? Q lord ? F1 originally  
 50 TER] TFR Q 54 clients,] Clients Q vs ; corr F1, F2. vs,  
 Q, F1 originally 57 prodigies] Prodiges, Q ominous ! corr  
 F1, F2 ominous. Q : ominous F1 originally 58 to] too F2 59  
 seruants !] seruants ; Q declining] diuerting Q

Their way, not able, for the throng, to follow, 60  
 Slip't downe the *Gemonies*, and brake their necks !  
 Besides, in taking your last augurie,  
 No prosperous bird appear'd, but croking rauens  
 Flag'd vp and downe : and from the sacrifice  
 Flew to the prison, where they sate, all night, 65  
 Beating the aire with their obstreperous beakes !  
 I dare not counsell, but I could entreat  
 That great S E I A N V S would attempt the gods,  
 Once more, with sacrifice. S E I. What excellent fooles  
 Religion makes of men ? Beleeues T E R E N T I V S, 70  
 (If these were dangers, as I shame to thinke them)  
 The gods could change the certayne course of fate ?  
 Or, if they could, they would (now in a moment)  
 For a beeues fat, or lesse, be brib'd t' inuert  
 Those long decrees ? Then thinke the gods, like flies, 75  
 Are to be taken with the steame of flesh,  
 Or bloud, diffus'd about their altars : thinke  
 Their power as cheape, as I esteeme it small.  
 Of all the throng, that fill th' *Olympian* hall,  
 And (without pittie) lade poore A T L A S back, 80  
 I know not that one deity, but *Fortune* ;  
 To whom, I would throw vp, in begging smoke,  
 One grane of incense : or whose eare I'd buy  
 With thus much oyle. Her, I, indeed, adore ;  
 And keepe her gratefull image in my house, 85  
 Some-times belonging to a *Romane* king,  
 But, now call'd mine, as by the better stile :  
 To her, I care not, if (for satisfying  
 Your scrupulous phant'sies) I goe offer. Bid  
 Our priest prepare vs honny, milke, and poppy, 90  
 His masculine odours, and night-vestments : say,  
 Our rites are instant, which perform'd, you'll see  
 How vaine, and worthy laughter, your feares be.

v. 61 necks ] neckes Q      66 beakes ] beakes Q      71 dangers ]  
 daungers Q      74 beeues ] Bieues Q      84 Her, ] Her Q      86  
 Some-times ] Sometimes Q      *Romane*] Roman Fz      89 scrupulous]  
 scrupu'lous Q      After 93 *Exeunt* G

COTTA, POMPONIVS.

95 **P**OMPONIVS! whither in such speed? **POM.** I goe  
To giue my lord **SEIANVS** notice—— **COT.** What?  
**POM.** Of **MACRO** **COT.** Is he come? **POM.** Ent(e)r'd  
but now

The house of **REGVLVS.** **COT.** The opposite *Consul*?  
**POM.** Some halfe houre since. **COT.** And, by night too!  
stay, sir;  
I'll beare you companie. **POM.** Along, then——

MACRO, REGVLVS, LACO.

100 **T**IS **CAESARS** will, to haue a frequent *Senate.*  
And therefore must your edict lay deepe mulct  
On such, as shall be absent. **REG.** So it doth.  
Beare it my fellow *Consul* to adscribe.  
**MAC.** And tell him it must early be proclaim'd;  
105 The place, **APOLLO's** temple. **REG.** That's remembred.  
**MAC.** And at what houre. **REG.** Yes. **MAC.** You doe  
forget

To send one for the *Prouost* of the watch?

**REG.** I haue not · here he comes. **MAC.** **GRACINVS**  
**LACO,**

You are a friend most welcome · by, and by,  
110 I'll speake with you. (You must procure this list  
Of the *Pætorian* cohorts, with the names  
Of the *Centurions*, and their *Tribunes.* **REG.** I.)

**MAC.** I bring you letters, and a health from **CAESAR**——

**LAC.** Sir, both come well. **MAC.** (And heare you, with  
your note,

v. Before 94 COTTA, POMPONIVS ] SCENE II | Another Room in the  
same | Enter Cotta and Pomponius G 94 POMPONIVS! whither]  
Cot. Pomponius! whether Q 96 Of] of Q Enter'd] Entr'd Q, F1  
Entr'd F2 98 too! stay, sir,] too? stay Sr. Q 99 Along,]  
Along F2 After 99 Exeunt G Before 100 MACRO, . . LACO.]  
SCENE III. | A Room in Regulus's House | Enter Macro, Regulus, and  
Attendant G 100 Tis] MAC 'Tis Q 102 such.] such Q, F2  
doth] doth, Q 103 adscribe] ascribe Q 104 him] him, F2 105  
After 'temple' Exit Attendant G 106 houre] howre? Q, Ff 108  
After 'comes' Enter Laco G 109 You are] You're Q, Ff 114 Sir,]  
Sir Q MAC ] MAC Q note,] note Q

Which are the eminent men, and most of action.

115

R E G. That shall be done you too.) M A C. Most worthy

The Consul  
goes out.

L A C O,

C A E S A R salutes you. (*Consul* ' death, and furies !

Gone now ?) the argument will please you, sir.

(Hough ! R E G V L V S ? The anger of the gods

Follow his diligent legs, and ouer-take 'hem,

120

In likenesse of the gout.) O, good my lord,

Returns

We lackt you present ; I would pray you send

Another to F V L C I N I V S T R I O, straight,

To tell him, you will come, and speake with him :

(The matter wee'le deuise) to stay him, there,

125

While I, with L A C O, doe suruay the watch.

What are your strengths, G R A C I N V S ? L A C. Seuē *Goes out  
againe.*

cohorts

M A C. You see, what C A E S A R writes : and (—gone  
againē)

H'has sure a veine of *mercury* in his feet)

Knew you, what store of the *prætorian* souldiers

130

S E I A N V S holds, about him, for his guard ?

L A C. I cannot the iust number . but, I thinke,

Three *centuries*. M A C. Three ? good. L A C. At most,  
not foure.

M A C. And who be those *Centurions* ? L A C. That the  
*Consul*

Can best deliuer you. M A C (When h'is away :

135

Spight, on his nimble industrie.) G R A C I N V S,

You find what place you hold, there, in the trust

Of royall C A E S A R ? L A C. I, and I am——M A C. Sir,

The honours, there propos'd, are but beginnings

Of his great fauours. L A C. They are more—— M A C. 140

I heard him

When he did studie, what to adde—— L A C. My life,

v. 116, 121, 127 *Stage-dir not in Q* 117 After 'you' *Exit*  
*Regulus G* 120 his] your *Q* ouer-take] ouer'take *Q, F1* overtake *F2*  
121 *Stage-dir Returns*] *Returns F2 Re-enter Regulus G* After  
126 *Exit Regulus G* 127 Seuē] Seauen *Q* 131 him,] him *Q* 133  
*centuries*] *Centurions F3* 134 MAC] MAC, *Q* That] That, *F2* 135  
h'is] hee's *F2* 139 honours] Honors *Q*



- And all I hold—— M A C. You were his owne first choise ;  
Which doth confirme as much, as you can speake :  
And will (if we succeed) make more—— Your guardes  
145 Are seuen cohorts, you say ? L A C. Yes. M A C. Those we  
must  
Hold still in readinesse, and vndischarg'd.  
L A C. I vnderstand so much. But how it can——  
M A C. Be done without suspition, you'll object ?  
*Returns* R E G. What's that ? L A C. The keeping of the watch in  
armes,  
150 When morning comes. M A C. The *Senate* shall bemet, and set  
So early, in the temple, as all marke  
Of that will be auoided. R E G. If we need,  
We haue commission, to possesse the palace,  
Enlarge prince D R V S V S, and make him our chiefe.  
155 M A C. (That secret would haue burn't his reuerend mouth  
Had he not spit it out, now : ) by the gods,  
You carry things too——let me borrow' a man.  
Or two, to beare these——That of freeing D R V S V S,  
C A E S A R projected as the last, and vtmost ;  
160 Not else to be remembred. R E G. Here are seruants.  
M A C. These to A R R V N T I V S, these to L E P I D V S,  
This beare to C O T T A, this to L A T I A R I S.  
If they demand you' of me . say, I haue tane  
Fresh horse, and am departed. You (my lord)  
165 To your colleague, and be you sure, to hold him  
With long narration, of the new fresh fauours,  
Meant to S E I A N V S, his great patron ; I,  
With trusted L A C O, here, are for the guardes :  
Then, to diuide. For, night hath many eyes,  
170 Whereof, though most doe sleepe, yet some are spies.

v. 149 *Returns* corr *Fi* not in *Q* or in *Fi* originally *Returns*.  
*F2* *Re-enter Regulus* G 153 palace,] *Pallace* ; *Q* 154 chiefe,]  
Chiefe. *Q* 156 by corr. *Fi*, *F2* : By *Q*, *Fi* originally 160  
After 'seruants' *Enter Servants* G 161 *LEPIDVS*,] *LEPIDVS*. *F2*  
163 demand] demand *Q* me. corr. *Fi*, *F2* me, *Q*, *Fi* originally  
tane] tane *Q* 164 After 'departed' *Exeunt Servants* G 165 colleague,  
corr *Fi*, *F2* Colleague, *Q* colleague, *Fi* originally 169-70 *Gnomie*  
pointing in *Q* : " For . . . " Whereof . . . After 170 *Exeunt*. G

## PRÆCONES,

## FLAMEN, MINISTRI,

## SEIANVS, TERENTIVS, SATRIVS, &amp;C.

**B**E all profane farre hence ; *Flie, flie farre off :*  
*Be absent farre. Farre hence be all profane.*

FLA. We haue beene faultie, but repent vs now,  
 And bring pure hands, pure vestments, and pure minds.

MIN. Pure vessells. MIN. And pure offrings. MIN.  
*Garlands pure.*

FLA. Bestow your garlands : and (with reuerence) place  
 The veruyn on the altar. PRAE. *Fauour your tongues.*

FLA. Great mother FORTVNE, *Queene of humane state,*  
*Rectresse of action, Arbitresse of fate,*  
*To whom all sway, all power, all empire bowes,*  
*Be present, and propitious to our voves.*

PRAE. *Fauour it with your tongues.*

MIN. *Be present, and propitious to our voves.*  
*Accept our offering, and be pleas'd, great goddesse.*

TER. See, see, the image stirres ! SAT. And turnes away !

NAT. Fortune auerts her face ! FLA. Auert, you gods,  
 The prodigie. Still ! still ! Some pious rite  
 We haue neglected. Yet ! heau'n, be appeas'd.  
 And be all tokens false, or void, that speake  
 Thy present wrath. SEI. Be thou dumbe, scrupulous priest:

*Tub Tib.*  
*sound,*  
*while the*  
*Flamen*  
*washeth.*

*While*  
*they*  
*sound*  
*again,*  
*the*  
*Flamen*  
*takes of*  
*the hony,*  
*with his*  
*finger, &*  
*tasts,*  
*then*  
*ministers*  
*to all the*  
*rest so of*  
*the milk,*  
*in an*  
*earthen*  
*vessel,*  
*he deals*  
*about*

v. Before 171 PRÆCONES, SATRIVS, &c] TVBICINES TIBICINES  
 PRÆCONES SATRIVS &c Q SCENE IV | A Sacellum (or Chapel)  
 in Sejanus's House | Enter Pracones, Flamen, Tubicines, Tibicines,  
 Ministri, Sejanus, Terentius, Satrius, Natta, &c G 171 Be] PRAE BE Q  
 172 farre Farre corr F1 far, FAR Q farre, Farre F1 originally  
 farre ; farre F2 173 now, corr F1, F2. now ; Q, F1 originally  
 Stage-dr in Q printed as a line in the text after 172 sound]  
 Sound corr F1 These sound Q, F1 originally, F2 174 minds  
 corr. F1, F2 Minds Q minds F1 originally 175 MIN.] 1  
 Min G MIN And] MIN And Q 2 Min And G MIN] 3 Min G  
 Garlands] Ghyrlonds Q (so 176) 177, 182 Fauour] FAVOR Q 184  
 Accept] Omnes Accept G pleas'd.] pleas'd Q 177 foll Stage-dr. in  
 Q in the text between 183 and 184, headed 'TVBICINES TIBICINES'.  
 tasts,] tasts, Q hony, and] Honey, and Q proceed] say all,  
 Accept . . . Q 185 stirres !] stirres Q away ! corr F1, away. Q  
 away F1 originally 186 face !] face Q Auert, . . gods,] Auert  
 . . . Gods Q 190 scrupulous] scrup'ulous Q

which  
done, he  
sprin-  
kleth,  
vpon the  
altar,  
milke,  
then  
imposeth  
the hony.  
and  
kindleth  
his  
gummes,  
and after  
censing  
about the  
altar  
placeth  
his censer  
thereon,  
into  
which  
they put  
seuerall  
branches  
of poppy,  
and the  
musique  
ceasing,  
proceed

And gather vp thy selfe, with these thy wares,  
Which I, in spight of thy blind mistris, or  
Thy iuggling mysterie, religion, throw  
Thus, scorned on the earth. Nay, hold thy looke  
Auerted, till I woo thee, turne againe ;  
And thou shalt stand, to all posteritie,  
Th'eternall game, and laughter, with thy neck  
Writh'd to thy taile, like a ridiculous cat.  
Auoid these fumes, these superstitious lights,  
And all these coos'ning ceremonies : you,  
Your pure, and spiced conscience. I, the slaue,  
And mock of fooles, (scorne on my worthy head)  
That haue beene titled, and ador'd a god,  
Yea, sacrific'd vnto, my selfe, in *Rome*,  
No lesse then I o v e : and I be brought, to doe  
A peeuish gigglot rites ? Perhaps, the thought,  
And shame of that made *Fortune* turne her face,  
Knowing her selfe the lesser deitie,  
And but my seruant. Bashfull queene, if so,  
SEIANVS thanks thy modestie. Who's that ?

POMPONIVS, SEIANVS, MINVTIVS, &c.

- 211 **H**is fortune suffers, till he heares my newes :  
I' haue waited here too long. MACRO, my lord—  
SEI. Speake lower, & with-draw. TER. Are these  
things true ?  
MIN. Thousands are gazing at it, in the streets.  
215 SEI. What's that ? TER. MINVTIVS tells vs here,  
my lord,  
That, a new head being set vpon your statue,

v. 192 mistris] *Mistresse Q* 194 After 'earth' *Overturns the statue*  
and the altar G 195 thee,] thee Q 198 cat] Cat. Q 200  
coos'ning] coo'ning F2 you,] You Q 201 After 'conscience'  
*Exeunt all but Seianus, Terent Sairi and Natta G* 205 then] than  
F2 brought,] brought F2 206 gigglot] gigglot, F2 207 that]  
that, F2 209 seruant Bashfull] Seruant bashfull Q Before 211  
POMPONIVS, SEIANVS, MINVTIVS, &c.] POMPONIVS, MINVTIVS. &c. Q :  
*Enter Pomponius and Minutius. G, continuing the scene* 211 His]  
POM. His Q 212 I' haue Q. I haue F1 I haue F2 213  
with-draw] withdraw Q *Takes him aside G* 216 statue,] Statue. Q

A rope is since found wreath'd about it ! and,  
But now, a fierie meteor, in the forme  
Of a great ball, was seene to rowle along  
The troubled ayre, where yet it hangs, vnperfect, 220  
The' amazing wonder of the multitude !

SEI. No more. That MACRO's come, is more then all !

TER. Is MACRO come ? POM. I saw him. TER.

Where ? with whom ?

POM. With REGVLVS. SEI. TERENTIVS—

TER. My lord ?

SEI. Send for the *Tribunes*, we will straight haue vp 225

More of the souldiers, for our guard. MINVTIVS,

We pray you, goe for COTTA, LATIARIS,

TRIO the *Consul*, or what *Senators*

You know are sure, and ours. You, my good NATTA,

For LACO, *Prouost* of the watch. Now, SATRIVS, 230

The time of prooffe comes on. Arme all our seruants,

And without tumult. You, POMPONIVS,

Hold some good correspondence, with the *Consul*,

Attempt him, noble friend. These things begin

To looke like dangers, now, worthy my fates. 235

Fortune, I see thy worst : Let doubtfull states,

And things vncertaine hang vpon thy will :

Me surest death shall render certaine still.

Yet, why is, now, my thought turn'd toward death,

Whom fates haue let goe on, so farre, in breath, 240

Vncheck'd, or vnreprou'd ? I, that did helpe

To fell the loftie Cedar of the world,

GERMANICVS ; that, at one stroke, cut downe

DRVSVS, that vpriight Elme ; wither'd his vine ,

Laid SILIVS, and SABINVS, two strong Okes, 245

v. 217 it] it, Q 221 The' amazing Q The amazing Ff  
Th' amazing W multitude [] Multitude. Q 222 then] than F2  
all [] all. Q 224 TERENTIVS—] Terentius,—Q 226 After 'guard'  
Exit Ter. G 228 Senators] Senatoirs Q 229 After 'ours' Exit  
Min G 230 After 'watch' Exit Nat G 232 After 'tumult'  
Exit Sat G You.] You Q 234 After 'friend' Exit Pomp G  
236-8 Gnomie pointing in Q "Let. "And. "Me... 241  
Vncheck'd] Uncheckt F2 vnreprou'd] vnreproou'd Q 245 Okes]  
Okes Q, F2

- Flat on the earth ; besides, those other shrubs,  
 CORDVS, and SOSIA, CLAVDIA PVLCRA,  
 FVRNIVS, and GALLVS, which I haue grub'd vp ;  
 And since, haue set my axe so strong, and deepe  
 250 Into the roote of spreading AGRIPPINE ;  
 Lopt off, and scatter'd her proud branches, NERO,  
 DRVSVS, and CAIVS too, although re-planted ;  
 If you will, destinies, that, after all,  
 I faint, now, ere I touch my period ;  
 255 You are but cruell : and I alreadie' haue done  
 Things great inough. All *Rome* hath beene my slaue ;  
 The *Senate* sate an idle looker on,  
 And wnesse of my power ; when I haue blush'd,  
 More, to command, then it to suffer ; all  
 260 The *Fathers* haue sate readie, and prepar'd,  
 To giue me empire, temples, or their throtes,  
 When I would aske 'hem ; and (what crownes the top)  
*Rome, Senate*, people, all the world haue seene  
 I OVE, but my equall : CAESAR, but my second.  
 265 'Tis then your malice, fates, who (but your owne)  
 Enuy, and feare, t'haue any power long knowne.

TERENTIVS, TRIBVNES.

Stay here : I'll giue his lordship, you are come.

MINVTIVS, COTTA, LA-

TIARIS.

MARCVS TERENTIVS, pray you tell my lord,  
 Here's COTTA, and LATIARIS. TER. Sir, I shall.

*They  
confer  
their  
letters*

v. 246 besides,] besides Q 247 CLAVDIA] CLAUDIA, F2 250  
 AGRIPPINE,] *Agrippins*, Q AGRIPPINA, F2 252 DRVSVS,] *Drusus* ;  
 Q re-planted,] replanted Q 254 ere] ere Q 255 alreadie'  
 haue] already' haue Q alreadie haue F1 already haue F2 256  
*Rome*] *Rome*, Q 259 then] than F2 262 and (what top)]  
 And, what top, Q 264 equall] æquall, Q 265-6 *Gnomic*  
*pointing in Q* "'Tis " Enuye After 266 *Exit G* Before 267  
 TERENTIVS, TRIBVNES] SCENE V | A Room in the same. | Enter Terentius  
 and Tribunes G 267 Stay] TER Stay Q Before 268 MINVTIVS,  
 LATIARIS] MINVTIVS . LATIARIS &c Q Enter *Minutus with Cotta and*  
*Latiaris G*, continuing the scene 268 MARCVS] MIN *Marcus Q* pray  
 'pray F2 *Stage-dir not in Q* 269 Sir.] Sir Q *Exit. add G*

C O T. My letter is the very same with yours ; 270  
 Onely requires mee to bee present there,  
 And giue my voyce, to strengthen his designe.  
 L A T. Names he not what it is ? C O T. No, nor to you.  
 L A T. 'Tis strange, and singular doubtfull ! C O T. So it  
 is ?  
 It may be all is left to lord S E I A N V S. 275

N A T T A, L A C O.

*To them.*

G Entlemen, where's my lord ? T R I. Wee wait him here.  
 C O T. The *Prouost* L A C O ? what's the newes ? L A T.  
 My lord—

S E I A N V S.

*To them.*

N O W, my right deare, noble, and trusted friends ;  
 How much I am a captiue to your kindnesse !  
 Most worthy C O T T A, L A T I A R I S ; L A C O, 280  
 Your valiant hand ; and gentlemen, your loues.  
 I wish I could diuide my selfe vnto you , ,  
 Or that it lay, within our narrow powers,  
 To satisfie for so enlarged bountie.  
 G R A C I N V S, we must pray you, hold your guardes 285  
 Vnquit, when morning comes Saw you the *Consul* ?  
 M I N. T R I O will presently be here, my lord.  
 C O T. They are but giuing order for the edict,  
 To warne the *Senate*. S E I. How ! the *Senate* ? L A T. Yes.  
 This morning, in A P O L L O ' s temple. C O T. We 290  
 Are charg'd, by letter, to be there, my lord.  
 S E I. By letter ? pray you let's see ! L A T. Knowes not  
 his lordship !  
 C O T. It seemes so ! S E I. A *Senate* warn'd ? without  
 my knowledge ?

v. 272 *designe* ] *dissigne* Q 274 *doubtfull*] and *doubtful* F3  
 is ?] is ! Q is F2 Before 276 NATTA, LACO ] NATTA LACO &c Q'  
*Enter Natta and Gracinus Laco*, G, continuing the scene *Stage-dir.*  
 not in Q 276 Gentlemen] NAT Gentlemen Q 277 what's the]  
 what's, the Q Before 278 SEIANVS ] SEIANVS TERENTIVS &c Q *Enter*  
*Sejanus* G, continuing the scene *Stage-dir. To them* not in Q 278  
 Now] SEI Now Q 280 LATIARIS,] *Latharis*, Q LATIARIS, F2 282  
 diuide] deuide Q 287 here,] here Q 292 pray you] 'pray you, F2

And on this sodaine? *Senators* by letters  
 295 Required to be there! who brought these? *COT. MACRO.*  
*SEI.* Mineemie! And when? *COT.* This mid-night.  
*SEI.* Time,  
 With eu'ry other circumstance, doth giue  
 It hath some streine of engin in't! How now?

*SATRIVS, SEIANVS, & C.*

*MY* lord, *SERTORIVS MACRO* is without,  
 300 Alone, and prayes t'haue priuate conference  
 In businesse, of high nature, with your lordship,  
 (He say's to me) and which regards you much.  
*SEI.* Let him come here. *SAT.* Better, my lord, with-  
 draw,  
 You will betray what store, and strength of friends  
 305 Are now about you; which he comes to spie.  
*SEI.* Is he not arm'd? *SAT.* Wee'll search him. *SEI.*  
 No, but take,  
 And lead him to some roome, where you, conceal'd,  
 May keepe a guard vpon vs. Noble *LAC* o,  
 You are our trust: and, till our owne cohorts  
 310 Can be brought vp, your strengths must be our guard.  
*He salutes them humbly.* Now, good *MINVTIVS*, honour'd *LATIARIS*,  
 Most worthy, and my most vnwearied friends:  
 I returne instantly. *LAT.* Most worthy lord!  
*COT.* His lordship is turn'd instant kind, me thinkes,  
 315 I'haue not obseru'd it in him, heretofore.  
*TRI. 1.* 'Tis true, and it becomes him nobly. *MIN.* I  
 Am rap't withall. *TRI. 2.* By *MARS*, he has my liues,  
 (Were they a million) for this onely grace.  
*LAC.* I, and to name a man! *LAT.* As he did me!

v. 294 sodaine] sudden *F3* 296 enemie ['] enemy *Q* mid-night]  
 midnight *Q* 298 in't ['] in't *Q* Before 299 *SATRIVS, SEIANVS, &c* ]  
*SATRIVS &c Q* Enter *Satirius G*, continuing the scene 299 My]  
*SAT.* My *Q* 302 (He... me)] He. mee. *Q* regards] regards  
*F2* 303 Better] better *Q* with-draw] withdraw *Q* 304 betray]  
 betray, *F2* store,] store *F2* 308 After 'vs' Exit *Sat G* 310  
 guard.] Guard, *Q* 311 Now,] Now *Q* Stage-dir. not in *Q* 313  
 After 'instantly' Exit *G*

M I N. And me ! L A T. Who would not spend his life and 320  
 fortunes,  
 To purchase but the looke of such a lord ?  
 L A C. He, that would nor be lords foole, nor the worlds.

## SEIANVS, MACRO.

M A C R O ! most welcome, as most coueted friend !  
 Let me enjoy my longings. When arriu'd you ?

M A C. About the noone of night. S E I. S A T R I V S, 325  
 giue leaue.

M A C. I haue beene, since I came, with both the *Consuls*,  
 On a particular designe from C A E S A R.

S E I. How fares it with our great, and royall master ?

M A C. Right plentifully well, as, with a prince,  
 That still holds out the great proportion 330  
 Of his large fauours, wherc his iudgement hath  
 Made once diuine election like the god,  
 That wants not, nor is wearied to bestow  
 Where merit meets his bountie, as it doth  
 In you, alreadie the most happy', and ere 335  
 The sunne shall climbe the south, most high S E I A N V S.  
 Let not my lord be'amus'd. For, to this end  
 Was I by C A E S A R sent for, to the isle,  
 With speciaall caution to conceale my iourney ;  
 And, thence, had my dispatch as priuately 340  
 Againe to *Rome* ; charg'd to come here by night ;  
 And, onely to the *Consuls*, make narration,  
 Of his great purpose : that the benefit  
 Might come more full, and striking, by how much  
 It was lesse look'd for, or aspir'd by you, 345  
 Or least informed to the common thought.

v. Before 323 SEIANVS, MACRO ] SCENE VI | Another Room in the same. |  
*Enter Sejanus, Macro, and Satirius* G. *Curian drawn, disclosing*  
*another room.* W D Briggs 323 MACRO] SEI Macro Q friend ]  
 friend, Q 325 *Exit Sat.* add G 327 designe] dissigne Q  
 328 SEI.] SEI, Q 335 happy', and Q happy, and Ff 337  
 For.] For Q (so 355) 339 With corr. Ff, F2 : Which Q, Ff originally  
 345 look'd] loo'kd Q : lookt F2 you.] you, Q



SEI. What may this be? part of my selfe, deare  
MACRO!

If good, speake out : and share with your SEIANVS.

MAC. If bad, I should for euer lothe my selfe,

350 To be the messenger to so good a lord.

I doe exceed m' instructions, to acquaint

Your lordship with thus much ; but 'tis my venture

On your retentive wisdomes and, because

I would no iealous scruple should molest

355 Or racke your peace of thought. For, I assure

My noble lord, no *Senator* yet knowes

The businesse meant : though all, by seuerall letters,

Are warned to be there, and giue their voyces,

Onely to adde vnto the state, and grace

360 Of what is purpos'd. SEI. You take pleasure, MACRO,

Like a coy wench, in torturing your louer.

What can be worth this suffering? MAC. That which  
followes,

The *tribuniciall* dignitie, and power :

Both which SEIANVS is to haue this day

365 Confer'd vpon him, and by publique *Senate*.

SEI. Fortune, be mine againe, thou' hast satisfied

For thy suspected loyaltye. MAC. My lord,

I haue no longer time, the day approacheth,

And I must backe to CAESAR. SEI. Where's CALI-  
GULA?

370 MAC. That I forgot to tell your lordship. Why,

He lingers yonder, about *Capreae*,

Disgrac'd ; TIBERIVS hath not seene him yet :

He needs would thrust himselfe to goe with me,

Against my wish, or will, but I haue quitted

375 His forward trouble, with as tardie note

As my neglect, or silence could afford him.

Your lordship cannot now command me ought,

V. 347 MACRO! *corr* FI Macro, Q. MACRO, FI originally, F2 349  
selfe,] selfe F2 366 thou' hast] Thou' hast Q thou hast Ff 368  
approacheth] approacheth Q, F2 369 Where's] wher's Q 376 afford  
him] bestow Q

Because, I take no knowledge that I saw you,  
 But I shall boast to liue to serue your lordship :  
 And so take leaue. SEI. Honest, and worthy MACRO, 380  
 Your loue, and friendship. Who's there? SATRIVS,  
 Attend my honourable friend forth. O!  
 How vaine, and vile a passion is this feare?  
 What base, vncomely things it makes men doe?  
 Suspect their noblest friends, (as I did this) 385  
 Flatter poore enemies, intreat their seruants,  
 Stoupe, court, and catch at the beneuolence  
 Of creatures, vnto whom (within this houre)  
 I would not haue vouchsaf'd a quarter-looke,  
 Or piece of face? By you, that fooles call gods, 390  
 Hang all the skie with your prodigious signes,  
 Fill earth with monsters, drop the *scorpion* downe,  
 Out of the *zodiack*, or the fiercer *lyon*,  
 Shake off the loos'ned globe from her long henge,  
 Rowle all the world in darknesse, and let loose 395  
 Th'inraged windes to turne vp groues and townes;  
 When I doe feare againe, let me be strooke  
 With forked fire, and vnpittyed die:  
 Who feares, is worthy of calamitie.

POMPONIVS, REGVLVS, TRIO.

To the  
 rest.  
 400

IS not my lord here? TER. Sir, he will be straight.  
 COT What newes, FVLGINIVS TRIO? TRI.  
 Good, good tidings.  
 (But, keepe it to your selfe) My lord SEIANVS  
 Is to receiue this day, in open *Senate*,  
 The *tribunicall* dignitie. COT. Is't true?

v. 379 lordship ] Lordship Q 381 After 'friendship' Exit  
 Macro. G 387 Stoupe] Stoop Fz 392 *scorpion*] *Scorpion*, Q  
 394 henge] hinge Fz 397 strooke] struck Fz 399 Who]  
 "Who Q Exit add G Before 400 POMPONIVS . . TRIO.] POM-  
 PONIVS, TRIO &c Q SCENE VII | Another Room in the same | Enter  
 Terentius, Minutius, Laco, Colla, Latiaris, and Pomponius, Regulus,  
 Trio, and others, on different sides G The curtain is here closed, and  
 the scene returns to the former room W D. Briggs Stage-dir. To the  
 rest not in Q 400 Is] Pom. Is Q 401 newes,] newes Q  
 402 (But . . . selfe)] But . . . selfe Q

405 TRI. No wordes ; not to your thought : but, sir, beleuee it.

LAT. What sayes the *Consul*? COT. (Speake it not againe,)

He tells me, that to day my lord SEIANVS——

(TRI. I must entreat you COTTA, on your honour

Not to reueale it. COT. On my life, sir.) LAT. Say.

410 COT. Is to receiue the *tribunicall* power.

But, as you are an honourable man,

Let me comure you, not to vtter it :

For it is trusted to me, with that bond.

LAT. I am HARPOCRATES. TER. Can you assure it?

415 POM. The *Consul* told it me, but keepe it close.

MIN. Lord LATIARIS, what's the newes? LAT. I'll tell you,

But you must sweare to keepe it secret——

To them.

SEIANVS.

I Knew the fates had on their distaffe left

More of our thread, then so. REG. Haile, great SEIANVS.

420 TRI. Haile, the most honor'd. COT. Happy LAT. High SEIAN<sup>9</sup>.

SEI. Doe you bring prodigies too? TRI. May all presage

Turne to those faire effects, whereof we bring

Your lordship newes. REG. May't please my lord withdraw.

To some  
that  
stand by.

SEI. Yes (I will speake with you, anon.) TER. My lord,

v. 405 but, sir,] but Sir Q 406 Consul] Consul Q 408 honour]  
honor Q 409 sir ] Sir] Q 411 honourable] honorable Q 417  
secret—] secret — Q Before 418 SEIANVS ] SEIANVS. &c. Q. Enter  
Seianus G, continuing the scene Stage-dir To them. not in Q 418  
I] SEI. I Q 419 then] than F2 Haile,] Hayle Q 420 Haile,] Haile Q  
honor'd ] honor'd, Q. honour'd. F2 Happy ] Happy, Q 423  
with-draw] withdraw Q 424 Stage-dir not in Q Yes (I..  
anon.]) Yes. I . . . anone. Q lord,] Lord Q

What is your pleasure for the *Tribunes*? SEI. Why, 425  
Let 'hem be thank't, and sent away. MIN. My lord——

LAC. Will't please your lordship to command me——

SEI. No.

You' are troublesome. MIN. The mood is chang'd.

TRI. <1.> Not speake?

TRI. <2.> Nor looke? LAC. I. He is wise, will make  
him friends

Of such, who neuer loue, but for their ends. 430

ARRVNTIVS, LEPIDVS.

*Diuers  
other  
Senators  
passing  
by them.*

I, Goe, make haste, take heed you be not last  
To tender your *All haile*, in the wide hall  
Of huge SEIANVS· runne, a *Lictors* pace;  
Stay not to put your robes on; but, away,  
With the pale troubled ensignes of great friendship. 435

Stamp't i' your face! Now, MARCVS LEPIDVS,  
You still beleuee your former augurie?

SEIANVS must goe downe-ward? you perceiue  
His wane approaching fast? LEP. Beleuee me, LVCIVS,  
I wonder at this rising! ARR. I, and that we 440

Must giue our suffrage to it? you will say,  
It is to make his fall more steepe, and grieuous?

It may be so. But thinke it, they that can

With idle wishes 'ssay to bring backe time:

In cases desperate, all hope is crime. 445

See, see! what troupes of his officious friends

Flock to salute my lord! and start before

My great, proud lord! to get a lord-like nod!

Attend my lord, vnto the *Senate-house*!

v 427 Will't F2· Wilt Q, Fr 428 You' are Q You are  
Ff troublesome? troublesome Q TRI 1] 1 TRI W. D. Briggs  
429 TRI 2] 2 TRI W D Briggs. om W, who assigns this and the  
previous speech to Trio 429-30 Gnostic pointing in Q. "He...  
"Of... After 430 Exeunt G Before 431 ARRVNTIVS, LEPIDVS ]  
SCENE VIII | A space before the Temple of Apollo | Enter Arruntius and  
Lepidus, diuers Senators passing by them G Stage-dir not in Q 431  
1] ARR 1 Q 436 face!] face Q 438 downe-ward] downeward Q  
445 In] "In Q 447 lord] LORD Q 448 proud lord 1] proud  
LORD, Q lord-] LORD-Q (so 451) 449 my lord,] My LORD Q

- 450 Bring back my lord ! like seruile huishers, make  
 Way for my lord ! proclaime his idoll lord-ship,  
 More then ten cryers, or sixe noise of trumpets !  
 Make legs, kisse hands, and take a scatter'd haire  
 From my lords eminent shoulder ! See, SANGVINVS !  
 455 With his slow belly, and his dropsie ! looke,  
 What toylng haste he makes ! yet, here's another,  
 Retarded with the gout, will be afore him !  
 Get thee *liburnian* porters, thou grosse foole,  
 To beare thy' obsequious fatnesse, like thy peeres.  
 460 They' are met ! The gout returnes, and his great carriage.

*Passes  
 over the  
 stage.*

LICTORS, CONSVLS, SEIANVS, & C

G Iue way, make place ; roome for the *Consul*. SAN.  
 Haile,

Haile, great SEIANVS. HAT. Haile, my honor'd lord.

ARR. We shall be markt anon, for our not-haile.

LEP. That is already done. ARR. It is a note

- 465 Of vpstart greatnesse, to obserue, and watch  
 For these poore trifles, which the noble mind  
 Neglects, and scornes LEP. I, and they thinke themselues  
 Deeply dishonor'd, where they are omitted,  
 As if they were necessities, that helpt  
 470 To the perfection of their dignities :  
 And hate the men, that but refraine 'hem. ARR. O !  
 There is a farder cause of hate. Their breasts  
 Are guiltie, that we know their obscure springs,  
 And base beginnings : thence the anger growes. On.  
 Follow.

v. 450, 451 my lord] MY LORD Q 450 huishers] ushers Fz 452  
 then] than Fz 454 lords eminent] LORDS excellent Q After  
 'shoulder' *Sanguinius and Haterius pass over the stage* G 459 thy'  
 obsequious Q. thy obsequious Ff 460 They' are Q They are Ff  
 Before 461 LICTORS, . &c.] *Lictors, Regulus, Trio, Seianus, Saturnus,*  
*and many Senators pass over the stage* G, continuing the scene *Stage-dir*  
*not in Q* 461 Give] Ltc Give Q 461, 462 Haile, . Haile,  
 HAYLE . HAYLE Q 462 honor'd] honour'd Fz 463 anon,] anon Q  
 not-haile] not HAYLE Q 464 already] all ready Q 468 dis-  
 honor'd] dishonour'd Fz 471 O!] O Q 474 On Follow a new  
 line in W *Exeunt* add G

MACRO, LACO.

When all are entred, shut the temple doores ; 475  
 And bring your guardes vp to the gate. L A C. I will.  
 M A C. If you shall heare commotion in the *Senate*,  
 Present your selfe : and charge on any man  
 Shall offer to come forth. L A C. I am instructed.

THE SENATE.

HATERIVS, TRIO, SANQVINIVS,  
 COTTA, REGVLVS, SEIANVS,  
 POMPONIVS, LATIARIS,  
 LEPIDVS, ARRVNTIVS,  
 PRÆCONES, LICTORES.

How well his lordship lookes to day ! TRI. As if 480  
 He had beene borne, or made for this houres state.  
 COT. Your fellow *Consul's* come about, me thinkes ?  
 TRI. I, he is wise. SAN. SEIANVS trusts him well.  
 TRI. SEIANVS is a noble, bounteous lord.  
 HAT. He is so, and most valiant. LAT. And most wise. 485  
 SEN. Hee's euery thing. LAT. Worthy of all, and more  
 Then bountie can bestow. TRI. This dignitie  
 Will make him worthy. POM. Aboue CAESAR. SAN.  
 Tut,  
 CAESAR is but the rector of an I'sle,  
 He of the empire TRI. Now he will haue power 490  
 More to reward, then euer. COT Let vs looke

v. Before 475 MACRO, LACO ] SCENE IX | Another Part of the same | Enter  
*Macro and Laco* G 475 When ] MAC When Q 479 *Exeunt.* add G  
 Before 480 THE SENATE ] HATERIVS, . LICTORES ] THE SENATE |  
 PRÆCONES LICTORES | REGVLVS SEIANVS TRIO | HATERIVS SAN-  
 QVINIVS. COTTA | POMPONIVS LATIARIS | LEPIDVS ARRVNTIVS Q :  
 SCENE X. | The Temple of Apollo | Enter *Haterius, Trio, Sanguinus,*  
*Cotta, Regulus, Seianus, Pomponius, Latarius, Lepidus, Aruntius, and*  
*diuers other Senators, Pracones and Lictores* G SANQVINIVS]  
 SANQVINIVS Q originally 480 How] HAT How Q 481 houres]  
 howers Q 482 *Consul's*] *Consuls* F2 483 he is] hee' is Q 484  
 noble,] noble F2 486 SEN ] 1 Sen G 487 Then] Than F2  
 489 I'sle] Isle F2 491 then] than F2

We be not slack in giuing him our voyces.

L A T. Not I. S A N. Nor I. C O T. The readier we  
seeme

To propagate his honours, will more bind

495 His thought, to ours. H A T. I thinke right, with your lord-  
ship.

It is the way to haue vs hold our places.

S A N. I, and get more. L A T. More office, and more titles.

P O M. I will not lose the part, I hope to share

In these his fortunes, for my patrimonie.

500 L A T. See, how A R R V N T I V S sits, and L E P I D V S.

T R I. Let 'hem alone, they will be markt anon.

S E N. I'll doe with others. S E N. So will I S E N.

And I.

Men grow not in the state, but as they are planted

Warme in his fauours. C O T. Noble S E I A N V S !

505 H A T. Honor'd S E I A N V S ! L A T. Worthy, and great  
. S E I A N V S !

A R R. Gods ! how the spunges open, and take in !

And shut againe ! looke, looke ! is not he blest

That gets a seate in eye-reach of him ? more,

That comes in eare, or tongue-reach ? ô, but most,

510 Can claw his subtle elbow, or with a buzze

Fly-blow his eares. P R A E T. Proclaime the *Senates*  
peace ;

And giue last summons by the edict. P R A E. Silence :

In name of C A E S A R, and the S E N A T E. Silence.

M E M M I V S R E G V L V S, and F V L C I N I V S T R I O,

515 *Consuls, these present kalends of Iune, with the first light,*  
*shall hold a senate, in the temple of A P O L L O P A L A T I N E,*

v. 494 honours] Honors Q 495 thought,] thought Q. thoughts  
F2 498 lose] loose Q 500 See,] See Q 502 SEN ] 1 Sen. G  
doe] doe, Q SEN ... SEN ] 2 Sen . 3 Sen G 504 fauours] fauors Q  
SEIANVS ] Seianus. Q 505 Honor'd] Honour'd F2 SEIANVS ]  
Seianus Q Worthy,] Worthy Q SEIANVS ] Seianus. Q 509  
ô,] O Q 511 Fly-blow] Fheblow Q 512 Silence ] Silence Q  
514-21 Q prints in capitals in the form of a Roman inscription : thus,  
MEMMIVS REGVLVS AND FVLCINIVS. TRIO. CONSVL'S THESE  
PRESENT. KALENDES OF. IYNE . . . with large capitals for APOLLO.  
516 PALATINE,] PALATINE , F2

*all that are Fathers, and are registred Fathers, that haue right of entring the Senate, we warne, or command, you be frequently present, take knowledge the businesse is the common-wealths, whosoever is absent, his fine, or mulct, will be taken, his 520 excuse will not be taken.*

TRI. Note, who are absent, and record their names.

REG. *Fathers Conscript* May, what I am to utter,  
Turne good, and happy, for the common-wealth.

And thou APOLLO, in whose holy house 525

We here are met, inspire vs all, with truth,

And libertie of censure, to our thought

The maiestie of great TIBERIVS CAESAR

Propounds to this graue Senate, the bestowing

Vpon the man he loues, honour'd SEIANVS, 530

The tribuniciall dignitie, and power ;

Here are his letters, signed with his signet :

*What pleaseth now the Fathers to be done ?*

SEN. Reade, reade'hem, open, publicquely, reade 'hem.

COT. CAESAR hath honour'd his owne greatnesse 535  
much,

In thinking of this act. TRI. It was a thought

Happy, and worthy CAESAR. LAT. And the lord,

As worthy it, on whom it is directed !

HAT. Most worthy ! SAN. *Rome* did neuer boast the  
vertue

That could gue enuie bounds, but his : SEIANVS—— 540

SEN. Honour'd, and noble ! SEN. Good, and great

SEIANVS !

ARR. O, most tame slauerie, and fierce flatterie ! PRAE.

Silence.

v. 519 -wealths.] -wealths ; F2 523 Conscript] Conscript, F2  
530 loues] lones Q 538 directed ] directed Q 539 worthy !]  
worthy. Q 541 SEN ] I Sen G Honour'd] Honor'd Q noble!]  
noble. Q SEN 2 Sen G SEIANVS ] Seianus Q SEIANUS ! F2



# TIBERIVS CÆSAR TO THE SENATE,

The  
Epistle  
is read.

## GREETING.

546 **I**F you, Conscript Fathers, with your children, bee in health,  
it is abundantly well : wee with our friends here, are so.  
The care of the common-wealth, howsoever we are remoo'd in  
person, cannot be absent to our thought ; although, oftentimes,  
550 euen to princes most present, the truth of their owne affaires is  
hid : then which, nothing fals out more miserable to a state, or  
makes the art of governing more difficult. But since it hath  
beene our ease-full happinesse to enioy both the aides, and in-  
dustrie of so vigilant a Senate, wee professe to haue beene the  
555 more indulgent to our pleasures, not as being carelesse of our  
office, but rather secure of the necessitie. Neyther doe these  
common rumors of many, and infamous libels published against  
our retirement, at all afflict vs ; being born more out of mens  
ignorance, then their malice . and will, neglected, finde their  
560 owne graue quickly , whereas too sensibly acknowledg'd, it  
would make their obloquie ours Nor doe we desire their  
authors (though found) bee censur'd, since in a free state (as  
ours) all men ought to enioy their mindes, and tongues free.

(A R R. The lapwing, the lapwing.)

565 Yet, in things, which shall worthily, and more neere concerne  
the maiestie of a prince, we shall feare to be so unnaturally cruell  
to our owne fame, as to neglect them True it is, Conscript  
Fathers, that wee haue rayed S E I A N V S, from obscure, and  
almost unknown gentrie, (S E N. How ! how !)  
570 to the highest, and most conspicuous point of greatnesse, and  
(wee hope) deservingly ; yet, not without danger : it being a

v. 544 Stage-dir not in Q . respaced in F1, which originally printed The  
Epistle is | read 546-7 If are so Capital letters in Q 548  
remoo'd] remou'd Q remou'd F2 551 then] than F2 (so 559) 553  
ease-full] easefull Q 557 rumors] rumours F2 libels corr F1, F2  
Libels Q libels, F1 originally 560 quickly.] quickly, Q 565 Yet,  
in things.] Yet in things Q 567-8 Conscript Fathers] CONSCRIPT  
FATHERS Q (so 598, 631) 569 (SEN. . . . how !)] SEN. . . . how ! Q  
571 yet,] yet Q danger] daunger Q

most bold hazard in that sou'raigne, who, by his particular loue to one, dares aduenture the hatred of all his other subiects.

(ARR. This touches, the bloud turnes.)

But wee affie in your loues, and understandings, and doe no way 575 suspect the merit of our SEIANVS to make our fauours offensive to any.

(SEN. O! good, good.)

Though we could haue wished his zeale had runne a calmer course against AGRIPPINA, and our Nephewes, howsoever 580 the opennesse of their actions, declared them delinquents; and, that he would haue remembred, no innocence is so safe, but it reioyceth to stand in the sight of mercie: The use of which in vs, hee hath so quite taken away, toward them, by his loyall furie, as now our clemencie would be thought but wearied crueltie, if we 585 should offer to exercise it.

(ARR. I thanke him, there I look'd for't. A good fox!) Some there bee, that would interpret this his publique seueritie to bee particular ambition; and that, vnder a pretext of seruice to vs, hee doth but remooue his owne lets: alleadging the strengths 590 he hath made to himselfe, by the Prætorian souldiers, by his faction in Court, and Senate, by the offices hee holdes himselfe, and conferres on others, his popularitie, and dependents, his vrging (and almost driuing) vs to this our unwilling retirement, and lastly his aspiring to be our sonne in-law. 595

(SEN. This's strange!

ARR. I shall anon beleue your vultures, MARCVS.) Your wisdomes, Conscript Fathers, are able to examine, and censure these suggestions. But, were they left to our absolving voyce, we durst pronounce them, as we thinke them, most mali- 600 cious.

(SEN. O, he has restor'd all, list.)

v. 572 sou'raigne] Sovereign F2 574 (ARR turnes)] ARR . .  
turnes Q 578 (SEN O! good)] SEN O, good Q 579 wished]  
wishd Q 581 actions,] actions F2 587 (ARR I fox)] ARR I  
. . . Foxe! Q look'd] lookt F2 589 ambition, and that,]  
Ambition, and that Q pretext] pretext Q 590 remooue] remove F2  
592 Court,] Court Q 595 lastly] lastly, Q sonne in-law] Sonne in  
law, Q 596 (SEN This's strange)] SEN 'This strange Q 597  
MARCVS)] Marcus Q MARCVS) F2 599 suggestions But] sugges-  
tions: but Q 602 (SEN O, . . list)] SEN O List Q

*Yet, are they offer'd to bee auerr'd, and on the liues of the informers. What wee should say, or rather what we should not say,*  
 605 *Lords of the Senate, if this bee true, our gods, and goddesses confound vs if we know ! Only, we must thinke, we haue plac'd our benefits ill : and conclude, that, in our choise, either we were wanting to the gods, or the gods to vs.*

*The  
Senators  
shift their  
places*

(A R R. The place growes hot, they shift.)

*We haue not beene couetous, Honourable Fathers, to change ;  
 neither is it now, any new lust that alters our affection, or old*  
 612 *lothing : but those needfull jealousies of state, that warne wiser princes, hourly, to provide their safetie ; and doe teach them how learned a thing it is to beware of the humblest enemy ; much*  
 615 *more of those great ones, whom their owne employ'd fauors haue made fit for their feares.*

(S E N. Away. S E N. Sit farder. C O T. Let's remooue——

A R R Gods ! how the leaues drop off, this little winde !)  
*We therefore desire, that the offices he holds, bee first seized by*  
 620 *the Senate ; and himselfe suspended from all exercise of place, or power——*

(S E N. How ! S A N. By your leaue. A R R. Come, Porcpisce, (wher's H A T E R I V S ?

His gout keepest him most miserably constant.)

Your dancing shewes a tempest ) S E I. Reade no more.

625 R E G. Lords of the Senate, hold your seates : reade on.

*Laco  
enters  
with the  
guards.*

S E I. These letters, they are forg'd. R E G. A guard, sit still.

A R R. There's change. R E G. Bid silence, and reade forward.

P R A E. Silence——and himselfe suspended from all exer-

V 603-4 *informers*] *Informers* Q 609 (ARR The . . shift)] ARR  
 The . shift Q *Stage-dir not in* Q 610 *Honourable Fathers*  
 HONORABLE FATHERS Q 612 *lothing*] *Loathing*, Q 613 *provide*  
*provide* for F2 617 (SEN] SEN Q 1 Sen G SEN] 2 Sen G farder]  
 farther F3 (so 632) remooue] remove F2 618 *winde l*] *winde l* Q  
 619 *We . desire*] *we desire* Q 622 (SEN] SE Q Come.  
*Porcpisce*] Come *Porcpisce* Q 624 *dancing*] *dauncing* Q *tempest*]  
*tempest* Q, Ff 626 *letters*] *Letters* Q A] a Q *guard*] *guard*,  
 F2 *Stage-dir not in* Q 627 *There's*] *Here's* Q 628 *Silence——*  
 Silence, — Q

cise of place, or power, but till due and mature tryall be made of his innocency, which yet we can faintly apprehend the necessitie, 630 to doubt. If, Conscript Fathers, to your more searching wisdomes, there shall appeare farther cause (or of farder proceeding, either to seizure of lands, goods, or more——) it is not our power that shall limit your authoritie, or our fauour, that must corrupt your iustice : either were dishonourable in you, and 635 both uncharitable to our selfe. We would willingly be present with your counsailes in this businesse, but the danger of so potent a faction (if it should proue so) forbids our attempting it : except one of the Consuls would be intreated for our safetie, to undertake the guard of vs home, then wee should most readily 640 aduenture. In the meane time, it shall not bee fit for vs to importune so iudicious a Senate, who know how much they hurt the innocent, that spare the guiltie : and how gratefull a sacrifice, to the gods, is the life of an ingratefull person. We reflect not, in this, on SEIANVS (notwithstanding, if you keepe an 645 eye upon him——and there is LATIARIS a Senator, and PINNARIVS NATTA, two of his most trusted ministers, and so profest, whom we desire not to haue apprénded) but as the necessitie of the cause exacts it.

REG. A guard on LATIARIS. ARR. O, the spie ! 650  
The reuerend spie is caught, who pitties him ?  
Reward, sir, for your seruice : now, you ha' done  
Your propertie, you see what vse is made ?  
Hang vp the instrument. SEI. Giue leaue. LAC Stand,  
stand,  
He comes vpon his death, that doth aduance 655  
An inch toward my point. SEI. Haue we no friends here ?  
ARR. Hush't. Where now are all the hailes, and acclamations ?

v. 629 but] (but Q 631 doubt If,] doubt ) If Q 633 if] It Q  
637 danger] daunger Q 638 proue] prooue Q attempting it] attempt  
Q 639 safetie,] safety Q 643 guiltie ] guilty, Q 645 not,  
in this,] not in this Q notwithstanding,] notwithstanding Q 646  
and] And Q Senator] Senatour Q 648 apprénded] apprehended  
F2: apprehended F3 652 Reward, sir] Reward Sir Q now,] now Q  
After 653 Execunt Latharis and Natta, guarded G 656 friends] friend  
Q originally 657 hailes] HAYLES Q

## MACRO, SENATE.

**H**Aile, to the *Consuls*, and this noble *Senate*.

SEI. Is MACRO here? O, thou art lost

SEIANVS.

660 MAC. Sit still, and vn-affrighted, *reuerend Fathers*.

MACRO, by CAESARS grace, the new-made *Prouost*,

And now possest of the *prætorian* bands,

An honour late belong'd to that proud man,

Bids you, be safe: and to your constant doome

665 Of his descrings, offers you the surety

Of all the souldiers, *tribunes*, and *centurions*,

Receiu'd in our command. REG. SEIANVS, SEI

ANVS,

Stand forth, SEIANVS. SEI. Am I call'd? MAC. I,

thou,

Thou insolent monster, art bid stand. SEI. Why, MACRO,

670 It hath beene otherwise, betweene you, and I?

This court that knowes vs both, hath seene a difference,

And can (if it be pleas'd to speake) confirme,

Whose insolence is most. MAC. Come downe, *Typhæus*,

If mine be most, loe, thus I make it more;

675 Kicke vp thy heeles in ayre, teare off thy robe,

Play with thy beard, and nostrills. Thus 'tis fit,

(And no man take compassion of thy state)

To vse th'ingratefull viper, tread his braines

Into the earth. REG. Forbeare MAC. If I could lose

680 All my humanitie now, 'twere well to torture

So meriting a traytor. Wherefore, *Fathers*,

Sit you amaz'd, and silent? and not censure

This wretch, who in the houre he first rebell'd

'Gainst CAESARS bountie, did condemne himselfe?

685 *Phlegra*, the field, where all the sonnes of earth

v Before 658 MACRO, SENATE ] MACRO &c Q. Enter Macro. G, continuing the scene 663 An man, Q originally, Ff: (An .. man)

corr Q 667 SEIANVS, ] Seianus Q 673 downe, Q. downe Ff

*Typhæus*, F1. *Typhæus* Q, F3. *Typhæus*, F2 674 loe, ] loe Q 676

nostrills ] nostrills Q fit, ] fit Q 679 lose ] loose Q 685 *Phlegra* ]

*Phlegra* Q, Ff

Muster'd against the gods, did ne're acknowledge  
So proud, and huge a monster. REG. Take him hence.  
And all the gods guard CAESAR. TRI. Take him hence.

HAT. Hence. COT. To the dungeon with him. SAN.

He deserues it.

SEN. Crowne all our doores with bayes. SAN. And let 690  
an oxe

With gilded hornes, and garlands, straight be led

Vnto the *capitoll*. HAT. And sacrific'd

To LOVE, for CAESARS safety. TRI. All our gods

Be present still to CAESAR. COT. PHÆBUS. SAN.

MARS.

HAT. DIANA. SAN. PALLAS. SEN. IVNO, 695

MERCVRIE,

All guard him. MAC Forth, thou prodigie of men.

COT Let all the traytors titles be defac'd.

TRI. His images, and statues be pull'd downe.

HAT. His chariot-wheeles be broken. ARR. And the  
legs

Of the poore horses, that deserued naught, 700

Let them be broken too LEP. O, violent change,

And whirle of mens affections! ARR. Like, as both

Their bulkes and soules were bound on fortunes wheele,

And must act onely with her motion!

LEPIDVS, ARRVNTIVS.

WHO would depend vpon the popular ayre, 705

Or voyce of men, that haue to day beheld

(That which if all the gods had fore-declar'd,

Would not haue beene beleeu'd) SEIANVS fall?

He, that this morne rose proudly, as the sunne?

And, breaking through a mist of clients breath, 710

v 687 Take] take Q him] him Fz 691 garlands] Gyrlonds Q  
692 capitoll] Capitoll Q After 696 Exit Seianus, guarded G 699  
chariot-wheeles] Chariot wheeles Q 701 After 'too' Exeunt Lictors,  
Pracones, Macro, Regulus, Trio, Haterius, and Sanguinius: manent  
Lepidus, Arruntius, and a few Senators G, continuing the scene O,  
O Q 704 motion] motion Q 705 Who] LEP Who Q 706  
to] too Fz 707 That] That, Fz 709 sunne?] Sunne, Q

- Came on as gaz'd at, and admir'd, as he  
 When superstitious *Moore*s salute his light  
 That had our seruite nobles waiting him  
 As common groomes ; and hanging on his looke,  
 715 No lesse then humane life on destinie !  
 That had mens knees as frequent, as the gods ;  
 And sacrifices, more, then *Rome* had altars :  
 And this man fall ! fall ? I, without a looke,  
 That durst appeare his friend ; or lend so much  
 720 Of vaine reliefe, to his chang'd state, as pittie !  
 A R R. They, that before like gnats plaid in his  
 beames,  
 And throng'd to circumscribe him, now not seene !  
 Nor deigne to hold a common seate with him !  
 Others, that wayted him vnto the *Senate*,  
 725 Now, inhumanely rauish him to prison,  
 Whom (but this morne) they follow'd as their lord !  
 Guard through the streets, bound like a fugitiue !  
 In stead of wreathes, giue fetters ; strokes, for stoops :  
 Blind shame, for honours ; and black taunts, for titles !  
 730 Who would trust slippery chance ? L E P. They, that  
 would make  
 Themselues her spoile : and foolishly forget,  
 When shee doth flatter, that shee comes to prey.  
 Fortune, thou hadst no desire, if men  
 Had wisdomes - we haue placed thee so high,  
 735 By fond belefe in thy felicitie.  
 S E N. The gods guard C A E S A R. All the gods guard  
 C A E S A R.

Shout  
 within.

v. 714 common groomes] common-Groomes Q 715 then] than F2  
 (so 717) destinie] *Destiny* Q 717 more.] more F2 719 friend.]  
 friend, F2 721 They.] They F2 725 prison.] prison! Q. Ff.  
 726 lord!] Lord, Q: lord, Ff 728 strokes.] stroakes Q 729  
 shame.] shame Q honours] Honors Q taunts.] taunts Q 730  
 They.] They F2 733-5 *Gnomic pointing in Q* "Fortune.. " Had  
 ... "By 736 Shout within] SHOUTE WITHIN. Q in the text between  
 735 and 736

MACRO, REGVLVS, SENATORS.

NOW great SEIANVS, you that aw'd the state,  
 And sought to bring the nobles to your whip,  
 That would be CAESARS tutor, and dispose  
 Of dignities, and offices ! that had 740  
 The publique head still bare to your designes,  
 And made the generall voyce to eccho yours !  
 That look'd for salutations, twelue score off,  
 And would haue pyramid's, yea, temples rear'd  
 To your huge greatnesse ! now, you lie as flat, 745  
 As was your pride aduanc'd. REG. Thanks, to the gods.  
 SEN. And praise to MACRO, that hath saued *Rome*.  
 Liberty, liberty, liberty. Lead on,  
 And praise to MACRO, that hath saued *Rome*.

ARRVNTIVS, LEPIDVS, TERENTIVS.

I Prophesie, out of this *Senates* flatterie, 750  
 That this new fellow, MACRO, will become  
 A greater prodigie in *Rome*, then he  
 That now is false TER. O you, whose minds are good,  
 And haue not forc'd all mankind, from your breasts ;  
 That yet haue so much stock of vertue left, 755  
 To pittie guiltie states, when they are wretched :  
 Lend your soft eares to heare, and eyes to weepe  
 Deeds done by men, beyond the acts of *furies*.  
 The eager multitude, (who neuer yet  
 Knew why to loue, or hate, but onely pleas'd 760  
 T'expresse their rage of power) no sooner heard  
 The murmure of SEIANVS in decline,  
 But with that speed, and heate of appetite,

v. Before 737 MACRO, REGVLVS, SENATORS ] MACRO LACO. SENATE.  
 Q Re-enter Macro, Regulus, and diuers Senators. G, continuing the scene  
 737 Now] MAC Now Q 740 offices ] Offices, Q 741 [designes]  
 disignes Q 742 yours ] yours, Q 744 yea, ] yea Q. F2 745  
 greatnesse ] Greatnesse Q 746 advanc'd] advanc't F2 Thanks,  
 Thanks Q Thanks F2 Before 750 ARRVNTIVS, . . TERENTIVS ]  
 Exeunt all but Arruntius and Lepidus G, continuing the scene 750  
 I] ARR I Q 752 then] than F2 753 After 'false' Enter  
 Terentius. G 759 (who] who Q 761 power)] power, Q



- With which they greedily deuoure the way  
 765 To some great sports, or a new theatre,  
 They fill'd the *capitoll*, and P O M P E I ' s circke ;  
 Where, like so many mastiues, biting stones,  
 As if his statues now were sensiuue growne  
 Of their wild furie, first, they teare them downe :  
 770 Then fastning ropes, drag them along the streets,  
 Crying in scorne, this, this was that rich head  
 Was crown'd with gyrlands, and with odours, this  
 That was in *Rome* so reuerenced ! Now  
 The fornace, and the bellowes shall to worke,  
 775 The great S E I A N V S crack, and piece, by piece,  
 Drop i' the founders pit L E P. O, popular rage !  
 T E R. The whilst, the *Senate*, at the temple of *Concord*,  
 Make haste to meet againe, and thronging cry,  
 Let vs condemne him, tread him downe in water,  
 780 While he doth lie vpon the banke ; away :  
 Where some, more tardie, cry vnto their bearers,  
 He will be censur'd ere we come, runne knaues ;  
 And vse that furious diligence, for feare  
 Their bond-men should informe against their slacknesse,  
 785 And bring their quaking flesh vnto the hooke :  
 The rout, they follow with confused voyce,  
 Crying, they're glad, say they could ne're abide him ;  
 Enquire, what man he was ? what kind of face ?  
 What beard he had ? what nose ? what lips ? protest,  
 790 They euer did presage h' would come to this :  
 They neuer thought him wise, nor valiant : aske  
 After his garments, when he dies ? what death ?

v 765 theatre, *corr* F1, F2 Theatre, Q theatre; F1 originally  
 766 capitoll,] Capitoll, *corr* Q Capitoll, Q ong circke; *corr*  
 F1. circke, F1 originally Circke, Q originally Circke: *corr*. Q  
 Circk, F2 768 sensiuue growne *corr* F1 sensitiue Q, F1 originally,  
 F2 769 furie, *corr* F1, F2 fury, Q fure, F1 originally 772  
 gyrlands *corr* F1 Gyrlonds Q garlands F1 originally, F2 773  
 reuerenced' *corr* F1 reuerenced. Q, F1 originally, F2 774 fornace,]  
 Furnace, Q fornace F2 to *corr* Q, F2, F3 too Q originally, F1  
 worke,] worke Q, F1 work F2 work, F3 782 knaues; *corr*. F1  
 Knaues, Q. knaues, F1 originally, F2 784 slacknesse,] slackness  
 Q originally 791 aske *corr* F1. Aske Q, F1 originally, F2

And not a beast of all the herd demands,  
 What was his crime? or, who were his accusers?  
 Vnder what prooffe, or testimonie, he fell? 795  
 There came (sayes one) a huge, long, worded letter  
 From *Caprea* against him. Did there so?  
 O, they are satisfied, no more. L E P. Alas!  
 They follow fortune, and hate men condemn'd,  
 Guiltie, or not. A R R. But, had S E I A N V S thriu'd 800  
 In his designe, and prosperously opprest  
 The old T I B E R I V S, then, in that same minute,  
 These very raskals, that now rage like *furies*,  
 Would haue proclaim'd S E I A N V S emperour  
 L E P. But what hath follow'd? T E R Sentence, by 805  
 the *Senate*;  
 To lose his head: which was no sooner off,  
 But that, and th(e)'vnfortunate trunke were seiz'd  
 By the rude multitude; who not content  
 With what the forward iustice of the state,  
 Officiously had done, with violent rage 810  
 Haue rent it limbe, from limbe. A thousand heads,  
 A thousand hands, ten thousand tongues, and voyces,  
 Employ'd at once in seuerall acts of malice!  
 Old men not staid with age, virgins with shame,  
 Late wiues with losse of husbands, mothers of children, 815  
 Losing all grieue in ioy of his sad fall,  
 Runne quite transported with their crueltie!  
 These mounting at his head, these at his face,  
 These digging out his eyes, those with his braine,  
 Sprinkling themselves, their houses, and their friends; 820  
 Others are met, haue rauish'd thence an arme,  
 And deale small peeces of the flesh for fauours;

v 793 herd] Heard Q 794 or,] or Q 795 prooffe Q, corr Fr,  
 F2. rooffe F1 originally 797 *Caprea*] *Caprea* Q 800 But,]  
 But Q, F2 801 designe] dissigne Q 802 minute, F2 minute  
 Q, Fr 804 SEIANVS] SEIANUS F2 805 *Senate*] *Senate*, F2  
 806 lose] loose Q 811 limbe,] limbe F2 813 malice ] malice.  
 Q 816 Losing] Loosing Q 817 crueltie ] cruelty. Q 818  
 mounting] minting *Sympson conj.* 819 braine,] braines F2 822  
 fauours] Fauors Q favours F2

These with a thigh ; this hath cut off his hands ;  
 And this his feet ; these fingers, and these toes ;  
 825 That hath his liuer ; he his heart : there wants  
 Nothing but roome for wrath, and place for hatred !  
 What cannot oft be done, is now ore-done.  
 The whole, and all of what was great SEIANVS,  
 And next to CAESAR did possesse the world,  
 830 Now torne, and scatter'd, as he needs no graue,  
 Each little dust couers a little part :  
 So lyes he no where, and yet often buried !

ARRVNTIVS, NVNTIVS, LEPIDVS,  
 TERENTIVS.

**M**ORE of SEIANVS ? NVN. Yes. LEP. What can  
 be added ?

We know him dead. NVN. Then, there begin your pitty.  
 835 There is inough behind, to melt eu'n *Rome*,  
 And CAESAR into teares : (since neuer slaue  
 Could yet so highly' offend, but tyrannie,  
 In torturing him, would make him worth lamenting.)  
 A sonne, and daughter, to the dead SEIANVS,  
 840 (Of whom there is not now so much remayning  
 As would giue fastning to the hang-mans hooke)  
 Haue they drawne forth for farder sacrifice ;  
 Whose tendernesse of knowledge, vnripe yeares,  
 And childish silly innocence was such,  
 845 As scarce would lend them feeling of their danger :  
 The girle so simple, as shee often askt,  
*Where they would lead her ? for what cause they drag'd her ?*  
*Cry'd, shee would doe no more. That shee could take*  
*Warning with beating.* And because our lawes

v 824 these fingers,] these, fingers, F<sub>2</sub> and these] and these, F<sub>2</sub>  
 826 hatred ] hatred Q 827 ore-done] ore done Q 828 all] All Q  
 830 graue,] grave, F<sub>2</sub> 832 buried ] buried. Q Before 833  
 ARRVNTIVS, . . . TERENTIVS ] NVNTIVS, &c Q Enter Nunthus G,  
 continuing the scene 833 More] ARR More Q 834 Then,] Then  
 Q 836 since] though Q 837 highly' offend Q : highly offend  
 Ff 838 him,] him Q 839 daughter,] daughter Q 842 farder  
 farther F<sub>3</sub>

Admit no virgin immature to die, 850  
The wittily, and strangely-cruell M A C R O,  
Deliuér'd her to be deflowr'd, and spoil'd,  
By the rude lust of the licentious hang-man,  
Then, to be strangled with her harmlesse brother.

L E P. O, act, most worthy hell, and lasting night, 855  
To hide it from the world ! N V N. Their bodies throwne  
Into the *Gemonies*, (I know not how,

Or by what accident return'd) the mother,  
Th'expulsed A P I C A T A, finds them there ;  
Whom when shee saw lie spred on the degrees, 860  
After a world of furie on her selfe,

Tearing her haire, defacing of her face,  
Beating her brests, and wombe, kneeling amaz'd,  
Crying to heauen, then to them ; at last,  
Her drowned voyce gate vp aboue her woes : 865

And with such black, and bitter execrations,  
(As might affright the gods, and force the sunne  
Runne back-ward to the east, nay, make the old  
Deformed C H A O S rise againe, t' ore-whelme  
Them, vs, and all the world) shee fills the aire ; 870

Vpbraids the heauens with their partiall doomes,  
Defies their tyrannous powers, and demands,  
What shee, and those poore innocents haue transgress'd,  
That they must suffer such a share in vengeance,  
Whilst L I V I A, L Y G D V S, and E V D E M V S liue, 875

Who, (as shee say's, and firmly vowes, to proue it  
To C A E S A R, and the *Senate*) poyson'd D R V S V S ?

L E P. Confederates with her-husband ? N V N. I. L E P.  
Strange act !

A R R. And strangely open'd : what say's now my  
monster,  
The multitude ? they reele now ? doe they not ? 880

N V N. Their gall is gone, and now they 'gin to weepe

v 851 wittily] wittely Q strangely-cruell] strangely cruell F2  
MACRO,] Macro Q 855 O,] O Q 868 back-ward] backward Q  
869 againe,] againe Q 872 demands] demaunds Q 875 LIVIA,]  
LIVIA F2 876 say's] sayes F2

The mischiefe they haue done. A R R. I thanke 'hem,  
rogues !

N V N. Part are so stupide, or so flexible,  
As they beleeeue him innocent ; all grieue :  
885 And some, whose hands yet reeke with his warme bloud,  
And gripe the part which they did teare of him,  
Wish him collected, and created new.

L E P. How fortune plies her sports, when shee begins  
To practise 'hem ! pursues, continues, addes !  
890 Confounds, with varying her empassion'd moodes !

A R R. Do'st thou hope fortune to redeeme thy crimes ?  
To make amends, for thy ill placed fauours,  
With these strange punishments ? Forbeare, you things,  
That stand vpon the pinnacles of state,  
895 To boast your slippery height ; when you doe fall,  
'You pash your selues in pieces, nere to rise :  
And he that lends you pittie, is not wise.

T E R. Let this example mooue th(e)'insolent man,  
Not to grow proud, and carelesse of the gods :  
900 It is an odious wisdom, to blaspheme,  
Much more to slighten, or deme their powers.  
For, whom the morning saw so great, and high,  
Thus low, and little, 'fore the 'euen doth lie

---

## THE END.

---

v 893 things] Things Q    896 pash] dash F2    nere] nere Q    898  
mooue] move F2    900-1 Gnomie pointing in Q. "It . . ." Much . .  
902 For,] For Q    After 903 Exeunt. G    THE END ]  
FINIS. Q

This Tragoëdie vvas first  
acted, in the yeere  
1603.

*By the Kings Maiesties*  
SERVANTS.

The principall Tragœdians were,

RIC. BVRBADGE.	}	WILL. SHAKESPEARE
AVG. PHILIPS.		IOH. HEMINGS.
WILL. SLY.		HEN. CONDEL.
IOH. LOWIN.		ALEX. COOKE.

*With the allowance of the Master of REVELLS.*

*This page was added in F1. In F2 the statements about the date, the company, and the Master of the Revels were omitted, and the list of 'The principall Tragœdians' was transferred to the back of the half-title, where it followed 'The names of the Actors'*

## APPENDIX XI

### JONSON'S HISTORICAL NOTES IN THE QUARTO

The elaborate series of marginal notes which Jonson printed in the Quarto are here transferred to an appendix in order to present the text clear as he left it. The notes were indicated by letters alphabetically for each page: thus, in the first line of the play:

SAB. HAILE <sup>a</sup>*Caius Silius*. SIL <sup>b</sup>*Titus Sabinus*, Hayle.  
the notes appear in the right-hand margin thus:

<sup>a</sup> <i>De Caio</i>	<sup>b</sup> <i>De Titio</i>
Silio. <i>vid.</i>	Sabino. <i>vid.</i>
Tacit. Lips.	Tac. <i>lib.</i> 4.
edit. 4 <sup>o</sup> .	<i>pag.</i> 79.
<i>Anna. lib.</i> I.	
<i>pag.</i> II. <i>lib.</i>	
2. <i>pag.</i> 28.	
& 33.	

In reprinting the letters have been dropped, and the words of the Quarto text to which the notes refer have been quoted, with the numbering of the lines. Slight corrections have been made in the punctuation. thus a hyphen, full stop, or comma omitted in the notes, especially on the outer edge of the margin, has been silently supplied, and no notice has been taken of the instances in which the printer has accented an 'i' instead of dotting it (for example, 'cupidine' in iv. 93). The chief errors corrected are '*Hispane*' (i. 64); '*an.*' (i. 114), 'Vide.' 'lips.' '*Caracteres*' (i. 150); 'Eudemo.' (i. 180); '*questhne*' (iii. 12); '*obscura.*' (iii. 140); '*fædata*' (iii. 182), '*apud.*' (iii. 192); '*vitum*' (iii. 463); 'Nepoti' (iii. 552); '*cup.*' (iii. 673); '*proinquæ*' (iv. 1); '*narrat.*' (iv. 235); '*proiecta.*' (iv. 309); 'Nat.' (iv. 363); '*Scen.*' (v. 83); 'Ant.' (v. 127); 'Cons.' (v. 171, note to 'BE ALL PROFANE'); 'penituisse' (ib. note to 'while the *Flamen* washeth'); 'ad cum versum' (v. 177); 'cætus' (v. 182); 'lege.' and 'Synt.' (v. 183, note to 'takes of the Honey'); '*dôiva*' (ibid., note to 'the Milke'); 'offerrendis' (v. 184, note to 'Accept our Offring').

Great care is shown in citing the authorities. Only five errors have been noted: 'cap. 2.' (II. 472); 'pa. 85.' (III. 580); 'cap. 4.' (III. 669); 'lib. 18.' (IV. 174); 'De Sosia . . pa. 94' (V. 247). Possibly these are errors of the printer: certainly Jonson could not have stated, as the note on IV. 174 makes him do, that there were eighteen books of Tacitus' *Annals*. Considering the smallness of the type and the cramped position of the notes in the margin of the page, their general accuracy is surprising.

The incorrect Latin in the note on I. 571, 'vt . . . constet' is probably the printer's: 'vt constat' appears at V. 174.

## ACT I

- 1 *Caesus Silius*] *De Caio Silio. vid Tacit. Lips. edit. 4º. Anna. lib. 1. pag 11. lib. 2 pag. 28. & 33.*
- Titius Sabinus*] *De Titio Sabino vid. Tac. lib. 4. pag. 79.*
- 11 slauerie] *Tac. Annal lib. 1. pag. 2.*
- 14 can say] *Iuuenal Sat 1 ver. 75.*
- 15 black secrets] *Et Sat. 3. ver 49 &c.*
- 21 *Latiaris*] *De Latiari, cōs. Tac. Annal lib. 4. pag. 94. & Dion. Step edit fol. lib 58. pag. 711.*
- 22 *Satrius Secundus, and Pinnarius Natta*] *De Satrio Secundo, & Pinnario Natta. Leg(e) Tacit. Annal. lib. 4. pag. 83. Et de Satrio. cons Senec. cōsol. ad Marciam*
- 28 informe] *Vid. Sen de Benef. lib. 3. cap. 26*
- 38 well, or ill] *Iuuenal Sat. 3. ver 105.*
- 43 filthier Flatteries] *Vid Tac Ann. lib. 1. pag. 3.*
- 46 all our *Consuls*] *Tac. Annal. lib. 3. pag 69.*
- 48 *Senators*] *Pedarij.*
- 52 ô Race of men] *Ibid.*
- 64 Euery ministring Spie] *Lege Tac Ann. lib. 1. pag. 24. de Romano Hispone, & ceteris. ibid et lib. 3. Ann. pag. 61 & 62. Iuuen. Sat. 10. ver. 87. Suet Tib cap. 61.*
- 67 lookes] *Vid. Tac. Ann. 1. pag 4. & lib. 3. pa. 62. Suet Tib. cap. 61. Senec. de Benef. lib. 3. cap. 26.*
- 73 good *Cremutius Cordus*] *De Cremutro Cordo vid. Tacit. Annal. lib. 4. pag. 83. 84. Senec. cōsol. ad Marciam. Dio. lib. 57. pag. 710. Suet. Aug. ca. 35. Tib. cap. 61. Cal. cap. 16.*
- 78 so downe to these] *Leg. Suet. Aug. ca. 35.*



- 80 *Drusian* ? or *Germanican* ?] *Vid. de factiō. Tac. Ann. lib. 2. pag. 39 & lib. 4. pa. 79.*
- 86 *Arruntius*] *De. Lu Ar(r)untio isto, vid. Tac. Ann. lib. 1. pag. 6. & lib. 3. pag. 60. & Dion. Rom. Hist. lib. 58. <pag. 732>*
- 105 *Drusus*] *Lege de Druso. Tac. Anna. lib. 1. pag. 9. Suet. Tib. cap. 52. Dio. Rom. hist lib. 57. pag. 699.*
- 106 A riotous youth] *Tacit. Ann lib. 3 pag. 62.*
- 112 for opposing] *vid Tac. Ann. lib 4. pag. 74.*
- 113 for gracing] *Ann lib 4 pag 75 76.*
- 114 The sonnes] *Nero. Drusus. Caius, qui in castris genitus, et Caligula nominatus. Tac An l 1*  
*Germanicus*] *De Germanico. cons. Tac. Anna. lib. 1. pag. 14. et Dion Hist. Rom. l 57 p 694.*
- 121 *Sabinus*] *vid Tac Ann. lib. 4. pag. 79.*
- 128 He could so vse] *Tac An. l. 2. pag. 47. et Dion his Rom lib. 57. pag 705.*
- 150 *Pompei's* dignity] *Vide apud Vell Patercul. Laps. 4<sup>o</sup>. pag. 30. 33. 35 47. istorum hominum Characteres.*
- 158 and that they knew] *Vide Tac lib. 2 Anna pag 28. & pag. 34. Dio. Rom. hist. lib 57. pag 705. 706.*
- 166 So was he] *Con. Tac Ann. l. 2. p. 39. de occultis mandatis Pisoni. et postea pag 42. 43 48 Oratio Do Celeris Est tibi Augustæ consciencia, est Cæsaris fauor, sed in occulto. &c. Leg. Suet. Tib cap 52. Dio. p. 706*
- 173 a fine poison] *vid Tac Annal. l 2. pag 46 & 47 lib 3. p. 54. et Suet Calig. cap 1. & 2*
- 175 *Seianus*] *De Seiano vid Tacit. Annal. l. 1. pag 9. l. 4. princip. et per tot Suet Tib. Dion lib. 57. & 58. Plin et Senec.*
- 180 *EVDEMVS*] *De Eudemo isto vid. Tac Ann. lib. 4. pag. 74.*
- 183 Fiftie *Sestertia*] *Monetæ nostræ 375 li. vide Budæum. de Asse. lib. 2. pag 64.*
- 202 *Seianus* can repayre] *De ingenio, moribus, & potentia, Seiani, leg Tac. Annal. lib 4. pag. 74. Dio. Hist. Rom. lib. 57. pag. 708.*
- 213 *Caius's*] *Caius Cæsar, dñi Augusti nepos. cons. Tacit. Ann. lib. 4 pa 74.*
- 214 prostituted] *Tac. ibid. & Diō. hist. Rom. lib. 57. pag. 706.*
- 217 the second face] *Iuuen. Sat. 10. vers. 63.*
- 220 *Tacit. ibid.*
- 225 *Dion. ibid.*
- 234 *Tacit. ibid.*
- 237 *Ibid.*

- 238 Et Dion. *ibid.*  
 249 they are three] Nero Drusus. Caligula.  
 252 Tacit. *ibid.*  
 265 Your Fortune's made] *Leg. Terētij defensionem.* Tac. *Annal. li.*  
     6. pag. 102.  
 279 *Liua*] Germanici soror, vxor Drusi. *vid.* Tac. *Ann. lib. 4. pag. 74.*  
 291 *Augusta*] Mater Tiberii. *vid.* Tac. *Annal. lib. 1. 2. 3. 4. moritur.*  
     5. Suet. Tib. Dio. *Hist. Rom. lib. 57. 58.*  
     *Vrgulania*] *Delicium Augustæ* Tac. *Ann. lib. 2. & 4.*  
 292 *Mutlia Prisca*] *Adultera Iulij Postumi* Tacit. *Ann. lib. 4.*  
     pag. 77.  
     *Plancia*] *Pisonis vxor.* Tac. *Ann. lib. 2. 3. & 4.*  
 300 only Cabinets] *Vid.* Tac. *Ann. lib. 4. pag. 74. & Plin. Nat. Hist.*  
     *lib. 29. cap. 1.*  
 340 loue to *Liua*] *Cons.* Tac. *Ann. lib. 4. pag. 74.*  
 350 Seianus loue] Tac. *ibid.*  
 367 These fellows] Eud. *specie artis frequēs secretis* Tacit. *ibid.*  
     *vid.* Plin. *Nat. Hist. lib. 29. cap. 1. in criminat Medicorū.*  
 375 We not endure] *De initio Tiberij Principatus* *vid.* Tac. *Ann.*  
     *lib. 1. pag. 23. lib. 4. pag. 75. et Suet. Tib. cap. 27. De Haterio.*  
     *vid.* Tacit. *Ann. lib. 1. pag. 6.*  
 389 We must make vp] *Cons.* Tac. *Anna. lib. 2. pag. 50. Et Suet.*  
     *Tib. cap. 27. & 29.*  
 395 Rarely dissembled] *Nullam æquē Tiberius, ex virtutibus suis*  
     *quàm dissimulationem dilgebat.* Tac. *Annal. lib. 4. pag. 95.*  
 405 those that fell] Brutī, Cassī, Catonis. &c.  
 410 when his Grace] *Vid.* Dio. *hist. Rō. lib. 57. de moribus Tiberij.*  
     *p. 690.*  
 421 Midwife] *Tyrannus fere oritur ex nimia procerum adulatione, in*  
     *principē.* Arist. *Pol. lib. 5. ca. 10. 11. et Delatorū auctoritate.*  
     *Lege* Tac. Dio. Suet. Tib. *per totū Sub quo decreta accusa-*  
     *toribus præcipua præmia* *Vid.* Suet. Tib. *cap. 61. & Sen.*  
     *Benefi. lib. 3. cap. 26.*  
 427 *Pallace-rattes*] *Tineas, Soricesque Palatij vocat istos* Sext. Aurel.  
     Victor. *et Tac. hist. li. 1. pag. 233. qui secretis criminationibus*  
     *infamant ignarum, & quō incautior deciperetur, palam lauda-*  
     *tum.* &c.  
 441 they] *Vid.* Suet. Tib. *ca. 29 et Dio. hist. Rom. lib. 57. pa. 696.*  
 454 sute of *Spaine*] Tac. *Ann. lib. 4. pag. 84. & 85.*  
 465 that haue all his deedes] *Cons.* Strab. *lib. 6. de Tib.*  
 508 choise of *Antium*] Tac. *lib. 3. pag. 71.*  
 509 Goddess] *Fortuna equestris. ibid.*

- 511 grant to *Lepidus*] Tac. *ibid.*  
 514 in confining of *Silanus*] Tac. *Ann. lib. 3. pa. 70.*  
 516 religious Sister] *Torquata virgo vestalis, cuius memoriam servat marmor Romæ. vid. Lip. cōment. in Tacit.*  
 518 for the honors] Tac. *Ann. lib. 3. pa. 71.*  
 528 thou great aide] Tacit. *Ann. lib. 4. pag. 74. 76.*  
 542 Great *Pompey's* Theatre] *Vid. Sen. cons. ad. Marc. cap. 22.*  
 548 Is my Father mad?] Tacit. *Ann. lib. 4. pag. 74. 76.*  
 552 Allow him statues?] Tac. *ibid.*  
 565 Take that] Tac. *sequimur, Ann. lib. 4. pag. 74. quanquam apud Dionē, & Zonaram, aliter legitur.*  
 571 the Crosse] *Servile (apud Romanos) et ignominiosissimū mortis genus erat suppliciū Crucis, ut ex Liu. ipso Tac. Dio. & omnibus ferè antiquis, præsertim historicis constet. vid. Plaut. in Mil. Amph. Aulu. Horat. lib. 1. Ser. 3. Petr. in Satyrico. & Iuv. Sat. 6. Pone crucē seruo, &c*  
 575 A *Castor*] *Sic Drusus ob violētiam cognominatus. vid. Dio. Hist. Rom. lib. 57. pag. 701.*

## ACT II

- 9 this potion] *Vid. Tac. Ann. lib. 4. pag. 74. 76.*  
 12 *Lygdus*] Tac. *ibid.*  
 24 Send him to me] *Spadonis animum stupro deunxit. Tac. ibid.*  
 40 *Augusta's* starre] *<Tiberi mater.>*  
 42 *Agrippina's* fires] *Germanici vxor.*  
 63 *Ceruse*] *Cerussa (apud Romanos) inter fictitios colores erat, et quæ solem ob calorem timebat. vid. Mar. lib. 2. Epig. 41. Quā cretata timet Fabulla nimbū, Cerussata timet Sabella solem.*  
 85 put away his Wife] *Ex quā tres liberos genuerat, ne pellici suspicaretur. Tac. Ann. lib. 4. pag. 74.*  
 89 discouery] *Leg. Tac. Ann. lib. 4. pag. 76.*  
 108 so prepare the poison] Tac. *ibid. Et Dion. Hist. Rom. lib. 57. pag. 709.*  
 140 *Ægyptian* slaues] *Hæ apud Romanos barbari, & vilissimi aestimab. Iuven. Marti. &c.*  
 162 only Feare] *Idem & Petro. Arbitr. Saty. & Statius. lib. 3.*  
 165 When the master Prince] *De hac consultatione. vid. Suet. Tib. cap. 55.*  
 190 *Agrippina*] *De Agrip. vid. Dio. Hist. Rom. lib. 57. pag. 694.*  
 191 dangerous] *De Seiani consil. in Agrip. leg. Tacit. Ann. lib. 1. pag. 23. & lib. 4. pag. 77. 79. de Tib. susp. lib. 3. pa. 52.*

- 193 t'vpbraide vs] *Gnaris omnibus lætam Tiberio Germanici mortē malē dissimulari.* Tac. lib. 3. *ibid.* *Huc confer Taciti narrat. de morte Pisonis.* pag. 55. & lib. 4. pag. 74. *Germanici mortē inter prospera ducebat.*
- 211 male-spirited] *De ani. virili Agrip. consul.* Tacit. Ann. lib. 1. pag. 12. & 22. lib. 2. pa. 47.
- 215 Hath them commended] Tac. Ann. lib. 4. pa. 79.
- 223 Niece] *Erat enim Neptis Augusti. Agrippæ, & Iulæ filia, Germanici vxor.* Suet. Aug. cap. 64.
- 226 fructfulness] *De faciēditate eius.* vid. Tacit. Ann. lib. 2. pag. 39. & lib. 4. pa. 77.
- 236-7 with hope Of future freedome] *Displicere regnantibus ciuilia filiorum ingemina: neque ob aliud interceptos, quā quia Pop. Rom. æquo iure complexi, reddidit libertate, agitaluerint.* Not. Tacit. lib. 2. Ann. pag. 49.
- 244 We will command] Vid. Suet. Tib. cap. 54.
- 262 Giue 'hem more place] Tac. Ann. lib. 4. pag. 76. 79.
- 278 We can no longer] *Tiberiū varijs artibus deuinxit adeo (Seianus) ut obscurum aduersum alios, sibi vni incautū, inlectūq; efficeret.* Tac. Ann. lib. 4. pa. 74. vid. Dio. Hist. Rom. lib. 57. pag. 707.
- 284 clickt all his marble Thumb's] *Premere pollicem, apud Romā. maximī fauoris erat Signū.* Hor. epist. ad Lollium *Fautor utroq; tuum laudabit pollice ludum.* Et Plin. Nat. Hist. lib. 28 cap. 2. *Pollices, cū faueamus, premere etiam prouerbio iubemur.* De interp. loci vid. Ang. Pol. Miscell. cap. xlii. et Turn. Aduer. lib. xi. cap. vi.
- 288 commanded an imperiall armie] Tac. lib. Ann. 3. pag. 63 & lib. 4. pag. 79.
- 296 Sabinus] Tac. *ibid.*
- 300 Sosia] Tac. *ibid.*
- 303-4 Cremutius Cordus] Vid. Tac. Ann. lib. 4. pag. 83. Dio. Hist. Rom. lib. 57. pag. 710. et Sen. cons. ad Mar. cap. 1. et fusiū cap. 22.
- 328 Our Edict] *Edicto ut plurimum Senatores in curiam vocatos cōstat.* Tacit. Ann. lib. 1. pag. 3.
- 330 E' ποῦ] *Vulgaris quidā versus, quem sæpe Tiber. recitasse memoratur.* Diō. Hist. Rom. lib. 58. <pag.> 729.
- 331 Iulius Postumus] *De Iulio Postumo.* vid. Tacit. Ann. lib. 4. pag. 77.
- 342 t'extoll] *Proximi Agrip. inlicebantur prauis sermonibus tumidos spiritus perstimulare.* Tacit. *ibid.*

- 349 your kindest friend] *Mutilia Prisca, quæ in animum Augustæ valida.* Tac. *ibid.*
- 350 the words] *Verba Silij immodice iactata vid. apud Tac. Ann. lib. 4. pa. 79.*
- 357 that her infinite Pride] Tacit. *Ann. lib. 4. pag. 77.*
- 369-70 Our Citty's now Deuידed] *Hæc apud Tac. lege lib. 4. Ann. pag. 79.*
- 394 *Germanicus* three sonnes] *Quorum non dubia successio, neque spargi venenum in tres poterat &c. Vid Tac Ann. lib. 4. pag. 77.*
- 408 there are others] *Silius. Sabinus. de quibus supra*
- 411 they hunt] *Tib. Tempor Delatores genus hominū publico exitio repertū, & pœnis quidē nunquam satis coercitum, per præmia eliciebātur. Tac Annal. lib. 4. pa. 82.*
- 418 *Afer*] *De Domit. Af. vid Tac Ann lib. 4. pag. 89. 93.*
- 420 doth make hast] *Quoquo facinore properus clarescere. Tacit. ibid. & infra. prosperiore eloquentiæ quàm morū famā fuit. et pag. 93. diu egens, et parto nuper præmio malè usus, plura ad flagitia accingeretur.*
- 437 to vtter] *Vid. Tac Ann. lib. 4. pag. 79*
- 442 your losse, and danger] Tac. *lib. 4. Annal. pag. 77.*
- 462 You may perceiue] Tac. *ibid. & pag. 90. & 92*
- 472 They that durst to strike] *Suet Tib. cap. <5>2. Dion. Rom. Hist. lib. 57. pag. 705.*
- 479 *Drusus* is dying] Tac. *Ann. lib. 4. pag. 74. 75. 76. 77.*
- 485 Poison] Tacit. *ibid.*
- 494 the Senate sit] *Vid. Tac. Ann lib. 4. pag. 76.*

## ACT III

- 1 'Tis only you] Tac. *Ann. lib. 4. pag. 79*
- 12 All vnder name of Treason] Tac. *ibid. Sed cuncta questione maiestatis exercita*
- 25 so low] Tac. *cod. lib. pag. 76. Consulesq; sede vulgari per speciem mæstitiæ sedentes.*
- 28 **FATHERS CONSCRIPT**] *Præfatio solennis Cōsulūm Rom. vid. Bar. Briss. de for. lib. 2.*
- 36 Wherefore sit] Tac. *Ann. lib. 4. pa. 76.*
- 78 these shalbe to you] Tac. *Ann. lib. 4. pa. 76.*
- 112 Laugh *Fathers*] Tac *ibid. Ad vana & toties inrisa reuolutus, de reddendâ Rep vique Consules, seu quis alius regimen susceperent.*

- 123 that Charm] *Tonitrua præter modum expauescebat: & turbatiore celo nunquā nō coronam lauream capite gestavit, quod fulmine afflari negetur id genus frondis.* Suet. Tib. cap. 69. vid. Plin. Nat Hist lib. 15 cap. 30.
- 140 be glad] *Semper perplexa & obscura* Orat. Tib. vid Tacit. Ann. lib. 1. pag. 5.
- 155 Caius Silus] *Citabatur reus è tribunali voce præconis.* Vid. Bar. Brisson lib. 5. de for.
- 173 These now are crimes] Vid Suet. Tiber. Tac. Dio. Senec.
- 182 First, of beginning] Tac lib. 4 pag 79 *Conscientiâ belli, Sacro-uir diu dissimulatus, victoria per avaritiam fœdata, & uxor Sosia arguebantur.*
- 183 Gallia] *Bellum Sacrouirianum in Gall. erat. Triumph. in Germ.* vid. Tac. Ann lib. 3. pag. 63
- 192 If I not proue it] Vid *accusandi formulam apud* Brissō. lib. 5. de For.
- 203 The Magistrate] Tac *Annal. lib 4 pa 79. Aduersatus est Cæsar solitū quippe Magistratibus, diē priuatis dicere, net infringendum Consulis ius, cuius vigils, &c.*
- 238 To gratifie it] Tac. Ann. lib. 4 pa 79. *Immissusq̃, Varro Consul, qui paternas immicitias obtendens, odijs Seiani per dedecus suum gratificabatur*
- 261 curl'd Sicambrians] *Populi Germ. hodie Geldri in Belgica sunt inter Mosam & Rhenum. quos celebrat Mart. Spect. 3. Crinibus in nodum tortis venēre Sicambri*
- 272 that intemperate vant] Tac. Ann. lib 4. pag. 79.
- 340 Tac. *ibid.*
- 366 This Lepidus] Tac. Ann lib. 4 pa. 80.
- 371 Cordus] Tac Ann. lib. 4. pag. 83 84. Dio Hist. Rom. lib. 57. pag. 710.
- 423 <Pollio>] *Septem dec lib Hist scripsit vid. Suid. Suet.*
- 463 Take him hence] *Egressus dein senatu, uitam abstinentiâ finiuit.* Tac. *ibid.* *Generosam eius mortē vid. apud. Sen. Cons. ad Mar. cap. 22.*
- 480 an eternall name] *Manserūt eius libri occultati & editi.* Tac. *ibid.* *Scripterat hic Cremut. bella ciuilia, & res August. exstantque Fragmenta in Suasoriâ sextâ Senec.*
- 486 The Roman race] Suet. Tib. cap. 21.
- 493 Gallus] Vid. Tac. Ann. lib 1. pag 6 lib. 2 pag 35.
- 503 Sir] Tac. Ann. lib. 4. 85.
- 514 worthy his alliance] *Filia eius Claudij filio desponsa.*
- 552 Caius Cæsar] August. *nepotū & M. Vipsanij Agrippæ filio ex Iulia.*

- 580 Tac. *Ann. lib. 4. pa. 8*(6). Dio. *lib. 58.*  
 610 Tac. *ibid.*  
 647 Macro] *De Macrone isto, vid. Dio. Rom. Hist. lib. 58. pag. 718. &*  
*Tac. Ann. lib. 6. pag. 109. 114. 115.*  
 669 to depart] Suet. *Tib. cap. 4*(o). Dio. *Rom. Hist. lib. 58. pag. 711.*  
 673 Suet. *Tib. cap. 40.* Tac. *Ann. lib. 4. pa. 91.*  
 702 Cons. Suet. *Tib. cap. 65.* Et Dion. *Hist. Rom. lib. 58. pag. 714.*  
 714 *De Macrone, et ingemo eius, cōsul. Tacit. Ann. lib. 6. pag. 114. 115.*  
 744 *Vid. Dion. Hist. Rom. lib. 58. pag. 718 &c.*

## ACT IV

- 1 You must haue patience] *Agrippina semper atrox, tum et periculo propinquæ accensa. Tacit. Ann lib 4 pag 89.*  
 21 deare *Claudia Pulchra*] *Pulchra et Furnius damnat Tac. ibid.*  
 23 added reputation] *Afer primoribus Oratorum additus, diuulgato ingenio, &c. ibid.*  
 47 *Tiberius* sitting] Tac. *Ann. lib 4. pa 91.*  
 48 *Spelunca*] *Prætorii Suet. appellat. Tib cap 39.*  
 58 in *Cæsar's* trust] *Præbuit ipsi materiam, cur amicitia cōstantiaque Seiani magis fideret. Tacit ibid.*  
 93 <Lord *Seianus*>] *Sabinum adgrediuntur cupidine Consulatus, ad quæ non nisi per Seianum aditus. neque Seiani voluntas, nisi scelere quærebatur Tac. lib. 4. pag. 94. Dio. Hist. Rom lib. 58. pag. 711.*  
 105 though they be declin'd] *Εὐχῇ, apud bonos laudatus, et grauis iniquus Tac. ibid.*  
 114 our Holes] *Haut minus turpi latebrâ quâ detestandâ, sese abstrudui; foramibus & rimis aurem admouent <Tac. ibid.>*  
 131 our Bed] *Ne Nox quidem secuta cum vxor (Neronis) vigilas, somnos, suspiria matri Liviæ, atque illa Seiano patefaceret. Tac. Ann. lib. 4. pa. 92.*  
 174 his vlcerous, and anointed Face] *Facis vlcerosa, ac plerumque medicaminibus interstincta. Tac. Ann. lib. <4> pag. 91.*  
 175 at *Rhodes*] Tac. *ibid.*  
 189 to poyson her] Tac. *Ann. lib. 4. pag. 90.*  
 193 To worke on *Nero*] Tac. *lib. eod. pag. 91. 92.*  
 207 him he clasp's] Tac. *ibid.*  
 224 Tac. *Ann. lib. 4. pag. 94. 95.*  
 234 Your Mother] Tac. *lib. 5. pag. 98.*  
 235 *Gallus*] *Asinium Gall. eodem die & conuiuium Tiberij fuisse, et eo subornante damnatum, narrat Dio. lib. 58. pag. 713.*  
 246 accusd] *Vid. Tac. lib. eod. pag. 94. Suet. Tib. cap. 53.*

- 276 Marcus Lepidus] *De Lepido isto, vid. Tac. Ann. lib. 1. pag. 6. lib. 3. pag. 60. 65. et lib. 4. pag. 81.*
- 285 His faithfull Dog] *Dio. Rom. Hist. lib. 58. pag. 712. Et Tacit. Ann. lib. 4. pag. 94.*
- 294 None, but the plaine] *Tac. Cons. Ann. lib. 4. pag. 80.*
- 309 the Gemonies] *Scala Gemonia fuerūt in Auentino, prope Templum Iunonis reginae à Camillo captis Veijs, dictum: A gemitu et planctu dictas vult Rhodig. In quas contumeliae causâ cadauera proiecta, aliquando a Carnifice vnco trahebantur. Vid. Tac. Suet Dio. Senec. Iuuenal.*
- Before 323 LACO] *De Lacon. vid. Dio. Rom. Hist lib. 58. pag 718.*
- 330 banish'd] *Suet. Tib. cap. 54.*
- 333 prisoner] *Suet. ibid.*
- 335 confin'd] *Suet. Tib. cap. 53.*
- 343 Complement of all Accusings] *Tac. vid. Ann lib. 3. pag. 62.*
- 346 Cæsars Letters] *Tac. lib. 5. Ann. pag. 98.*
- 363 Night-ey'd] *Tiberius in tenebris videret testibus Dion. Hist Rom. lib. 57. pag. 691. Et Plini. Nat. Hist. lib. 11. cap. 37.*
- 375 person fouler then all crimes] *Cons. Tac. Ann. lib 4 pag 91.*
- 378 obscure Iland] *Vid Suet. Tib de secessu Caprensi. cap. 43. Dio. pag. 715. Iuue. Sat. 10.*
- 380 spending howres] *Tac. lib. Annal. 6. pag. 106 Dio. Rom. Hist. lib. 57. pag. 706. Suet. Tib. cap. 62.*
- <388 Slaughter-house>] *Suet. ibid.*
- <392 Boyes, and beauteous Girles>] *Suet. Tib cap. 44*
- 395 Some are allur'd] *Tacit. Ann. lib. 6. pag. 100. Suet. Tib cap 43.*
- 403 the Ward] *Leg. Dio. Rom. Hist. lib. 58. pag 714.*
- Before 410 POMPONIVS] *De Pomponio, & Minutio. vid. Tac. Ann. lib. 6.*
- 410 These Letters] *Dio. Rom. Hist. lib. 58. pag. 716.*
- <414 he's well>] *Dio. ibid.*
- <419 This man receiues>] *Dio. ibid.*
- 429 New Statues] *Leg. Tac. Ann. lib 4 pag 96.*
- 431 Fortune sworne by] *Adulationis pleni omnes eius Fortunam iurabant. Dio. Hist. Rom lib. 58. pag. 714.*
- 432 Cæsars Colleague] *Dio. pag. 714. Suet Tib. cap. 65.*
- 436 Letters] *Dio. Hist. Rom. lib. 58 pag. 718.*
- 439 Regulus] *De Regulo. Cons. Dio. pag 718.*
- 443 His Partner] *Dio. ibid.*
- 447 These crosse points] *Suet. Tib. cap. 65.*
- 450 raysing Seianus] *Dio. pag. 716.*
- 455 that all the Souldiers] *Dio. pag. 714.*



- 466 (not so to feare him)] Dio. *pag.* 716.  
 485-6 prohibited to Sacrifice] Dio. *Hist. Rom. lib.* 58. *pag.* 718.  
 494 without his titles] Dio. *Hist. Rom. lib.* 58. *pag.* 718.  
 501-2 th' escape of young *Caligula*] Dio. *pag.* 717.  
 507 against him] Dio. *ibid.*  
 509 H'has employd] *De Pagoniano. vid. Tac. Annal. lib.* 6. *pag.* 101.  
*alibi Paconiano.*  
 516 he ha's a Wife] *Tac. cons. Annal. lib.* 6. *pag.* 114.

## ACT V

- 5 Great, and high] *De fastu Seiani. leg. Dion. Hist. Rom. lib.* 58.  
*pag.* 715. *Et Tacit. Ann. lib.* 4. *pag.* 96.  
 29 your Statue] Dio. *Hist. Rom. lib.* 58. *pag.* 717.  
 35 The Head] Dio. *ibid.*  
 52 the falling of our bed] Dio. *lib.* 58. *pag.* 715.  
 55 running of the Cat] Dio. *pag.* 716.  
 59 The fate of some] Dio. *ibid.*  
 62 taking your last Augury] Dio. *ibid.*  
 83 grane of Incense] *Grani Turis. Plaut. Pænu. Act. 1. Scæn. 1.*  
*Et. Ouid. lib.* 4. *Fast.*  
 85 her gratefull Image] Dio. *Hist. Rom. lib.* 58. *pag.* 717.  
 90 *Homie, Milke, and Poppie*] *De Sacris Fortunæ, vid. Lil. Gre. Gyr.*  
*Synt. 17. Et Stuch. lib. de Sacrif. Gent. pag.* 48.  
 96 Entr'd but nowe] Dio. *Hist. Rom. lib.* 58. *pag.* 718.  
 101 Edict] *Edicto ut plurimum Senatores in Curiam vocatos cōstat: ex*  
*Tac Ann. lib.* 1 & *Liu lib.* 2. *Fest. Pō. lib.* 15. *vid. Bar. Briss.*  
*de form. lib.* 1. & *Lip. Sat. Menip.*  
 105 *Apollo's Temple*] Dio. *ibid.*  
 107 for the *Prouost*] Dio. *ibid.*  
 113 letters] Dio. *ibid.*  
 127 seauen *Cohoris*] *De præfecto vigilū vid. Ros. Ant. Rom. lib.* 7. *et*  
*Dio. Rom. Hist. lib.* 55. *<pag.* 648 *>.*  
 145-6 Those we must Hold] Dio. *Hist. Rom. lib.* 58. *pag.* 718.  
 153 to possesse the *Pallace*] *Vid. Tac. Ann. lib.* 6. *pag.* 107. *Et*  
*Suet. Tib. cap.* 65.  
 171 *TVBICINES. TIBICINES*] *H1 omnibus sacrificijs interesse solebant.*  
*Ros. Ant. Rom. lib.* 3. *Stuch. de Sac. pag.* 72.  
*FLAMEN*] *Ex ijs, qui Flamines Curiales dicerentur. vid. Lil. Greg.*  
*Gyr. Synt. 17. & Onup. Pæuin. Rep. Rom. Comment. 2.*  
*BE ALL PROFANE*] *Moris antiqui erat, præcones præcedere, &*  
*sacris arcere profanos. Cons. Briss. Ros. Stuch. Lil. Gyr. &c.*  
*while the Flamen washeth*] *Observatum antiquis inuenimus, ut*

- quis rem divinam facturus esset, lautus, ac mundus accederet, & ad suas levandas culpas, se imprimis reum dicere solitum, & noxæ pœnituisse.* Lil. Gyr. Synt. 17.
- 174 *pure Hands*] *In sacris puras manus, puras vestes, pura vasa, &c. Antiqui desiderabant. ut ex Virg. Mart. Tibul. Ovi. &c. pluribus locis constat.*
- 176 *your Ghyrlonds*] *Alius ritus, sertis aras coronare, & verbenas imponere.*
- 177 *FAVOR YOVR TONGVES*] *Huiusmodi vocibus silentium imperatum fuisse constat. Vid. Sen. in lib. de beata vita. Seru. & Don. ad eum versum. lib. 5. Æneid. Ore fauete omnes, & cingite tempora ramis.*
- 178 *Great mother*] *His solemmibus præstationibus in sacris utebantur.*
- 182 *FAVOR IT WITH YOVR TONGVES*] *Quibus, in clausu, populus vel cætus à præconibus favere iubebatur. id est bona verba fari. Talis enim altera huius formulæ interpretatio apud Briss. lib. 1. extat. Ovi. lib. 1. Fast. Linguis animisq. fauete. Et Metam. lib. 15 — primumque Æneadæ præstant & mente, & voce favorem.\**
- 182 s.d. *takes of the Honey*] *Vocabatur hic Ritus Libatio. lege Rosin. Ant. lib. 3. Bar. Brissô de form. lib. 1. Stuchium de Sacrif. Et Lil. Synt. 17.*
- the Milke*] *In sacris Fortunæ lacte, non vino libabant. iisdem Test. Talia sacrificia αἰοῖνα, & νηφάλια dicta. Hoc est sobria, & vino carentia.*
- put seuerall branches*] *Hoc reddere erat, & litare, id est propitiare, & votum impetrare secundum Nonium Marcellum. Litare etiam Mac lib. 3 cap. 5. explicat, sacrificio facto placare numen. In quo sens leg. apud Plaut Suet. Senec. &c.*
- 184 *Accept our Offring*] *Solennis formula, in domus cuius numini offerendis*
- 186 *Fortune auerts her face*] *Leg Dio. Rom. Hist. lib. 58. pag. 717. de hoc sacrificio.*
- 203 *titled*] *Tac. Ann. lib. 4. pa. 96.*
- 204 *sacrific'd vnto*] *Dio. lib. 58. pag. 716 717.*
- Before 211 MINVTIVS*] *De Minutio. vid. Tac Ann. lib. 6.*
- 217 *A Rope*] *Dio. Hist. Rom. lib. 58. pag. 717.*
- 218 *a fiery Meteor*] *Vid. Sen. Nat. Quæst. lib. 1. cap. 1.*
- 225 *Send for the Tribunes*] *Dio. pag. 718.*
- 241 *that did helpe*] *Vid. Tac Ann. lib. 1. pag. 23.*
- 243 *cut downe*] *Ann. lib. 4. pag. 74. 75. Et Dio. lib. 57. pag. 709.*
- 245 *Silius*] *Tac. Lib. 4. pag. 79.*
- Sabinus*] *Et pag. 94.—Dion. Rom. Hist. lib. 58. 712.*

- 247 *Cordus*] *De Cremutio Cor. vid. Dio. Rom. Hist. lib. 57. pag. 710.*  
*Tacit. Ann. lib. 4. pa. 83.*  
*Sosia*] *De Sosia. Tac. Annal. lib. 4. pa. <79>.*  
*Claudia Pulchra*] *De Clau. & Furnio. quare Tac. lib. 4. pa. 89.*  
248 *Gallus*] *De Gallo. Tac. lib. 4. pag. 95. & Dio. lib. 58. pag. 713.*  
250 *Agrippine*] *De Agr. Ner. & Dru. leg. Suet. Tib. cap. 53. 54.*  
252 *Caio*] *De Caio. Cons. Dio. lib. 58. pag. 717.*  
288 giuing order] *Vid. Dio. lib. 58. pag. 718.*  
296 Mine enemy] *Dio. ibid.*  
299 <Macro is without>] *Dio. ibid.*  
323 <Macro ! most welcome>] *Dio. Hist. Rom. lib. 58. pag. 718.*  
325 the noone of Night] *Meridies noctis Varr Marcipor. vid. Non. Mar cap 6*  
330 <That still holds out>] *Dio. ibid.*  
341 <charg'd to come here by night>] *Dio. ibid.*  
354 <I would no realous scruple>] *Dio. ibid.*  
363 *Tribunicall Dignity*] *Dio. ibid. Vid. Suet. de oppress. Seian. Tib. cap 65*  
400 <Is not my Lord here ?>] *Dio. ibid.*  
420 the most honor'd] *Dio lib. Hist Rom. 58 pag. 718.*  
428 The mood is chāg'd] *Dio Hist. Rom lib 58 pag 715.*  
432 ALL HAYLE] *AVE matutina vox salutant propria, apud Romanos. Vid. Briss. de for lib. 8.*  
454 <Sanquinius>] *De Sanquinio. vid Tac. Ann. lib. 6.*  
456 <another>] *Et de Haterio. ibid.*  
458 <Liburnian Porters>] *Ex Liburnia, magnæ, & procera staturæ mittebantur, qui erant Rom. Lecticarij. Test Iuuen. Sat. 3. vers. 240 — turbâ cedente vehetur Drues, & ingenti curret super ora Liburno.*  
464 <It is a note>] *Dio. ibid.*  
469 necessities] *Dio. ibid.*  
475 shut] *Dio. pag. 718.*  
484 bounteous Lord] *Vid. acclamation. Senat Dio. pag. 719*  
489 Rector of an Isle] *Dio. Hist Rom. lib. 58. 715.*  
492 not slack] *Dio. pag 719.*  
497 <get more>] *Dio. ibid.*  
514 MEMMIVS REGVLVS] *Vid. Brissonium : de formul. lib. 2. Et Lipsium Sat. Menip.*  
516 APOLLO. PALATINE] *Palatinus, à monte Palatino, dictus.*  
523 FATHERS CONSCRIPT] *Solemnis præfatio Consulium in relationibus. Dio. pag 718.*  
531 *tribunicall dignity*] *Vid. Suet. Tib. cap. 65.*

- 533 WHAT PLEASETH NOV] *Alia formula solemnis. vid. Briss. lib. 2.*  
 534 <Read>] Dio. pag. 719.  
 546 IF. YOV. CONSCRIPT. FATHERS] *Solenne exordium Epistolar. apud Romanos. cons. Briss. de formul. lib. 8.*  
 562 <in a free State>] Vid. Sue. Tib. cap. 28.  
 588 <Some there be>] *De hac Epist. vid. Dio. Hist. Rom. lib. 58. pag. 719. Et Iuuen. Satyr. 10.*  
 623 <His Gout>] Dio. Hist. Rom. lib. 58. pag. 719.  
 636 <be present>] Dio. *ibid*  
 658 <Haile>] Dio. *ibid*.  
 692 Leg. Iuuen. Satyr. 10. [Misplaced: transfer to 698 'His images'].  
 718 <And this man fall>] Dio. lib. 58. pag. 719 720 &c.  
 737 <Now great Seianus>] Vid. Dion. Hist. Rom. lib. 58. pag. 720. 721. 722. 723.  
 771 <Crying in scorne>] Vid. Iuuen. Sat. 10.  
 777 <the Senate>] Dio. Rom. Hist. lib. 58. pag. 720.  
 799 <They follow Fortune>] Iuue. Sat. 10.  
 805 <Sentence, by the Senate>] Dio *ibid*.  
 807 <But that>] Senec. lib. de Tranq. Anim. cap. 11. *Quo die illum Senatus deduxerat, Populus in frusta diuisit, &c*  
 840 there is not now so much remaining] Vid. Senec. lib. de Tranq. Ani. cap. xi.  
 846 The Gidle so simple] Tac. Ann. lib. 5. pa. 99 Et Dion. lib. 58. pag. 720.  
 850 no virgin immature] *Lex enim non tam virginitati ignotum cautumque voluit quā ætati. Cons. Lips. Comment. Tac.*  
 859 *Apicata*] Dio. *ibid*.  
 860 Degrees] *Scalæ Gemoniæ in quas erant projecta damnator. Corpora.*  
 875 <Whilst Livia>] Dio. Hist. Rom. lib. 58. pag. 720.

# NOTE.

Three further corrections in the Quarto text were found too late for insertion on page 334.

Sig H 2	iv. 21	Neice <i>A, B1, 2, D1,</i> <i>2, 3</i>	Neec <i>C</i> (a <i>miscorrec-</i> <i>tion</i> )
Sig M 3	v 663	An honour . . . man, <i>B1, 2, D2</i>	(An honour . . . man) <i>C, D1, 3; missing in A</i>
Sig M 4 <sup>v</sup>	v 765	<i>Capitoll, . . . Circke,</i> <i>B1, D2</i>	<i>Capitoll, . . . Circke :</i> <i>B2, C, D1, 3 missing</i> <i>in A</i>

The Quarto which Jonson used for press-copy for the 1616 Folio cannot have contained the second of these corrections; it is a punctuation which he would have favoured. The bracket is twice used in the context which follows, at lines 672 and 677.

---

## EASTWARD HO

---



## THE TEXT

The play of *Eastward Ho* was entered on the Stationers' Register by William Aspley and Thomas Thorpe on September 4, 1605. The entry is as follows :

	iiij <sup>o</sup> Septembris
William Aspley Thomas Thorp	Entred for their Copies vnder the handes of Master Wilson and Master ffeild warden A Comedie called Eastward Ho : <span style="float: right;">vj<sup>d</sup></span>

Three editions of the play in quarto with the names of the authors and with the date 1605 were issued by William Aspley only. Similarly, on 5 July 1604, Aspley and Thorpe had registered Marston's *Malcontent*, but only Aspley's name appears in the imprint of the published work.

The title in the three Quartos is 'Eastward Hoe. As It was playd in the Black-friers. By The Children of her Maiesties Reuels. Made by Geo: Chapinan. Ben: Ionson. Ioh: Marston. At London Printed for William Aspley.'

Collation of the First Quarto : A-I in fours, with the title on A, the Prologue on A verso, and the text beginning on A 2. In the running title some copies have at A 3 'ASTWARDED HOE', which was miscorrected to 'EASTWARDED HOE'.

There are two states of the First Quarto. The first state has leaves E 3 and E 4, with the famous gibe at the 'few industrious Scots' out in Virginia, in their original form (iii. ii. 308-iii. 113, 'And gird me so perhaps. . . Well, God pardon her, for my part, and I doe Ile be'). Mr. T. J. Wise's copy is the only one now known which preserves this passage in the text. But the two leaves have been inserted in the Dyce copy before the cancels which replaced them. Unfortunately Mr. Wise's copy has the title-page of the Third Quarto. The text of the present edition has been based upon this copy, marked 'A' in the list of variants below.

Six copies of the First Quarto in the second state with the cancels of E 3 and E 4 have been collated with it : namely—

The Dyce copy at South Kensington ( = B in the list of variants).



The British Museum copy, with press-mark C 56. d. 32 (= C).

The Bodleian copy, Malone 765 (= D).

The copy belonging to Worcester College, Oxford (= E).

The Britwell copy, now in America (= F).

The Kemble copy, formerly at Chatsworth, now in the Henry E. Huntington library (= G).

Of these, the Dyce copy is made up: not only have the original E 3 and E 4 been inserted,<sup>1</sup> but F 4 has been supplied from a shorter copy.

The printer was George Eld. He is identified by the ornament on the title-page—two volutes with foliage.<sup>2</sup> This is found with Eld's name or initials in Camden's *Remaines* (for S. Waterson), 1605; *The Returne from Par-nassus* (for John Wright), 1606; Dekker and Webster's *North-ward Hoe*, 1607; and Marston's *What You Will* (for Thomas Thorpe), 1607. Without Eld's name in the imprint, it is found in John Gordon's *The Vnion of Great Brittain* (for William Aspley), 1604; Sir R. Dallington's *A Survey of the Great Dukes state of Tuscany* (for Edward Blount), 1605; Chapman's *Al Fooles* (for Thomas Thorpe), 1605; and G. Merriton's *A Sermon of Nobilitie* (for Thomas Clarke), 1607.

A list of corrections made in this Quarto while it was passing through the press is given here. Lapses in punctuation are not recorded: sometimes a stop is clear in one copy, faint in another, and seemingly omitted in a third. These are bad printing, not deliberate changes, and usually they are not recorded.

Sig. A 3	1. 1	79	Boy ? A	Boy. <i>the rest</i>
Sig. A 4 <sup>v</sup>	1. 11	22	smockes A	smocks <i>the rest</i>
		24	bodkins . A	bodkins : - - <i>the rest</i>
		48	Apes A	Ape's <i>the rest</i>
Sig. B		56	Tailer. A	Tailer ! <i>the rest</i>
		69	there, A	there ! <i>the rest</i>

<sup>1</sup> These original leaves are indicated in the list of variants by 'B (1)'.

<sup>2</sup> See Sayle, *Early English Books in the University Library, Cambridge*, p. 752.

Sig. B	i. ii. 81	<i>Baboons. Issu. A</i>	<i>Baboons ? Issu / the rest</i>
	82	countrey <i>A</i>	countrey ? <i>the rest</i>
Sig. B 3	ii. 1. 67	euermore <i>A</i>	euermore <i>the rest</i>
Sig. B 3 <sup>v</sup>	89	Am pum pull eo, Pullo , showse quot the Cal- uer. <i>C, F, G</i>	( <i>Vmp</i> ) puldo, Pulldo ; showse quoth the Caluer. <i>A, B, D, E</i>
Sig. C <sup>v</sup>	ii. ii. 78	craft <i>A, C</i>	craft, <i>B, D, E</i>
Sig. C 2	104	hundred, <i>A, C, G</i>	hundred <i>B, D, E</i>
	124-5	be call me <i>A, C, G</i>	bee calme <i>B, D, E</i>
Sig. C 4	274	Angell : to <i>A, C, G</i>	Angell. To <i>B, D, E</i>
	"	too which <i>A, C, G</i>	to which <i>B, D, E</i>
Sig. E	iii. ii. 184	ende — <i>A, C, F, G</i>	ende ! <i>B, D, E</i>
	189	eude <i>A</i>	ende <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
Sig. E <sup>v</sup>	206	voyadge <i>A, C, D</i>	voyage <i>B, E, F, G</i>
	208	yonr <i>A, C, D</i>	your <i>B, E, F, G</i>
	221	enjoy <i>A, C, D</i>	enjoy <i>B, E, F, G</i>
	223	<i>hunger ! A, C, D</i>	<i>hunger B, E, F, G</i>
Sig. E 2	230	seruice <i>A, C, D</i>	seruice <i>B, E, F, G</i>
	262	eis <i>A, C, D</i>	his <i>B, E, F, G</i>
		Ielosie <i>C</i>	Ielosie , <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	266	To finde <i>A, C, D</i>	Two fine <i>B, E, F, G</i>
		Beastes ! <i>A, C, D</i>	Beastes <i>B, E, F, G</i>
		Lawyer ? <i>A, C, D</i>	Lawyer ! <i>B, E, F, G</i>
Sig. E 3	314	was <i>A, B (1)</i>	shas <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	315	Gentlemen ! <i>A, B (1)</i>	Gentlemen ? <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	316	Gossip : <i>A, B (1)</i>	Gossip ! <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	319	now <i>A, B (1)</i>	now - - <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	322	will <i>A, B (1)</i>	wil <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	323	Why <i>A, B (1)</i>	why <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	330	wil <i>A, B (1)</i>	will <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	331	by'th <i>A, B (1)</i>	by th' <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
		word, <i>A, B (1)</i>	word <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	336	waite <i>A, B (1)</i>	wait <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
		sir, <i>A, B (1)</i>	sir. <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	340	then <i>A, B (1)</i>	them <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
		seruice <i>A, B (1)</i>	seruise <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	iii. iii. heading	<i>Spendall &amp; A, B (1)</i>	<i>Spendall and B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	3	but <i>A, B (1)</i>	bnt <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	5	catchword <i>Spend A, B (1)</i>	<i>Spend B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
Sig. E 3 <sup>v</sup>	6	<i>Spend. A, B (1)</i>	<i>Spend, B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	10	Pewter <i>A, B (1)</i>	Pewter, <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
		And <i>A, B (1)</i>	And <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>

Sig. E 3 m. iii.	13	commaund <i>A, B</i> (1)	command <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	17	Country <i>A, B</i> (1)	Conntry <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	31	Gould <i>A, B</i> (1)	Gold <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	33	stick <i>A, B</i> (1)	sticke <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
		Cappes <i>A, B</i> (1)	Capps <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	34	and and groates <i>A, B</i> (1)	and groates <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	40	thē <i>A, B</i> (1)	then <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
		shal <i>A, B</i> (1)	shall <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	40-1	Sergeants, or Cour- tiers <i>A, B</i> (1)	Sargeants, or   Cour- tiers <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	41	Intelligencers, <i>A, B</i> (1)	Intelligencers <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
Sig. E 4	41-4	onely a few . . . friends to <i>A, B</i> (1)	om <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	44-8	English men . . . doe heere <i>A, B</i> (1)	om <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	51	a Noble man <i>A, B</i> (1)	any other officer <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	52	Slaue, you <i>A, B</i> (1)	Slaue You <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	53	Pandar To <i>A, B</i> (1)	<i>Pandar</i> To <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
		riches <i>A, B</i> (1)	Riches <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
		fortune enough, <i>A, B</i> (1)	Forune mough <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	54	villanie <i>A, B</i> (1)	Villany <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
		wit. <i>A, B</i> (1)	wit. Besides, there, we shall haue no more Lawthen Conscience, and not too much of either, serue God inough, eate and drunke inough, and inough is as good as a Feast. <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	56	indefferent <i>A, B</i> (1)	indifferent <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	57	And if <i>A, B</i> (1)	And If <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	59	continually <i>A, B</i> (1)	continually <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
		tell <i>A, B</i> (1)	till <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	60	See <i>A, B</i> (1)	See, <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>

Sig. E 4 After 60 s.d. III III.		<i>Petronell.</i> A, B (1)	<i>Petronell with his Fol- lowers.</i> B, C, D, E, F, G
	62	Now A, B (1)	Nowe B, C, D, E, F, G
	63	hand. Come <i>Drawer</i> , A, B (1)	hand Come <i>Drawer</i> . B, C, D, E, F, G <sup>1</sup>
	64	murthe A, B (1)	murth B, C, D, E, F, G
	65	pretty A, B (1)	prety B, C, D, E, F, G
		companie A, B (1)	company B, C, D, E, F, G
	72	Collonell A, B (1)	Colonell B, C, D, E, F, G
	73	it A, B (1)	it, B, C, D, E, F, G
	74	one, A, B (1)	one B, C, D, E, F, G
	75	touche A, B (1)	touch B, C, D, E, F, G
	76	yee A, B (1)	ye B, C, D, E, F, G
	77	forehead A, B (1)	forehead B, C, D, E, F, G
	78	both. A, B (1)	both, B, C, D, E, F, G
Sig E 4 <sup>v</sup>	79	maister A, B (1)	Maister B, C, D, E, F, G
	81	god A, B (1)	God B, C, D, E, F, G
	83-4	Counsaille Maister A, B (1)	Counsaille, M B, C, D, E, F, G
	85	Maister A, B (1)	M B, C, D, E, F, G
	86	draw   vs A, B (1)	drawe vs   B, C, D, E, F, G
	87	Captaine   Seagull A, B (1)	Captain <i>Seagull</i>   B, C, D, E, F, G
	88	a   pricke A, B (1)	a pricke B, C, D, E, F, G
	89	<i>Pet.</i> I A, B (1)	<i>Sea.</i> I B, C, D, E, F, G
	92	Maister <i>Bramble</i> ; A, B (1)	M <i>Bramble</i> , B, C, D, E, F, G
	93	you   shall A, B (1)	you shal   B, C, D, E, F, G
	94	so maister A, B (1)	so, M B, C, D, E, F, G
		he A, B (1)	hee B, C, D, E, F, G
		pledge A, B (1)	pleadge B, C, D, E, F, G
	96	<i>Secur.</i> A, B (1)	<i>Secu</i> B, C, D, E, F, G
After 96 s.d.		<i>disguis'd</i> A, B (1)	<i>disguis'd</i> B, C, D, E, F, G
	97	do A, B (1)	doe B, C, D, E, F, G
	98	<i>Quick</i> : A, B (1)	<i>Quick.</i> B, C, D, E, F, G
	102	me A, B (1)	mee B, C, D, E, F, G

<sup>1</sup> The words 'Come *Drawer*' are inset like a new paragraph, leaving 'hand' in a line by itself.

Sig. E 4 <sup>v</sup> III. iii.	102	Cosin <i>A, B</i> (1)	Cosen <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	103	me <i>A, B</i> (1)	mee <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
		entreate <i>A, B</i> (1)	entreat <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	104	Mauster <i>A, B</i> (1)	<i>M. B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	107	you <i>A, B</i> (1)	you <i>B, D, F, G</i> : corrected in <i>C, E</i>
			<i>Secu. B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	108	<i>Secur. A, B</i> (1)	<i>Secu. B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
		counsaille, Mauster <i>A, B</i> (1)	Counsaille, <i>M. B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	110	<i>Quic. A, B</i> (1)	<i>Quich. B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
		time, <i>A, B</i> (1)	time, <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
Sig. F <sup>v</sup>	112	<i>Secur. A, B</i> (1)	<i>Secu. B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
		her, <i>A, B</i> (1)	her <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	113	be <i>A, B</i> (1)	bee <i>B, C, D, E, F, G</i>
	153	hant <i>C, F, G</i>	haunt <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	176	learned <i>C, F, G</i>	learn'd <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	186	<i>Exit. C, F, G</i>	<i>om. A, B, D, E</i>
Sig. F 2	IV 1. 27	thee yet, <i>C, F, G</i>	thee, yet a <i>A, B, D, E</i>
Sig. F 2 <sup>v</sup>	58	a nother <i>C, D, F, G</i>	another <i>A, B, E</i>
Sig. F 3 <sup>v</sup>	110	Thanck <i>C, F, G</i>	Thanke <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	117	omenous <i>C, F, G</i>	ominous <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	119 s d	<i>Enter C, F, G</i>	<i>Enter A, B, D, E</i>
	129	rootes, <i>C, F, G</i>	rootes <i>A, B, D, E</i>
Sig. F 4	136	Bote <i>C, F, G</i>	Boate <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	153	See? <i>C, F, G</i>	See! <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	160	Pray you <i>C, F, G</i>	Pray you, <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	162	dauoir <i>C, F, G</i>	d'auoir, <i>A, B, D, E</i> <sup>1</sup>
	163-4	souffris' infortune <i>C, D, F, G</i>	souffris' infortune <sup>2</sup> <i>A, B, E</i>
	165	1 Gen. <i>C, F, G</i>	1. Gent. <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	166	Speaker's name omitted in <i>C, F, G</i>	Pet. <i>A, B, D, E</i>
		Monsieur <i>C, F, G</i>	Monsieur <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	168	2 Gen. <i>C, F, G</i>	2. Gent. <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	170	y'are, <i>C, F, G</i>	y'are <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	171	are you <i>C, F, G</i>	are you, <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	173	ith, <i>C, F, G</i>	ith' <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	176	bote <i>C, F, G</i>	boate <i>A, B, D, E</i>
	177	Farewell, farewell, <i>C, F, G</i>	Farewel, farewell, <i>A, B, D, E</i>
Sig. G	234	Ahcyme <i>B</i>	Achyme the rest
	242	asigne <i>B</i>	assigne the rest
	246	nerae <i>B</i>	neare the rest
	254	for <i>B</i>	for, the rest

<sup>1</sup> The *d* is broken.<sup>2</sup> A mis correction.

Sig. G <sup>v</sup>	iv. i. 271	retraite B	retreate the rest
	iv. ii. 13 c w.	ad,n B, C, E, F	and, A, D <sup>1</sup>
Sig. G 2 <sup>v</sup>	88	Brother,. B	Brother,) the rest
Sig. G 3	110 s.d.	Goulding B	Goulding the rest
Sig. G 4 <sup>v</sup>	224	Thing B	Thing, the rest <sup>2</sup>
	237	so B	to the rest
	253	into a B	in a the rest
	254	Petronell B	Petronell the rest
	257	thē B	thē. the rest
	260-1	knight, left, He A, C, D, E, F	knight. left, He G <sup>3</sup>
Sig. H	292	fortune, F	fortune the rest
Sig. I	v. iii. 38	Why. A, B, C, D, E, G	Why, F
Sig. I <sup>v</sup>	88	co mmit A	co mm t the rest
Sig. I 2	iv. 8	to your A	to our the rest <sup>4</sup>
Sig. I 4	v 179 c w	reisttu B, C, D, E, F, G	restitu A

The last line of F 3 verso, 'Sea. Not a pennie by heauen'. (iv. i. 147) is ranged with the catchword 'Pet'. As F 4 begins, 'Pet. Not a pennie betwixt us.' it looks as if the line were at first omitted because of the echoed words, but was restored to the text when the omission was noticed. The two pages do not balance. F 3 verso has forty lines, F 4 has only the normal thirty-nine.

Besides cancelling two leaves, the printer reset three pages earlier in the play—A 4 verso, containing i. ii. 21-54 ('thorough with veluet . . . my steele in-'), and C verso, C2, containing ii. ii. 56-126 ('Your place maintain'd it . . . all in good part'). These belated attempts to clear the text of dangerous matter are of great interest, and may be studied in the facsimiles supplied in this edition (pp. 508-14).

In the first of these passages, i. ii. 21-54, nine lines have been excised from the text. Blank spaces are left between all the speeches, and the end of Girtrude's last speech (ll. 42-50) has lost the equivalent of three lines. Apparently the printer was responsible for this: any one of the authors, if he had been appealed to, could have supplied a stop-gap.

<sup>1</sup> The catchword is cropped off in G.

<sup>2</sup> In F apparently 'Thing', perhaps an ill-printed comma.

<sup>3</sup> A miscorrection for 'knight, left. He'. In B there is a doubtful period after 'left'.

<sup>4</sup> The spacing shows that a letter has dropped out.

The printer, feeling that the cut would leave too much 'white', printed lines short in this deranged form :

Now (Ladies my comfort)  
 What a prophane Apes here !  
 Tailer, *Poldavis*, prethee fit it  
 fit it : is this a right Scot ?  
 Does it clip close ? and beare vp round ?

A vestige of a gibe against the Scotch survives in the farthingale that 'clips close'. At the head of the scene is a very full stage-direction, beginning '*Enter Girtred, Mildrid, Bettrice, and Poldauy a Taylor, Poldauy with a faire gowne, Scotch Varthingall, and French fall in his arms*', so that play was made with this particular property. Mildred enters sewing, '*& Bettrice leading a Monkey after her*'. Bettrice, who is apparently a waiting-woman and might have been utilized later in the scene (111 ii) where my Lady Flash takes coach, appears here only and makes a one-line remark (l. 65) 'The knights come forsooth'. No light is thrown on the inconsequent antics of the monkey: did Bettrice make it perform some trick at the mention of the word 'Scotch'? Tricks of this kind were fashionable, and some of the performers have been immortalized by Donne, Sir John Davies, and Ben Jonson.

He no more doth move  
 Then . . . thou O Elephant or Ape wilt doe,  
 When any names the King of Spain to you,

Donne writes in his first *Satire* (ll. 79-82),<sup>1</sup> and Jonson in the Induction to *Bartholomew Fair* refers to a juggler with 'a wel-educated Ape' that will 'come ouer the chaine, for the *King of England*, and backe againe for the *Prince*, and sit still on his arse for the *Pope*, and the *King of Spaine*!' <sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Compare Sir John Davies's 30th *Epigram*.

<sup>2</sup> There is a possibility that a slight excision was made later in this scene at the foot of B verso and the top of B 2, after Touchstone's quotation

'*The greatest riuers flow from little springs* (l. 11. 127 foll.)

'*Worke upon that now*' follows close on the quotation; then a space equivalent to two lines is blank. The page ends with the stage-direction

The second tampering with the text—again the printer's, as it is the short and sharp remedy of leaving out lines—occurs at II. ii. 56–126. The opening passage contains some reflexion on the hollowness and treachery of Court life. Something has been excised before the first line of the passage, which is the top line of C verso: the catchword of the previous page does not tally with the text. C ends thus:

'Hyn. But ah-las *Francke*, how will all this bee maintain'd now?

C verso begins:

c

*Quick.'*

'Your place maintain'd it before.

*Quicksilver.* Why and I maintaine my place. Ile to the Court, . . .'

The words 'Your place maintain'd it before' would naturally have been printed as the last line of C: they complete *Sindefy's* speech.

On C verso there are blank lines between 77–8, 79–80; at 69 the printer has spun out seven monosyllables into a line by printing 'Syn.' in full and by wide spacing:

'*Synnedefie.* Well *Francke*, well; the Seas you say'

Similarly in the last speech of C verso (II. 91–2) he has spun out one line into two:

'*Quicksilver.* A pox on you, who taught you this morallitie?'

On C2 four lines are excised at lines 107–8, *Quicksilver's* speech 'I Dad . . . safest course', which has two blank lines before it and two blank lines after it.

Another sign of compression in this scene is the confusion of the stage-directions. The scene opens with the heading '*Securitie solus*': he delivers a short speech, and then

'*All but Touch-stone, Mildred, & Goulding depart*'. B2 starts with a short line 'No, no yon'd stand my hopes', followed up by a new turn in the action, though the speech is continuous '*Mildred*, come hither daughter'. But it is possible in this passage that the printer thought the long stage-direction rounded off the page better. An inconsistency in the text at III. 1. 54, 64 may point to some revision: the sailors who are to conduct the Virginian voyage are Captain Seagull and his 'associates' *Scapethrift* and *Spendall*. But two speeches (II 54 and 64) are headed 'Spoyl'. Cf. vol. III, p. 5.



'Enter Quicksiluer . . . gartering himselfe. Securitie following'. After line 28 we have a stage-direction 'Enter Syndefie, with Quicke-siluers doublet, Cloake, Rapier, and Dagger'; she takes part in the dialogue about the Court and is present at line 94 when Security addresses her, and at line 178, where Quicksilver broaches his scheme for utilizing 'my sweete Sinne here'. But after line 186 there is a pointless stage-direction 'Enter Sindefie'.

More significant than the preceding examples is the cancelling of the two leaves E 3 and E 4, because in these a satirical reference to the Scotch has been deleted and a short passage added later to fill the gap in the text. In the Bodleian copy E 3 and E 4 are on the same half sheet, and the stubs of the cancelled leaves, with enough of the inside margin to hold the stitches of E 1 and E 2, show between E 4 'verso and F.<sup>1</sup> Evidently one or more of the authors had to be consulted over the changes made in this passage.

E 3 was reset. The line-arrangements are identical, but there are sixteen minor variants of spelling and punctuation on this page. In E 3 verso the original leaf had thirty-eight lines of text; the cancel has thirty-seven. Again there are small variants, but two sentences at the foot of E 3 verso and the top of E 4 were cut out. After a description of the gold and jewels of Virginia, its temperate climate and abundance of game, Captain Seagull touches on the freedom of the life there, and the absence of bailiffs, courtiers, lawyers, and informers: there is, however, one drawback—

only a few industrious Scots perhaps, who indeed are disperst ouer the face of the whole earth. But as for them, there are no greater friends to English-men and *England* when they are out an't, in the world, then they are. And for my part, I would a hundred thousand of 'hem were there, for wee are all one Countrey-men now, yee know; and wee should finde ten times more comfort of them there, then wee doe heere.

This passage survives only in the Dyce and Wise copies.

<sup>1</sup> On the fragment of E 3 the 'L' of 'Lawyer' in III. ii. 321 is just visible.

When the printer left it out in the cancel, he shortened the page by one line and took over a line and a half from E 4. To fill the gap that still remained, two changes were made in the rest of the speech. The dangerous statement that in Virginia 'you may be a Noble man, and neuer be a Slaue' was toned down to harmless bathos—'You may be any other officer' than a City alderman; and a sentence which fills three and a half lines of the page was added at the end of the speech:

'Besides, there, we shall haue no more Law then Conscience, and not too much of either; serue God inough, eate and drinke inough, and *inough is as good as a Feast.*'

In the original E 4 the stage-direction after line 60 '*Enter Sir Petronell*' has a blank space equivalent to three lines above it and two lines below it. This unusual spacing may point to a still earlier cancel of which we have now no trace. The cancel shortens this gap, but makes a line in Petronel's speech by starting a new line with the words '*Come Drawer.*' At the foot of the page it takes over a speech of two lines (ll. 77-8) from E 4 verso. On this last page the original thirty-nine lines are reduced to thirty-seven, and—in order to make the page even with F—a line is dropped before the stage-direction '*Enter Quickesiluer with Winny disguised.*'

The printer's timidity in removing dangerous matter has a literary significance by furnishing a clue to the authorship of the doctored scenes. Jonson told Drummond that Chapman and Marston, between them, had written 'something against the Scots' for which he had to take his share of responsibility when Sir James Murray 'delated' him to the King.<sup>1</sup>

In none of the three passages does the context show a trace of Jonson's style and handling. The second scene of the first act is in the manner of Marston. The turn of the sentence 'to eate Cherries onely at an Angell a pound, good; to dye rich Scarlet black, pretty; to line a Grogaram gowne cleane thorough with veluet, tollerable' (ll. 19-21)

<sup>1</sup> *Conversations*, ll. 273-6. See also Jonson's letter to Lord Salisbury, vol. 1, p. 195.

was singled out by A. H. Bullen as Marstonian in the similar passage, 1. i. 27-9 'I am intertaind among gallants, true: They call me coozen *Franke*, right; I lend them monnies, good; they spend it, well,' and illustrated from *The Fawn*. The sententious platitudes of Mildred also indicate the bourgeois morality of Marston:—'Where Titles presume to thrust before fit meanes to second them, Wealth and Respect often growe sullen and will not follow. For sure in this, I would for your sake I spake not truth. *Where ambition of place goes before fitnessse of birth, contempt and disgrace follow.*'<sup>1</sup> The second scene of the second act we have confidently assigned to Chapman.<sup>2</sup> The elaborate picture of the Court parasite (ll. 80-90) and the risks of the merchant-vessel with 'Shippes but Tennis Balles for the windes to play withall . . . Nowe vnder-line; Nowe ouer the house; 'Sometimes Bricke-wal'd against a Rocke, . . . Sometimes strooke vnder the wide Hazzard' (ll. 63-7) is far removed from Jonson's manner, as the pungent quotation 'I heard my father say, I heard my mother sing an olde Song and a true: *Thou art a shee foole, and know'st not what belongs to our male wisdome*' (ll. 59-61) rises above the copy-book maxims which Marston puts on the lips of Touchstone. In the third scene of Act III the 'full and heightened style' of Chapman expresses itself even in the dishonest rhapsodies of Seagull, and the trick played on Bramble has its counterpart in *All Fools*.<sup>3</sup>

Two other quartos of *Eastward Ho* were printed by Eld and published by Aspley in 1605. The play is good reading, and deserved to be reprinted; moreover, the authors' imprisonment for it would serve as a piquant advertisement. The collation of both quartos is identical: A to H in fours, with the title on A, the Prologue on A verso, and the text beginning at A 2. The Second Quarto was set up from the First, and Eld, by resorting to a variety of economies, saved a sheet. He increased the number of lines to a page: the First Quarto normally has thirty-nine lines, increasing to

<sup>1</sup> See vol. ii, pp. 39, 40.<sup>2</sup> Ibid., p. 45.<sup>3</sup> Ibid., p. 41.

forty (or their equivalent) in the last five pages ; the Second Quarto normally has forty lines to a page, increasing towards the end to forty-one and forty-two. One Bodleian copy of the Third Quarto, with wide margins—Malone 241 (6)—preserves the text intact, but even in this G verso and G 2, each with forty-two lines, have lost their catchwords, and the latter its signature ; and the signature and catchword of G 3 and the catchword of G 3 verso, each with forty-one lines, are cropped. On H 2 the last line is a short speech ('*Mil. How now, M. Woolfe ?*') together with the signature, which is moved to the right, and the catchword. Words of the text are ranged with the catchword also on H 2 verso and H 3. Further devices of Eld to secure compression were to space the words closer, so that he got more in a line, and to use the shorter forms of spelling and contraction-marks. Thus on A 2, the opening page of the text reproduced below,\* he has, as against the fuller spelling of the First Quarto, 'tel', 'shold', 'shal', 'hal', 'cal', and 'Aldermā', 'vpð', 'cōpanie', 'cozē'.

An important fact about the printing of the Second Quarto has been communicated to us privately by Dr. R. E. Brettell, the writer of a scholarly article in *The Library*, 4th series, volume ix, pages 287-302, 'Eastward Ho, 1605', dealing with the bibliography of the Quartos and the circumstances in which the play was produced. He has detected that the type of sheet I in the first edition was taken over in the second edition with a different line-adjustment for a wider page of type. This begins at Act v, scene iii, line 13 of the text, half-way down H recto of the Second Quarto. Wrong fount letters and stops supply some telling evidence : thus 'Sir' (in. 31) ; 'Why.' (l. 38) ; broken 'o' and 'p' in 'Companie' (l. 46), though the capital is changed to lower case ; '*in Terrorem*' (l. 76) ; a large wrong-fount 'M' in '*M. Francis*' (l. 92), and '*M. Woolfe*' (l. 95) ; a large wrong-fount comma after 'fortunate,' (l. 116). The songs in v. 49 ff. are taken over bodily, with the exception of one obvious misprint ('*heart*'

in line 151), which is corrected: they include such uses of wrong fount as '*dwel*' (l. 50), '*VWestward*' (l. 77), '*Farewel* . . . *farewel*' (l. 113), where in the original printing the stock of italic 'w's' gave out; and the tell-tale misprint '-But' (l. 71). Three variants correct the punctuation '*siluer*;' for '*siluer*.' in iii. 49, and 'any' for 'any,' (v. 22) 'him' for 'him,' (v. 110). Most of the others shorten the spelling: 'saw' for 'sawe', (iii. 15); 'whom' for 'whome' (l. 105); 'me' for 'mee' (l. 106); 'M.' for 'Mai' (iv. 41); 'Bauds' for 'Baudes' (v. 25), '*proue*' for '*prooue*' (l. 73); 'Deputy' for 'Deputie' (l. 85). Once only there is an expansion, 'Hee' for 'He' (iii. 45), to fill the space at the end of a line. In iv. 8, the misprint 'our lamentations', which should be 'your', is taken over; this is corrected in some copies of the First Quarto, and the other copies have a gap, showing a dropped letter: the printer of the Second Quarto copied the wrong reading and filled in the space.

Only two copies of this edition are recorded—that in the British Museum, with press-mark 644. d. 53, and Mr. W. A. White's copy, now in the Library of Harvard University.

The Third Quarto reproduces the Second page for page and, with very few exceptions, line for line. It also reproduces the errors of its predecessor. In ii. ii. 26 the First Quarto reads 'tis but as a scappe to the nette of villanie'. The Second Quarto omitted 'as' and meant to shorten the spelling of 'scappe' to 'scrap', but misprinted it 'scap'. The Third Quarto has 'tis but a scape'. In ii. ii. 202-3 'we will instantly meet *francke* Maister *Frances*' (Q1) is converted to '*Francke*, Maister *Frances*' in the two later Quartos. So in ii. ii. 355-6 'I must haue you of my faction now' is altered to 'of my fashion'. In iv. i. 172 a line is omitted by the Second and Third Quartos: '*Pet.* On the coast of France, sir.' But the best example of a misreading is iv. i. 237-8 'I hope this is enough to put some spirit into the liuers of you'. The Second Quarto inverted the *p* of 'hope' so that it appeared as 'hode'; the Third Quarto emended to 'holde'.

The British Museum and the two Bodleian copies have been collated for this edition, and the Kemble copy up to the end of III. ii. Two copies in the Forster Collection at South Kensington have been examined for special readings. Some printers' errors have been noted in the Kemble copy, but in a third edition they have not the importance that attaches to the first attempt to print from the manuscript. The examples quoted in the critical apparatus are probably incomplete.

The Third Quarto was reproduced in collotype in Mr. John Stephen Farmer's *Tudor Facsimile Texts*. In this reproduction leaves G 2 and G 3 have been transposed: they are correctly placed in the British Museum copy from which the facsimile was made.

*Eastward Ho* stands apart from the canon of Jonson's works. He was only part author of the play; his share in it is disputable and can be traced only by that most fallacious of tests, the internal evidence of style. Further, he did not supervise the printing of the Quarto, though he may have been consulted, or he may even have intervened, to ensure that the allusions which provoked the King's anger were omitted from the text. But the play will not require consideration in the critical survey of Jonson's acknowledged work which will precede the commentary, and therefore the later history of the text is added here.

The first of the later editions is in Robert Dodsley's *A Select Collection of Old Plays*, 1744, volume iv, pages 147-228. The text is taken from the Third Quarto; for example, it prints 'stamen' for 'Stammell' in I. ii. 15. Dodsley prefixed a list of characters and made a number of errors and a few attempts at correction. Of the errors it is sufficient to note 'ruffians! ha!' for 'Ruffins hall' (I. i. 18), 'showle quoth the caliver' (II. i. 89), 'cuz' for 'Cu' (II. ii. 204, 206), 'untruss' for 'infuse' (IV. i. 238). Some slight corrections are recorded in the critical apparatus of the present text at III. ii. 162, V. i. 28, 130, 131.

A 'second edition, corrected and collated with the old copies' was issued by James Dodsley in 1780. It was edited by Isaac Reed. *Eastward Ho* is in the fourth volume on pages 199-302. On page 250 Reed reprinted for the first time the cancelled gibe against the Scots in III. iii. 41-8. So he used a copy of the First Quarto. He added a final note on page 302, stating that he afterwards found two copies of the play which omitted the gibe. 'The Editions in every other respect appear to be the same. I therefore conclude, that after the publication a sheet was cancelled in order to leave out the passage which offended King James the First'. Reed collated his First Quarto very superficially. Most of the erroneous Third Quarto readings of Dodsley are retained and most of his errors. Of further errors added by Reed the chief is 'ladies' for 'lacquaies' in v. i. 37.

Dodsley's Collection next appeared in 1825, 'A new edition: with additional notes and corrections, by the late Isaac Reed, Octavius Gilchrist, and the Editor'. The editor was John Payne Collier. The play is in the fourth volume on pages 199-302. Collier corrected a few of Dodsley's errors, but retained most of them. He had seen a copy of the First Quarto, but he was incapable of distinguishing it from the Third Quarto, though he noted one or two variant readings. He annotates iv. ii. 288: 'One quarto of 1605 reads, "O good Sir" and the other, "O God Sir"'. 'God' is the reading of the First Quarto, 'good' the reading of the Third. On III. ii. 262 'with his sterne vsurous Ielosity', he writes, 'Both the quartos have it, "With eyes stern usurious jealousy", which may be right though the sense is rather forced.' 'Eyes' in this passage is a misprint of the First Quarto, subsequently corrected but reappearing in the Second and Third Quartos. Collier's worst textual note is on II. ii. 25-6, 'if vertue bee vsde, tis but as a scappe to the nette of villanie'. He reads 'scape' and comments, 'The sense of this passage has been entirely lost by printing *'scape*, *scrap*, which is totally without warrant'. The reading of the First Quarto is 'scappe': the Second Quarto

misprinted 'scap', a mere printer's error in dropping the *r*. The Third Quarto printed what it imagined to be the more correct form 'scape', and Dodsley took his text from this Quarto. Reading 'scrap' and making due allowance for Chapman's compressed and difficult style—he is pretty certainly the author of this scene—we interpret, 'Virtue, if it is used at all, serves only as a bait to lead the victim into the net'.<sup>1</sup> 'Scape' makes no sense whatever.

The edition in *The Ancient British Drama*, 1810, vol. ii, pp. 66–99, reproduces Dodsley's 1780 text, with a few additional errors, such as *Fous* for *Eous* in 1. 1. 110.

In 1856 J. O. Halliwell-Phillipps included the play in his edition of *The Works of John Marston*, vol. iii, pp. 1–102. The text is taken from the Third Quarto and reproduces a number of its errors: for example, 1. ii 15 'stamen', 11. ii. 60 'a nold song', 11*bid* 202–3 '*Francke*, Maister Francis'; 111. ii. 267 'jopes' (for 'ioyes'). The editor modernized the use of capital letters and italics and the punctuation of the Quarto. A sample of his meddling with the last two points may be quoted from 111. 11. 147–8, which he prints in the form: 'No, o now, I must depart. "Parting though it absence move"'. Richard Herne Shepherd included the play in his modernized edition of *The Works of George Chapman: Plays*, 1874, pp. 449–85. It is a faithful reproduction of the Third Quarto, with a few additional errors due to Shepherd's modernizing of the old punctuation, which he did not understand: for example, 11. i. 89 'show's quoth the caliuier'; 111. ii. 85–6 'God give you joy, mistress! What lack you?' (for 'Mistress What-lack-you', i.e. 'Goody Tradeswoman'); In 11. ii. 174 'euer does it', he omits the 'it', and in v. ii. 66–7 'If I should giue any farder care, I were taken', he misprints 'care'.

A. H. Bullen, editing the play in *The Works of John*

<sup>1</sup> See the forms 'scrape', 'scrap', 'shrape', and 'shrap' in the Oxford Dictionary and the Dialect Dictionary. It is still used in dialect, e.g. *East Anglian Glossary*, 1895, '*Shrap* or *Scrap*, a bait of chaff laid in the winter season to attract sparrows, &c., which are then netted with a contrivance called a "shrap net"'.<sup>2</sup>



*Marston*, 1887, vol. iii, pp. 1-124, evidently used Shepherd's text for printer's copy, and corrected it from a copy of the Third Quarto. He reproduces, however, Shepherd's misprints quoted above. In a note on III. ii. 262, quoting a note of Collier's that 'both the quartos' read 'With *eyes* stern usurous jealousy', he interpolates a comment in brackets, 'there is only one'. Bullen often prepared his texts in the Dyce Library, in those days a secluded room at the South Kensington Museum, and he seems on one occasion at least to have stumbled unconsciously on a copy of the First Quarto. In a note on IV. ii. 237, 'to the value of 500. pound', he writes 'Old ed. "so"'. The Dyce copy does read 'so', but this is corrected in all other copies of the First Quarto. The Second and Third Quartos read 'to'. In the epilogue, for 'the streets and the Fronts of the Houses . . . *stucke* with People', he misprints 'thick with people', and he misunderstands the old punctuation, twisting I. i. 114-15 into 'Eastward, bully, this satin belly, and canvas-backed Touchstone: 'slife l man, his father was a maltman', and reproducing Shepherd's foolish blunder in III. ii. 85-6.

The first modern editor to know that more than one quarto was printed in 1605 was Professor Felix E. Schelling, who edited *Eastward Ho* along with *The Alchemist* in 1904. He based his text on the second state of the First Quarto,<sup>1</sup> which he collated with the Dyce copy and with the Third Quarto. He did not know of the Second Quarto. He kept the old spelling, but modernized the punctuation on the ground that it was 'probably Aspley's'. The text is carefully done, but the repunctuation is questionable in such passages as I. i. 114-15, where he follows Bullen, and in III. ii. 135-6 'and therefore, till I speake, to you—gallantry indeed—I will saue my breath for my broth anon'.

Professor J. W. Cunliffe edited the play for Professor C. M. Gayley's *Representative English Comedies*, 1913, vol. iii,

<sup>1</sup> Much confusion is caused in all the later texts by editors describing the two states of the First Quarto as 'Q1' and 'Q2'.

pp. 395-501. His text is from the First Quarto, with collations of the Second and the Third. He is the only editor who knew of the Second Quarto. He modernizes capitals and punctuation. His edition is the best which has so far appeared.

Professor T. M. Parrott included the play in his edition of *The Plays and Poems of George Chapman: The Comedies*, 1913, pp. 461-535. His text is from the First Quarto, with full collations of the Third. He has not realized that E 3 and E 4 are cancels, but believes that the printer reset only the two pages, E 3 verso and E 4 recto.

The latest edition of *Eastward Ho* is that of Dr. Julia Hamlet Harris, published in the *Yale Studies in English*, 1926, vol. lxxiii. The text is set up from a photograph of the Dyce copy of the First Quarto. The editor is not aware that this is a made-up copy. It is reproduced without the signatures or any clue to the paging, so that the original text of E 3 and E 4 is followed abruptly by the text of the cancel, without even a warning note in the critical apparatus. There are a few slight inaccuracies in the text, and the critical apparatus is confused and unsatisfactory. Dr. Harris is mistaken in supposing that the Third Quarto 'lacks' a line of the text at the foot of signatures G verso and G 2 recto: the copies she used were badly cropped.

The so-called edition of the play in W. R. Chetwood's *Memoirs of the Life and Writings of Ben. Jonson, Esq. . . . To which are added, Two Comedies, (wrote by Ben Jonson, &c. and not printed in his Works) called The Widow, and Eastward Hoe* (Dublin, 1756) is really a stage adaptation, sprinkled with manager's 'cuts' and interpolations. Chetwood exploited Dodsley's text for this purpose.

It should perhaps be noted that conjectural emendations have been introduced into the present text at II. ii. 121, III. ii. 257, 279.

### EASTWARD HOE.

thorough with veluet, tollerable; their pure linnen, their smockes of 3 .li. a smock are to be borne withall. But your minsing nice-ryes, taffata pipkines, durance petticotes, & siluer bodkins: Gods my life, as I shall be a Lady I cannot indure it. Is hee come yet? Lord what a long knight tis! *And euer shee cride shoute home,* and yet I knew one longer, *and euer she cryde shoute home, fa, la, ly, re, lo, la.*

*Mil.* Well Sister, those that scorne their nest, oft flye with a sicke wing.

*Gir.* Boe-bell.

*Mil.* Where Titles presume to thrust before fit meanes to second them, Wealth and respect often growe sullen and will not follow. For sure in this, I would for your sake I spake not truth. *Where ambition of place goes before fitnessse of birth, contempt and disgrace follow.* I heard a Scholler once say, that *Vlisses* when he counterfetted himselfe madde, yoakt cattes, and foxes, and dogges together to draw his plowe, whilst he followed and sowed salt: But sure I judge them truly madde, that yoake citizens and courtiers, trades men and souldiers, a goldsmiths daughter and a knight: well sister, pray God my father sowe not salt too.

*Gir.* Alas, poore *Mil.* when I am a Lady, Ile pray for thee yet Ifaith: Nay, and Ile vouchsafe to call thee sister *Mil* still, for though thou art not like to be a Lady as I am, yet sure thou art a creature of Gods making; and mayest paraduenture to bee sau'd as soone as I, (dos he come?) *And euer and anon she doubled in her song.*

Now (Ladies my comfort)

What a prophane Apes here!

Tailer, *Poldavis*, prethee fit it

fit it: is this a right Scot?

Does it clip close? and beare vp round?

*Pold.* Fine and stify ifaith, twill keepe your thighes so coole and make your waste so small: here was a fault in your bodie, but I haue supplied the defect, with the effect of my steele instrument

### EASTWARD HOE.

Your place maintain'd it before.

*Quicksilver.* Why and I maintaine my place. Ile to the Court, another manner of place for maintenance I hope then the silly Cittie. I heard my father say, I heard my mother sing a nold Song and a true: *Tou art a shee foole, and know'st not what belongs to our male wisdoms.* I shall bee a Marchaunt for-sooth: trust my estate in a wooden Trough as hee does? What are these Shippes, but Tennis Balles for the windes to play withall? Tost from one waue to another; Nowe vnder-line; Nowe ouer the house; Sometimes Bricke-wal'd against a Rocke, so that the guttes flye out againe: sometimes strooke vnder the wide Hazzard, and farewell Mast. Marchant.

*Synnedefie.* Well *Francke*, well; the Seas you say are vncertaine: But hee that sayles in your Court Seas, shall finde 'hem tenne times fuller of hazzard; wherein to see what is to bee seene, is torment more then a free Spirite can indure; But when you come to suffer, howe many Iniuries swallowe you? What care and deuotion must you vse, to humour an imperious Lord? proportion your looks to his looks? smiles to his smiles? fit your sayles to the winde of his breath?

*Quick.* Tush hee's no Iourney-man in his craft that can not doe that.

*Sinnedefie.* But hee's worse then a Prentise that does it, not onely humouring the Lorde, but euery Trencher-bearer, euery Groome that by indulgence and intelligence crept into his fauour, and by Pandarisme into his Chamber; He rules the roste: And when my honourable Lorde sayes it shall bee thus, my worshipfull Rascall (the Groome of his close stoole) sayes it shall not bee thus, claps the doore after him, and who dares enter? A Prentise, quoth you? tis but to learne to liue, and does that disgrace a man? hee that rises hardly, stands firmly: but hee that rises with ease, Alas, falles as easily.

*Quicksilver.* A pox on you, who taught you this mor rallitie?

*Secu.*

### EASTWARD HOE.

*Securitie.* Tis long of this wittie Age, Maister Francis. But indeede, Mistris Synnedefte, all Trades complaine of inconuenience, and therefore tis best to haue none. The Marchaunt hee complaines, and sayes, Trafficke is subiect to much vncertaintie and losse: let 'hem keepe their goods on dry land with a vengeance, and not expose other mens substances to the mercie of the windes, vnder protection of a wooden wall (as Maister Francis sayes) and all for gree-die desire, to enrich themselues with vnconscionable gaine, two for one, or so: where I, and such other honest men as liue by lending money, are content with moderate profite; Thirtie, or Fortie i'th'hundred, so wee may haue it with quietnesse, and out of perrill of winde and weather, rather then runne those daungerous courses of trading, as they doe.

*Quick.* I Dad, thou mayst well bee called *Securitie*, for thou takest the safest course.

*Securitie.* Faith the quieter, and the more contented; and, out of doubt, the more godly. For Marchants in their courses are neuer pleas'd, but euer repining against Heauen: One prayes for a Westerly winde to carry his shippe foorth; another for an Easterly to bring his shippe home; and at euery shaking of a leafe, hee falles into an agonie, to thinke what daunger his Shippe is in on such a Coast, and so foorth. The Farmer hee is euer at oddes with the Weather, sometimes the clowdes haue beene too barren; Sometimes the Heauens forgette themselues, their Haruests answer not their hopes; Sometimes the Season falles out too fruitefull, Corne will beare no price, and so foorth. Th'Artificer, hee's all for a stirring worlde, if his Trade bee too full and fall short of his expectation, then falles he out of ioynt. Where we that trade nothing but money, are free from all this, wee are pleas'd with all weathers: let it raine or hold vp, be call me or windy, let the season be whatsoever, let Trade goe how it will, wee take all in good part;

C 2

cen

### EASTWARD HOE.

*Spend.* More wine Slaue? whether we drinke it or no, spill it, and drawe more.

*Scap.* Fill all the pottes in your house with all sorts of licour, and let 'hem waite on vs here like Souldiers in their Pewter coates; And though we doe not employe them now, yet wee will maintaine 'hem, till we doe.

*Draw.* Said like an honourable Captaine; you shall haue all you can commaund Sir. *Exit Drawer.*

*Sea.* Come boyes, *Virginia* longs till we share the rest of her Maiden head.

*Spend.* Why is she inhabited already with any *English*?

*Sea.* A whole Country of *English* is there man, bred of those that were left there in 79. They haue married with the Indians, and make 'hem bring forth as beautifull faces as any we haue in England; and therefore the Indians are so in loue with 'hem, that all the treasure they haue, they lay at their feete.

*Scap.* But is there such treasure there Captaine, as I haue heard?

*Sea.* I tell thee, Golde is more plentifull there then Copper is with vs: and for as much redde Copper as I can bring, Ile haue thrice the waight in Golde. Why man all their dripping Pans, and their Chamber pottes are pure Gold; and all the Chaines, with which they chaine vp their streetes, are massie Golde; all the Prisoners they take, are fetterd in Gould: and for Rubies and Diamonds, they goe forth on holydayes and gather 'hem by the Sea-shore, to hang on their childrens Coates, and stick in their Cappes, as commonly as our children weare Saffron guilt Brooches, and and groates with hoales in 'hem.

*Scap.* And is it a pleasant Countrie withall?

*Sea.* As euer the Sunne shinde on: temperate and full of all sorts of excellent viands; wilde Boare is as common there, as our tamest Bacon is here: Venison, as Mutton. And the you shal hue freely there, without Sergeants, or Courtiers, or Lawyers, or Intelligencers, onely a few industrious Scots perhaps, who indeed are disperst ouer the face of the whole earth. But as for them, there are no greater friends to  
English-

### EASTWARD HOE.

*Spend.* More wine Slaue? whether we drinke it or no, spill it, and drawe more.

*Scap.* Fill all the pottes in your house with all sorts of licour, and let 'hem waite on vs here like Souldiers in their Pewter, coates; Aud though we doe not employe them now, yet wee will maintaine 'hem, till we doe.

*Draw.* Said like an honourable Captaine; you shall haue all you can command Sir. *Exit Drawer.*

*Sea.* Come boyes, *Virginia* longs till we share the rest of her Maiden-head.

*Spend.* Why is she inhabited already with any *English*?

*Sea.* A whole Countrey of English is there man, bred of those that were left there in 79. They haue married with the Indians, and make 'hem bring forth as beautifull faces as any we haue in England: and therefore the Indians are so in loue with 'hem, that all the treasure they haue, they lay at their feete.

*Scap.* But is there such treasure there Captaine, as I haue heard?

*Sea.* I tell thee, Golde-is more plentifull there then Copper is with vs: and for as much redde Copper as I can bring, Ile haue thrice the waight in Golde. Why man all their dripping Pans, and their Chamber pottes are pure Gold; and all the Chaines, with which they chaine vp their streetes, are massie Golde; all the Prisoners they take, are fetterd in Gold: and for Rubies and Diamonds, they goe forth on holydayes and gather 'hem by the Sea-shore, to hang on their childrens Coates, and sticke in their Capps, as commonly as our children weare Saffron guilt Brooches, and groates with hoales in 'hem.

*Scap.* And is it a pleasant Countrie withall?

*Sea.* As euer the Sunne shinde on: temperate and full of all sorts of excellent viands; wilde Boare is as common there, as our tamest Bacon is here: Venison, as Mutton. And then you shall liue freely there, without Sargeants, or Courtiers, or Lawyers, or Intelligencers. Then for your meanes to aduancement, there, it is simple, and not preposterously

### EASTWARD HOE.

English men and *England*, when they are out an't, in the world, then they are. And for my part, I would a hundred thousand of 'hem were there, for wee are all one Countrey-men now, yee know; and wee should finde ten times more comfort of them there, then wee doe heere. Then for your meanes to aduancement, there, it is simple, and not preposterously mixt: You may be an Alderman there, and neuer be Scauinger; you may be a Noble man, and neuer be a Slaue; you may come to preferment enough, and neuer be a Pandar: To riches and fortune enough, and haue neuer the more villanie, nor the lesse wit.

*Spend.* Gods me! and how farre is it thether?

*Sea.* Some six weekes sayle, no more, with any indifferrent good winde: And if I get to any part of the coast of *Affrica*, Ile saile thether with any winde. Or when I come to Cape *Finister*, ther's a foreright winde continually wafts vs tell we come at *Virginia*. See our Collonell's come.

*Enter Sir Petronell.*

*Petr.* Well mette good Captaine *Seagull*, and my Noble Gentlemen! Now the sweete houre of our freedome is at hand. Come *Drawer*, Fill vs some carowses; and prepare vs for the mirthe, that will be occasioned presently: Here will be a pretty wenche Gentlemen, that will beare vs companie all our voyage.

*Sea.* Whatsoever she be; here's to her health Noble Colonell, both with Cap and Knee.

*Petr.* Thankes kinde Captaine *Seagull*. Shee's one I loue dearely; and must not bee knowne till wee bee free from all that knowe vs: And so Gentlemen, heer's to her health.

*Ambo.* Let it come worthy Colonell, *Wee doe hunger and thirst for it.*

*Petr.* Afore heauen, you haue hitte the phrase of one, that her presence will touche, from the foote to the forehead, if yee knew it.

*Spend,*

The original state of E 4 in the First Quarto  
Act III, scene iii, lines 44-76



### EASTWARD HOE.

roufly mixt: You may be an Alderman there, and neuer be Scauinger; you may be any other officer, and neuer be a Slaue. You may come to preferment enough, and neuer be a *Pandar*. To Riches and Forune inough and haue neuer the more Villany, nor the lesse wit. Besides, there, we shall haue no more Law then Conscience, and not too much of either; serue God inough, eate and drinke inough, and *inough is as good as a Feast*.

*Spend.* Gods me! and how farre is it thether?

*Sea.* Some six weekes sayle, no more, with any indifferent good winde: And if I get to any part of the coaste of *Affrica*, Ile saile thether with any winde. Or when I come to Cape *Finister*, ther's a foreright winde continuall wafts vs till we come at *Virginia*. See, our Collonell's come.

*Enter Sir Petronell with his Followers.*

*Petr.* Well mette good Captaine *Seagull*, and my Noble Gentlemen! Nowe the sweete houre of our freedome is at hand.

Come *Drawer*. Fill vs some carowses; and prepare vs for the mirth, that will be occasioned presently: Here will be a prety wenche Gentlemen, that will beare vs company all our voyage.

*Sea.* Whatsoeuer she be; here's to her health Noble Collonell, both with Cap and Knee.

*Petr.* Thankes kinde Captaine *Seagull*. Shee's one I loue dearely; and must not bee knowne till wee bee free from all that knowe vs: And so Gentlemen, heer's to her health.

*Ambo.* Let it come worthy Collonell, *Wee doe hunger and thirst for it*,

*Petr.* Afore heauen, you haue hitte the phrase of one that her presence will touch, from the foote to the forehead, if ye knew it.

*Spend.* Why then we will ioyne his forehead, with her health, sir: and Captaine *Scapethrift*, here's to 'hem both,

*Enter*



# EASTWARD HOE.

As

It was playd in the  
*Black-friers.*

By

The Children of her Maiesties Reuels'

Made by

GEO: CHAPMAN. BEN: IONSON. IOH: MARSTON.



AT LONDON  
Printed for *William Aspley.*

1605.



The title page of the First Quarto

# PROLOGVS.

**N**ot out of Envy, for ther's no effect  
Where there's no cause; nor out of Imitation  
For we haue euermore bin Imitated;  
Nor out of our contentson to doe better  
Then that which is opposde to ours in Title,  
For that was good; and better cannot be :  
And for the Title if it seeme affected  
We might as well haue calde it, God you good Even :  
Onely that East-ward; west-wards still exceeds,  
Honour the Sunnes faire rising, not his setting;  
Nor is our Title vitterly enforste,  
As by the points we touch at, you shall see;  
Beare with our willing paines, if dull or witty,  
We onely dedicate it to the City.

The Prologue in the First Quarto

# EASTWARD HOE.

As

It was playd in the  
*Black-friers.*

By

The Children of her Maiesties Reuels.

*Made by*

GEO: CHAPMAN, BEN: IONSON. IOH: MARSTON.



AT LONDON  
Printed for *William Aspley.*  
1605.

The Title-page of the Second Quarto

## PROLOGVS.

**N**ot out of Envy, for ther's no effect  
Where there's no cause; nor out of imitation  
For we haue enermore bin Imitated;  
Nor out of our contention to doe better  
Then that which is opposde to ours in Title,  
For that was good; and better cannot be:  
And for the Title if it seeme Affected  
We might as well haue calde it, God you good Even:  
Onely that East-wards, West-wards still exceeds,  
Honour the Sunnes faire rising not his setting:  
Nor is our Title utterly enforste,  
As by the points we touch as you shall see,  
Beare with our willing paines, if dull or wistie,  
We onely dedicate it to the Cittie.

The Prologue in the Second Quarto

# EASTWARD HOE.

As

It was playd in the  
*Black-friers.*

By

The Children of her Maiesties Reuels,

*Made by*

GEO: CHAPMAN. BEN: IONSON. IOH: MARSTON.



AT LONDON  
Printed for *William Aspley.*  
1605,

The Title-page of the Third Quarto

## PROLOGVS.

**N**ot out of Envy, for ther's no effect  
Where there's no cause; nor out of imitation  
For we haue euermore bin Imitated;  
Nor out of our contention to doe better  
Then that which is oppos'd to ours in Title,  
For that was good, and better cannot be  
And for the Title if it seeme affected  
We might as well haue calde it, god you good Even:  
Onely that East-ward, West-wards still exceeds,  
Honour the Sunnes faire rising not his setting:  
Nor is our Title vtterly enforced,  
As by the points we touch at, you shall see  
Beare with our willing pines, if dull or witty,  
Wee onely dedicate it to the Cittie.

The Prologue in the Third Quarto

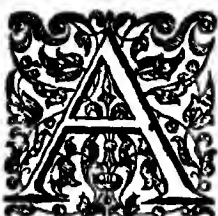


# EAST-WARD HOE.

Actus primi,      Scena prima.

*Enter Maister Touch-stone, and Quick-siluer at Seuerall dores, Quick-siluer with his hat, pumps, short sword and dagger, and a Racket trussed up vnder his cloake. At the middle dore, Enter Golding discovering a Gold-smiths shoppe, and walking short turns before it.*

*Touch-stone.*



AND whether with you now? what loose action are you bound for? come what comrades are you to meete withall? whers the supper? whers the randeuous?

*Quick.* Indeed, and in very good sober truth, Sir.

*Touch.* Indeed, and in very good sober truth Sir? Behinde my backe thou wilt sweare faster then a french foot boy, and talke more bawdily then a common mid-wife, and now indeede and in very good sober truth Sir: but if a priuie search should be made, with what furniture are you riggd now? Sirrah I tell thee, I am thy maister *William Tutch-stone* Goldsmith: and thou my Prentise *Francis Quick-siluer*: and I will see whether you are running. *Worke vpon that now.*

*Quick.* Why Sir I hope a man may vse his recreation with his maisters profit.

*Touch.* Prentises recreations are seldome with their maisters profit. *Worke vpon that now.* You shall giue vp your cloake tho you be no Alderman. Heyday, Ruffins hall. Sword, pumps, heers a Racket indeed.

*Touch. uncloakes Quick.*

*Quick. Worke vpon that now.*

*Touch.* Thou shamlesse Varlet dost thou iest at thy lawfull maister contrary to thy Indentures?

*Quick.* Why zbloud sir, my mother's a Gentlewoman: and my father a Iustice of Peace and of *Quorum*, and tho I am a yonger brother and a prentise yet I hope I am my fathers sonne: and by Gods lidde, tis for your worship and for your commoditie that I keepe companie. I am intertaind among gallants,

A 2

true,

# EASTWARD HOE.

Actus primi,      Scena prima.

*Enter Maister Touchstone, and Quicksiluer at seuerall dores, Quicksiluer with his hat, pumps, short sword & dagger, & a racket trussed up vnder his cloake. At the middle dore, Enter Golding discovering a Gold-smiths shoppe, and walking short turnes before it.*

*Touchstone.*



AND whether with you now? what loose actiō are you bound for? come what cōrades are you to meete withal? whers the supper? whers the randeuous?

*Quic.* Indeed, & in very good sober truth, sir.

*Touch.* Indeed, & in very good sober truth sir?

Behind my backe thou wilt sweare faster thē a french foot-boy, and talke more bauldly then a common mid-wife, and nowe indeede and in very good sober truth Sir: but if a priue search shold be made, with what furniture are you riggd now? Sirrah I tel thee, I am thy maister *William touchstone* Goldsmith: and thou my Prentise *Francis Quick-siluer* and I will see whether you are running. *Worke vpon that now.*

*Quick.* Why Sir I hope a man may vse his recreation with his masters profit.

*Touch.* Prentises recreations are seldome with their masters profit. *Worke vpon that now.* You shal giue vp your cloake tho you be no Aldermā. Heyday, Ruffins hal. Sword, pumps, heers a Racket indeed.

*Touch. vncloakes Quick.*

*Quick. Worke vpon that now.*

*Touch.* Thou shamelesse Varlet dost thou iest at thy lawfull maister contrary to thy Indentures?

*Quic.* zbloud sir, my mother's a Gentlewoman and my father a Iustice of Peace, & of *Quorum*, & tho I am a yonger brother & a prentise yet I hope I am my fathers son. & by Godslidde, tis for your worship & for your commodity that I keepe cōpanie. I am intertaind among gallants, true. They cal me cozē *Franck*, right; I lend thē monies, good, they spend it, well. But when they are spent, must not they strue to get more: must not their land flie? and to whom? shall not your worshippe ha' the refusall? well

A 2

I am



## 〈The Persons of the Play.

TOVCHSTONE, a goldsmith.	
Mistress TOVCHSTONE, his wife.	
GERTRUDE, } his daughters.	
MILDRED, }	
QVICKSILVER, } his apprentices.	5
GOLDING, }	
BETRICE, a waiting-woman.	
POLDAVY, a tailor.	
Sir PETRONEL FLASH.	
SECURITY, an old vsurer.	10
WINIFRED, his wife.	
SINDEFY, mistress to QVICKSILVER.	
BRAMBLE, a lawyer.	
A Scriuener.	
SEAGVLL, a sea captain.	15
SCAPETHRIFT, } aduenturers bound for Virginia.	
SPENDALL, }	
A Drawer at the Blue Anchor Tavern.	
A Coachman.	
HAMLET, a footman.	20
POTKIN, a tankard-bearer.	
Mistress FOND.	
Mistress GAZER.	
SLITGVLT, a butchers apprentice.	
WOLF, } officers of the Counter.	25
HOLDFAST, }	
A Constable.	
Prisoners in the Counter.	
A Friend of the Prisoners.	
A Page of Sir Petronel Flash.	30
A Messenger.	

### THE SCENE

## LONDON, and THAMES-SIDE.〉

*THE PERSONS.* First supplied by Dodsley (1744); revised by B. The Messenger of III. i. 40 is added. S. adds TOBY, a prisoner, who is mentioned twice in the text at v. v. 10 and 33, but there is no sign of his appearance.

## PROLOGVS.

Not out of Enuy, for ther's no effect  
 Where there's no cause; nor out of Imitation,  
 For we haue euermore bin Imitated ;  
 Nor out of our contention to doe better  
 5 Then that which is opposde to ours in Title,  
 For that was good ; and better cannot be :  
 And for the Title if it seeme affected,  
 We might as well haue calde it, God you good Euen:  
 Onely that East-ward ; west-wards still exceeds,  
 10 Honour the Sunnes faire rising, not his setting ;  
 Nor is our Title vtterly enforste,  
 As by the points we touch at, you shall see ;  
 Beare with our willing paines, if dull or witty,  
 We onely dedicate it to the Citty.

PROLOGVS I Enuy Qq 2, 3 · Envy Q1 2 Imitation,] Imitation  
 Q1 imitation Qq 2, 3 5 opposde] opposd Q3 6 be ·] be Q3  
 7 affected,] affected Qq 8 God] god Q3 Euen Q3: Euen Qq 1, 2 9  
 west-wards still] Query, West-ward still 10 rising,] rising Qq 2, 3  
 setting .] setting : Q3 11 enforste] enforste Q3

## EAST-WARD HOE.

## Actus primi, Scena prima.

*Enter Maister Touch-stone, and Quick-siluer at seuerall dores, Quick-siluer with his hat, pumps, short sword and dagger, and a Racket trussed vp under his cloake. At the middle dore, Enter Golding discovering a Gold-smiths shoppe, and walking short turns before it.*

*Touch-stone.* And whether with you now? what loose action are you bound for? come what comrades are you to meete withall? whers the supper? whers the randeuous?

*Quick.* Indeed, and in very good sober truth, Sir.

*Touch.* Indeed, and in very good sober truth Sir? Be-  
hinde my backe thou wilt sweare faster then a french foot-  
boy, and talke more bawdily then a common midwife, and  
now indeede and in very good sober truth Sir: but if a priuie  
search should be made, with what furniture are you riggd  
now? Sirrah I tell thee, I am thy maister *William Tutch-*  
*stone* Goldsmith: and thou my Prentise *Francis Quick-*  
*siluer*: and I will see whether you are running. *Worke vpon*  
*that now.*

*Quick.* Why Sir I hope a man may vse his recreation with his maisters profit.

*Touch.* Prentises recreations are seldome with their maisters profit. *Worke vpon that now.* You shall giue vp your cloake tho you be no Alderman. Heyday, Ruffins hall. Sword, pumps, heers a Racket indeed.

*Touch<stone> vncloakes Quick<siluer>.*

*Quick. Worke vpon that now.*

1. i. EAST-WARD] EASTWARD Qq 2, 3      Actus . . . prima] Act I,  
Scene 1. Goldsmiths' Row. B      seuerall] Seuerall Q1: seuerall Qq 2, 3  
6-7 foot-boy] foot boy most copies of Q1      10-11 Tutch-stone] touch-  
stone Q2: Touchstone Q3      12 I] missing in the Wise copy      15  
maisters] masters Q2: Masters Q3      16-17 maisters] masters Qq 2, 3

*Touch.* Thou shamlesse Varlet dost thou iest at thy lawfull maister contrary to thy Indentures ?

*Quick.* Why zbloud sir, my mother's a Gentlewoman, and my father a Iustice of Peace, and of *Quorum* : and tho I am  
25 a yonger brother and a prentise, yet I hope I am my fathers sonne : and by Gods lidde, tis for your worship and for your  
' commoditie that I keepe companie. I am intertaind among gallants, true : They call me coozen *Franke*, right ; I lend  
' them monnies, good ; they spend it, well. But when they  
30 are spent, must not they striue to get more ? must not their land flye ? and to whom ? shall not your worship ha' the  
' refusall ? Well, I am a good member of the Citty if I were well considered. How would Merchants thrue, if Gentle-  
' men would not be vnthriftes ? How could Gentlemen be  
35 vnthrifts if their humours were not fed ? How should their humours be fedde but by whit-meate, and cunning second-ings ? Well, the Cittie might consider vs. I am going to an Ordinary now ; the gallants fall to play, I carry light golde with me : the gallants call Coozen *Franke* some golde for  
40 siluer, I change, gaine by it, the gallants loose the gold ; and then call Coozen *Franke* lend me some siluer. Why—

*Tou.* Why ? I cannot tell, seuen score pound art thou out in the cash, but looke to it, I will not be gallanted out of my monies. And as for my rising by other mens fall ; God shield  
45 me. Did I gaine my wealth by Ordinaries ? no : by exchanging of gold ? no . by keeping of gallants company ? no. I hired me a little shop, fought low, tooke small gaine, kept no debt booke, garnished my shop for want of Plate, with good wholsome thriftie sentences ; As, *Touchstone*,  
50 *keepe thy shopp, and thy shoppe will keepe thee. Light gaines makes heauy purses. Tis good to be merry and wise : And*

1 1. 21 shamlesse] shamelesse Qq 2, 3      23 Why zbloud] zbloud Q2 : Zbloud Q3      Gentlewoman,] Gentlewoman : Q1      24 *Quorum* .] *Quorum*, Q1      25 prentise,] prentise Qq 1, 2      26 Gods lidde] Godslidde Qq 2, 3      28 coozen] coze, Qq 2, 3      31 whom ?] whom' Q3      ha'] ha, Q1      32 Well,] well, Q1      well Qq 2, 3      36 whit-meate] white meate Qq 2, 3      37 Well] well Qq      39 the] the' (?) Q2      Coozen] coozen Q1 : cozen Qq 2, 3      41 Coozen] coozen Qq      46 company ?] companie, Qq 2, 3      49 As,] As Qq 2, 3

when I was wiu'd, hauing something to stick too, I had the horne of Suretiship euer before my eyes : You all know the deuise of the Horne, where the young fellow slippes in at the Butte end, and comes squesd out at the Buckall : and I <sup>55</sup> grew vp, and I praise prouidence, I beare my browes now as high as the best of my neighbours : but thou——well looke to the accounts, your fathers bond lyes for you : seuen score pound is yet in the reere.

*Quick.* Why slid sir, I haue as good, 'as proper gallants 60 wordes for it as any are in London, Gentlemen of good phrase, perfect language, passingly behau'd, Gallants that weare socks and cleane linnen, and call me kinde coozen *Francke*, good coozen *Francke*, for they know my Father ♣ and by gods lidde shall not I trust 'hem ? not trust ? 65

*Enter a Page as inquiring for Touch-stones Shoppe.*

*Golding.* What doe yee lacke Sir ? What ist you'le buye Sir ?

*Touch-stone.* I marry Sir, there's a youth of another peece. There's thy fellowe-Prentise, as good a Gentleman borne as thou art : nay, and better mean'd. But dos he pumpe it, or 70 Racket it ? Well, if he thriue not, if he out-last not a hundred such crackling Bauins as thou art, God and men neglect industrie.

*Gold.* It is his Shop, and here my M<aister> walkes.

*To the Page.*

*Touch.* With me Boy ?

75

*Page.* My Maister, Sir *Petronel Flash*, recommends his loue to you, and will instantly visite you.

*Touch.* To make vp the match with my eldest daughter, my wiues Dilling, whom she longs to call Maddam. He shall finde me vnwillingly readie Boy. *Exit Page.* 80  
Ther's another affliction too. As I haue two Prentises : the one of a boundlesse prodigalitie, the other of a most hopefull Industrie. So haue I onely two daughters : the eldest, of a

1. 1. 52 wiu'd] wiu'de Qq 2, 3      60 slid] Slid Qq      65 gods lidde] godshidde Qq 2, 3  
77 you ] you, Qq 1, 2      80 readie] readie, Qq 2, 3  
Boy. corr Q1: Boy ? Q1 originally      81 affliction] affliction Qq 2, 3



proud ambition and nice wantonnesse : the other of a modest  
 85 humilitie and comely sobernesse. The one must bee Lady-  
 fied forsooth : and be attir'd iust to the Court-cut, and long  
 tayle. So farre is she ill naturde to the place and meanes of  
 my preferment and fortune, that shee throwes all the con-  
 tempt and dispiight, hatred it selfe can cast vpon it. Well,  
 90 a peece of Land she has, 'twas her Grandmothers gift : let  
 her, and her Sir *Petronel*, flash out that. But as for my sub-  
 stance, shee that skornes mee, as I am a Citizen and Trades-  
 man, shall neuer pamper her pride with my industrie : shall  
 neuer vse me as men doe Foxes ; keepe themselues warme  
 95 in the skinne, and throwe the body that bare it to the dung-  
 hill. I must goe intertaine this Sir *Petronell*. *Goulding*, my  
 vtmost care's for thee, and onely trust in thee, looke to the  
 shoppe. As for you, Maister *Quick-siluer*, thinke of huskes,  
 for thy course is running directly to the prodigalls hogs  
 100 trough, huskes, sirra. *Worke vpon that now*.

*Exit Tuck<stone>.*

*Quick*. Mary fough goodman flat-cap : Sfoot tho I am  
 a prentise I can giue armes, and my father's a iustice a peace  
 by discent : and zbloud——

*Goul*. Fye how you sweare.

105 *Qui*. Sfoot man I am a gentleman, and may sweare by my  
 pedegree, Gods my life. Sirrah *Goulding*, wilt be ruled by a  
 foole ? turne good fellow, turne swaggering gallant, and let  
 the *Welkin* roare, and *Erebus* also : Looke not *Westward* to  
 the fall of Don Phœbus, but to the East ; *Eastward Hoe*,

110 " *Where radiant beames of lusty Sol appeare,*

" *And bright Eous makes the welkin cleare.*

We are both Gentlemen, and therefore should be no cox-

1. i. 86 iust] just Qq 1, 2 90 'twas] t'was Qq gift:] gift? Qq 2, 3  
 91 that] that Qq 2, 3 94 Foxes:] Foxes: Qq 2, 3 96 intertaine]  
 entertain Q3 Goulding.] Goulding. Q3 my] My Qq 98 shoppe.  
 As] huskes, as Qq 1 shopp, as Q2 shop, as Q3 100 trough.] trough.  
 Q1 huskes, sirra] huskes, S'a Q1: huskes S'a Qq 2, 3 Stage-dir. Exit  
 Qq 2, 3. Exit. Q1 Tuck.] Touch. Qq 2, 3 101 flat-cap] flat cap  
 most copies of Q1 102 and om. Qq 2, 3 107 foole ?] foole Qq 2, 3  
 gallant.] gallant: Qq 2, 3 109 Don] Dan B conj. 111 welkin]  
 Welken Q3

combes : lets be no longer fooles to this flat-cap *Touchstone*.  
Eastward Bully : this Sattin-belly, & Canuas-backt *Touchstone* ; slife man his father was a Malt-man, and his mother 115  
sould Ginger-bread in Christ-church.

*Goul.* What would yee ha me doe ?

*Quick.* Why do nothing, be like a gentleman, be idle, the  
curse of man is labour. Wipe thy bum with testones, & make  
Duckes and Drakes with shillings : What, Eastward hoe. 120  
Wilt thou crie, what ist yee lack ? stand with a bare pate,  
and a dropping nose, vnder a wodden pent-house, and art  
a gentleman ? wilt thou beare Tankards, and maist beare  
Armes ? be rul'd, turne gallant, Eastward hoe, *ta ly re, ly*  
*re, ro.* *Who calls Ieronimo ? speake here I am :* gods so, how 125  
like a sheepe thou lookst, a my conscience some cowheard  
begot thee, thou *Goulding* of *Goulding-hall*, ha boy ?

*Gou.* Goe, yee are a prodigall coxcombe, I a cowheard's  
sonne, because I turne not a drunken whore-hunting rake-  
hell like thy selfe ?

130

*Quick.* Rakehell ? rakehell ?

*Offers to draw, & Goulding trips vp his heeles and holds*  
*him.*

*Goul.* Fish, in soft termes yee are a cowardly bragging  
boy, Ile ha you whipt

*Quic.* Whipt, thats good ifaith, vntrusse me ?

*Goul.* No, thou wilt vndoe thy selfe. Alas I behold thee 135  
with pittie, not with anger ; thou common shot-clog, gull of  
all companies : mee thinkes I see thee already walking in  
Moore fields without a Cloake, with halfe a Hatte, without  
a band, a Doublet with three Buttons, without a girdle, a  
hose with one point and no Garter, with a cudgell vnder 140  
thine arme, borrowing and begging three pence.

1. 1. 114 Sattin-belly] Sattin belly Qq Canuas-backt] Canuas backt  
Qq 114-15 Touchstone,] Touchstone, (?) Q2 Touchstone Q3 115  
alife] Slife Qq 117 ha me] ha'me Qq 2, 3 118 idle,] idle some copies  
of Qr 120 What,] What Qq 124 ta] ta, Q3 125 ro. Who] ro,  
Who Qq (who Q3) 126 lookst] lookest Qq 2, 3 128 coxcombe]  
coxcome Qq 2, 3 131 Rakehell ? rakehell ?] Rake-hell ? rake-hell ?  
Qq 2, 3 Stage-dw. at 130-1 in Qq 133 boy,] boy Qq 2, 3 135  
Alas] Alas, Qq 2, 3 139 Buttons,] Buttons, Q2 Buttons: Q3  
girdle,] girdle: Qq 2, 3 141 arme,] arme Qr

*Quic.* Nay slife, take this and take all : as I am a Gentleman borne, Ile be drunke, grow valiant, and beate thee.

*Exit.*

*Goul.* Goe thou most madly vaine, whom nothing can  
145 recouer but that which reclaimes Atheists, and makes great  
persons sometimes religious : Calamitie. As for my place  
and life thus I haue read :—

*What ere some vainer youth may terme disgrace,*

*The gaine of honest paines is neuer base :*

150 *From trades, from artes, from valor honor springs,*

*These three are founts of gentry, yea of Kings.* *⟨Exit.⟩*

### ⟨Actus primi, Scena secunda.⟩

*Enter Girtred, Mildrid, Bettrice, and Poldauy a Taylor, Poldauy with a faire gowne, Scotch Varthingall, and French fall in his armes, Girtred in a French head attire, & Cittizens gowne ; Mildred sowing, & Bettrice leading a Monkey after her.*

*Gir.* For the passion of patience, looke if Sir *Petronell* approach , that sweet, that fine, that delicate, that—for loues sake tell me if he come. O sister *Mill*, though my father be a low-capt tradesman, yet I must be a Lady : and  
5 I praise God my mother must call me *Medam*, (does he come ?) off with this gowne for shames sake, off with this gowne : let not my Knight take me in the City cut in any hand : tear't, pax ont (does he come ?) tear't of. *Thus whilst shee sleepes I sorrow, for her sake, &c.*

10 *Mil.* Lord sister, with what an immodest impacencie and disgracefull scorne, doe you put off your City tier : I am

1. i. 142 slife] Slife Qq 143 drunke,] drunke some copies of Qr 145  
Atheists] Athiests Qr 150 trades,] trades Q1 valor] valour, Q2 corr.  
Q3 : valour Q3 originally honor] honour Qq 2, 3 1. ii. A Room in  
Touchstone's House. S Qq & B continue the scene Girtred in] girted  
in Q1 2 that—for] that for some copies of Qr 3 Mill,] Mil. Q3  
4 low-capt] low capt Qq 5 Medam] Madam Q3 8 come ?] come  
Qr sake] sakes Qr 9 sleepes] sleepes, Q3

sorrie to thinke you imagin to right your selfe, in wronging that which hath made both you and vs.

*Gir.* I tell you I cannot indure it, I must be a Lady : do you weare your Quoiffe with a London licket, your Stammell 15 petticoate with two guardes, the Buffin gowne with the Tuffittie cape, and the Veluet lace. I must be a Lady, and I will be a Lady. I like some humors of the Cittie Dames well, to eate Cherries onely at an Angell a pound, good ; to dye rich Scarlet black, pretty ; to line a Grogaram gowne cleane 20 thorough with veluet, tollerable : their pure linnen, their smocks of 3. li. a smock are to be borne withall. But your minsing niceryes, taffata pipkins, durance petticotes, & siluer bodkins :—Gods my life, as I shall be a Lady I cannot indure it. Is hee come yet ? Lord what a long knight tis ! *And euer* 25 *shee cride shoute home*, and yet I knew one longer, *and euer she cryde shoute home, fa, la, ly, re, lo, la.* •

*Mil.* Well Sister, those that scorne their nest, oft flye with a sicke wing.

*Gir.* Boe-bell.

30

*Mil.* Where Titles presume to thrust before fit meanes to second them, Wealth and Respect often growe sullen and will not follow. For sure in this, I would for your sake I spake not truth. *Where ambition of place goes before fitnessse of birth, contempt and disgrace follow.* I heard a Scholler once say, 35 that *Vlisses* when he counterfetted himselfe madde, yoakt cattes, and foxes, and dogges together to draw his plowe, whilst he followed and sowed salt : But sure I iudge them truly madde, that yoake citizens and courtiers, trades men and souldiers, a goldsmiths daughter and a knight : well 40 sister, pray God my father sowe not salt too.

*Gir.* Alas, poore *Mil.* when I am a Lady, Ile pray for thee yet Ifaith : Nay, and Ile vouchsafe to call thee sister *Mil*

1. 11 15 licket,] licket; Qq 1, 2. licket Q3 Stammell] Stammen  
Qq 2. Stamen Q3 16 guardes,] guardes some copies of Q1 20  
pretty,] pretty Qq 1, 2 pretty Q3 Grogaram] Grogarom Q3 21  
tollerable: Q3: tollerable; Qq 1, 2 22 smocks corr. Q1, Qq 2, 3:  
smocks Q1 originally 24 bodkins — corr. Q1: bodkins: Q1  
originally: bodkins—Qq 2, 3 26, 27 shoute] shoot Dodsley (1744)  
32 Respect] respect Q1 38 iudge] judge Q1 43 Mil] Mil. Q3

still, for though thou art not like to be a Lady as I am, yet  
 45 sure thou art a creature of Gods making; and mayest par-  
 adventure to bee sau'd as soone as I, (dos he come?) *And*  
*euere and anon she doubled in her song.* Now (Ladies my com-  
 fort) what a prophane Ape's here! Tailer, *Poldavis*, prethee  
 fit it, fit it: is this a right Scot? Does it clip close? and  
 50 beare vp round?

*Pold.* Fine and stifly ifaith, twill keepe your thighes so  
 coole and make your waste so small: here was a fault in  
 your bodie, but I haue supplied the defect, with the effect  
 of my steele instrument, which though it haue but one eye,  
 55 can see to rectifie the imperfection of the proportion.

*Gir.* Most ædefying Tailer! I protest you Tailers are  
 most sanctified members, and make many crooked thing goe  
 vpright. How must I beare my hands? light? light?

*Pold.* O I, now you are in the Lady-fashion, you must doe  
 60 all things light. Tread light, light. I, and fall so: that's the  
 court-Amble. *She trips about the stage.*

*Gir.* Has the Court nere a trot?

*Pold.* No, but a false gallop, Ladie.

*Gir.* *And if she will not goe to bed* *Cantat.*

65 *Bett.* The knight's come forsooth.

*Enter Sir Petronell, M. Touch-stone, and Mistris Touchstone.*

*Gir.* Is my knight come? O the Lord, my band? Sister  
 doo my cheekes looke well? giue me a little boxe a the eare  
 that I may seeme to blush: now, now. So, there, there,  
 there! Here he is: O my dearest delight, Lord, Lord, and  
 70 how dos my knight?

1. 11. 47-50 For Qx see page 497. Qq 2, 3 divide at 'here!' (48), 'Scot?' (49), and 'round?' (50). Reed (Dodsley, 1780) assigns Now . . . here! to Muldred. 48 Ape's corr. Qx, Qq 2, 3. Apes Qx originally Poldavis.] Poldavis Qx Poldavis, Qq 2, 3 49 it, fit] it fit Qx 54 instrument, which] instrument which, Qq 1, 2 56 Tailer! corr. Qx, Qq 2, 3. Tailer. Qx originally 57 thing] things B 60 light.] light, Q3 61 -Amble] -Amble, Qq 2, 3 64 bed] bed Qq 2, 3 65 knight's] knights Qq 1, 2: Knight's Q3 66 Lord, my] Lord. my Q1: Lord. My Qq 2, 3 Sister begins a new line in Qq 67 boxe] boke Q3 68 now.] now, Q3 69 there! corr. Qx, Qq 2, 3: there, Qx originally Here] here Qq 1, 2: heere Q3

*Touch.* Fye, with more modestie.

*Ger.* Modestie! why I am no cittizen now, modestie? am I not to bee married? y'are best to keepe me modest now I am to be a Ladie.

*Sir Petro.* Boldnes is good fashion and courtlike. 75

*Gir.* I, in a countrie Ladie I hope it is: as I shall be. And how chaunce ye came no sooner knight?

*Sir Pet.* Faith, I was so intertaind in the Progresse with one Count *Epernoum* a welch knight: wee had a match at *Baloone* too, with my Lord *Whachum*, for foure crownes. 80

*Gir.* At *Baboone*? *Iesu!* you and I will play at *Baboone* in the countrey, Knight?

*Sir Pet.* O sweet Lady: tis a strong play with the arme.

*Gir.* With arme, or legge, or any other member, if it bee a court-sport. And when shal's be married my Knight? 85

*Sir Pet.* I come now to consumate it; and your father may call a poore Knight, Sonne in Law.

*M. Touch.* Sir, ye are come, what is not mine to keepe, I must not be sorry to forgoe: A 100. li. Land her Grand-mother left her, tis yours, her selfe (as her mothers gift) is 90 yours. But if you expect ought from me, know, my hand and mine eyes open together; I doe not gue blindly: *Worke vpon that now.*

*Sir Pet.* Sir, you mistrust not my meanes? I am a Knight.

*Touch.* Sir, Sir; What I know not, you will giue me leaue 95 to say, I am ignorant of.

*Mistris Touch.* Yes, that he is a Knight; I know where he had money to pay the Gentlemen Vshers, and Heralds their Fees. I, that he is a Knight: and so might you haue beene too, if you had beene ought else then an Asse, aswell 100 as some of your neighbours. And I thought you would not

1. ii 71 *Touch*] *Touch* Q1 73 am I not begins a new line in Q1  
75. 78 *Sir*] *Sir*. Qq 2, 3. so Q3 at 83, 86, 94 75 courtlike.] courtlike,  
Qq 2, 3 76 it is] it it Q3 76-7 And how begins a new line in Qq  
81 *Baboone*? *Iesu!* corr Q1, Qq 2, 3 (*Baboon*? Qq 2, 3) *Baboone Iesu*.  
Q1 originally 82 countrey, Knight?] countrey Knight Q1 originally,  
miscorrected to countrey? Knight. coutrie? Knight Q2 country?  
Knight. Q3 84 member.] member Qq 2, 3 92 blindly ] blindly.  
Q3 96 say.] say Q3

ha beene Knighted, (as I am an honest woman) I would ha  
dub'd you my self, I praise God I haue wherewithall. But as  
for you daughter—

105 *Gir.* I mother, I must bee a Ladie to morrow : and by  
your leaue mother (I speake it not without my dutie, but  
onely in the right of my husband) I must take place of you,  
Mother.

*Mistris Touch.* That you shall Lady-daughter, and haue  
110 a Coach as well as I too.

*Gir.* Yes mother. But by your leaue mother, (I speake it  
not without my dutie, but onely in my husbands right) my  
Coach-horses must take the wall of your Coach-horses.

*Touch-stone.* Come, come, the day growes low : tis supper  
115 time ; vse my house, the wedding solemnitie is at my wifes  
cost ; thanke mee for nothing but my willing blessing : for  
(I cannot faine) my hopes are faint. And Sir, respect my  
daughter, shee has refus'd for you wealthy and honest  
matches, knowne good men, well monied, better traded,  
120 best reputed.

*Gir.* Boddy a truth, *Chittizens, Chittizens.* Sweet Knight,  
as soone as euer wee are married, take mee to thy mercie  
out of this miserable *Chittie*, presently, carry mee out of the  
sent of *New-castle Coale*, and the hearing of *Boe-bell*, I be-  
125 seech thee downe with me for God sake.

*Touch.* Well daughter, I haue read, that olde wit sings :

*The greatest riuers flow from little springs.*

*Though thou art full, skorne not thy meanes at first,*

*He that's most drunke may soonest be athirst.*

130 *Worke upon that now.*

*All but Touch-stone, Mildred, & Goulding depart.*

No, no ; yond' stand my hopes. *Mildred*, come hither

1. 11. 104 daughter—] daughter.— *Qq* 111 *Gir.*] *Cw.* *Q1* mother,]  
mother *Q3* 112 dutie, *Q2* : dutie *Q1* : duty, *Q3* 115 house,]  
house *Qq* 1, 2 118 you] you, *Q3* 122 to] : to to *Q1* 126  
read,] read *Qq* 2, 3 129 drunke] downke *Q3* originally athirst] a  
thirst *Qq* 131 yond'] yon'd *Qq* *Mildred*, come beginning a  
new line in *Qq* 1, 3 : *Mildred*. Come beginning a new speech in *Qq* 2, 3  
(*Mildred*, *Q3*)

daughter. And how approue you your sisters fashion ? how doe you phantsie her choyce ? what dost thou thinke ?

*Mil.* I hope as a sister, well.

*Touch.* Nay but, nay but how dost thou like her behauiour 135 and humour ? speake freely.

*Mil.* I am loath to speake ill : and yet I am sorry of this, I cannot speake well.

*Touch.* Well : very good, as I would wish : A modest answere. *Goulding*, come hither : hither *Golding*. How dost 140 thou like the Knight, Sir *Flash* ? dos he not looke bigge ? how likst thou the *Elephant* ? he sayes he has a castle in the Countrey.

*Gould.* Pray heauen, the *Elephant* carry not his Castle on his backe.

145

*Touch.* Fore heauen, very well : But seriously, how dost repute him ?

*Gould.* The best I can say of him is, I know him not.

*Touch.* Ha, *Goulding* ? I commend thee, I approoue thee, and will make it appeare my affection is strong to thee. My 150 wife has her humour, and I will ha' mine. Dost thou see my daughter here ? shee is not faire, well-fauoured or so, indifferent, which modest measure of beautie, shall not make it thy onely worke to watch her, nor sufficient mischaunce, to suspect her. Thou art towardly, shee is modest, thou art 155 prouident, shee is carefull. Shee's nowe mine : giue me thy hand, shee's now thine. *Worke vpon that now.*

*Gould.* Sir, as your sonne, I honour you ; and as your seruant, obey you.

*Touch.* Sayest thou so ? come hither *Mildred*. Doe you 160 see yond' fellow ? he is a Gentleman (tho my Prentise) & has somewhat to take too : a Youth of good hope ; well friended, wel parted. Are you mine ? You are his. *Worke (you) vpon that now.*

*Mil.* Sir, I am all yours : your body gaue mee life, your 165

1. ii. 133 phantsie] phant'sie Q3 choyce] cho yce Q1 148 not ] not ?  
Qq 2, 3 149 approoue] approue Qq 2, 3 151 ha' ] ha, Q1 ha Q2  
158 honour] honor Q3 159 seruant,] seruant Qq 160 so ?] so,  
Qq 161 yond'] yon'd Qq



care and loue hapinesse of life : let your vertue still direct it,  
for to your wisdome I wholly dispose my selfe.

*Touch.* Sayst thou so ? be you two better acquainted.  
Lip her, lip her knaue. So : shut vp shop : in. We must  
170 make holiday. *Ex<eunt> Gol.<ding> & Mil.<dred>.*

*This match shal on, for I intend to prooue  
Which thriues the best, the meane or loftie loue.  
Whether fit Wedlock vowd twixt like and like,  
Or prouder hopes, which daringly orestrike  
175 Their place and meanes : tis honest Times expence,  
When seeming lightnesse beares a morrall sence.*

Worke vpon that now.

*Exit.*

### Actus secundi, Scena prima.

*Touch-stone, Quickesiluer, Goulding and Mildred, sitting  
on eyther side of the stall.*

*Touch.* *Quickesiluer*, maister *Frances Quickesiluer*, maister  
*Quickesiluer* ?

*Enter Quickesiluer.*

*Qui.* Here sir ; (*vmp.*)

*Touch.* So sir ; nothing but flat Maister *Quickesiluer*  
5 (*without any familiar addition*) will fetch you : will you  
trusse my points sir ?

*Quick.* I forsooth : (*vmp.*)

*Touch.* How now sir ? the druncken hyckop, so soone  
this morning ?

10 *Quick.* Tis but the coldnesse of my stomack forsooth.

*Touch.* What ? haue you the cause naturall for it ? y' are  
a very learned drunckerd : I beleuee I shall misse some of

1 ii. 168 you] ye Qq 2, 3 acquainted] acquainted, Q3 169 lip]  
Lip Qq So:] So most copies of Q1 (with space for the stop) : So Qq 2, 3  
(without the space) 170 Stage-dir. after 171 in Qq 171 prooue]  
proue Qq 2, 3 174 which] which Q3 orestrike] ore strike Qq 176  
morrall] mortall Q3 originally II 1. Act II. Scene I. Goldsmiths'  
Row B. secundi.] secundi. Qq prima] Prima Qq After 2 Qq add  
stage-dir. to 2 4 Maister] Master Q3 10 stomack] stomacks Q2 :  
stomake Q3 12 drunckerd] drunkerd Qq 2, 3

my siluer spoones with your learning. The nuptiall night will not moisten your throate sufficiently, but the morning likewise must raine her dewes into your gluttonous wesand. 15

*Quick.* An't please you sir, we did but drinke (*vmp.*) to the comming off, of the Knightly Bridegrome.

*Touch.* To the comming off an' him?

*Quick.* I forsooth: we druncke to his comming on (*vmp.*) when we went to bed; and now we are vp, we must drinke 20 to his comming off: for thats the chiefe honour of a Souldier sir, and therfore we must drinke so much the more to it, forsooth. (*vmp.*)

*Touch.* A very capitall reason. So that you goe to bed late, and rise early to commit drunkennesse? you fullfill the 25 Scripture very sufficient wickedly forsooth.

*Quick.* The Knights men forsooth be still a their knees at it, (*vmp.*) & because tis for your credit sir, I wold be loth to flinch.

*Touch.* I pray, sir, een to 'hem againe then; y'are one of 30 the seperated crew, one of my wiues faction, & my young Ladies, with whom and with their great match, I wil haue nothing to do.

*Quick.* So sir, now I will go keepe my (*vmp.*) credit with 'hem an't please you sir. 35

*Touch.* In any case Sir, lay one cup of Sack more a' your cold stomach, I beseech you.

*Quick.* Yes forsooth.

*Exit Quick.*

*Touch.* This is for my credit; Seruants ever maintaine drunkennesse in their maisters house, for their maisters 40. credit; a good idle Seruing-mans reason. I thanke Time, the night is past; I nere wakt to such cost; I thinke we haue stowd more sorts of flesh in our bellies, then euer Noahs Arke receiued: and for Wine, why my house turnes giddie with it, and more noise in it then at a Conduict; Aye me, 45 euen beasts condemne our gluttonie. Well, 'tis our Citties

11. 1. 16 drinke] a drinke Q3 originally 19 to] te Q3 originally 32  
whom] whom, Q3 35 'hem] them Q3 38 Stage-dir. Exit Q3:  
Exit. Q1: Exit Q2 39 credit.] credite, Q2. credit, Q3

fault, which because we commit seldome, we commit the more sinfully, wee lose no time in our sensualitie, but we make amends for it ; O that we would do so in vertue, and  
 50 religious negligences ; But see here are all the sober parcels my house can showe, Ile cauesdrop, heare what thoughts they vtter this morning.

*Enter Goulding & Mildred, discovering the shop.*

*Goul.* But is it possible, that you seeing your sister preferd to the bed of a Knight, should containe your affections in the  
 55 armes of a Prentice ?

*Myl.* I had rather make vp the garment of my affections in some of the same peece, then like a foole weare gownes of two coulours, or mix Sackcloth with Sattin.

*Gold.* And doe the costly garments, the title and fame of  
 60 a Lady, the fashion, obseruation, and reuerence proper to such preferment, no more enflame you, then such conuenience as my poore meanes and industrie can offer to your vertues ?

*Mil.* I haue obseru'd that the bridle giuen to those violent  
 65 flatteries of fortune, is seldome recouer'd ; they beare one headlong in desire from one noueltie to another : and where those ranging appetites raigne, there is euer more passion then reason : no staye, and so no happinesse. These hastie aduancements are not naturall ; Nature hath giuen vs  
 70 legges, to goe to our objects ; not wings to flie to them.

*Goul.* How deare an object you are to my desires I cannot expresse, whose fruition would my maisters absolute consent and yours vouchsafe me, I should be absolutely happy. And though it were a grace so farre beyond my merit, that  
 75 I should blush with vnworthinesse to receiue it, yet thus farre both my loue & my meanes shall assure your requitall ; you shall want nothing fit for your birth and education ; what encrease of wealth and aduancement the honest and orderly industrie & skill of our trade will affoorde in any, I

11 i. 59 garments,] garments ; Qq 67 euer more *corr.* Qr, Qq 2, 3 :  
 euermore Qr *originally* 78 aduancement] aduancement, Qq 2, 3  
 79 trade] ttrade Qr

doubt not will be aspired by me ; I will euer make your<sup>80</sup>  
contentment the end of my endeouours ; I will loue you  
aboue all ; and onely your grieve shall be my miserie ; and  
your delight, my felicitie.

*Touch.* Worke vpon that now. By my hopes, he woes  
honestly and orderly ; he shalbe Anchor of my hopes.<sup>85</sup>  
Looke, see the ill yoakt monster his fellow.

*Enter Quicksiluer vnclac'd, a towell about his necke, in  
his flat Cap, drunke.*

*Quick.* Eastward Hoe ; Holla ye pampered lades of Asia.

*Touch.* Drunke now downe right, a' my fidelitie.

*Quic.* (Vmp) Pulldo, pulldo ; showse quoth the Caliuier. ,

*Goul.* Fie fellow *Quicksiluer*, what a pickle are you in ?<sup>90</sup>

*Quic.* Pickle ? pickle in thy throate ; zounes pickell ?  
wa ha ho, good morow, knight *Petronell* : morow lady  
Gouldsmith : come of, Knight, with a counterbuff, for the  
honor of knighthood.

*Goul.* Why how now sir ? doe yee know where you are ?<sup>95</sup>

*Quic.* Where I am ? why sbloud you Ioulthead where I  
am ?

*Gold.* Go to, go to, for shame go to bed, and sleepe out  
this immodestie . thou sham'st both my maister and his  
house.

*Quick.* Shame ? what shame ? I thought thou wouldst<sup>100</sup>  
show thy bringing vp : and thou wert a Gentleman as I am,  
thou wouldst thinke it no shame to be drunke. Lend me  
some money, saue my credit, I must dine with the Seruing  
men and their wives ; and their wiues sirha.

*Gou.* E'ene who you will, Ile not lend thee three pence.<sup>105</sup>

*Quic.* Sfoote lend me some money, hast thou not Hyren  
here ?

*Touch.* Why how now sirha ? what vain's this, hah ?

11. i. 81 contentment] contenment Qr 88 a'] a, Qq 89 (Vmp)  
Pulldo, pulldo ;] (Vmp) pulldo, Pulldo, corr Qr: Am pum pull eo,  
Pulldo, Qr originally, Qq 2, 3 (Pulldo Q3) quoth corr. Qr: quot Qr  
originally, Qq 2, 3 93 Gouldsmith.] Gouldsmith. Qr: Gouldsmith,  
Qq 2, 3 94 honor] honour Qq 2, 3 98 to . . to] too . . . too  
Qq 2, 3 104-5 Seruing-men] Seruing men most copies of Qr

- 110 *Quic.* Who cries on murther? lady was it you? how does our maister? pray thee crie Eastward ho!

*Touch.* Sirha, sirrha, y'are past your hickup now, I see y'are drunke.

*Quic.* Tis for your credit maister.

- 115 *Touch.* And heare you keepe a whore in towne.

*Quic.* Tis for your credit Maister.

*Touch.* And what you are out in Cashe, I know.

*Quick.* So do I, my father's a Gentleman, *Worke upon that now*; Eastward hoe.

- 120 *Touch.* Sir, Eastward hoe, will make you go Westward ho; I will no longer dishonest my house, nor endanger my stocke with your licence; There sir, there's your Indenture, all your apparell (that I must know) is on your back; and from this time my doore is shut to you: from me be free;  
125 but for other freedome, and the moneys ~~you have wasted~~; Eastward ho, shall not serue you.

*Quic.* Am I free a' my fetters? Rente; Flye with a Duck in thy mouth: and now I tell thee, *Touchstone*—

*Touch.* Good sir.

- 130 *Quic.* When this eternall substance of my soule,

*Touch.* Well said, chandge your Gould ends for your play ends.

*Quick.* Did hve imprison'd in my wanton flesh.

*Touch.* What then, sir?

- 135 *Quic.* I was a Courtier in the Spanish court,

*And Don Andrea was my name.*

*Touch.* Good maister *Don Andrea* will you marche?

*Quic.* Sweete *Touchstone*, will you lend me two shillings?

*Touch.* Not a penny.

- 140 *Quic.* Not a penny? I haue friends, & I haue acquaintance, I will pisse at thy shop posts, and throw rotten Egges at thy signe: *Worke upon that now.* *Exit, staggering.*

H.1. III ho? Qq 1, 2 hoe? Q3  
huck vp Q3 see,] see; W. R. Chetwood

112 hickup] hickvp Qq 1, 2:  
113 Quic.] Touch. c.w. 112,  
B 3 verso, Q1 118 I.] I. Q1: I: Qq 2, 3 father's Q3. fathers  
Qq 1, 2 125 wasted,] wasted Q3 127 a.] a, Q1: a Qq 2, 3 130  
soule,] soule. Qq 2, 3 135-6 Prose in Qq 141 pisse] passe Q3

*Touch.* Now sirha, you ? heare you ? you shall serue me no more neither ; not an houre longer.

*Goul.* What meane you sir ? 145

*Touch.* I meane to giue thee thy freedome ; & with thy freedome my daughter : & with my daughter, a father's loue. And with all these such a portion, as shall make Knight *Petronell* himselfe enuie thee : y'are both agreed ? are yee not ? 150

*Ambo.* With all submission, both of thanks and dutie.

*Touch.* Well then, the great powre of heauen blesse & confirme you. And, *Goulding*, that my loue to thee may not showe lesse then my wiues loue to my eldest daughter ; thy mariage feast shall equall the Knights and hers. 155

*Goul.* Let me beseech you, no Sir, the superfluitie and colde meate left at their Nuptialls, will with bountie furnish ours. The grossest prodigallitie is superfluous cost of the Bellye : nor would I wish any inuitement of States or friendes, onely your reuerent presence and wnesse shall sufficiently grace and confirme vs. 160

*Touch.* Sonne to mine owne bosome, take her and my blessing : The nice fondling, my Lady sir-reuerence, that I must not nowe presume to call daughter, is so rauish't with desire to hansell her new Coche, and see her knights *Eastward Castle*, that the next morning will sweate with her busie setting forth, awaye will she and her mother, and while their preparation is making, our selues with some two or three other friends will consummate the humble matche, we haue in Gods name concluded. 170

(Exeunt Goulding and Mildred.)

*Tis to my wish ; for I haue often read,*

*Fit birth, fit age, keepes long a quiet bed.*

*Tis to my wish ; for Tradesmen (well tis knowne*

*Get with more ease, then Gentry keepes his owne.*

*Exit.*

II 1. 159 inuitement] inuitement Q1 165 her] he Q3 originally :  
the r dropping to the next line, so that next is printed next 167 busie]  
bruse Q2: busie Q3 foorth] forth Qq 2, 3 168 selues] selue s Q3  
originally 169 humble] humble Q3 originally 173 for] For Qq 1, 2

<Actus secundi, Scena secunda.>

*Securitie solus.*

*Secu.* My priuie Guest, lustie *Quickesiluer*, has drunke too deepe of the Bride-boule, but with a little sleepe he is much recouered; And I thinke is making himselfe readie, to bee drunke in a gallanter likenes: My house is as 'twere the  
 5 Caue, where the yong Out-lawe hoords the stolne vayles of his occupation; And here when he will reuell it in his prodigall similtude, he retires to his Trunks, and (I may say softly) his Punks: he dares trust me with the keeping of both: for I am *Securitie* it selfe, my name is *Securitie*, the  
 10 famous Vsurer.

*Enter Quickesiluer in his Prentises Cote and Cap, his gallant Breeches and Stockings, gartering himselfe. [Securitie following.]*

*Quic.* Come old *Securitie*, thou father of destruction: th'indented Sheepskinne is burn'd wherein I was wrapt, and I am now loose, to get more children of perdition into thy vsurous Bonds. Thou feed'st my Lecherie, and I thy  
 15 Couetousnes: Thou art Pandar to me for my wench, and I to thee for thy coosenages: K. me, K. thee, runnes through Court and Countrey.

*Secu.* Well said my subtle *Quickesiluer*, these K's ope the dores to all this worldes felicitie: the dullest forehead sees  
 20 it. Let not mast(er) Courtier thinke hee carries all the knauery on his shoulders: I haue knowne poore *Hob* in the countrie, that has worne hob-nayles on's shoes, haue as

II. II *Securitie solus.*] *Ent. Secu.* Qq 2, 3, making no change of scene: *Scene II. Room in Security's house.* B 1 *Quickesiluer*] *Quickesiluer* Q3 4 'twere] t'were Qq 10 *Exit B*, who marks a new scene, *Scene III. Room in Security's house* at this point, but there has probably been some shortening of the scene (see p. 497), and, as the text stands, the scene should run on *Stage-dir. himselfe.*] *himselfe*, Qq 2, 3 14 thy] my Qq 2, 3 14-15 and I thy Couetousnes] and thy Couetounes Q3 originally 15 wench,] wench, Q3 17 Court and] Courtand Q3 18 *Quickesiluer*] *Quic*: Q2: *Quishe*. Q3 originally: *Quic* corr. Q3 these] These Qq 1, 2: Those Q3 19 dores] doore c.w. at 18, B 4 verso, Q1

much villanie in's head, as he that weares gold bottons in's cap.

*Quic.* Why, man, tis the London high-way to thrift ; if 25  
vertue bee vsde, tis but as a scrappe to the nette of villanie.  
They that vse it simplie, thrue simplie I warrant. " Waight  
and fashion makes Goldsmiths Cockolds.

*Enter Syndefie, with Quicke-siluers doublet, Cloake,  
Rapier, and Dagger.*

*Synd.* Here sir, put of the other halfe of your Prentishup.

*Quick.* Well sayd sweet Syn · bring forth my brauerie. 30  
Now let my Truncks shoote foorth their silkes concealde,  
I now am free ; and now will iustifie  
My Trunkes and Punkes : Auant dull Flat-cap then,  
*Via*, the curtaine that shaddowed *Borgia* ;  
There lie thou huske of my enuassail'd State. 35  
I *Sampson* now, have burst the *Philistins* bands,  
And in thy lappe my lovely *Dalida*,  
I'e lie and snore out my enfranchisde state.

*When Sampson was a tall yong man  
His power and strength increased than, 40  
He sould no more, nor cup, nor can,  
But did them all dispise.  
Old Touchstone, now wright to thy friends,  
For one to sell thy base gold ends,  
Quickesiluer, now no more attends 45  
Thee Touchstone.*

But Dad, hast thou seene my running Gelding drest to day ?

*Secu.* That I haue *Franck*, the Ostler a'th Cocke, drest  
him for a Breakefast.

*Quick.* What did he eate him ? 50

11. 11. 23 villanie] villany. Q3 25 Quicksilver's speech is run on in  
Qq 2, 3 thrift.] thrift, Qq 26 vsde.] vsde, Qq (vsed; Q3 originally)  
as a scrappe] a scape Q2 a scape Q3 35 enuassail'd] envassail'd Q1  
37 *Dalsda*] *Dalsda* Q3 originally. 38 and snore out my] and snore  
outmy Q3 originally. miscorrected to andsnore out my 42 dispise]  
despise Qq 2, 3 43 Touchstone] Touchstone Q1 wright] wrst Qq 2, 3  
44 ends,] ends Q1 48 *Franck*,] *Franck*. Qq 2, 3



*Secu.* No, but he eate his breakfast for dressing him :  
and so drest him for breakfast.

*Quicksiluer.* O wittie Age, where age is young in witte,  
And al youths words haue gray beards full of it !

55 *Syn.* But ah-las *Francke*, how will all this bee maintain'd  
now ? Your place maintain'd it before.

*Quicksiluer.* Why and I maintaine my place. Ile to the  
Court, another manner of place for maintenance I hope then  
the silly *Cittie*. I heard my father say, I heard my mother  
60 sing an olde Song and a true : *Thou art a shee foole, and  
know'st not what belongs to our male wisdom.* I shall bee a  
*Marchaunt* for-sooth : trust my estate in a wooden Trough  
as hee does ? What are these Shippes, but Tennis Balles for  
the windes to play withall ? Tost from one waue to another ;  
65 Nowe vnder-line ; Nowe ouer the house ; Sometimes Bricke-  
wel'd against a Rocke, so that the guttes flye out againe ;  
Sometimes strooke vnder the wide Hazzard, and farewell  
Mast(er) Marchant.

*Synnedefie.* Well *Francke*, well ; the Seas you say are  
70 vncertaine : But hee that sayles in your Court Seas, shall  
finde 'hem tenne times fuller of hazzard ; wherein to see  
what is to bee seene, is torment more then a free Spirite  
can indure ; But when you come to suffer, howe many  
Iniuries swallowe you ? What care and deuotion must you  
75 vse, to humour an imperious Lord ? proportion your looks  
to his looks ? <your> smiles to his smiles ? fit your sayles  
to the winde of his breath ?

*Quick.* Tush hee's no Iourney-man in his craft, that can-  
not doe that.

80 *Synnedefie.* But hee's worse then a Prentise that does it,  
not onely humouring the Lorde, but euery Trencher-bearer,  
euery Groome that by indulgence and intelligence crept into

II. II. 53 young] yong Q3      55 Syn.] Hyn. Q1. Sin. Q2 : Secu. Q3  
Francke] Frache Q3      56 Your] c.w. 'Quick.' after 'now?' sig. C.  
Q1      59 I in Q3 originally worked out above the line, throwing  
out the r of another in 57      60 an olde] a nolde Q1 : a nold  
Qq 2, 3      Thou] Tou Q1      66-7 againe ; Sometimes] againe : sometimes  
Qq      69 Francke,] Franch. Q3      78 craft, corr. Q1 : craft Q1  
originally, Qq 2, 3

his fauour, and by Pandarisme into his Chamber ; He rules the roste : And when my honourable Lorde sayes it shall bee thus, my worshipfull Rascall (the Groome of his close stoole) 85 sayes it shall not bee thus, claps the doore after him, and who dares enter ? A Prentise, quoth you ? tis but to learne to liue, and does that disgrace a man ? hee that rises hardly, stands firmly : but hee that rises with ease, alas, falles as easily.

*Quickesilver.* A pox on you, who taught you this mor-  
rallitie ? \* 90

*Securitie.* Tis long of this wittie Age, Maister *Francis*. But indeede, Mistris *Synnedefie*, all Trades complaine of in-  
conuenience, and therefore tis best to haue none. The 95  
Marchaunt hee complaines, and sayes, Trafficke is subiect to much vncertaintie and losse : let 'hem keepe their goods on dry land with a vengeaunce, and not expose other mens substances to the mercie of the windes, vnder protection of a wooden wall (as Maister *Francis* sayes) and all for greedie 100  
desire, to enrich themselues with vnconscionable gaine, two for one, or so : where I, and such other honest men as lue by lending money, are content with moderate profite, Thirtie, or Fortie i'th'hundred : so wee may haue it with quietnesse, and out of perrill of winde and weather, rather 105  
then runne those daungerous courses of trading, as they doe.

*Quick.* I Dad, thou mayst well bee called *Securitie*, for thou takest the safest course.

*Securitie.* Faith the quieter, and the more contented ; and, out of doubt, the more godly. For Marchants in their 110  
courses are neuer pleas'd, but euer repining against Heauen : One prayes for a Westerly winde to carry his shippe foorth ; another for an Easterly to bring his shippe home ; and at euery shaking of a leafe, hee falles into an agome, to thinke

11. ii. 89 alas] Alas Qq 91-2 morrallitie ?] In Q1 mor[rallitie  
divided without hyphen moralitie ? Q2. moralitie ? Q3 96  
Marchaunt] Merchant Q3 97 vncertaintie] incertaintie Q3 100  
woodden] wodden Q3 104 hundred: corr. Q1: hundred, Q2  
originally, Qq 2, 3 106 Exit Synedfy. add B, to match 186 below.  
Cf. p. 498. 110 Marchants] Merchants Q3

15 what daunger his Shippe is in on such a Coast, and so foorth.  
 The Farmer hee is euer at oddes with the Weather, some-  
 times the clowdes haue beene too barren; Sometimes the  
 Heauens forgette themselues, their Haruests answer not  
 their hopes; Sometimes the Season falles out too fruitfull,  
 20 Corne will beare no price, and so foorth. Th' Artificer, hee's  
 all for a stirring worlde; if his Trade bee too dull and fall  
 short of his expectation, then falles he out of ioynt. Where  
 we that trade nothing but money, are free from all this, wee  
 are pleas'd with all weathers: let it raine or hold vp, bee  
 25 calme or windy, let the season be whatsoeuer, let Trade goe  
 how it will, wee take all in good part; een what please the  
 heauens to send vs; so the Sunne stand not still; and  
 the Moone keepe her vsuall returnes; and make vp dayes,  
 moneths, and yeares.

30 *Quick.* And you haue good securitie?

*Secu.* I mary *Francke*, that's the speciall point.

*Quick.* And yet forsooth wee must haue Trades to liue  
 withall; For wee cannot stand without legges, nor flye  
 without wings; and a number of such skurue phrases.

35 No, I say still; hee that has wit, let him liue by his wit:  
 hee that has none, let him be a Trades-man.

*Secu.* Witty Maister *Francis*! Tis pittie any Trade should  
 dull that quicke braine of yours. Doe but bring Knight  
*Petronell* into my Parchment Toyles once, and you shall  
 40 neuer neede to toyle in any trade, a my credit! You know  
 his wiues Land?

*Quickesilver.* Even to a foote Sir, I haue beene often  
 there: a pretie fine Seate, good Land, all intire within it  
 selfe.

45 *Secu.* Well wooded?

*Quick.* Two hundred pounds woorth of wood readye to

11. 11 115 daunger] danger Q3 on] one Qq 2, 3 121 worlde:]  
 worlde, Qq has] thus Q3 dull P Simpson conj. full Q1: full, Qq 2, 3  
 (note the context full and fall) 124 with all] withall Q2 124-5  
 bee calme corr. Q1: be call me Q1 originally. be calme Qq 2, 3 126  
 part:] part, Q3 131 speciall] speciall some copies of Q3 134 wings:]  
 wings, Q3 135 still:] still, Q3 137 Tis pittie begins a new line in  
 Qq 139 once.] once Q1 140 a] a' Qq 2, 3 146 hundred] hundred Q3

fell. And a fine sweete house that stands iust in the midst  
an't, like a Pricke in the midst of a Circle; would I were  
your Farmer, for a hundred pound a yeere.

*Secu.* Excellent M<aster> Francis; how I do long to doe <sup>150</sup>  
thee good: *How I doe hunger, and thirst to haue the honour*  
*to enrich thee!* I, euen to die, that thou mightest inherite my  
liuing: *euen hunger and thirst;* for a my religion, M<aster>  
Francis (And so tell Knight Petronell) I doe it to doe him a  
pleasure. 155

*Quickesiluer.* Marry Dad, his horses are now comming vp,  
to beare downe his Ladie, wilt thou lend him thy stable to  
set 'hem in?

*Secur.* Faith M<aster> Francis, I would be lothe to lend  
my Stable out of dores, in a greater matter I will pleasure <sup>160</sup>  
him, but not in this.

*Quick.* *A pox of your hunger and thirst.* Well Dad, let him  
haue money: All he could any way get, is bestowed on a  
Ship, now bound for *Virginia*. the frame of which voiage is  
so closely conuade, that his new Ladie nor any of her <sup>165</sup>  
friendes know it. Notwithstanding, as soone as his Ladyes  
hand is gotten to the sale of her inheritance, and you haue  
furnisht him with money, he will instantly hoyst Saile, and  
away.

*Secur.* Now a Franck gale of winde goe with him, Maister <sup>170</sup>  
*Franke*, we haue too few such knight aduenturers: who  
would not sell away competent certainties, to purchase (with  
any danger) excellent vncertainties? your true knight ven-  
turer euer does it. Let his wife seale to day, he shall haue  
his money to day. 175

*Qui.* To morrow she shall, Dad, before she goes into the  
country; to worke her to which action, with the more  
engines, I purpose presently to preferre my sweete *Sinne*  
here, to the place of her Gentlewoman; whom you (for the

11. 148 midst] midstest Q3 Circle.] circle, Q3 152 enrich]  
enrich Q3 thee] thee? Qq 153 thirst, for] thirst-for Qq 154  
Francis (And] Francis And Q1 Francis And Q2 Francis, and Q3  
Petronell) I] Petronell I Q1. Pet I Qq 2, 3 164 frame] fame W R  
Chetwood 172 certainties] certainties Q3 173 danger]] danger(  
Q2 vncertainties] vncertainties Q3 177 country.] country, Qq

180 more credit) shall present as your friends daughter, a Gentle-  
woman of the countrie, new come vp with a will for a while  
to learne fashions forsooth, and be toward some Ladie ; and  
she shall buzz prettie deuices into her Ladies eare ; feeding  
her humors so seruiceable (as the manner of such as she is,  
185 you know.)

*Secur.* True good Maister *Fraunces*.

[*Enter Sindefie.*]

*Quic.* That she shall keepe her Port open to any thing she  
commends to her.

*Secur.* A' my religion, a most fashionable proiect ; as  
190 good she spoile the Lady, as the Lady spoile her ; for 'tis  
three to one of one side : sweete mistresse *Sinne*, how are  
you bound to maister *Frances* ! I doe not doubt to see you  
shortly wedde one of the head men of our cittie.

*Sinne.* But sweete *Franke*, when shall my father *Securitie*  
195 present me ?

*Quic.* With all festination ; I haue broken the Ice to it  
already ; and will presently to the Knights house, whether,  
my good old Dad, let me pray thee with all formallitie to  
man her.

200 *Secur.* Commaund me Maister *Frances* ; I doe hunger and  
thirst to doe thee seruice. Come sweete Mistresse *Sinne*, take  
leau of my *Wynnifride*, and we will instantly meete *francke*  
Maister *Frances* at your Ladies.

*Enter Winnifride aboue.*

*Win.* Where is my *Cu* there ? *Cu* ?

205 *Sec.* I *Winnie*.

*Win.* Wilt thou come in, sweete *Cu* ?

*Secur.* I *Wynney*, presently.

*Exeunt* (*Winifred aboue, Securitie and Syndefie below*).

*Quic.* I *Wynney*, quod he ; thats all he can doe poore

ii. ii. 184 18,] 18 *Qq* 186 *Fraunces*] *Frauncis* Q3 (so 200) 200  
Commaund] Command *Qq* 2, 3 202 *francke*] *Francke*, *Qq* 2, 3 207  
presently.] presētly *Q2*: *presētly* *Q3* originally, corrected to *presētly*  
*Exeunt* . . . below. S.: *Exe.* *Q2*: *Exe* *Q3* originally 208 he:] he? *Qq*

man ; he may well cut off her name at *Wynney*. O tis an egregious Pandare ! what will not an vsurous knaue be, so 210 he may bee riche ? O 'tis a notable Iewes trump ! I hope to liue to see dogs meate made of the old Vsurers flesh ; Dice of his bones ; and Indentures of his skinne : and yet his skinne is too thicke to make Parchment, 'twould make good Bootes for a Peeter man to catch Salmon in. Your onely 215 smooth skinne to make fine Vellam, is your Puritanes skinne they be the smoothest and slickest knaues in a countrie.

*Enter Sir Petronell in Bootes with a riding wan.*

*Petr.* Ile out of this wicked towne as fast as my horse can trot : Here's now no good action for a man to spend his time in. Tauerns growe dead ; Ordinaries are blowne vp ; 220 Playes are at a stand ; Howses of Hospitallitie at a fall ; not a Feather wauing, nor a Spurre gingling any where : Ile away instantlie.

*Qui.* Y'ad best take some crownes in your purse Knight, or else your Eastward Castle will smoake but miserably. 225

*Petr.* O *Francke* ! my castle ? Alas all the Castles I haue, are built with ayre, thou know'st.

*Quic.* I know it Knight, and therefore wonder whether your Lady is going.

*Pet.* Faith to seeke her Fortune I thinke. I said I had a 230 castle and land Eastward, and Eastward she will without contradiction ; her coach, and the coach of the Sunne must meete full butt : And the Sunne being outshined with her Ladyships glorie, she feares hee goes Westward to hange himselfe. 235

*Quic.* And I feare, when her enchanted Castle becomes inuisible, her Ladyship will returne and follow his example.

*Petr.* O, that she would haue the grace, for I shall neuer be able to pacifie her, when she sees her selfe deceiued so.

*Quic.* As easely as can be. Tell her she mustooke your 240

ii. ii. 210 vsurous] vsurours Q3 214 Parchment.] Parchment. Q2  
216 Vellam.] Vellam some copies of Q1 217 countrie] countrie Q2  
Enter . . wan.] Actus Secundus, Scena Tertia } Before Sir Petronell's  
Lodging. S. 219 trot ] trot, Q2 221 stand.] stand Qq 2, 3  
233 outshined] out shined Qq 235 himselfe.] himselfe, Q2

directions, and that shortly, your selfe will downe with her to approoue it; and then, cloath but her croupper in a new Gowne, and you may driue her any way you list: for these women Sir, are like Essex Calues, you must wriggle 'hem on  
245 by the taylor still, or they will neuer driue orderly.

*Petr.* But alas sweet *Francke*, thou know'st my habilitie will not furnish her bloud with those costly humors.

*Quic.* Cast that cost on me Sir, I haue spoken to my olde *Pandare Securitie*, for money or commoditie; and com-  
250 moditie (if you will) I know he will procure you.

*Petr.* Commoditie! Alas what commoditie?

*Qui.* Why Sir, what say you to Figges, and Raysons?

*Petr.* A plague of Figges and Raysons, and all such fraile commodities, we shall make nothing of 'hem.

*Quic.* Why then Sir, what say you to Fortie pound in  
255 roasted Beefe?

*Petr.* Out vpon 't, I haue lesse stomacke to that, then to the Figges and Raysons: Ile out of Towne, though I so-  
iourne with a friend of mine, for staye here I must not; my  
260 creditors haue laide to arrest me, and I haue no friend vnder heauen but my Sword to baile me.

*Qui.* Gods me Knight, put 'hem in sufficient sureties, rather than let your Sworde bayle you; Let 'hem take their choice, eyther the *Kings Benche*, or the *Fleete*, or which of  
265 the two *Counters* they like best, for by the Lord I like none of 'hem.

*Petr.* Well *Francke* there is no iesting with my earnest  
necessitie; thou know'st if I make not present money to  
further my voyage begun, all's lost, and all I haue laid out  
270 about it.

*Qui.* Why then Sir in earnest, if you can get your wise Lady to set her hand to the sale of her Inheritance, the bloud-  
hound *Securitie* will smell out ready money for you instantly.

ii. ii. 246 know'st] know'st Qq 2, 3      248 Sir,] Sir. Qq 2, 3      252  
Sir,] Sir? Qq      Raysons?] Raysons Qq 2, 3      254 commodities,]  
commodities, some copies of Qr. commodities Qq 2, 3      258 Raysons,]  
Raysons, Qq 2, 3      267 Petr.] Qui. c.w. at l 266, C 2 verso, Qq 2, 3      271 wise]  
wife Q3      272-3 bloud-hound] bloud hound Qr      273 will] Will Qq 2, 3

*Petro.* There spake an Angell. To bring her to which con-  
formitie, I must faine my selfe extreamly amorous; and 275  
alldging vrgent excuses for my stay behinde, part with her  
as passionately, as she would from her foysting hound.

*Qui.* You haue the Sowe by the right eare Sir: I warrant  
there was neuer Childe longd more to ride a Cock-horse, or  
weare his new coate, then she longs to ride in her new Coache: 280  
She would long for euery thing when she was a maide; and  
now she will runne mad for 'hem: I laye my life she will  
haue euery yeare foure children; and what charge and  
change of humour you must endure while she is with childe;  
and how she will tie you to your tackling till she be with 285  
child, a Dog would not endure: Nay, there is no Turne-spit  
Dog bound to his wheele more seruily, then you shall be to  
her wheele; For as that Dogge can neuer climbe the top of  
his wheele, but when the toppe comes vnder him: so shall  
you neuer clime the top of her contentment, but when she 290  
is vnder you.

*Petr.* Slight how thou terrifiest me?

*Quic.* Nay harke you sir; what Nurses, what Midwiues,  
what Fooles, what Phisitions, what cunning women must be  
sought for (fearing sometimes she is bewicht, some times in 295  
a consumption) to tell her tales, to talke bawdy to her, to  
make her laughe, to giue her glisters, to let her bloud vnder  
the tongue, and betwixt the toes; how she will reuile and  
kisse you; spit in your face, and lick it off againe; how she  
will vaunt you are her Creature; shee made you of nothing; 300  
how shee could haue had thousand marke ioyntures; she  
could haue bin made a Lady by a Scotche Knight, & neuer  
ha' married him: Shee could haue had Poynados in her bed  
euery morning; how she set you vp, and how she will pull

11. 11. 274 Angell. To *corr* Qr: Angell to Qr originally, Qq 2, 3  
(Angel: Qq 2, 3) to which *corr*. Qr. too which Qr originally,  
Qq 2, 3 276 stay Q3: stay, Qq 1, 2 279 Cock-horse],  
Cock horse Qr 282 I laye] I'lay Q3 284 humour] humour,  
Qq 2, 3 286 childe] chid Q2 endure] endure Qq 2, 3 293  
sir:] sir? Q3 294 Fooles, what] Fooles (what Q2 fooles)  
what Q3 303 Poynados] ponados B (perhaps rightly) her]  
he Q3



305 you downe : youle neuer be able to stand of your legges to endure it.

*Petr.* Out of my fortune, what a death is my life bound face to face too ? The best is, a large *Time-fitted* conscience is bound to nothing : Marriage is but a forme in the Schoole  
310 of Policie, to which Schollers sit fastned onely with painted chaines, old *Securities* young wife is nere the further of with me.

*Quic.* Thereby lyes a tale sir. The old vsurer will be here instantly, with my Puncke *Syndefie*, whome you know your  
315 Lady has promist mee to entertaine for her Gentlewoman : and he (with a purpose to feede on you) inuites you most solemnly by me to supper.

*Petr.* It falls out excellently fitly : I see desire of gaine makes Iealousie venturous :

*Enter Gyrtrude.*

320 See *Francke*, here comes my Lady : Lord how she viewes thee, she knowes thee not I thinke in this brauerie.

*Gyr.* How now ? who be you I pray ?

*Quic.* One maister *Frances Quickesilver*, an't please your Ladiship.

325 *Gyr.* Gods my dignitie ! as I am a Lady, if he did not make me blush so that mine eyes stood awater, would I were ynmarried againe :

*Enter Securitie and Sindefie.*

Where's my woman I pray ?

*Qui.* See Madam, she now comes to attend you.

330 *Secur.* God saue my honourable Knight, and his worshipfull Lady.

*Gyr.* Y'are very welcome ! you must not put on your Hat yet.

*Secur.* No Madam ; till I know your Ladiships further  
335 pleasure, I will not presume.

II ii. 306 endure] indure Qq 2, 3      311 young] yong Qq 2, 3      After  
319 Qq add stage-dir. to 319      Gyrtrude.] Gyrtr: Qq 1, 2      Gyrtr. Q3  
323 Frances] Francis Qq 2, 3      326 awater] a water Qq 2, 3      327  
again] againe. Qq 2, 3

*Gyr.* And is this a Gentlemans daughter new come out of the countrie?

*Secur.* She is Madam; & one that her Father hath a speciall care to bestowe in some honourable Ladies seruice, to put her out of her honest humours forsooth, for she had a 340 great desire to be a Nun, an't please you.

*Gyr.* A Nun? what Nun? a Nun Substantiue? or a Nun Adiectiue?

*Secur.* A Nun Substantiue Madam I hope, if a Nun be a Nounne. But I meane, Lady, a vowd maide of that order. 345

*Gyr.* Ile teach her to be a maide of the order I warrant you: And can you doe any worke belongs to a Ladyes Chamber?

*Synd.* What I cannot doe, Madam, I would bee glad to learne. 350

*Gyr.* Well said, hold vp then; hold vp your head I say, come hether a little.

*Synd.* I thanke your Ladiship.

*Gyr.* And harke you; Good man, you may put on your Hatt now, I doe not looke on you: I must haue you of my 355 faction now; not of my Knights, maide.

*Synd.* No forsooth Madam, of yours.

*Gyr.* And draw all my seruants in my Bowe, and keepe my counsell, and tell me tales, and put me Riddles, and reade on a booke sometimes when I am busie, and laugh at 360 countrie Gentlewomen, and command any thing in the house for my retainers, and care not what you spend, for it is all mine; and in any case, be still a Maide whatsoever you doe, or whatsoever any man can doe vnto you.

*Secur.* I warrant your Ladiship for that. 365

*Gyr.* Very well, you shall ride in my coach with me into the country to morrow morning; Come Knight, pray thee lets make a short supper, and to bed presently.

II. II. 337 countrie?] Country. Q2: Country? Q3 344 Madam]  
Madam; Q2: Madam. Q3 347 And] and Qq 352 hether]  
hither Qq 2, 3 353 Synd] Syn. Q2 354 harke you.] harke  
you, Q3 356 faction] fashion Qq 2, 3 357 Madam.] Madam  
Qq 359 Riddles.] Riddles some copies of Q1 363 whatsoever \*  
you] what soeuer you Q1 367 pray] I pray Q3

*Secur.* Nay good Madam, this night I haue a short Supper  
370 at home, waites on his worships acceptation.

*Gyr.* By my faith but he shall not goe Sir; I shall swoune  
and he sup from me.

*Petr.* Pray thee forbear; shall he lose his prouision?

*Gyr.* I by(r) Lady Sir, rather then I lose my longing;  
375 come in I say: as I am a Lady you shall not goe.

*Quic.* I told him what a Burre he had gotten.

*Secur.* If you will not sup from your Knight Madam, let  
me entreate your Ladiship to sup at my house with him.

*Gyr.* No by my faith Sir, then we cannot be a bed soone  
380 enough, after supper.

*Petr.* What a Medcine is this? well Maister *Securitie*, you  
are new married as well as I; I hope you are bound as well:  
we must honour our young wiues you know.

*Quic.* In pollicie Dad, till to morrow she has seald.

385 *Secur.* I hope in the morning yet your Knight-hood will  
breake-fast with me.

*Petr.* As early as you will Sir.

*Secur.* Thanke your good worship; *I do hunger and thirst  
to do you good Sir.*

390 *Gyr.* Come sweete Knight come, *I do hunger and thyrst to  
be a bed with thee.*

*Exeunt.*

## Actus Tertii, Scæna Prima.

*Enter Petronell, Quicksiluer, Securitie, Bramble,  
and Wynnifrid.*

*Petr.* Thanks for your feastlike Breakefast good Maister  
*Securitie*, I am sory, (by reason of my instant haste to so  
long a voyage as *Virginia*,) I am without meanes, by any  
kinde amends, to show how affectionatly I take your kind-

II II 371 swoune] swone Q3 originally, corrected to swowne 373  
lose] loose Qq 2, 3 (so 374) 383 young] yong Qq 2, 3 386  
breake-fast] brake fast Qq 2, 3 388 Thanke] I thanke Q2. I thank  
Q3 III 1 Act III Scene 1 Security's house B Tertu.] Tertu. Qq  
Scæna] Scena Qq 2, 3 1 your Qq 2, 3: our Q1 3 meanes,  
meanes Qq 2, 3 4 amends, c.w. of D verso, Q1: amends Q1 in text,  
Qq 2, 3

nesse, and to confirme by some worthy ceremonie a perpetuall league of friendship betwixt vs.

*Secur.* Excellent Knight ; let this be a token betwixt vs of inuiolable friendship : I am new married to this fayre Gentlewoman you know ; & (by my hope to make her fruitfull though I be something in yeares) I vowe faithfully vnto you, to make you Godfather (though in your absence) to the first childe I am blest withall ; and henceforth call me Gossip I beseech you, if you please to accept it.

*Petr.* In the highest degree of gratitude, my most worthy Gossip ; for confirmation of which friendly title, let me entreate my faire Gossip your Wife here, to accept this Diamond, and keepe it as my gift to her first Childe, wheresoeuer my Fortune in euent of my Voyage shall bestowe me.

*Secur.* How now my coye wedlock ! make you strange of so Noble a fauour ? take it I charge you, with all affection, and (by way of taking your leaue) present boldly your lips to our honourable Gossip.

*Quick.* How ventrous he is to him, and how iealous to others !

*Pet.* Long may this kinde touch of our lippes Print in our hearts al the formes of affection. And now my good Gossip, if the writings be ready to which my wife should seale, let them be brought this morning, before she takes Coache into the countrie, and my kindnesse shall worke her to dispatche it.

*Secur.* The writings are ready Sir. My learned counsell here, Maister *Bramble* the Lawyer, hath perused them ; and within this houre, I will bring the Scriuenour with them to your worshipfull Lady.

*Petr.* Good Maister *Bramble*, I will here take my leaue of you then ; God send you fortunate Pleas sir, and contentious Clients.

*Bram.* And you foreright windes Sir, and a fortunate voyage.

*Exit.*

III. 1. 9 (by) by Qq 2, 3

32 *Bramble*] *Bramble*, Qq 1, 2 Lawyer,] Lawyer Qq

*Enter a Messenger.*

40 *Mess.* Sir *Petronell*, here are three or foure Gentlemen desire to speake with you.

*Pet.* What are they?

*Qui.* They are your followers in this voyage Knight, Captaine *Seagull* and his associates, I met them this morning,  
45 and told them you would be here.

*Pet.* Let them enter I pray you, I know they long to bee gone, for their stay is dangerous.

*Enter Seagull, Scapethrift, and Spendall.*

*Sea.* God saue my honourable Collonell.

*Pet.* Welcome good Captaine *Seagull*, and worthy Gentle-  
50 men, if you will meete my friend *Francke* here, and me, at the Blew Anchor Tauerne by Billingsgate this Euening, we wilk there drinke to our happy voyage, be merry, and take Boate to our Ship with all expedition.

*Spoyl.* Deferre it no longer I beseech you Sir, but as your  
55 voyage is hetherto carried closely, and in another Knights name, so for your owne safetie and ours, let it be continued, our meeting and speedy purpose of departing knowne to as few as is possible, least your Ship and goods be attacht.

*Qui.* Well aduisd Captaine, our Collonell shall haue money  
60 this morning to dispatch all our departures, bring those Gentlemen at night to the place appointed, and with our skinnes full of vintage, wee take occasion by the vantage, and away.

*Spoyl.* We will not faile but be there sir.

65 *Pet.* Good morrow good Captaine, and my worthy associates. Health and all Soueraigntie to my beautifull gossip: for you sir, we shall see you presently with the writings.

*Secur.* With writings and crownes to my honorable gossip:  
*I do hunger and thirst to doe you good sir.* *Exeunt.*

III. 1 After 39 stage-dir. *Enter a Messenger* at 39 in Q1 51 Blew]  
blew Qq (blewe Q3) 54 *Spoyl* Q1 *Spend* Q2, 3 Sp. R H Shepherd  
55 hetherto] hitherto Qq 2, 3 56 let] lets Q3 58 is] it is Qq 2, 3  
attacht] attached Qq 2, 3 59 Captaine,] Captaine some copies of Q1  
64 *Spoyl.* Q1 *Spend.* Qq 2, 3 Sp B 66 gossip ] gossip. Q1: Goshup,  
Qq 2, 3 68 gossip] goshup Qq 2, 3

Actus tertii, Scena Secunda.

*Enter a Coachman in hast in's frock feeding.*

*Coach.* Heer's a stirre when Cittizens ride out of Towne indeed, as if all the house were a fire : Slight they will not giue a man leaue, to eat's breakfast afore he rises.

*Enter Hamlet a footeman in haste.*

*Ham.* What Coachman ? my Ladyes Coach for shame ; her ladiships ready to come downe. 5

*Enter Potkinn, a Tankerd bearer.*

*Pot.* Sfoote Hamlet ; are you madde ? whether run you now you should brushe vp my olde Mistresse ?

*Enter Syndefye*

*Synd.* What *Potkinn* ? you must put off your Tankerd, and put on your blew cote and waite vpon Mistrisse Tooch-stone into the country. *Exit.* 10

*Pot.* I will forsooth presently. *Exit.*

*Enter Mistresse Fond, and Mistresse Gazer.*

*Fond.* Come sweete *Mistresse Gazer*, lets watch here, and see my Lady *Flashe* take coach.

*Gaz.* A my word heer's a most fine place to stand in, did you see the new Ship lancht last day *Mistresse Fond* ? 15

*Fond.* O God, and we cittizens should loose such a sight ?

*Gaz.* I warrant, here will be double as many people to see her take coach, as there were to see it take water.

*Fond.* O shee's married to a most fine Castle i'th' countrey they say. 20

*Gaz.* But there are no Gyants in the Castle, are there ?

III. ii Scene 11. An inn-yard. B tertii,] tertii. Qq After 3 stage-dir'  
footeman] foote-man Qq 2, 3 5 downe] downe, Qr After 5 stage-  
dir. Tankerd bearer] Tankerd-bearer Qq 2, 3 15 Fond ?] Fond. Qq  
19 i'th'] i'th' Qq countrey] countrie, Qq 2, 3 20 say Q3: say ?  
Qr say, Q2

*Fond.* O no, they say her Knight kild 'hem all, and therefore he was knighted.

*Gaz.* Would to God her Ladiship would come away.

*Enter Gyr<ted,> Mistris Tooch<stone,> Synd<efy,>  
Ham<let,> Pot<kin>.*

25 *Fond.* She comes, she comes, she comes.

*Gaz. Fond.* Pray heauen blesse your Ladiship.

*Gyr.* Thanke you good people ; my coach for the loue of Heauen, my coach ? in good truth I shall swoune else.

*Ham.* Coach ? coach, my Ladies coach ? *Exit.*

30 *Gir.* As I am a Lady, I thinke I am with child already, I long for a coach so ; may one be with childe afore they are married Mother ?

*Mist. Touch.* I, by'r ladie Madam, a little thing does that ; I haue seene a little prick no bigger then a pins head, swell  
35 bigger and bigger, til it has come to an *Ancome* ; & eene so tis in these cases.

*Enter Ham<let>.*

*Ham.* Your Coach is comming, Madam.

*Gyr.* That's well said ; Now heauen ! me thinks, I am eene vp to the knees in preferment ;

40 *But a little higher, but a little higher, but a little higher,  
There, there, there lyes Cupids fire.*

*Mist. Touch.* But must this young man, an't please you Madam, run by your coach all the way a foote ?

*Gyr.* I by my faith I warrant him, he giues no other milke,  
45 as I haue an other seruant does.

*Mist. Touch.* Ahlas ! tis eene pittie me thinks ; for Gods sake Madam buy him but a Hobbie horse, let the poore youth haue something betwixt his legges to ease 'hem ; Ahlas ! we must do as we would be done too ;

III. ii 22 kild 'hem] kild' hem Qr all,]all Qq After 24 stage-dir  
Potkin.] Por Qr 29 Ladies coach ?] Ladies coach Qr. Ladies coach.  
Qq 2, 3 33 by'r ladie] by'rladie Qr. by'rlady Qq 2, 3 35 it has  
Qq 2, 3: it'has Qq 1 42 young] yong Qq 2, 3 49 Ahlas] Alas  
Qq 2, 3 too.] too Qq 2, 3

*Gir.* Goe too, hold your peace dame, you talke like an olde 50  
foole I tell you.

*Enter Petr(onel) and Quicksilver.*

*Pet.* Wilt thou be gone, sweete *Honny suckle*, before I can  
goe with thee ?

*Gyr.* I pray thee sweete Knight let me ; I do so long to  
dresse vp thy castle afore thou com'st : But I marle howe 55  
my modest Sister occupies her selfe this morning, that shee  
can not waite on me to my Coach, as well as her mother !

*Quick.* Mary Madam, shee's married by this time to  
*Prentise Goulding* ; your Father, and some one more, stole  
to Church with 'hem, in all the haste, that the cold meat left 60  
at your wedding, might serue to furnish their Nuptiall table.

*Gyr.* There's no base followe, my Father, nowe : but  
hee's eene fit to Father such a Daughter : he must call me  
daughter no more now ; but *Madam* ; and please you *Ma-*  
*dam* ; and please your worship *Madam*, indeede . out vpon 65  
him, marry his daughter to a base Prentise ?

*Mist. Touch.* What should one doe ? is there no lawe  
for one that marries a womans daughter against her will ?  
howe shall we punish him Madam ?

*Gyr.* As I am a Lady, an't would snowe, wee'd so peble 70  
'hem with snowe bals as they come from Church ; but sirra,  
*Franck Quicksilver.*

*Quick.* I Madam.

*Gir.* Dost remember since thou and I clapt what d'ye'  
calts in the Garrat ? 75

*Quick.* I know not what you meane Madam.

*Gyr.* His head as white as mylke,  
All flaxen was his haire :  
But now he is dead,  
And laid in his Bedd,  
And neuer will come againe.

80

God be at your labour.

III. ii. 55 howe] how e Qr 57 on] one Q3 64-5 you Madam ;] you  
Madam : Qq 65 indeede : Q2 : indeede ; Qr indee. Q3 69 Madam ?]  
Madam. Qr 70 wee'd] weele Qq 2, 3 82 ranged with 81 in Qq



*Enter Touch<stone,> Gould<ing,> Mild<red,>  
with Rosemary.*

*Pet.* Was there euer such a Lady ?

*Quic.* See Madam, the Bride and Bridegrome :

85 *Gyr.* Gods my precious ! God giue you ioy Mistrisse *What  
lacke you.* Now out vpon thee Baggage ; my sister married  
in a Taffeta Hat ? Mary hang you ; Westward with a wanion  
te'ye. Nay I haue done we' ye Minion then y'faith, neuer  
looke to haue my countnance any more : nor any thing I  
90 can do for thee. Thou ride in my Coach ? or come downe to  
my Castle ? fie vpon thee : I charge thee in my Ladiships  
name, call me Sister no more.

*Touch.* An't please your worship, this is not your Sister :  
This is my daughter, and she calls me father, and so does  
95 not your Ladiship an't please your worship, Madam.

*Mist. Touch.* No, nor she must not call thee Father by  
*Heraldrie*, because thou mak'st thy Prentise thy Sonne as  
wel as she ; Ah thou misproude Prentise, dar'st thou pre-  
sume to marry a Ladies Sister ?

100 *Gou.* It pleas'd my Master forsooth to embolden me with  
his fauour : And though I confesse my selfe farre vnworthie  
so worthy a wife (beeing in part, her seruant, as I am your  
Prentise) yet (since I may say it without boasting) I am  
borne a Gentleman, and by the Trade I haue learn'd of my  
105 Master (which I trust taints not my blood) able with mine  
owne Industrie and portion to maintaine your daughter, my  
hope is, heauen will so blesse our humble beginning, that in  
the end I shalbe no disgrace to the grace with which my  
Master hath bound me his double Prentise.

110 *Touch.* Master me no more Sonne if thou think'st me  
worthy to be thy father.

*Gyr.* Sunne ? Now good Lord how he shines and you  
marke him ! hee's a gentleman.

III. 11 84 Bride and om Q3 Bridegrome.] Bridegrome, Qq 2, 3 88  
we' ye] we ye some copies of Q1, Qq 2, 3 92 more.] more: Qq 2, 3  
94 calls] call Q1 calls Qq 2, 3 95 worship.] worship some copies of  
Q1, Qq 2, 3 96 Mist.] Mist some copies of Q1 No.] No Qq 1, 3  
98 she:] shee: Qq 2, 3 103 (since I] since (I T. M. Parrott 105  
Master] maister Qq 2, 3 112 Gyr.] Gyr. Q1

*Gou.* I indeede Madam, a Gentleman borne.

*Pet.* Neuer stand a' your Gentrye, M<sup><aster></sup> Bridegrome : 115  
if your legges be no better then your Armes, you'le be able  
to stand upon neither shortly.

*Touch.* An't please your good worshippe Sir, there are  
two sorts of Gentlemen.

*Pet.* What meane you Sir ?

120

*Touch.* Bold to put off my hat to your worshippe.

*Pet.* Nay pray forbear Sir, and then foorth with your  
two sorts of Gentlemen.

*Touch.* If your worship will haue it so, I saye there are  
two sorts of Gentlemen. There is a Gentleman Artificiall, 125  
and a Gentleman Naturall ; Now, though your worship be  
a Gentleman Naturall : *Worke vpon that now.*

*Quick.* Well said, olde *Touchstone*, I am proude to heare  
thee enter a set speech yfaith, forth I beseech thee.

*Touch.* Cry you mercie Sir, your worship's a Gentleman, 130  
I doe not know. If you bee one of my acquaintance y'are  
very much disguisde Sir.

*Quick.* Go too old Quipper : forth with thy speech I say.

*Touch.* What Sir, my speeches were euer in vaine to your  
gratious worship : And therefore till I speake to you gal- 135  
lanty indeed, I will saue my breath for my broth anon.  
Come my poore sonne and daughter ; Let vs hide our selues  
in our poore humilitie and liue safe : Ambition consumes it  
selfe, with the very show. *Worke vpon that now.*

*<Exeunt Touchstone, Goulding and Mildred.>*

*Gyr.* Let him goe, let him goe for Gods sake : let him 140  
make his Prentise, his sonne for Gods sake : giue away his  
daughter for Gods sake : and when they come a begging to  
vs for Gods sake, let's laugh at their good husbandry for  
Gods sake. Farewell sweet Knight, pray thee make haste  
after.

145

III. II. 114 *Gou.*] *Gou* Q1 115 a' your] a'your Q1 Bridegrome]  
Bridegrome Qq 121 worshippe] worshippe, Q3 124 so,] so ?  
Qq 126 Gentleman Naturall] gentleman Naturall Q1 128  
*Touchstone*] *Touch* Qq 2, 3 130 Gentleman,] Gentleman Qq 1, 2  
131 know. If] know? if Qq 136 indeed] in deed Q1 143  
husbandry] hushandry Q3

*Pet.* What shall I say ? I would not haue thee goe.

*Quick.* Now, O now, I must depart ;

*Parting though it absence moue,*

This Dittie knight, doe I see in thy lookes in *Capitall Letters*.

150 *What a grief tis to depart, and leaue the flower that has my hart ?*

*My sweete Ladie, and alacke for woe, why should we part so ?*

Tell truth Knight, and shame all dissembling Louers ; does not your paine lye on that side ?

*Pet.* If it doe, canst thou tell me how I may cure it ?

155 *Quick.* Excellent easily ; diuide your selfe in two halfe, iust by the girdlestead ; send one halfe with your Lady, and keepe the tother your selfe : or else doe as all true Louers doe, part with your heart and leaue your bodie behinde : I haue seen't done a hundred times : Tis as easie a matter for a  
160 Louer to part without a heart from his sweete heart, and he nere the worse : as for a Mouse to get from a Trappe and leaue her taile behind her. See here comes the writings.

*Enter Securitie with a Scriuener.*

*Secu.* Good morrow to my worshipfull Ladie. I present your Ladishippe with this writing ; to which if you please  
165 to set your hand, with your Knights, a veluet Gowne shall attend your iourney a' my credite.

*Gir.* What Writing is it Knight ?

*Petronell.* The sale (sweete heart) of the poore Tenement I tolde thee off, onely to make a little money to sende thee  
170 downe furniture for my Castle, to which my hand shall lead thee.

*Gyr.* Very well : Now giue me your Pen I pray.

*Qui.* It goes downe without chewing y'faith.

*Scriue.* Your worships deliuer this as your deede ?

175 *Ambo.* Wee doe.

III. II. 146 goe.] goe, Qq 1, 2      147 Now] No Qq 2, 3      148 mouse,]  
mous Qq 2, 3      155 diuide] deuide Qq 2, 3      156 girdlestead ;]  
girdlestead, Qq 2, 3      162 her taile] his tail Dodsley (1744) behind  
her] behind him Qq      168 Petronell] Petronell Q1 heart)] heart(  
Q2      175 Ambo.] Ambo, Q3

*Gyr.* So now Knight farewell till I see thee.

*Pet.* All farewell to my sweet heart.

*Mistris Touch.* Good-bye, sonne Knight.

*Pet.* Farewell my good Mother.

*Gyr.* Farewell *Francke*, I would faine take thee downe if I could.

*Quickesiluer.* I thanke your good Ladiship ; Farewell *Mistris Syndzfe*.

*Exeunt* <*Gyrtred, Mistress Touchstone, Syndefy, Hamlet, Potkin, followed by Mistress Fond, and Mistress Gazer.*>

*Pet.* O tedious Voyage, whereof there is no ende !  
What will they thinke of me ?

*Quick.* Thinke what they list ; They long'd for a vagarie into the Countrie, and now they are fitted : So a woman marry to ride in a Coach, she cares not if she ride to her Ruine ; Tis the great ende of many of their mariages : This is not <the> first time a Lady has ridde a false iournie in her Coach I hope.

*Pet.* Nay, tis no Matter, I care little what they thinke ; hee that wayes mens thoughts, has his handes full of nothing : A man in the course of this worlde should bee like a Surgeons instrument, worke in the woundes of others, and feele nothing himselfe. The sharper, and subtler, the better.

*Quickesiluer.* As it falles out nowe Knight, you shall not neede to deuise excuses, or endure her out-cryes, when shee returnes ; wee shall now bee gone before, where they can not reache vs.

*Petronell.* Well my kind *Compere*, you haue now th' assurance

We both can make you ; let mee now entreate you,  
The money wee agree'd on may bee brought  
To the *Blewe Ancor*, nere to *Billings-gate*,

III n 176 thee ] thee Q2 184 ende | corr. Q1, Q2 2, 3. ende—Q1  
originally 189 ende corr. Q1. eude Q1 originally 199 bee gone]  
begone Q2 2, 3 201-8 Prose in Q2 and all the editions 201  
th] Th Q1 202 entreate] intreat Q2 2, 3 203 agree'd]  
agreed Q3

205 By Six a Clocke : where I and my cheife friends,  
Bound for this voyage, will with Feastes attend you.

*Secu.* The money my most honorable *Comperer*,  
Shall without fayle obserue your appointed howre.

*Pet.* Thankes my deare *Gossip*, I must now impart  
210 To your approued loue, a louing secret :  
As one on whome my life doth more relie  
In friendly trust, then any man aliuie.  
Nor shall you be the chosen *Secretarie*  
Of my affections, for affection onely ;

215 For I protest, (if God blesse my returne,)  
To make you Partner in my actions gaine  
Ac deeply, as if you had ventur'd with me  
Halfe my expences. Know then, honest *Gossip*,  
I have inioy'd with such diuine contentment,  
220 A Gentlewomans Bedde, whome you well knowe,  
That I shall nere enioy this tedious Voiage,  
Nor liue the lest part of the time it asketh,  
Without her presence ; So *I thirst and hunger*  
To taste the deare feast of her companie.

225 And if the *hunger* and the *thirst* you vow  
(As my sworne *Gossip*) to my wished good  
Be (as I knowe it is) vnfainde and firme,  
Doe mee an easie fauour in your Power.

*Secur.* Bee sure braue *Gossip*, all that I can doe

230 To my best Nerue, is wholly at your seruice :  
Who is the woman (first) that is your friend ?

*Pet.* The woman is your learned Counsailes wife,  
The Lawyer Maister *Bramble* : whome would you,  
Bring out this Euen, in honest Neighbour-hood

235 To take his leaue with you, of me your *Gossip*,

III. 11 205 friends,] friends. Q3 206 voyage corr. Q1, Qq 2, 3.  
voyadge Q1 originally 208 your corr. Q1: your Q1 originally  
210 approued] approued, Q3 secret:] secret, Qq 2, 3 216  
Partner] Partner, Qq 1, 2 partner, Q3 219 inioy'd] inioyed Qq  
221 enioy corr. Q1: enioy Q1 originally: inioy Q3 223 hunger corr  
Q1: hunger / Q1 originally, Qq 2, 3 225 and the] and the Qq 1, 2  
226 good] good, Qq 2, 3 230 seruice corr. Q1 seruice Q1 originally  
231 your] our Qq 2, 3 232 Counsailes] Counceils Qq 2, 3 235 Gossip,]  
*Gossip*. Qq

I, in the meane time, will send this my friende  
Home to his house, to bring his wife disguis'd  
Before his face, into our companie :  
For Loue hath made her looke for such a wile,  
To free her from his tyrannous Ielosie. 240  
And I would take this course before another :  
In stealing her away to make vs sport,  
And gull his circumspection the more grosely.  
And I am sure that no man like your selfe,  
Hath credite with him to entice his Ielosie 245  
To so long staye abroad, as may giue time  
To her enlardgment, in such safe disguise.

*Secu.* A pretie, pithie, and most pleasant proiect !  
Who would not straine a point of Neighbour-hood,  
For such a point de-vice ? that as the shippe 250  
Of famous *Draco*, went about the world,  
Will wind about the Lawyer, compassing  
The world him selfe, he hath it in his armes :  
And that's enough, for him, without his wife.  
A Lawyer is Ambitious, and his head 255  
Can not bee prais'de, nor rais'de too high,  
With any Forcke, of highest knauerye.  
He goe fetch him straight. *Exit Securitie.*

*Pet.* So, so. Now *Franke* goe thou home to his house,  
Stead of his Lawyers, and bring his wife hether ; 260  
Who iust like to the Lawyers wife, is prison'd,  
With his sterne vsurous Ielosie ; which could neuer  
Be ouer-reacht thus, but with ouer-reaching.

*Enter Securitie.*

*Sec.* And, M<sup>a</sup>ister Francis, watch you th' instant time

iii. ii. 236 friende] fuende Qr 240 his] this Qq 2, 3 Ielosie]  
ielousie Q2 : Ielousie Q3 245 entice] intise Qq 2, 3 Ielosie] Ielosie,  
Q1 : ielousie, Qq 2, 3 249 Neighbour-hood] Neigh-bourhood Q1 250  
point] point, Qq -vice] -uice Qq 2, 3 252 compassing] com-  
passing, Qq 254 enough,] enough Q3 255 head] head, Qr  
256 prais'de] prais'de Qq 1, 2 258 him R. H. Case conj. her Q1  
259 *Pet.* Q2 : *Per* Q1 . *Pec* Q3 so] so, Qq *Franke*] *Franke* Q1 :  
*Franke* Qq 2, 3 262 his corr Q1 : eis Q1 originally eis Q2 eyes  
Q3 Ielosie ; corr. Q1 Ielosie Q1 originally ielousie Qq 2, 3 263  
ouer-reacht thus] ouer reacht-thus Q1 : ouer reacht thus Qq 2, 3

- 265 To *Enter* with his *Exit* : 't wilbe rare,  
Two fine horn'd Beastes a Cammell and a Lawyer !  
(Exit.)

*Quickesiluer*. How the olde villaine ioyes in villany ?

*Enter Secur<itie>*.

- Secu*. And harke you Gossip, when you haue her here,  
Haue your Bote ready, shippe her to your Ship  
270 With vtmost haste, lest Maister *Bramble* stay you.  
To o'rereach that head that outreacheth all heads ?  
Tis a trick Rampant ; Tis a very Quiblyn ;  
I hope this haruest, to pitch cart with Lawyers ;  
Their heads wil be so forked ; *This slie tooche*  
275 *Will get Apes to inuent a number such.* Exit.

- Quick*. Was euer Rascall, honied so with poyson ?  
*He that delights in slauish Auarice*  
*Is apt to ioy in euery sort of vice.*  
Wel, ile go fetch his wife, whilst he the Lawyer.  
280 *Pet*. But stay *Franck*, lets thinke how we may disguise her  
Vpon this sodaine.

- Quick*. Gods me there's the mischief ;  
But harke you, here's an excellent deuce ;  
Fore God a Rare one : I will carry her  
A Saylers gowne and cap, and couer her ;  
285 And a players beard ;

*Pet*. And what vpon her head ?

- Quick*. I tell you a Sailers Cap : slight God forgiue mee,  
What kind of figent memorie haue you ?  
*Pet*. Nay then, what kinde of figent wit hast thou ?  
A Saylers cap ? how shall she put it off  
290 When thou presentst her to our companie ?

III. ii. 265 't wilbe] t'wilbe Qq 1, 2 · t'will be Q3 266 Two fine  
horn'd Beastes corr Q1 To finde horn'd Beastes! Q1 originally,  
Qq 2, 3 (hornd Beasts! Q2. hornd beasts! Q3) a Cammell] A Cammell  
Q1. A cammell Q2. A cammel Q3 Lawyer! corr. Q1: Lawyer ?  
Q1 originally, Qq 2, 3 267 ioyes Q1. ioyes Q2: iopes Q3 268  
Secu. c.w. l 267, E 2 in Q1, om. in text of Q1. Secur Qq 2, 3 270  
you ] you, Qq 271 o'rereach] ore reach Qq 274 forked:] forked,  
Q3 279 Lawyer R. H. Case cony.: Lawyers Qq 280 Franck] Franck  
Q1 280-7, 292-4 Prose in Qq and all the editions 284 cap. Q3 · cap  
Qq 1, 2 285 beard:] beard. Qq 2, 3

*Quick.* Tush man, for that, make her a sawcie sayler.

*Pet.* Tush tush, tis no fit sawce for such sweete mutton ;  
I know not what t'aduise.

*Enter Secur<ity> with his wiues gowne.*

*Secur.* Knight, knight, a rare deuise.

*Pet.* Sownes yet againe.

*Quick.* What stratagem haue you now ?

*Secur.* The best that euer. You talkt of disguising ? 295

*Pet.* I mary Gossip, thats our present care.

*Secur.* Cast care away then, here's the best deuice

For plaine *Security* (for I am no better),

I think that euer liu'd : here's my wiues gowne,

Which you may put vpon the Lawyers wife, 300

And which I brought you sir for two great reasons ;

One is, that Maister *Bramble* may take hold

Of some suspicion that it is my wife,

And gird me so perhaps with his law wit ;

The other (which is pollicie indeede) 305

Is, that my wife may now be tyed at home,

Hauing no more but her old gowne abroad,

And not showe me a quirck, while I fyrke others.

Is not this rare ?

*Ambo.* The best that euer was.

*Sec.* Am I not borne to furnish Gentlemen ? 310

*Pet.* O my deare Gossip !

*Secur.* Well hold Maister *Francis*,

Watch when the Lawyer's out, and put it in ;

And now I will go fetch him. *Exit.*

*Quick.* O my Dad !

III u. 292 tush, Qq 2, 3 tush Qr mutton] motton Q3 originally,  
corrected to mutton 294 Sownes] Swones Q3 296 Gossip,] Gossip Qq  
297 away] a way Qr then,] then Q3 299 gowne,] gowne Qq  
301 sir] sir, Q3 reasons,] reasons, Q3 304 wit,] wit, Qq 1, 2. wit :  
Q3 308 while] whiles Q3 309 was Qr originally, Qq 2, 3 : shas Qr  
in cancel 310 Gentlemen? Qr in cancel, Qq 2, 3 Gentlemen! Qr  
originally 311-21 Prose in Qq and all the editions 311 Gossip!  
Qr in cancel, Qq 2, 3 Gossip? Qr originally 313 now Qr originally:  
now-- Qr in cancel, Qq 2, 3 hum.] him, Qr *Exit*] *Exiturus* T. M.  
Parrott



He goes as twere the Deuill to fetch the Lawyer ;  
 315 And deuill shall he be if hornes will make him.

⟨Enter Security.⟩

*Pet.* Why how now Gossip, why stay you there musing ?

*Secur.* A toye, a toy runns in my head yfaith.

*Quick.* A pox of that head, is there more toyes yet ?

*Pet.* What is it pray thee Gossip ?

*Secur.* Why Sir ? what if you  
 320 Should slip away now with my wiues best gowne,  
 I hauing no securitie for it ?

*Quick.* For that I hope Dad you wil take our words.

*Secu.* I by th' masse your word, thats a proper staffe  
 For wise Security to leane vpon ;  
 325 But tis no matter, once ile trust my Name  
 On your crackt credits, let it take no shame,  
 Fetch the wench *Franck*. *Exit.*

*Quick.* Ile waite vpon you sir,  
 And fetch you ouer, you were nere so fetcht :  
 Go, to the Tauerne Knight, your followers  
 330 Dare not be drunke I thinke, before their Captaine.

*Exit.*

*Pet.* Would I might lead them to no hotter seruice,  
 Till our *Virginian* Gould were in our purses. *Exit.*

III. II 314 twere] 'twere Qq 2, 3 315 will Q1 originally, Qq 2, 3  
 wil Q1 in cancel 316 Why Q1 originally, Qq 2, 3: why Q1 in cancel  
 322 wil Q1 originally: will Q1 in cancel, Qq 2, 3 323 by th'  
 Q1 in cancel, Qq 2, 3 by'th Q1 originally word, Q1 originally: word  
 Q1 in cancel, Qq 2, 3 325 Name] Name, Qq 326 crackt]  
 crakt Q3 327 Franck] Franck Q1: Francke Qq 2, 3 waite Q1  
 originally, Q3. wait Q1 in cancel sir, Q1 originally: sir Q1 in cancel,  
 Qq 2, 3 328 nere] neuer Qq 2, 3 329 Go.] Go Q3 331 them  
 corr. Q1, Qq 2, 3: then Q1 originally seruice Q1 originally, Qq 2, 3  
 seruice Q1 in cancel 332 purses] purses Q1

⟨Actus Tertii, Scena Tertia.⟩

*Enter Seagull, Spendall, and Scapthrift in the Tauerne, with a Drawer.*

*Sea.* Come Drawer, pierce your neatest Hogsheades, & lets haue cheare, not fit for your Billingsgate Tauerne; but for our *Virginian Colonel*; he wilbe here instantly.

*Draw.* You shall haue all things fit sir; please you haue any more Wine? 5

*Spend.* More wine Slaue? whether we drinke it or no, spill it, and drawe more.

*Scap.* Fill all the pottes in your house with all sorts of licour, and let 'hem waite on vs here like Souldiers in their Pewter coates; And though we doe not employe them now, 10 yet wee will maintaine 'hem, till we doe.

*Draw.* Said like an honourable Captaine; you shall haue all you can commaund Sir. *Exit Drawer.*

*Sea.* Come boyes, *Virginia* longs till we share the rest of her Maiden-head. 15

*Spend.* Why is she inhabited already with any English?

*Sea.* A whole Country of English is there man, bred of those that were left there in 79. They haue married with the Indians, and make 'hem bring forth as beautiful faces as any we haue in England: and therefore the Indians are so in loue with 'hem, that all the treasure they haue, they lay at their feete.

*Scap.* But is there such treasure there Captaine, as I haue heard?

*Sea.* I tell thee, Golde is more plentifull there then Copper 25 is with vs: and for as much redde Copper as I can bring, Ile haue thrice the waight in Golde. Why man all their

iii. iii. Scene iii. The Blue Anchor, Billingsgate. B Seagull,]  
Seagull Q1 Spendall, Q2 Spendall Q1: Spendal, Q3 Scapthrift]  
Scapthrift Q3 Tauerne,] Tauerne Qq 2 Tauerne:] Tauerne,  
Qq 2, 3 3 but] bnt Q1 in cancel 5 Wine?] Wine Qq 6 Spend.]  
Spend, Q1 in cancel 10 Pewter Q1 originally, Qq 2, 3: Pewter, Q1 in  
cancel And] And Q1 in cancel 13 commaund Q1 originally, Q3:  
command Q1 in cancel, Q2 17 Country] Country Q1 in cancel bred]  
bread Q3 18 They] they Qq 2, 3

dripping Pans, and their Chamber pottes are pure Gold ;  
 and all the Chaines, with which they chaine vp their streetes,  
 30 are massie Golde ; all the Prisoners they take, are fettered  
 in Gould : and for Rubies and Diamonds, they goe forth on  
 holydayes and gather 'hem by the Sea-shore, to hang on  
 their childrens Coates, and stick in their Cappes, as common-  
 ly as our children weare Saffron guilt Brooches, and groates  
 35 with hoales in 'hem.

*Scap.* And is it a pleasant Countrie withall ?

*Sea.* As euer the Sunne shinde on : temperate and full of  
 all sorts of excellent viands ; wilde Boare is as common  
 there, as our tameest Bacon is here : Venison, as Mutton.  
 40 And then you shal liue freely there, without Sergeants, or  
 Courtiers, or Lawyers, or Intelligencers, onely a few indus-  
 trious Scots perhaps, who indeed are disperst ouer the face  
 of the whole earth. But as for them, there are no greater  
 friends to English-men and *England*, when they are out an't,  
 45 in the world, then they are. And for my part, I would a  
 hundred thousand of 'hem were there, for wee are all one  
 Countreyemen now, yee know ; and wee shoulde finde ten  
 times more comfort of them there, then wee doe heere. Then  
 for your meanes to aduancement, there, it is simple, and not  
 50 preposterously mixt : You may be an Alderman there, and  
 neuer be Scauinger ; you may be a Noble man, and neuer  
 be a Slaue ; you may come to preferment enough, and neuer  
 be a Pandar ; to riches and fortune enough, and haue neuer  
 the more villanie, nor the lesse wit.

III 11 30 massie Golde] massie-Gold Q3 31 Gould] Gold Qr in  
 cancel Rubies] Rubines Q3 33 stick] stickes Qr in cancel, Qq 2, 3  
 Cappes] Capps Qr in cancel. Caps Q3 childrens Caps Q3 34 guilt]  
 guilt Q3 and] and and Q1 originally 40 shal] shall Qr in cancel  
 Sergeants Q1 originally Sargeants Qr in cancel, Qq 2, 3 41 Intelligencers,  
 Qr originally Intelligencers. Qr in cancel intelligencers Qq 2, 3 41-8  
 onely. . heere found in Q1 originally, & cancelled: not in Qq 2, 3 44  
 English-men] English- c.w. at l 44, E 3 verso, Qr. English in the text of  
 Qr 51 Scauinger, ] Scauinger, Qq 2, 3 a Noble man Qr originally.  
 any other officer Qr in cancel, Qq 2, 3 52 Slaue ; you Qr originally.  
 Slaue You Qr in cancel, Qq 2, 3 53 Pandar. To Qr originally :  
 Pandar. To Qr in cancel, Qq 2, 3 riches Qr originally : Riches, Qr in  
 cancel. Riches Qq 2, 3 fortune enough, Qr originally : Fortune inough  
 Qr in cancel : Fortune enough Q2. Fortune enough, Q3 54 villanie]  
 Villany Qr in cancel 54 After wit.] Besides, there, we shall haue

*pend.* Gods me ! and how farre is it thether ? 55  
*lea.* Some six weekes sayle, no more, with any indifferent  
 id winde : And if I get to any part of the coaste of *Affrica*,  
 saile thether with any winde. Or when I come to Cape  
*rister*, ther's a foreright winde continually wafts us till we  
 re at *Virginia*. See, our Collonell's come. 60

*Enter Sir Petronell.*

*etr.* Well mette good Captaine *Seagull*, and my Noble  
 itlemen ! Now the sweete houre of our freedome is at  
 id. Come *Drawer*, fill vs some carowes ; and prepare vs  
 the mirth, that will be occasioned presently : Here will  
 a pretty wenche Gentlemen, that will beare vs companie 65  
 our voyage.

*ea.* Whatsoever she be ; here's to her health Noble  
 onell, both with Cap and Knee.

*etr.* Thankes kinde Captaine *Seagull*. Shes's our J love  
 rely ; and must not bee knowne till wee bee free from all 70  
 t knowe vs : And so Gentlemen, heer's to her health.

*Imbo.* Let it come worthy Colonell, *Wee doe hunger and*  
*st for it.*

*etr.* Afore heauen, you haue hitte the phrase of one, that  
 presence will touche, from the foote to the forehead, if 75  
 knew it.

*pend.* Why then we wil ioyne his forhead, with her  
 lth, sir : and Captaine *Scapethrift*, here's to 'hem both.

more saw then Conscience, and not too much of either, serve Gqd  
 gh, eate and drinke inough, and inough is as good as a Feast Q1 in  
 el, Qq 2, 3 (therewe Q2 there wee Q3 conscience, Q3 eyther Q3  
 enough, Q3. enough Q3) III III. 56 indifferent Q1 in cancel  
 , 3 : indifferant Q1 originally 57 And if] And If Q1 in cancel  
 continually Q1 originally. continuall Q1 in cancel, Q3 continual Q2  
 Q1 in cancel, Qq 2, 3. tell Q1 originally 60 at] to Q3 See, Q1  
 mcel, Qq 2, 3 See Q1 originally After 60 stage-dir Petronell  
 originally. Petronell with his Followers Q1 in cancel, Qq 2, 3  
 wers Qq 2, 3) 62 Now] Nowe Q1 in cancel 63 Come begins  
 w line in the cancel of Q1 Drawer, fill] Drawer, Fill Q1 originally.  
 ver. Fill Q1 in cancel. Drawer Fill Qq 2, 3 64 mirth] mirth  
 n cancel, Qq 2, 3 65 pretty] pretty Q1 in cancel companie]  
 any Q1 in cancel, Qq 2, 3 69 Seagull Shes's] Seagull : shes's  
 , 3 72 Colonell] Collonell Q1 in cancel, Qq 2, 3 73 it] it,  
 1 cancel 74 one, Q1 originally: one Q1 in cancel, Qq 2, 3 75  
 he] touch Q1 in cancel, Qq 2, 3 76 yee] ye Q1 in cancel 77  
 sad] forehead Q1 in cancel, Qq 2 78 both] both, Q1 in cancel

*Enter Securitie and Bramble.*

*Secu.* See, see, maister *Bramble*; fore heauen their voyage  
80 cannot but prosper, they are o' their knees for successe to it.

*Bram.* And they pray to god *Bacchus*.

*Secu.* God saue my braue Colonell with all his tall Cap-  
taines and Corporalls; see sir, my worshipfull learned Coun-  
saile Maister *Bramble*, is come to take his leaue of you.

85 *Pet.* Worshipfull Maister *Bramble*, how farre doe you  
draw vs into the sweete bryer of your kindnesse? Come  
Captaine *Seagull*, another health to this rare *Bramble*, that  
hath neuer a pricke about him.

*Sea.* I pledge his most smooth disposition sir: come  
90 maister *Securitie*, bend your supporters, and pledge this  
notorious health here.

*Secu.* Bend you yours likewise, Maister *Bramble*; for it  
is y<sup>e</sup>ou shal pledge me.

*Sea.* Not so maister *Securitie*, he must not pledge his  
95 owne health.

*Secur.* No Maister Captaine?

*Enter Quichesiluer with Winny disguisd.*

Why then here's one is fitly come to do him that honour.

*Quick.* Here's the Gentlewoman your cosin sir, whom  
with much entreatie I haue brought to take her leaue of you  
100 in a Tauerne; asham'd whereof, you must pardon her if she  
put not off her Maske.

*Pet.* Pardon me sweete Cosin, my kinde desire to see you

III III 79 maister] Maister Q1 in cancel, Qq 2, 3 81 god] God Q1 in  
cancel, Qq 2, 3 83-4 Counsaile Maister] Counsaile M. Q1 in cancel:  
Counsaile, M. Qq 2, 3 85 Maister] M. Q1 in cancel, Qq 2, 3 86 draw]  
drawe Q1 in cancel, Q2 Come] come Qq 87 Captaine] Captain Q1  
in cancel, Qq 2, 3 Seagull] Seagull Q1 originally; Seagull Q3 89  
Sea.] Pet Q1 originally 90 pledge] pledge Q3 92 Maister  
*Bramble*; Q1 originally M. *Bramble*, Q1 in cancel, Qq 2, 3 93  
shal] shall Q1 in cancel, Qq 2, 3 pledge] pledge Q3 94 so maister  
Q1 originally. so, M. Q1 in cancel, Qq 2, 3 he] hee Q1 in cancel, Q2  
pledge Q1 originally: pledge Q1 in cancel, Qq 2, 3 96 Secur.] Secu.  
Q1 in cancel, Qq 2, 3 Captaine?] Captaine Q2 Captaine Q3 After  
96 stage-dir. *disguisd*] *disguis'd* Q1 in cancel, Q2 *disguis'd* Q3 97 do]  
doe Q1 in cancel, Qq 2, 3 98 Quick.] Quick. Q1 originally 100 pardon]  
pardon Q3 102 me] mee Q1 in cancel Cosin] Cosen Q1 in cancel, Qq 2, 3

He I went, made me so importunate to entreate your  
presence here.

*cu.* How now Maister *Frances*? haue you honour'd  
presence with a faire Gentlewoman?

*ick.* Pray sir, take you no notice of her, for she will not  
lowne to you.

*cur.* But my learn'd counsaile, Maister *Bramble* here,  
he may know her.

*ic.* No more then you sir, at this time; his learning  
pardon her.

*cur.* Well, God pardon her, for my part, and I doe Ile  
vorne; and so Maister *Francis*, here's to all that are  
; Eastward to night, towards *Cuckolds hauen*; and  
the health of Maister *Bramble*.

*ick.* I pledge it Sir, hath it gone rounde, Capitaines?  
(He kneels.)

2. It has sweet *Franck*, and the rounde closes with thee.

*ick.* Wel Sir, here's to al Eastward & toward Cuckolds,  
to famouse *Cuckolds hauen* so fatally remembred. *Surgit.*

1. Nay pray thee Cuz weepe not; Gossip *Securitie*?

2. I my braue Gossip.

1. A word I beseech you Sir; our friende, Mistresse  
*ible* here, is so dissolu'd in teares, that shee drownes the  
e mirth of our meeting: sweete Gossip, take her aside  
comfort her.

2. Pittie of all true loue, Mistresse *Bramble*, what  
e you to enioy your loue? whats the cause Ladie?  
cause your husband is so neere, and your heart earne,  
ue a litle abus'd him? Ahlas, ahlas, the offence is too  
non to be respected; So great a grace, hath seldome

11 103 me] mee Q1 in cancel entreate] entreat Q1 in cancel, Qq 2, 3  
auster] M. Q1 in cancel, Qq 2, 3 108 you] you some copies of the  
ancel 109 Secur.] Secu. Q1 in cancel, Qq 2, 3 counsaile, Maister]  
aile, M. Q1 in cancel, Qq 2, 3 111 Quic] Quich. Q1 in cancel,  
3 time,] time, Q1 in cancel, Qq 2, 3 113 Secur.] Secu. Q1 in  
, Qq 2, 3 her,] her Q1 in cancel, Qq 2, 3 114 be] bee Q1 in  
sworne:] sworne: c w. at l. 114, E 4 verso of Q1, Qq 2, 3 115  
lds] Cuckolds Qq 2, 3 (so 120) 118 Franck.] Franck Q3 121  
107, Q3 123 Sir,] sir, Q3 127 Secu.] Secu- Q1 128 enioy]  
Q3 (so 133) 130 litle] little Qq 2, 3 ahlas, the] Ahlas, the  
1: Ahlas the Q3

chanc'd to so vnthankfull a woman ; to be rid of an old  
 ielous Dotard ; to enioy the armes of a louing young Knight ;  
 that when your prick-lesse *Bramble* is withered with griefe  
 135 of your losse, will make you floorish afresh in the Bed of a  
 Ladie.

*Enter Drawer.*

*Draw.* Sir *Petronell*, here's one of your water men come  
 to tell you, it wilbe flood these three houres ; and that 'twill  
 bee dangerous going against the Tyde : for the skie is ouer-  
 140 cast, & there was a Porcpisce, euen now seene at London  
 bridge, which is alwaies the messenger of tempests, he sayes.

*Pet.* A Porcpisce ? whats that to th' purpose ? charge  
 him if he loue his life to attend vs : can we not reach *Blacke*  
*wall* (where my ship lyes) against the tide, and in spight of  
 145 Tempests ? Captaines and Gentlemen, wee'll begin a new  
 ceremony at the beginning of our voyage, which I belecue  
 will be followd of all future aduenturers.

*Sea.* Whats that good *Colonell* ?

*Pet.* This, Captaine *Seagull* ; wee'll haue our prouided  
 150 supper brought aboard Sir *Francis Drakes* Ship, that hath  
 compast the world : where with full Cupps, and Banquets  
 we wil doe sacrifice for a prosperous voyage. My minde giues  
 me that some good Spirits of the waters should haunt the  
 desert ribs of her ; and be auspicious to all that honour her  
 155 memorie, and will with like Orgies, enter their voyages.

*Sea.* Rarely conceived ; one health more to this motion,  
 & aboard to performe it. He that wil not this night be  
 drunke, may he neuer be Sober.

*They compasse in Wynnifrid, daunce the dronken round,*  
*and drinke carowes.*

*Bram.* Sir *Petronell*, and his honourable Captaines, in  
 160 these young seruices, we olde Seruitors may bee spard : We

III. in 133 ielous] ielous Qq 2, 3 armes] armes, Qr 135 floorish Q1.  
 flourish Q2 : flourish Q3 afresh] a fresh Qq 137 water men] Watermen  
 Qq 2, 3 138 and] and Q3 'twill] 'twill Qq 1, 2 : twill Q3 139-40  
 ouercast] ouer cast Qq 140, 142 Porcpisce] Porpisce Q3 143-4  
*Blacke wall*] *Blackwall* Qq 2, 3 147 followd] followed Q3 aduenturers]  
 aduentures Qq 2, 3 149 This,] This Qq 2, 3 150 aboard] a bord Qq  
 151 world.] world ? Q3 where with] wherewith Q2 153 haunt corr.  
 Of Q1. haunt Q2. haunt Q3. haunt Q4. haunt Q5. haunt Q6. haunt Q7. haunt Q8. haunt Q9. haunt Q10.

y came to take our leaues, and with one health to you  
He be bold to do so. Here neighbour *Securitie*, to the  
th of Sir *Petronell*, and all his Captaines.

*scu.* You must bend then Maister *Bramble*; So, now I  
for you: I haue one corner of my braine, I hope, fit to 165  
e one carouse more. Here Lady, to you that are encom-  
there, & are asham'd of our company. Ha, ha, ha, by  
troth (my learn'd counsaile Maister *Bramble*) my minde  
ies so of *Cuckolds-hauen* to night, that my Head runnes  
with admiration. 170

*ram.* But is not that your wife, Neighbour?

*scu.* No by my troth Maister *Bramble*; ha, ha, ha, a Pox  
ll *Cuckolds-hauens* I say.

*ram.* A' my faith, her garments are exceeding like your  
s. 175

*scu.* *Cucullus non facit Monachum*, my learn'd Coun-  
; all are not Cuckolds that seeme so, nor all seeme not  
are so. Giue me your hand, my learn'd Counsaile, you  
I will Supp some where else, then at Sir *Frances Drakes*  
p to night. Adue my Noble Gossip. 180

*ram.* Good Fortune brave Captaines; faire skies God  
yee.

*mnes.* Farewell my harts, farewell.

*et.* Gossip, laugh no more at *Cuckolds-hauen* Gossip.

*c.* I haue done, I haue done Sir, will you leade Maister 185  
nble? ha, ha, ha.

*et.* Captaine *Seagull*, charge a boate.

*mnes.* A boate, a boate, a boate. *Exeunt.*

*raw.* Y'are in a proper taking indeed to take a Boate,  
cially at this time of night, and against Tide and Tem- 190  
; They say yet, *drunken men neuer take harme*; this  
t will trie the truth of that Prouerbe. *Exit.*

111 169 *Cuckolds*.] *Cuckholds*-Q2: *Cuckholdes*-Q3 173 *Cuckolds*]-  
*holds*-Q2. *Cuckholds* Q3 174 A' my] A'my Qq 176 learn'd corr.  
earned Qr originally, Qq 2, 3 177 *Cuckolds*] *Cuckholds* Qq 2, 3  
arn'd] learned Q3 181 Captaines:] Captaines, Qq 2, 3 183 harte]  
s Qq 2, 3 184 *Cuckolds*.] *Cuckholds*-Qq 2, 3 After 186 *Exit.* Q1  
ally, Qq 2, 3 188 A boate] A Boate Qq a boate ] a boat. Q3 190-1  
rest 1 Tempest. Q2. Tempest. Q? 102 the] teh Q? originally



⟨Actus Tertii, Scena Quarta.⟩

*Enter Securitie.*

*Secu.* What *Winnie*? Wife, I say? out dores at this time! where should I seeke the Gad-flye? *Billingsgate, Billingsgate, Billingsgate.* Shee's gone with the Knight, shee's gone with the Knight; woe be to thee *Billingsgate.*  
; A boate, a boate, a boate, a full hunderd Markes for a boate.  
*Exit.*

Actus Quartus. Scena Prima.

*Enter Slutgut, with a paire of Oxe hornes, discovering Cuckolds-Hauen aboue.*

*Slut.* All haile, faire Hauen of married men onely, for there are none but married men Cuckolds. For my part, I presume not to arriue here, but in my Maisters behalfe, (a poore Butcher of East-cheape) who sends me to set vp (in honour of Saint *Luke*) these necessarie Ensignes of his homage: And vp I got this morning, thus early, to get vp to the toppe of this famous Tree, that is all fruite and no leaues, to aduance this Crest of my Maisters occupation. Vp then, Heauen and Saint *Luke* blesse me, that I be not blowne into the *Thames* as I clime, with this furious Tempest; Slight, I thinke the Deuill be abroad, in likenesse of a storme, to rob me of my Hornes: Harke how he roares. Lord! what a coyle the *Thames* keeps! she beares some vniust burthen I beleue, that she kicks and curuets thus; to cast it: Heauen blesse all honest passengers, that are vpon her back now, for the Bitte is out of her mouth I see, and shee will runne away with 'hem. So, so, I thinke I haue made it looke the right way, it runnes against London-Bridge (as it were) euen full butt. And now, let mee discover

III IV. 2-4 *Billingsgate*] *Billingsgate* Q3 4 thee] the Q3 5  
hunderd] hundred] Qq 2, 3 IV. 1 *Act IV. Scene 1. Cuckold's*  
*Hauen. B* 5-6 his homage] hushomage Q2 6 got] gat Qq 2, 3  
10 clime.] clime. Q2 10-11 Tempest:] tempest Q2: tempest. Q3  
12 storme] storme Qa 2. 2 17 away] away Q2

from this loftie prospect, what pranckes the rude *Thames* 20  
playes in her desperate lunacie. O me, here's a Boate has  
beene cast away hard by. Alas, alas, see one of her passen-  
gers, labouring for his life, to land at this Hauen here ; pray  
heauen he may recouer it : His next land is euen iust vnder  
me ; hold out yet a little : whatsoeuer thou art, pray, and 25  
take a good heart to thee. Tis a man, take a mans heart to  
thee ; yet a little further, get vp a thy legges man : now, tis  
shallowe enough. So, so, so ! Alas, hee's downe againe ;  
hold thy winde Father : tis a man in a Night-cappe. So !  
now hee's got vp againe : now hee's past the worst : yet 30  
thankes be to heauen ; he comes toward me pretie and  
strongly.

*Enter Securitie without his hat, in a Night-cap,  
wett band, &c.*

*Secu.* Heauen, I beseech thee, how haue I offended thee !  
where am I cast ashore nowe, that I may goe a righter  
way home by land ? Let me see O I am scarce able to 35  
looke about me ! where is there any Sea-marke that I am  
acquainted withall ?

*Stit.* Looke vp Father, are you acquainted with this  
Marke ?

*Secu.* What ! landed at *Cuckolds hauen* ? Hell and dam- 40  
'nation. I will runne backe and drowne my selfe.

*{He falls downe.*

*Stit.* Poore man how weake hee is ! the weake water ha's  
washt away his strength.

*Sec.* Landed at *Cuckolds hauen* ? if it had not bin to die  
twentie times alue, I should neuer haue sapt death : I will 45  
neuer arise more : I will grouell here and cate durt till I be  
choak't : I will make the gentle earth doe that, which the  
cruell water ha's denied me.

iv. i. 22 see] See Q1 25 little ] little Q2. little Q3 27 thee ;  
yet corr. Q1. thee yet , Q1 originally thee yet, Qq 2, 3 28 enough]  
enough Q3 29 -cappe ] -cap Qq 2, 3 After 32 stage-dir. in a] in  
an Qq wett] wett, Qq band,] band Q3 34 ashore] a shore Qq  
35 see.] see, Qq 2, 3 37 acquainted] acquaintdd Q3 originally withall]  
with all Q3 42 ha's] has Q3 45 alue.] a lue Q1: alue; Q3 46  
more:] more Qq 2, 3 47 that] that Q3 which om. Q3 48 ha's] has Qq 2, 3

*Slit.* Alas good father, be not so desperate ; Rise man :  
50 if you will, Ile come presently and lead you home.

*Secu.* Home ? shall I make any know my Home, that has  
knowne me thus abroad ? how lowe shall I crouch away,  
that no eye may see mee ? I will creepe on the earth while  
I liue, and neuer looke heauen in the face more.

{*Exit creep<ing>.*}

55 *Slit.* What yong *Planet* raignes now troe, that olde men  
are so foolish ? What desperate yong Swaggerer would haue  
bin abroad such a wether as this, vpon the water ? Ay me,  
see another remnant of this vnfortunate ship-wrack ! or  
some other. A woman ! yfaith, a woman, though it be  
60 almost at *S. Kath'rins*, I discerne it to be a woman, for al her  
bodie is aboue the water, & her clothes swim about her most  
handsomely. O they beare her vp most brauely ! has not  
a woman reason to loue the taking vp of her cloathes the  
better while she liues, for this ? Alas, how busie the rude  
65 *Thames* is about her ? A pox a' that wave. It wil drowne  
her, yfaith, twill drowne her. Crye God mercie, shee has  
scapt it ! I thanke heauen she has scapt it ! O, how she  
swimmes like a Mermaide ! Some vigilant body looke out,  
and saue her. That's well said, iust *where the Priest fell in*,  
70 there's one sets downe a Ladder, and goes to take her vp.  
Gods blessing a thy heart boy, now take her vp in thy armes.  
and to bedde with her. Shee's vp, shee's vp ! Shee's a beauti-  
full woman I warrant her, the Billowes durst not deuoure  
her.

*Enter the Drawer in the Tauerne before,  
with Wynnyfrid.*

75 *Draw.* How fare you now Lady ?

*Wynn.* Much better, my good friende, then I wishe : as  
one desperate of her Fame, now my Life is preseru'd.

rv. i 49 man :] man Qq 2, 3 57 bin] beene Q3 58 another  
corr. Q1 : a nother Q1 originally 59 woman | yfaith] woman y |  
faith Q3 originally woman.] woman Qq 2, 3 60 Kath'rins] Katherns Q3  
woman.] woman Qq 61 clothes] cloths Qq 2, 3 65 a' that]  
a'that Qq 67 it ! I] it, I Qq 2, 3 it ! O] it. O Qq 68  
Mermaide] Mermaid Qq 2, 3 Some] some Qq 72 her. Shee's] her, shee's  
Qq 2, 3 After 74 stage-dir. before,] before Qq 76 friende,] friend . Qq

*Draw.* Comfort your selfe; That power that preserued you from death: can likewise defend you from infamie, howsoever you deserue it. Were not you one that tooke 80 Bote, late this night, with a Knight, and other Gentlemen at *Billings-gate*?

*Wynn.* Vnhappy that I am, I was.

*Draw.* I am glad it was my good happe to come downe thus farre after you, to a house of my friends heere in S. 85 *Kath'rines*, since I am now happily made a meane to your rescue, from the ruthlesse tempest; which (when you tooke Bote) was so extreame, and the Gentleman that brought you forth, so desperate and vnsobber, that I fear'd long ere this I should heare of your ship-wracke, and therefore (with 90 little other reason) made thus farre this way: And this I must tell you, since perhappes you may make vse of it, there was left behinde you at our Tauerne, brought by a Porter (hyr'd by the yong Gentleman that brought you), a Gentlewomans Gowne, Hat, Stockings, and Shooes; which if they 95 be yours, and you please to shift you, taking a hard bed here, in this house of my friend, I will presently goe fetch you.

*Wynn.* Thanks my good friend, for your more then good newes. The Gowne with all things bounde with it are myne; which if you please to fetch as you have promist, I will 100 bouldly receiue the kinde fauour you haue offered, till your returne: intreating you, by all the good you haue done in preseruing me hitherto, to let none take knowledge of what fauour you doe me, or where such a one as I am bestowed, lest you incurre mee much more damage in my fame, then 105 you haue done me pleasure in preseruing my life.

*Draw.* Come in Lady, and shift your selfe; resolute, that nothing, but your owne pleasure, shall bee vsde in your discouery.

*Wynn.* Thanke you good friende: the time may come, 110 I shall requite you.

*Exeunt.*

iv. i. 86 *Kath'rines*] *Katherines* Qq 2, 3      94 yong] young Qq 2, 3  
94-5 Gentlewomans] Gentle womans Qr      95 Stockings] Stockins Qq 2, 3  
104 I] I, Q3      110 Thanke corr. Qr, Qq 2, 3: Thanck Qr originally  
P p 2

*Shit.* See, see, see ! I hold my life, there's some other a taking vp at *Wapping*, now ! Looke, what a sort of people cluster about the Gallows there ! in good troth it is so. O  
 115 me ! a fine yong Gentleman ! What ? and taken vp at the Gallows ? Heauen graunt he be not one day taken downe there : A' my life it is ominous. Well, hee is deliuered for the time, I see the people haue all left him ; yet will I keepe my prospect a while, to see if any more haue bin shipwrackt.

*Enter Quick<siluer> bareheade.*

120 *Quick.* Accurs't, that euer I was sau'd, or borne.  
 How fatall is my sad aruall here ?  
 As if the *Starres*, and *Providence* spake to mee,  
 And sayd, the drift of all vnlawfull courses,  
 (What euer ende they dare propose themselues,  
 125 In frame of their licentious policyes)  
 In the firme order of iust *Destinie*,  
 They are the ready high wayes to our Ruines.  
 I know not what to doe, my wicked hopes  
 Are, with this Tempest, torne vp by the rootes.  
 130 O, which way shall I bend my desperate steppes,  
 In which vnsufferable Shame and Miserie  
 Will not attend them ? I will walke this Banck,  
 And see if I can meete the other reliques  
 Of our poore ship-wrackt Crew, or heare of them.  
 135 The Knight (alas) was so farre gone with wine,  
 And th' other three, that I refus'de their Boate,  
 And tooke the haplesse Woman in another,  
 Who cannot but be suncke, what euer Fortune  
 Hath wrought vpon the others desperate liues. *<Exit.>*

*Enter Petronel, and Seagul, bareheaded.*

140 *Pet.* Zounds Captaine, I tell thee, we are cast up o'the

iv. 1. 115 yong] young *Qq* 2, 3 116 graunt] graunt, *Q3* 117  
 A.] A. *Qq* ominous *corr.* *Q1*, *Qq* 2, 3 omenous *Q1* originally After  
 119 stage-dir *Q1* adds to 119 Enter] Enter *Q1* originally 121 ariually  
 arriual *Q3* 125 policyes] policyes ) *Qq* 129 Tempest] Temtest  
 132 rootes. *corr.* *Q1*: rootes, *Q1* originally, *Qq* 2, 3 131 which]  
 which, *Q3* 136 Boate *corr.* *Q1*, *Q3* Bote *Q1* originally, *Q2* 137  
 another,] another. *Qq* 2, 3 139 liues ] liues, *Q2*

Coast of *France*, Sfoote, I am not drunke still, (I hope ?)  
Dost remember where we were last Night ?

*Sea*. No by my troth Knight, not I, but me thinks wee  
haue bin a horrible while vpon the water, and in the water.

*Pet*. Aye me we are vndone for euer : hast any money 143  
about thee ?

*Sea*. Not a pennie by heauen.

*Pet*. Not a pennie betwixt vs, and cast a shore in *France*?

*Sea*. Faith, I cannot tell that ; my braines, nor mine eyes  
are not mine owne, yet. 150

Enter 2. Gentlemen.

*Pet*. Sfoote wilt not beleue me ? I know't by th' *elevation*  
of the *Pole* ; and by the *altitude* and *latitude* of the *Climate*.  
See ! here comes a couple of French Gentlemen ; I knew we  
were in *France* : dost thou think our Englishmen are so  
Frenchified, that a man knowes not whether he be in *France*, 155  
or in *England*, when he sees 'hem ? What shal we doe ? we  
must eene to 'hem, and intreat some reliefe of 'hem : Life  
is sweete, and we haue no other meanes to relieue our liues  
now, but their Charities.

*Sea*. Pray you, do you beg on 'hem then, you can speak 160  
*French*.

*Pet*. *Monsieur, plaist il d'auoir pitie de nostre grande infor-*  
*tunes ? Je suis vn poure Cheualier d'Angleterre qui a souffri*  
*l'infortune de Naufrage.*

*I. Gent. Vn poure Cheualier d'Angleterre ?* 165

*Pet. Oui Monsieur, il est trop vraye ; mais vous scaues bien*  
*nous somes toutes subiect a fortune.*

rv. i 143 I.] I. Qq After 150 stage-dir Gentlemen ] Gentlemen, Q2  
153 See ! corr. Q1 See ? Q1 originally See, Qq 2, 3 here] heres Q2  
159 Charities.] Charities, Qq 160 Pray you, corr Q1, Q3. Pray  
you Q1 originally, Q2 then.] then Qq 2, 3 162 il] ill Q2 d'auoir  
corr. Q1, but the d is broken dauoir Q1 originally Qq 2, 3 pitie] pity  
Qq 2, 3 162-3 infortunes ?] infortunes, Qq 2, 3. infortune Doddsley  
(1744) 163 Je suis] Je-suis Qq d'Angleterre] D'Angleterre Qq  
163-4 souffri l'infortune] souffrit infortune Q1 originally, Qq 2, 3 souffrit  
infortune Q1 miscorrected. 165 I. Gent corr. Q1 I. Gen. Q1  
originally, Qq 2, 3 d'Angleterre] D'Angleterre Qq 166 Pet. corr  
Q1 not in Q1 originally, Qq 2, 3 Monsieur corr. Q1, Qq 2, 3 : Monsieur  
Q1 originally il] i Q3

2. *Gent.* A poore Knight of England? a poore *Knight of Windsore*, are you not? Why speake you this broken  
170 French, when y'are a whole English man? on what coaste are you, thinke you?

*Pet.* On the coast of France, sir.

1. *Gen.* On the cost of Doggs Sir: Y'are ith' *Ile a Doggs* I tell you. I see y'auē bene washt in the *Thames* here, & I  
175 beleue ye were drownd in a Tauerne before, or els you would neuer haue tooke boate in such a dawning as this was. Farewel, farewel, we wil not know you for shaming of you. I ken the man weel, hee's one of my thirty pound knights.

2. *Gent.* No no, this is he that stole his knighthood o'the  
180 grand day, for *fourē pound*, giuing to a Page all the money in's purse I wot well. *Exeunt <the 2. Gentlemen>.*

*Sea.* Death, *Collonell*, I knew you were ouershot.

*Pet.* Sure I thinke now indeede, Captaine *Seagull*, we were something ouershot.

*Enter Quicksiluer.*

185 What! my sweete *Franck Quicksiluer*! dost thou suruiue to reioyce me? But what? no bodie at thy heels, *Franck*? Ay me, what is become of poore *Mistresse Securitie*?

*Quick.* Faith gone quite from her Name, as she is from her Fame I thinke; I left her to the mercie of the water.

190 *Sea.* Let her goe, let her goe: let vs go to our ship at *Blackwall* and shift vs.

*Pet.* Nay by my troth, let our clothes rotte vpon vs, and let vs rotte in them: twentie to one our Ship is attacht by

IV. 1. 168 2 *Gent.* corr. Q1: 2. *Gen* Q1 originally, Qq 2, 3 170  
y'are corr. Q1, Qq 2, 3. y'are, Q1 originally 171 are you, corr Q1:  
are you Q1 originally, Qq 2, 3 thinke you] thinke you Q2 172 om.  
Qq 2, 3 On] on Q1 173 cost] coast Qq 2, 3 ith' corr. Q1, Q3: ith,  
Q1 originally. ith Q2 174 you.] you Q3 bene] bin Qq 2, 3  
176 boate corr. Q1: bote Q1 originally: boat Qq 2, 3 177 Farewel,  
farewel corr. Q1: Farewell, farewell Q1 originally (the spelling after-  
wards shortened to make room for the extra letter of boate) 179 No  
ho.] Now Qq 2, 3 180 pound.] pound Qq Page] Page, Qq 1, 2  
page, Q3 182 ouershot] ouer shot. Q1: ouer shot, Q2 ouer shot  
Q3 183 now] how Q2 184 ouershot] ouer shot Q3 Qq add stage  
dir. to 184 185 suruiue] suruiue Qq 186 me?] mee Qq 2, 3  
what?] what Qq 2, 3 187 *Securitie*?] *Securitie*. Qq 1, 2. *Security*? Q3

this time ; if we set her not vnder Saile this last Tide, I neuer lookt for any other. Woe, woe is me, what shall become of vs ? the last money we could make, the greedy *Thams* has deuourde ; and if our Ship be attach't, there is no hope can relieue vs.

*Quic.* Sfoote Knight, what an vn-knightly faintnesse transports thee ? let our Ship sinck, and all the world thats without vs be taken from vs, I hope I haue some tricks, in this braine of mine, shall not let vs perish.

*Sea.* Well said *Francke* yfaith. O my nimble-spirited *Quicksiluer*, fore god, would thou hadst beene our Colonell.

*Petr.* I like his spirit rarely, but I see no meanes he has to support that spirit.

*Quic.* Go to Knight, I haue more meanes then thou art aware off : I haue not liu'd amongst Gould-smiths and Gould-makers all this while, but I haue learned something worthy of my time with 'hem. And, not to let thee stinck where thou standst, Knight, Ile let thee know some of my skill presently.

*Sea.* Doe good *Francke* I beseech thee.

*Quic.* I will blanche Copper so cunningly, that it shall endure all proofes, but the Test : it shall endure malleation, it shal haue the ponderositie of *Luna*, and the tenacitie of *Luna*, by no meanes friable.

*Petr.* Slight, where learn'st thou these tearmes, trō ?

*Quic.* Tush Knight, the tearmes of this Arte, euery ignorant Quack-saluer is perfect in : but Ile tell you how your selfe shal blanche Copper thus cunningly. Take *Arsnucke*, otherwise called *Realga*, (which indeede is plaine *Ratsbane*) Sublime 'hem three or foure times, then take the Sublimate of this *Realga*, and put 'hem into a Glasse, into *Chymia*, & let 'hem haue a conuenient decoction Naturall, foure and twentie houres, & he will become perfectly fixt : Then take this

rv. 1 194 time ;] time ? Qq vnder Saile] vndersaile Q3 195 lookt] looke Qq 2, 3 197 deuourde ;] deuourde, Q2 deuoured, Q3 204 fore god] Foregod Qq 207 to] too Qq 2, 3 210 And,] And Qq 2, 3 211 standst,] standst Qq 2, 3 218 learn'st] learnst' Qq 2, 3 222 *Realga,*] *Realga* Qq 2, 3 223-5 'hem ... 'hem ... 'hem] *Querry*, him ... him ... him : cf. 226-7



fixed powder, & proiect him vpon wel-purgd Copper, *et habebis Magisterium.*

*Ambo.* Excellent *Francke*, let vs hugge thee.

230 *Quic.* Nay this I will do besides ; Ile take you off twelue pence from euery Angell, with a kind of *Aqua fortis*, and neuer deface any part of the Image.

*Pet.* But then it will want weight ?

*Quic.* You shall restore that thus : Take your *sal Achyme*  
235 prepar'd, and your distild Vrine ; and let your Angels lie in it but foure and twenty howres, and they shall haue their perfect weight againe : come on now, I hope this is enough to put some spirit into the luers of you, Ile infuse more an other time. We haue saluted the proud Ayre long enough  
240 with our bare skonces, now will I haue you to a wenchs house of mine at London, there make shift to shift vs, and after take such fortunes as the stars shal assigne vs.

*Ambo.* Notable *Franck* ! we will euer adore thee. *Exeunt.*

*Enter Drawer with Wynifrid, new attird.*

*Wyn.* Nowe sweete friende you haue brought me nere  
245 enough your Tauerne, which I desired that I might with some colour be seene neare, enquiring for my husband ; who I must tel you stale thither last night with my wet gowne we haue left at your friends : which, to continue your former honest kindnes, let me pray you to keepe close from the  
250 knowledge of any ; and so, with all vow of your requitall, let me now entreate you to leaue me to my womans wit, and fortune.

*Draw.* All shall be done you desire ; and so, all the fortune you can wish for, attend you. *Exit Draw(er).*

*Enter Securitie.*

255 *Secu.* I wil once more to this vnhappy Tauerne before I

rv i 231 *Aqua fortis*] *Aqua fortis* Q3 233 weight ?] weight Q2 :  
weight Q3 234 *Achyme* corr. Q1 : *Achyme* Q1 originally. *Achime*  
Q2 *Achime* Q3. 235 Vrine ;] Vrine Q3 237 hope Q1 : hode  
Q2 : holde Q3 242 assigne corr. Q1, Qq 2, 3 : assigne Q1 originally  
243 *Franck*] *Franck* Qq 2, 3 245 that om. Qq 2, 3 246 neare  
corr Q1, Qq 2, 3 : neare Q1 originally 247 stale] stole Q3 last] the  
last Qq 2, 3 250 so.] so Qq 2, 3 253 so.] so Q3 fortune] fortune  
Q2 254 for, corr. Q1, Qq 2, 3 : for Q1 originally

shift one ragge of me more, that I may there know what is left behind, and what newes of their passengers. I haue bought me a Hat and band with the little money I had about me, and made the streets a litle leaue staring at my night-cap.

260

*Win.* O my deare husband! where haue you bin to night? al night abroad at Tauernes? rob me of my garments? and fare as one run away from me? Ahlas! is this seemely for man of your credit? of your age? and affection to your wife?

265

*Secu.* What should I say? how miraculously sorts this? was not I at home, and cald thee last night?

*Win.* Yes Sir, the harmelesse sleepe you broke, and my answer to you would haue witnest it, if you had had the patience to haue staid and answered me; but your so so-  
daine retreat made me imagine you were gone to Maister  
*Brambles*, and so rested patient, and hopefull of your com-  
ming againe, till this your vnbeleueed absence brought me  
abroad with no lesse then wonder, to seeke you, where the  
false Knight had carried you.

275

*Secu.* Villaine, and Monster that I was, howe haue I abus'd thee, I was sodainly gone indeede! for my sodaine ielousie transferred me. I will say no more but this, deare wife I suspected thee.

*Win.* Did you suspect me?

280

*Secu.* Talke not of it I beseech thee, I am ashamed to imagine it; I will home, I will home, and every morning on my knees aske thee hartely forgiuenes.

*Exeunt.*

*<Slitgut.>* Nowe will I descend my honourable Prospect; the farthest seeing Sea marke of the World: Noe maruaile  
then if I could see two miles about me. I hope the redde  
Tempests anger be nowe ouerblowne, which sure I thinke

rv. 1 257 passengers.] passengers, Q2: passengers. Q3 259 litle] little Q2 263 and] and, Q3 271 retreat corr. Q1: retreat Q2: reitrait Q3. retraite Q1 originally 273 me] me, Q3 274 you.] you Q2, 3 277 sodainly] suddenly Q2, 3 278 me.] me Q2: me, Q3 this.] this Q2 283 hartely] heartelue Q2, 3 285 farthest] farthuest Q2 1, 2. farthuest Q3 287 ouerblowne] ouere blowne Q2

Heauen sent as a punishment, for prophaning holy Saint  
*Lukes* memorie, with so ridiculous a custome. Thou dis-  
 290 honest *Satyre* farewell to honest married Men; Farewel to  
 all sorts, and degrees of thee. Farewel thou horne of hunger,  
 that calst th' Inns a court to their Manger; Farewel thou  
 horne of abundance, that adornest the headsmen of the  
 Common-wealth; Farewell thou horne of Direction, that  
 295 is the Cittie Lanthorne; Farewell thou Horne of Pleasure,  
 the Ensigne of the huntsman; Farewell thou Horne of  
 Destinie, th'ensigne of the married man; Farewell thou  
 Horne Tree that bearest nothing but Stone-fruite. *Exit.*

<Actus Quartus. Scena Secunda.>

*Enter Touchstone.*

*Touch.* Ha Sirah! Thinkes my Knight Aduenturer we  
 can no point of our compasse? Doe wee not knowe *North-*  
*north-east? North-east and by East? East and by North?*  
 nor plaine *Eastward?* Ha? haue we neuer heard of *Vir-*  
 3 *ginia?* nor the *Cauallaria?* nor the *Colonoria?* Can we  
 discouer no discoueries? Well, mine errant *Sir Flash*, and  
 my runnagate *Quicksiluer*, you may drinke dronke, crack  
 cannes, hurle away a browne dozen of *Monmouth Capps* or  
 so, in sea-ceremonie to your *boon voyage*, but for reaching  
 10 any Coast saue the coast of *Kent*, or *Essex*, with this Tide,  
 or with this fleete, Ile be your warrant for a *Grauesend* Tost:  
 There's that gone afore, wil stay your *Admiral*, and *Vice-*  
*admirall*, and *Rere-admirall*, were they al (as they are) but  
 one *Pinnace*, and vnder saile, as wel as a *Remora*, doubt it

iv. 1. 288 punishment,] punishment Qq 2, 3 289 memorie,] memorie.  
 Q2 290 *Satyre*] *Satyre*, Q1: *Satire*, Qq 2, 3 290-1 Farewel  
 to all] Farewel, to all Q1: Farewell, to all Qq 2, 3 291 hunger,]  
 hunger Qq 298 Stone-fruite] Stone fruite Q1 iv. 11 *Scene II Gold-*  
*smiths' Row* B 3 *North?*] *North?* Qq 5 nor the *Colonoria* Qq 2, 3  
 not the *Colonoria* Q1 6 Well] well Qq 8 *Monmouth*] *Monmoth*  
 Q2 9 *boon*] *bone* Q3 *voyage*,] *voyage* some copies of Q1: *voyage*  
 Qq 2, 3 11 *Grauesend* Tost] *Grause-end-Tost* Q2 *Graues-end* Tost Q3  
 12 There's] Ther's Q2: The'rs Q3 *Admiral*, and] *Admiral* and Q1 in  
 text: and, corrected c.w. G verso: ad, n c w. originally: *Admirall* and Qq 2, 3  
 13 as they] as the y Q1 14 *Remora*] *Romora* Qq 2, 3

not ; and from this Sconce, without eyther pouder or shot, 15  
*worke upon that now.* Nay, and you'll shew trickes, wee'l vie  
 with you, a little. My Daughter, his Lady, was sent East-  
 ward, by land, to a Castle of his, i' the ayre (in what region  
 I knowe not) and (as I heare) was glad to take vp her lodging  
 in her Coach, she and her two waiting women, her maide, 20  
 and her mother, like three Snailles in a shell, and the Coach-  
 man a top on 'hem, I thinke. Since they haue all found the  
 way back againe by *Weeping Crosse*. But ile not see 'hem.  
 And for two on 'hem, *Madam* and her *Malkin*, they are like  
 to bite o' the bridle for *Willham*, as the poore horses haue 25  
 done al this while that hurried 'hem, or else go graze o' the  
 common : So should my *Dame Touchstone* too, but she has  
 bene my Crosse these thirty yeares, and ile now keepe her,  
 to fright away sprights, Ifaith. I wonder I heare no news of  
 my sonne *Goulding*! He was sent for to the *Guild-hall*, this 30  
 Morning betimes, and I maruaile at the matter ; if I had not  
 layd vp comfort, and hope in him, I should grow desperate  
 of al. See, he is come i' my thought ! How now Sonne ?  
 what newes at the Court of Aldermen ?

*Enter Goulding.*

*Gould.* Troth Sir, an Accident somewhat strange, els it 35  
 hath litle in it worth the reporting.

*Touch.* What ? It is not borrowing of money then ?

*Gold.* No sir, it hath pleasd the worshipful Commoners of  
 the citty, to take me one i' their number at presentation of  
 the inquest. 40

*Touch.* Ha !

*Gould.* And the Alderman of the warde wherein I dwel, to  
 appoint me his Deputy——

rv. n. 15 shot,] shot. Qq 16 worke] Worke Qq 2, 3 17 Daughter,  
 ... Lady,] Daughter. Lady Qq 2, 3 (Ladie Q2) 18 land,] land Qq 2, 3  
 of] if Q2 21 shell,] The comma is faintly printed in Q1 shel Q2: shell Q3  
 22 Since] since Q3 23 Weeping Crosse] weeping Crosse Q1 Weep ng  
 Crosse Q2: weeping crosse Q3 26 go] to Qq 2, 3 28 bene] bin  
 Q2: beene Q3 29 sprights,] sprights Qq 2, 3 31 matter,]  
 matter Qq 32 comfort] Comfort Q1 33 he] He Qq 1] I  
 Qq 1, 2 38 sir,] sir Qq 1, 2 39 citty,] citty Qq 2, 3 40 in•  
 quest,] inquest Q1 43 Deputy—] Deputy- Q3

*Touch.* Howe!

45 *Gold.* In which place, I haue had an oath ministred me, since I went.

*Touch.* Now my deare, & happy Sonne! let me kisse thy new worship, & a litle boast mine own happines in thee: What a fortune was it (or rather my iudgment indeed) for  
50 me, first to see that in his disposition, which a whole Citty so conspires to second? Tane into the Livory of his company, the first day of his freedome? now (not a weeke married) chosen *Commoner*? and *Aldermans* Deputie in a day? note but the reward of a thrifty course. The wonder  
55 of his Time! Wel, I wil honour M<sup>r</sup> ~~(aister)~~ *Alderman*, for this art, (as becomes me), & shall think the better of the Common Counsels wisdome, & worship, while I liue, for thus meeting, or but comming after me in the opinion of his desert. Forward, my sufficient *Sonne*, and as this is the first, so esteeme  
60 it the least step, to that high and prime honour that expects thee.

*Gould.* Sir, as I was not ambitious of this, so I couet no higher place; it hath dignity enough, if it will but saue me from contempt: and I had rather my bearing, in this, or any  
65 other office, should adde worth to it; then the Place giue the least opinion to me.

*Touch.* Excellently spoken: This modest Answer of thine blushes, as if it said, I will weare Scarlet shortly. Worshipfull Sonne! I cannot containe my selfe, I must tell thee,  
70 I hope to see thee one o'the Monuments of our Citty, and reckon'd among her worthies, to be remembred the same day with the Lady *Ramsey*, and graue *Gresham*: when the famous fable of *Whittington*, and his *Pusse*, shalbe forgotten, and thou and thy Actes become the Posies for Hospitals,  
75 when thy name shall be written upon Conduits, and thy deeds plaid i' thy life time, by the best companies of Actors, and be call'd their *Get-peny*. This I diuine. This I Prophecie.

iv. ii. 44 ranged with 43 in Qq 47 me Q3. we Qq 1, 2 56  
Common] common Qq 58 desert] desert: Qq 2, 3 62 Sir,  
65ur Qq 2, 3 67 Answer] Answer Q2 71 worthies,] worthies  
Qq 2, 3 77 diuine. This I] diuine and Qq 2, 3

*Gold.* Sir, engage not your expectation farder, then my abilities will answere: I that know mine owne strengths, feare 'hem; and there is so seldome a losse in promising the least, that commonly it brings with it a welcome deceit. I haue other newes for you Sir.

*Touch.* None more welcome, I am sure?

*Gould.* They haue their degree of welcome, I dare affirme. The Colonell, and all his company, this morning putting 85 forth drunke from *Belmsgate*, had like to haue been cast away o' this side *Greenwich* and (as I haue intelligence, by a false Brother,) are come dropping to towne, like so many Masterlesse men, i' their doublets and hose, without Hatte, or Cloake, or any other—

*Touch.* A miracle! the Iustice of Heauen! where are they? lets goe presently and lay for 'hem.

*Gould.* I haue done that already Sir, both by Constables, and other officers, who shall take 'hem at their old *Anchor*; and with lesse tumult, or suspition, then if your selfe were 95 seene in't: vnder coulour of a great Presse, that is now abroad, and they shall here be brought afore me.

*Touch.* Prudent, & politique sonne! Disgrace 'hem all that euer thou canst; their Ship I haue already arrested How to my wish it falls out, that thou hast the place of a 100 Iusticer vpon 'hem! I am partly glad of the iniury done to me, that thou maist punish it. Be seuerer i' thy place, like a new officer o'the first quarter, vnreflected. You heare how our Lady is come back with her traine, from the inuisible Castle?

*Gould.* No, where is she?

*Touch.* Within, but I ha' not seene her yet, nor her mother; who now begins to wish her daughter vndub'd,

iv. ii. 78 farder,] farder with stop doubtful in Qa. farder Q3 86  
*Belmsgate*] *Belmsgate* Qq 2, 3 88 Brother,) corr Q1 Brother, Q1  
 originally: Brother] Qq 2, 3 89 Masterlesse] maisterlesse Qa: maisterles  
 Q3 90 Cloake,] Cloake; Qq 2, 3 96 in't] int Qq 2, 3 99  
 arrested.] arested, Q2. arrested, Q3 101 'hem] them Qq 2, 3 102  
 i' thy] i'thy Qq 1, 2. i'thy Q3 103 o'the] othe Qq 2, 3 vnreflected.  
 You] vnreflected: you Qq 104 inuisible] inuiseble Qa 106  
 where] woere Q2 107 ha'] ha Qq 2, 3 108 mother:] motheres  
 Qq 2, 3

they say, and that she had walkd a foot-pase with her sister  
 110 Here they come, stand back.

〈Enter〉 *Mistresse Touchstone, Gyrtrude, [Goulding,]  
 Mildred, Syndefie.*

God saue your Ladiship; 'saue your good Ladiship :  
 your Ladiship is welcome from your enchanted Castell ; so  
 are your beautious Retinew. I heare your Knight errant is  
 trauayld on strange aduentures : Surely in my minde, your  
 115 Ladiship hath *fish'd faire, and caught a Frog*, as the saying is.

*Mist. Tou.* Speake to your Father, Madam, & kneele  
 downe.

*Gyrt.* Kneele? I hope I am not brought so low yet :  
 though my Knight be run away, & has sold my land, I am a  
 120 Lady, stil.

*Touch.* Your Ladiship says true, Madam, & it is fitter,  
 and a greater *decorum*, that I should curtsie to you, that are  
 a knights wife, and a Lady, then you be brought a' your  
 knees to me, who am a poore Cullion, and your Father.

125 *Gyr.* Law ! my father knowes his duty.

*Mist. Tou.* O child !

*Touch.* And therefore I doe desire your Ladiship, my  
 good Lady *Flash*, in all humility, to depart my obscure  
 Cottage, and returne in quest of your bright, and most trans-  
 130 parent Castell, *how euer presently conceald to mortall eyes*.  
 And as for one poore woman of your traine here, I will take  
 that order, she shall no longer be a charge vnto you, nor  
 helpe to spend your Ladiship ; she shall stay at home with  
 me, and not goe abroad, not put you to the pawning of an  
 135 odde Coach-horse, or three wheelles, but take part with the  
*Touchstone* : If we lacke, we wil not complaine to your Ladi-

IV. ii. 110 come,] come Qq 2, 3 stage-dir. Enter *Mistresse Touchstone*,  
*Mistresse Qq Golding Q1* originally : *Goulding* corr. Q1, Qq 2, 3 111  
 God saue] God saue Q2 Ladiship] Lidishup Q3 'saue] saue Qq 2, 3  
 112 Castell:] Castle, Qq 2, 3 113 Retinew.] Retinew, Q3 114  
 trauayld] trauayld Q2. traueld Q3 114-15 your Ladiship hath] your  
*Ladiship hath* Qq 116 Madam,] Madam Q2 120 Lady.] Lady  
 Qq 2, 3 122 you,] you Qq 2, 3 123 a] a Qq 2, 3 125 Law]  
 Low Qq 2, 3 126 Mist.] Mist, Q2 129 in quest] inquest Qq 2, 3  
 135 wheelles,] wheelles Q2

ship. And so, good *Madam*, with your *Damoselle* here, please you to let vs see your straight backs, in equipage ; for truly, here is no roust for such Chickens as you are, or birds o' your feather, if it like your Ladiship. 140

*Gyrt.* Mary, fyste o' your kindnesse. I thought as much. Come away *Sinne*, we shall assoone get a fart from a dead man, as a farthing of court'sie here.

*Mild.* O, good Sister !

*Gyrt.* Sister, sir reuerence ? come away, I say, Hunger 145 drops out at his nose.

*Goul.* O Madam, *Faire words neuer hurt the tongue.*

*Gyrt.* How say you by that ? you come out with your golde ends now !

*Mi. Tou.* Stay Lady-daughter : good husband. 150

*Touch.* Wife, no man loues his fetters, be they made of gold : I list not ha' my head fastned vnder my childs girdle ; as she has brew'd, so let her drinke, a Gods name she went witlesse to wedding, now she may goe wisely a begging. It's but Hony-moone yet with her Ladiship ; she has Coach 155 horses, Apparell, Iewels yet left, she needs carefor no friends, nor take knowledge of *Father, Mother, Brother, Sister*, or any body : When those are pawn'd, or spent, perhaps we shall returne into the list of her acquaintance.

*Gyrt.* I scorne it ifaith. Come *Sinne*. 160

*Mi. Tou.* O Madam, why do you prouoke your Father, thus ? • *Exit Gyrt* (rude, with *Sindefy*).

*Touch.* Nay, nay, eene let Pride goe afore, Shame wil follow after, I warrant you. Come, why doost thou weepe now ? thou art not the first good Cow hast had an ill Calfe, I trust. <*Exit* 165 *Mistress Touchstone.*> What's the newes, with that fellow ?

*Enter Constable.*

*Goul.* Sir, the Knight, and your man *Quickesiluer* are without, will you ha 'hem brought in ?

rv. ii. 140 feather,] feather Q2 151 Wife,] Wife Qq 2, 3 155  
Hony-moone] hony-Moone Qq 158 pawn'd,] pawn'd Qq 2, 3 162  
Stage-direction in Qq at the end of line 160 with a bracket 164 after,]  
after Qq 2, 3 you. Come] you, come Q3 After 167 stage-dir. Qq add  
to 167. Enter] Enter Q2 167 Goul.] Constable. S 168 will you,  
ha 'hem brought in ?] will hor broght in. Q2: will 'hem brought in. Q3



*Touch.* O by any meanes. *<Exit Constable.>* And Sonne,  
 170 here's a Chaire; appeare terrible vnto 'hem, on the first  
 enter view. Let them behold the melancholy of a Magistrate,  
 and taste the fury of a Citizen in office.

*Goul.* Why Sir, I can do nothing to 'hem, except you  
 charge 'hem with somewhat.

175 *Touch.* I will charge 'hem, and recharge 'hem, rather then  
 Authority should want foyle to set it of.

*<He offers Goulding a chair.>*

*Gould.* No good Sir, I will not.

*Touch.* Sonne, it is your place, by any meanes.

*Goul.* Beleeue it, I will not Sir.

*' Enter Knight Petronell, Quicksiluer, Constable, Officers.*

180 *Pet.* How Misfortune pursues vs still in our misery!

*Quic.* Would it had beene my fortune, to haue beene trust  
 vp at *Wapping*, rather then euer ha' come here.

*Pet.* Or mine to haue famisht in the Iland.

*Quic.* Must *Goulding* sit vpon us?

185 *Consta.* You might carry an M. vnder your girdle to Mais-  
 ter Deputis worship.

*Gould.* What are those, maister Constable?

*Const.* And't please your worship, a couple of Maisterlesse  
 men, I prest for the Low-countries, sir.

190 *Goul.* Why do you not cary 'hem to Bridewell, according  
 to your order, they may be shipt away?

*Const.* An't please your Worship, one of 'hem sayes he is  
 a Knight; and we thought good to shew him to your wor-  
 ship, for our discharge.

195 *Goul.* Which is he?

*Const.* This sir.

*Goul.* And what's the other?

*Const.* A Knights Fellow Sir, an't please you.

*Goul.* What? a Knight, and his Fellow thus accoutred?

iv. ii. 178 Sonne,] Sonne *Qq* 2, 3      181 beene . . . beene] bin . . . bin  
*Qq* 2, 3      182 ha'] ha *Qq* 2, 3      186 Deputis] Deputies *Qq* 2, 3      188  
 And't] An't *Qq* 2, 3      191 order,] order *Qq* 2, 3      193 to your] your  
*Qq* 2, 3      195 ranged with 194 in *Qf*      197 ranged with 196 in *Qr*

Where are their Hattes, and Feathers, their Rapiers, and 200  
their Cloakes?

*Quic.* O they mock vs.

*Const.* Nay truly sir, they had cast both their Feathers,  
and Hattes too, before wee see 'hem. Here's all their furni-  
ture, an't please you, that we found. They say, Knights are 205  
now to be knowne without Feathers, like Cockrels by their  
Spurres, Sir.

*Goul.* What are their names, say they?

*Touch.* Very well this. He should not take knowledge of  
'hem in his place, indeed. 210

*Con.* This is Sir *Petronell Flash*.

*Touch.* How!

*Con.* And this *Francis Quickesiluer*.

*Touch.* Is't possible? I thought your Worship had beene  
gone for *Virginia*, Sir. You are welcome home sir. Your 215  
Worship has made a quick returne, it seemes, and no doubt  
a good voyage. Nay pray you be couer'd, Sir. How did your  
Bisquet hold out Sir? Me thought, I had seene this Gentle-  
man afore; good Maister *Quickesiluer*! How a degree to  
the *Southward* has chang'd you. 220

*Gould.* Doe you know 'hem Father? Forbeare your offers  
a litle, you shall be heard anon.

• *Touch.* Yes, Maister Deputy: I had a small venture with  
them in the voyage, a Thing, cald a *Sonne in Lawe*, or so.  
Officers, you may let 'hem stand alone, they will not runne 225  
away, Ile giue my word for them. A couple of very honest  
Gentlemen. One of 'hem was my prentise, M(aister) *Quick-  
siluer*, here, and when he had 2. yeare to serue, kept his  
whore, & his hunting Nag, would play his 100. pound at  
*Gresco*, or *Primero*, as familiarly (& al a' my purse) as any 230

rv. ii 201 their Cloakes] cloakes Q3 202 ranged with 201 in Q1  
204 see] did see Q3 Here's] Her'es Qq 2, 3 204-5 furniture,] furniture  
Qq 2, 3 211 ranged with 210 in Q1 213 ranged with 212 in Q1 215  
Sir. You] Sir You Q2. Sir, you Q3 216, 220 has] haz Q3 218-19  
Gentleman] Gentlemen Q1: gentleman Qq 2, 3 220 you.] you! Q3  
222 litle] little Qq 2, 3 224 Thing, corr Q1, Qq 2, 3: Thing Q1 originally  
227-8 Quickesiluer] Quick. Q3 228 yeare] yeares Q3 230 a' my]  
a' my Q1

bright peice of Crimson on 'hem all, had his changable trunks of Apparel, standing at liuery, with his Mare, his Chest of perfumd linnen, and his Bathing Tubbs, which when I told him off, why he—he was a Gentleman, and I a poore *Cheape-side* 235 Groome. The remedie was, we must part. Since when he hath had the gift of gathering vp some small parcels of mine, to the value of 500. pound disperst among my customers, to furnish this his *Virginian* venture; wherein this knight was the chiefe, Sir *Flash* one that married a daughter 249 of mine, Ladefied her, turn'd two thousand poundes worth of good land of hers, into *Cash*, within the first weeke, bought her a new Gowne, & a Coach, sent her to seeke her fortune by land, whilst himselfe prepared for his fortune by sea, tooke in fresh flesh at *Belingsgate*, for his owne diet, to serue 245 him the whole voyage, the wife of a certaine vsurer, cald *Securitie*, who hath bene the broker for 'hem in all this businesse: Please Maister Deputy, *Worke vpon that now*.

*Goul.* If my worshipfull Father haue ended.

*Touch.* I haue, it shall please M<sup>a</sup>ister Deputy.

250 *Goul.* Well then, vnder correction.—

*Touch.* Now sonne, come ouer 'hem with some fine guird, as thus, *Knight you shall be encountred*, that is, had to the *Counter*; or, *Quicksiluer, I will put you in a crucible*, or so.

*Gould.* Sir *Petronell Flash*, I am sory to see such flashes as 255 these proceede from a Gentleman of your Quality, & Rancke; For mine own part, I could wish, I could say, I could not see them: but such is the misery of Magistrates, and men in Place, that they must not winke at Offenders. Take him aside, I wil heare you anone sir.

260 *Tou.* I like this wel yet: there's some grace i'the knight, left. He cries.

IV. II. 231 all,] all; Q3 232 liuery,] liuery Q3 233 perfumd] perfumd Q3 234 he—he] he! he Q3 235 when] when, Q3 237 to corr. Q1: so Q1 originally 240 worth] woorth Q3 241 *Cash*,] *Cash* Q2 244 *Belingsgate*] *Belingsgate* Q3 253 in a corr. Q1, Qq 2, 3. into a Q1 originally crucible,] crucible Qq 1, 2 254 *Petronell* corr. Q1, Qq 2, 3. *Petronell* Q1 originally 255 Quality,] Quality Q3 257 them,] the, corr. Q1 the Q1 originally 260-1 knight, left.] knight, left, Q1 originally, but possibly left. in the Dyce copy: miscorrected to knight. left, : knight left, Qq 2, 3

*Goul.* *Francis Quick-siluer*, would God thou hadst turnd *Quack-saluer*, rather then run into these dissolute, & lewd courses, it is great pittie; thou art a proper yong man, of an honest and cleane face, somewhat neere a good one, (God 265 hath done his part in thee) but, thou hast made too much, and beene to proud of that face, with the rest of thy body; for maintenance of which in neate and garish attire, (onely to be look'd vpon by some light houswives) thou hast prodigally consumed much of thy Masters estate: and being by 270 him gently admonish'd, at seuerall times, hast returnd thy selfe haughty, and rebellous, in thine answers, thundring out vncuill comparisons, requiting al his kindnes with a course and harsh behauiour, neuer returning thanks for any one benefit, but receiuing all, as if they had bin Debts to 275 thee, & no Courtesies. I must tel thee *Francis*, these are manifest signes of an ill nature; and God doth often punish such pride, and *outrecuidance*, with scorne and infamy, which is the worst of misfortune. My worshipfull father, what do you please to charge them withall? from the presse I wil 280 free 'hem Maister Constable.

*Const.* Then ile leaue your worship, Sir.

*Gold.* No, you may stay, there will be other matters against 'hem.

*Touch.* Sir I do charge this Gallant, Maister *Quicksiluer*, 285 on suspicion of Felony; and the Knight as being accessary, in the receipt of my goods.

*Quick.* O God Sir!

*Touch.* Hold thy peace, impudent varlot, hold thy peace. With what forehead or face, dost thou offer to *choppe Logick* 290 with me, hauing run such a race of Riot, as thou hast done? Do's not the sight of this worshipful mans fortune & temper, confound thee, that was thy yonger fellow in household, and now come to haue the place of a Iudge vpon thee? Dost not

iv u 264 courses, it] courses, It Qq pittie:] pittie, Qq yong] young Q3 265 one,] on Q2: on, Q3 266 hast] haste Q1 267 to proud] too proud Qq 2, 3 268 (onely] only Q2: onely Q3 269 look'd] looked Qq 2, 3 281 free 'hem] free'hem Q1 288 God] good Q3 292 fortune corr. Q1, Qq 2, 3: fortune, Q1 originally

295 obserue this? Which of al thy Gallants, & Gamsters, thy  
 Swearers & thy Swaggerers, will come now to mone thy mis-  
 fortune, or pittie thy penurie? They'le looke out at a win-  
 dow, as thou rid'st in triumph to *Tiborne*, and crye, yonder  
 goes honest *Franck*, mad *Quicksiluer*; He was a free boone  
 300 companion, when hee had money, sayes one; Hang him  
 foole, saies another, he could not keepe it when he had it;  
 A pox o'the Cullion his Maister (sais a third) he has brought  
 him to this: when their Pox of pleasure, & their piles  
 of perdition, would have bene better bestowed vpon thee,  
 305 that hast ventred for 'hem with the best, and by the clew  
 of thy knauery brought thy selfe weeping, to the Cart of  
 Calamity.

Quic. Worshipfull Maister.

Touch. Offer not to speake, *Crocodile*, I will not heare a  
 310 sound come from thee. Thou hast learnt to whine at the  
 Play yonder. Maister *Deputy*, pray you commit 'hem both  
 to safe custody, till I be able farther to charge 'hem.

Quic. O me, what an infortunate thing am I!

Pet. Will you not take security Sir?

315 Touch. Yes mary will I Sir *Flash*, if I can find him, &  
 charge him as deepe as the best on you. He has beene the  
 plotter of all this: he is your Inginer, I heare. Maister  
*Deputy*, you'll dispose of these? In the meane time, Ile to  
 my *Lo<rd>* Mayor, & get his warrant, to seize that serpent  
 320 *Securitie* into my hands, & seale vp both house, and goods,  
 to the Kings vse, or my satisfaction.

Goul. Officers, take 'hem to the Counter.

Qui. Pet. O God.

Touch. Nay on, on: you see the issue of your Sloth. Of  
 325 Sloth commeth Pleasure, of Pleasure commeth Riot, of Ryot

iv n. 299 *Franck*,] *Franck*. Q2 301 keepe] keepee Qr 302  
 o'the] othe Q2: oth Q3 Maister] Mr. Qq 304 bene] bin Qq 2, 3  
 311 you] yon Qr 312 'hem] hem Qq 2, 3 313 me,] me Qq 2, 3  
 infortunate] vnfortunate Qq 2, 3 I] I? Qq 2, 3 314 security]  
 securitie, Q3 Sir?] Sir Qq 315 *Flash*,] *Flash*. Q2 317  
 heare.] heare Qq 2, 3 Maister] Maister, Q2 320 goods,] goods  
 Qq 2, 3 322 Officers,] Officers Qq 2, 3 323 ranged with 322 in Qq.  
 In Qq 2, 3 the last line of G2 recto, so that O God appears in Q2 as 'OG o'  
 and in Q3 as 'OG'.

comes Whoring, of Whoring comes Spending, of Spending comes Want, of Want comes Theft, of Theft comes Hanging ; and there is my *Quicksiluer* fixt. *Exeunt.*

## Actus Quintus. Scena Prima.

*Gyrtrude. Sindefie.*

*Gyr.* Ah *Sinne!* hast thou euer read i'the Chronicle of any Lady, and her waiting-woman, driuen to that extremity, that we are, *Sinne?*

*Syn.* Not I truly, Madam, and if I had, it were but colde comfort, should come out of bookes, now. 5

*Gyr.* Why, good faith *Sinne*, I could dine with a lamentable storie, now. *O hone, hone, o no nera, &c.* Canst thou tell nere a one, *Synne?*

*Sin.* None but mine owne, Madam, which is lamentable inough ; first to be stolne from my Friends, which were 10 worshipfull, and of good accompt, by a Prentise, in the habite and disguise of a Gentleman, and here brought vp to London, and promis'd mariage, and now likely to be forsaken (for he is in possibility to be hangd.)

*Gyr.* Nay weepe not good *Sinne*. My *Petronell*, is in as 15 good possibilitie as he. Thy miseries, are nothing to mine, *Sinne*: I was more then promis'd marriage, *Sinne*, I had it *Sinne* & was made a Lady ; and by a Knight, *Sin*: which is now as good as no Knight, *Sin*: And I was borne in *London*, which is more then brought vp, *Sin*: and already for- 20 saken, which is past likelihood, *Sin*: and in stead of Land i' the Countrey, all my Knights Liuing lies i' the *Counter*, *Syn*, there's his Castle now !

*Syn.* Which hee cannot be forc't out off, Madam.

iv. 11. 328 *Quicksiluer*] *Quicksil.* Qq 2, 3 v. i Act V. Scene 1.  
*Gertrude's lodging.* B. (Rather 'A poor ale-house'. See ll. 50, 81, 172).  
 3 are.] are Qq 2, 3 5 comfort.] comfort Qq 2, 3 bookes] the  
 bookes Qq 2, 3 6 *Sinne*.] *Sin* Q2. *Syn.* Q3 7 now.] now, Q3  
 13 London.] London Q2 17 was] Was Q2 19 *Sin*:] *Syn.* Qq 2, 3  
 23 *Syn*.] *Syn.* Q1: *Syn*: Qq 2, 3 now!] now? Qq 1, 2: now Q3 24  
 forc't] forc't Q2: forc'd Q3 off.] off Q2: of Q3

25 *Gyr.* Yes, if he would liue hungry a weeke, or two. *Hunger*, they say, *breakes stone wals*. But he is eene wel inough seru'd, *Sin*, that so soone as euer he had got my hand to the sale of my inheritance run away from me. And I had bene his Punke, God blesse vs ! Would the Knight o' the *Sunne*, 30 or *Palmerin* of England, haue vsd their Ladies so, *Syn*? or sir *Lancelot*? or sir *Tristram*?

*Syn.* I doe not know, Madam.

*Gyr.* Then thou know'st nothing, *Syn*. Thou art a Foole, *Syn*. The Knighthood now a daies, are nothing like the 35 Knighthood of old time. They rid a horseback, Ours goe afoote. They were attended by their Squires, Ours by their Lacquaies. They went buckled in their Armor, Ours muffled in their Cloaks. They trauaile wildernesses, & desarts, Ours dare scarce walke the streets. They were stil prest to engage 40 their Honour, Ours stil ready to paune their cloaths. They would gallop on at sight of a Monster, Ours run away at sight of a Serieant. They would helpe poore Ladies, Ours make poore Ladies.

*Sin.* I Madam, they were knights of the Round-Table at 45 *Winchester*, that sought Aduentures, but these of the Square Table at *Ordinaries*, that sit at Hazard.

*Gyr.* True *Syn*, let him vanish. And tel me, what shal we pawne next?

*Syn.* I mary, Madam, a timely consideration, for our 50 Hostes (prophane woman) has sworne by bread, & salt, she will not trust vs another meale.

*Gyr.* Let it stinke in her hand then : Ile not be beholding

v. 1. 25 Yes,] Yes Q3 if he] ifhe Q1 25-6 *Hunger*, they say,] *Hunger* they say Qq 28 inheritance] inheritance, Q3 run] ran Q3 me. And] me, and Qq. me, as *Dodsley* (1744) 29 vs] vs. Qq 30 *Palmerin*] *Palmerine* Q3 vsd] vsed Q3 *Syn*?] *Syn*. Q2 : *Syn*, Q3 33 *Gyr*] *Gyr*, Q1 : *Gyr*, Q2 know'st] knowst Q2 : knowest Q3 35 horseback, Q2 : horseback Q1 : hors-backe, Q3 36 Squires, Ours Q3 : Squires, Our Qq 1, 2 37 Lacquaies] Lackies Q3 40 Honour] Honour Qq 2, 3 39 stil] stil, Q2 44 Round-Table] round Table Qq 2, 3 45 that] hat Q2 Square] square Qq 2, 3 47 True] True Q3 48 next? Q3 : next Q1 : next. Q2 50 woman] women Q2 has] haz Q3 51 another] an other Q3 52 then.] then. Qq 2, 3

to her. Let me see, my Jewels be gone, & my Gownes, & my red veluet Petticote, that I was married in, & my wedding silke stockings, & al thy best apparel, poore *Syn*. Good 55 faith, rather then thou shouldest pawne a ragge more I'd lay my Ladiship in lauender, if I knew where.

*Syn*. Alas, Madam, your Ladiship?

*Gir*. I, why? you do not scorne my Ladiship, though it is in a Wastcoate? Gods my life, you are a *Peate* indeed! 60 do I offer to morgage my Ladiship, for you, and for your auaile, and do you turne the Lip, and the Alas to my Ladiship?

*Syn*. No Madam, but I make question, who will lend any thing vpon it? 65

*Gyr*. Who? marry inow, I warrant you, if you'le seeke 'hem out. I'm sure I remember the time, when I would ha' giuen a thousand pound, (if I had had it) to haue bin a *Ladie*; and I hope I was not bred and borne with that appetite alone: some other gentle-borne o' the Citie, haue the same 70 longing I trust. And for my part, I would afford 'hem a peny'rth, my Ladiship is little the worse, for the wearing, and yet I would bate a good deale of the summe. I would lend it (let me see) for 40. li. in hand, *Syn*, that would apparell vs; and ten pound a yeare; that would keepe me, 75 and you, *Syn*, (with our needles) and wee should neuer need to be beholding to our sciruy Parents? Good Lord, that there are no *Fayries* now adayes, *Syn*.

*Syn*. Why Madame?

*Gyr*. To doe Miracles, and bring Ladyes money. Sure, if 80 wee lay in a cleanly house, they would haunt it, *Synne*? Ile trie. Ile sweepe the chamber soone at night, & set a dish of water o' the Hearth. A *Fayrie* may come, and bring a Pearle, or a Diamonde. Wee do not know *Syn*? Or, there may be a pot of Gold hid o' the backe-side, if we had tooles to digge 85 for't? Why may not wee two rise earely i' the morning

v. i. 56 faith.] faith Qq 2, 3 I'd] I'd Qq 1, 2: u'e Q3 57  
if] If Qq 2, 3 59 I.] I; Q3 62 Lip.] Lip. Q3 70 gentle-  
borne] gentle borne Q3 72 peny'rth] peny'rth Q3 worse.] worse Q3  
84 Diamonde. Q2: Diamonde Q1: Diamond. Q3 86 Why] why Qq



(Syn) afore any body is vp, and find a Iewell, i' the streets, worth a 100. li. ? May not some great Court-Lady, as she comes from Reuels at midnight, looke out of her Coach, as 90 'tis running, and loose such a Iewell, and wee finde it ? Ha ?

Syn. They are prettie waking dreames, these.

Gyr. Or may not some olde Vsurer bee drunke ouer-night, with a Bagge of money, and leaue it behinde him on a Stall ? for God-sake, Syn, let's rise to morrow by breake of day, 95 and see. I protest law, if I had as much money as an Alderman, I would scatter some on't i'th' streetes for poore Ladyes to finde, when their Knights were layd vp. And, nowe I remember my Song o' the *Golden showre*, why may not I haue such a fortune ? Ile sing it, and try what luck I shall haue 100 after it.

*Fond Fables tell of olde*

*How loue in Danaes lappe*

*Fell in a showre of Gold,*

*By which shee caught a clappe ;*

105 *O, had it been my hap,*

*(How ere the blow doth threaten)*

*So well I like the play,*

*That I could wish all day*

*And night to be so beaten.*

*Enter Mistris Touchstone.*

110 O, heer's my Mother ! good lucke, I hope. Ha' you brought any money, Mother ? Pray you Mother, your Blessing. Nay, sweet Mother, doe not weepe.

*Mistris Touch.* God blesse you ; I would I were in my Graue.

✓ 115 Gyr. Nay, deare Mother, can you steale no more money from my father ? dry your eyes, & comfort me. Alas, it is my Knights fault, and not mine, that I am in a Wast-coate, and attyred thus simply.

v. i. 92 -night, ? Q2 : night ? Q3 94 sake,] sake Q3 95  
law,] law Qq a, 3 if] If Qq 96 on't] on't, Q1 99 Ile begins  
a new line in Q1 111 Mother,] mother Qq a, 3 112 Mother,] mother  
Q3 115 Nay,] Nay Qq a, 3 116 Alas,] Alas Qq a, 3

*Mistris Touch.* Simply ? Tis better then thou deseru'st. Neuer whimper for the matter. *Thou should'st haue look'd,* 120 *before thou hadst leap't.* Thou wert a fire to be a Lady, and now your Ladishippe and you may both *blowe at the Cole,* for ought I know. *Selfe doe, selfe haue. The hastie person neuer wants woe,* they say.

*Gyr.* Nay then Mother, you should ha look'd to it ; a 125 bodie would thinke you were the older : I did but my kinde, I. He was a Knight, and I was fit to be a Lady. Tis not lacke of liking, but lacke of liuing, that seuers vs. And you talke like your selfe and a Cittiner in this, yfaith. You shew what Husband you come on lwys. You smell the *Touch-stone.* 130 He that will doe more for his daughter, that he has marryed <to> a scirue Gold-end man, and his Prentise, then he will for his t'other Daughter, that has wedded a Knight, and his Customer. By this light, I thinke hee is not my legitimate father. 135

*Syn.* O good Madam, doe not take vp your mother so.

*Mistris Touch.* Nay, nay, let her eene alone. Let her Ladishippe grieve me still, with her bitter taunts and termes. I haue not dole inough to see her in this miserable case, I ? without her Veluet gownes, without Ribbands, without 140 Iewels, without French-wires, or Cheat bread, or Quailles, or a little Dog, or a Gentleman Vsher, or anything indeed, that's fit for a Lady.—

*Syn.* Except her tongue.

*Mistris Touch.* And I not able to releiue her neither, being 145 kept so short, by my husband. Well, God knowes my heart. I did little thinke, that euer shee should haue had need of her sister *Golding.*

*Gyr.* Why Mother, I ha not yet. Alas, good Mother, bee

v. 1. 120 *look'd,* *look'd* Q2 : *look't* Q3 123 ought] aught Q3  
know] know, Q3 *haue,* *haue,* Q3 125 *look'd*] *look'd* Q1 : *look't*  
Qq 2, 3 a] A Qq 127 I. He] I, he Q3 130 lwys] *lwys.* Q2  
*iwys?* Q3 smell] *smell o' Dodsley (1744)* 131-2 he has married to]  
*Perhaps we should read with Dodsley* has married 132 Prentise,  
Prentise Qq 2, 3 135 father.] Father.— Qq 2, 3 137 *Mistris*  
*Mistris.* Q1 142 Gentleman] Gentleman Q1 146 short.] short Q2  
147 little] *litle* Qq 2, 3 thinke,] *thinke* Q3

150 not intoxicate for mee, I am well inough. I would not change husbands with my Sister, I. *The legge of a Larke is better then the body of a Kight.*

*Mistris Touch.* I know that. But——

*Gyr.* What sweete Mother, what ?

155 *Mistris Touchstone.* It's but ill food, when nothing's left but the Claw.

*Gyr.* That's true Mother ; Aye me.

*Mistris Touchstone.* Nay, sweete Lady-bird, sigh not. Child, Madame. Why doe you weepe thus ? Bee of good  
160 cheere. I shall die, if you crye, and marre your complexion, thus.

*Gyr.* Alas Mother, what should I doe ?

165 *Mistris Touch.* Goe to thy Sister's, Childe, shee'le be proude, thy Lady-ship will come vnder her rooffe. Shee'le winne thy Father to release thy Knight, and redeeme thy Gownes, and thy Coach, and thy Horses, and set thee vp againe.

*Gyr.* But will shee get him to set my Knight vp, too ?

*Mistris Touchstone.* That shee will, or any thing else  
170 thou'lt aske her.

*Gyr.* I will begin to loue her, if I thought she would doe this.

*Mistris Touch.* Try her good Chucke, I warrant thee.

*Ger.* Doost thou thinke shee'le doo't ?

175 *Syn.* I Madame, and be glad you will receiue it.

*Mistris Touch.* That's a good Mayden, shee tells you trew. Come, Ile take order for your debts i' the Ale-house.

*Gyr.* Goe, *Syn.* and pray for thy *Franck*, as I will, for my *Pet.*  
*<Exeunt.>*

v. i. 150 inough.] mough, Q3      152 Kight] Kite Q3      153  
I om. Qq 2, 3      154 Mother, what] Mother, What Qq      158 not.]  
not; Q3      160 complexion.] complexion Q3      161 thus.] thus ? Qq  
162 doe ?] doe, Qq 1, 2 do ? Q3      163 Sister's.] Sister's Qq 1, 2 :  
Sister, Q3      shee'le] Shee'le Qq      164 proude] proude Q2      165  
Knight.] Knight Qq 2, 3      173, 176 Mistris] Mistris. Q1

(Actus Quintus. Scena Secunda.)

*Enter Touchstone, Goulding, Woolfe.*

*Touch.* I will receiue no letters, M(aister) *Woolf*, you shal pardon me.

*Gould.* Good Father let me entreat you.

*Touch.* Sonne *Goulding*, I will not be tempted, I finde mine owne easie nature, and I know not what a well-pend 5 subtile Letter may worke vpon it: There may be Tricks, Packing, doe you see? Returne with your Packet, Sir.

*Woolfe.* Beleeue it Sir, you need feare no packing here. These are but Letters of Submission, all.

*Touch.* Sir, I doe looke for no Submission. I will beare my selfe in this like *Blinde Iustice*, *Worke vpon that now*. When the Sessions come, they shall heare from me.

*Gould.* From whom come your Letters, M(aister) *Woolfe*?

*Woolfe.* And't please you Sir. One from Sir *Petronell*. Another from *Francis Quichesisluer*. And a third, from old 15 *Securtie*, who is almost madde in Prison. There are two, to your worship: One from M(aister) *Francis*, Sir. Another from the Knight.

*Touch.* I doe wonder, M(aister) *Woolfe*, why you should 10 trauaile thus, in a businesse so contrarie to kinde, or the nature o' your Place! that you beeing the Keeper of a Prison, should labour the release of your Prisoners! Whereas mee thinkes, it were farre more Naturall, & Kindely in you, to be ranging about for more, & not let these scape you haue 20 alreadye vnder the Tooth. But they say, you *Wolues*, when you ha' suck't the blood once, that they are drie, you ha' done.

*Woolfe.* Sir, your Worship may descant as you please o' my name, but I protest, I was neuer so mortified with any

v. ii. *Scena II. Goldsmiths' Row. B* 6 subtile] subtile *Qq* 2, 3  
14 *Petronell.*] *Petro.* *Qq* 2, 3 15 *Francis Quichesisluer.*] *Fra. Quich.*  
*Qq* 2, 3 21 o' your] o' your *Qr* beeing] being *Qq* 26 ha'] ha  
*Q3* (with space left for the apostrophe) 28-9 o' my] o' my *Qq* 29  
neuer] never *Q3* (so 38, 44, 54)

30 mens discourse, or behauiour in Prison ; yet I haue had of  
all sorts of men i'the Kingdome, vnder my Keyes : & almost  
of all Religions i'the land, as *Papist, Protestant, Puritane,*  
*Brownist, Anabaptist, Millenary, Famely o' Loue, Iewe,*  
*Turke, Infidell, Atheist, Good Fellow, &c.*

35 *Gould.* And which of all these (thinkes M<sup>a</sup>ister) *Woolfe*  
was the best Religion ?

*Woolfe.* Troth, M<sup>a</sup>ister) *Deputie*, they that pay Fees  
best : we neuer examine their consciences farder.

*Gould.* I beleuee you M<sup>a</sup>ister) *Woolfe.* Good faith, Sir,  
40 here's a great deale of humilitie i' these Letters.

*Woolfe.* Humilitie, Sir ? I, were your Worshippe an Eye-  
witnessse of it, you would say so. The Knight will i'the  
• *Knights-Ward*, doe what wee can Sir, and Maister *Quicke-*  
*siluer*, would be i'the *Hole*, if we would let him. I neuer  
45 knew, or saw Prisoners more penitent, or more deuout.  
They will sit you vp all night singing of *Psalmes*, and ædi-  
fying the whole Prison : onely, *Securitie* sings a note to high,  
sometimes, because he lyes i'the *Two-penny Ward*, farre of,  
and can not take his tune. The Neighbours can not rest for  
50 him, but come euery Morning to aske, what godly Prisoners  
we haue.

*Touch.* Which on 'hem is't is so devout, the Knight, or  
the t'other ?

*Woolfe.* Both Sir. But the young Man especially ! I neuer  
55 heard his like ! He has cut his hayre too. He is so well giuen,  
and has such good gifts ! Hee can tell you, almost all the  
Stories of the *Booke of Martyrs*, and speake you all the *Sicke-*  
*Mans Salue* without Booke.

*Touch.* I, if he had had grace, he was brought vp where it  
60 grew, Iwis. On Maister *Wolfe*.

*Wolfe.* And he has conuerted one *Fangs* a Sarieant, a  
fellow could neither write, nor read, he was call'd the Bando  
o'the Counter : and he has brought him already to pare his

v ii. 30 haue] have Q3      39 beleuee] beleuee Q3      40 here's]  
Here's Qq      47 to] too Q3      48 Ward] ward Qq      of] off Q3  
53 t'other] to'ther Qq      56 Hee can] Heecan Qr      57 Booke of]  
Booke of Qq      58 Salue] Salve Q3      60 Iwis.] iwis Q3

nailes, and say his prayers, and 'tis hop'd, he will sell his place shortly, and become an Intelligencer. 65

*Touch.* No more, I am comming already. If I should giue any farther care, I were taken. Aduē good Maister Wolfe. Sonne, I doe feele mine owne weakenesses, do not importune me. Pity is a Rheume, that I am subject too, but I will resist it. Maister Wolfe, *Fish is cast away, that is cast in drye Pooles:* 70 Tell *Hipocrisie*, it will not do, I haue touchd, and tried too often; I am yet prooffe, and I will remaine so: when the Sessions come, they shall heare from me. In the meane time, to all suites, to all intreaties, to all letters, to all trickes, I will be deafe as an Adder, and blind as a Beetle, lay mine 75 care to the ground, and lock mine eyes i' my hand, against all temptations. *Exit.*

*Gold.* You see, maister Wolfe, how inexorable he is. There is no hope to recouer him. Pray you commend me to my brother Knight, and to my fellow *Francis*, present 'hem 80 with this small token of my loue; tell 'hem, I wish I could do 'hem any worthier office, but in this, 'tis desperate: yet I will not faile to trie the vttermost of my power for 'hem. And sir, as farre as I haue any credit with you, pray you let 'hem want nothing: though I am not ambitious, they should 85 know so much.

• *Wolfe.* Sir, both your actions, and words speake you to be a true Gentleman. They shall know onely what is fit, and no more. *Exeunt.*

v. ii. 64 hop'd,] hop'd Q3 66 already] all ready Qr giue] giue Q3  
69 me.] me Q2. me, Q3 too] to Q3 71 haue] have Q3 touchd,]  
touchd Qq 2, 3 78 see,] see Q3 Wolfe] Wolfe Q3 81 tell 'hem,]  
tel'hem. Qq2, 3 82 office,] office; Q3 85 ambitious,] ambitious  
Q3

<Actus Quintus. Scena Tertia.

*Enter Holdfast with Bramble.>*

*Hold.* Who would you speake with, Sir?

*Bram.* I would speake with one *Securitie*, that is prisoner here.

*Hold.* You're welcome Sir. Stay there, Ile call him to  
5 you. Maister *Securitie*.

<*Security appears at the grate.*>

*Secu.* Who call's?

*Hold.* Here's a Gentleman would speake with you.

*Secu.* What is he? Is't one that grafts my forehead now  
I am in prison, and comes to see how the Hornes shoote vp,  
10 and prosper?

*Hold.* You must pardon him Sir: The old man is a little  
craz'd with his imprisonment. *<Exit.>*

*Secu.* What say you to me, Sir? Looke you here. My  
learned Counsaile, M<aister> *Bramble*! Crye you mercie,  
15 Sir: when sawe you my wife?

*Bram.* Shee is now at my house, Sir, and desir'd mee that  
I would come to Visite you, and inquire of you your Case,  
that we might worke some meanes to get you foorth.

*Secur.* My Case, M<aister> *Bramble*, is stone walles, and  
20 yron grates; you see it, this is the weakest part on't. And,  
for getting me forth, no meanes, but hang my selfe, and so  
to be carryed foorth, from which they haue here bound me,  
in intollerable bands.

*Bram.* Why but what is 't you are in for, Sir?

25 *Secu.* For my Sinnes, for my Sinnes Sir, whereof Mariage,  
is the greatest. O, had I neuer married, I had neuer knowne

v. iii (heading) Actus . . . *Bramble*] *Holdfast. Bramble. Security. Q1:*  
*Enter Holdfast. Bramble Securty. Qq 2, 3: Scene III. The Compter. B*  
¶ You're] Y're Q3 there,] there Qq 1, 2 5 you.] you Q3 6  
ranged with 5 in Q1 10 prosper?] prosper. Qq 1, 2 12 *Exit.*  
W. R. Chetwood 17 I om. Q3 18 meanes] manes Q2 21  
meanes,] meanes Qq 2, 3 22 foorth] forth Q3 25 Mariage,]  
Mariage Q3

this *Purgatorie*, to which Hell is a kinde of coole Bathe in respect : My wiues confederacie Sir, with olde *Touchstone*, that shee might keepe her *Iubilae*, and the feast of her *New-Moone*. Doe you vnderstand me Sir ?

30

*Enter Quicksiluer.*

*Quick.* Good Sir, goe in and talke with him. The Light dos him harme, and his example will bee hurtfull to the weake Prisoners. Fie, Father *Securitie*, that you'le bee still so prophane, will nothing humble you ?

*<As they depart,> enter two Prisoners, with a Friend.*

*Friend.* What's he ?

35

*Pri. 1.* O hee is a rare yong man. Doe you not know him ?

*Frien.* Not I. I neuer saw him, I can remember.

*Pri. 2.* Why, it is he that was the gallant Prentise of London, M(aister) *Touchstones* man.

*Frien.* Who *Quicksiluer* ?

40

*Pri. 1.* I, this is hee.

*Frien.* Is this hee ? They say, he has beene a Gallant indeede.

*Pris. <2.>* O, the royallest fellow, that euer was bred vp i'the Citie. He would play you his thousand pound a night at Dice ; keepe Knights, and Lords Companie ; go with them to baudie houses ; had his sixe men in a Liuerie ; kept a stable of Hunting horses ; and his Wench in her veluet Gowne, and her Cloth of siluer. Heres one Knight with him here in Prison.

50

*Frien.* And how miserably, he is chaung'd !

*Pris. 1.* O, that's voluntary in him ; he gaue away all his rich clothes, assoone as euer hee came in here, among the Prisoners : and will eate o' the *Basket*, for humilitie.

*Friend.* Why will he doe so ?

55

v m. 27 *Purgatorie*,] *Purgatorie* Q2 : *Purgatory*, Q3 30 Qq add s d. to 30 31 Sir] Sir Qq1, 2 34 Q1 adds stage-dir to 34 enter] Enter Qq Friend] Friend Q3 37 I.] I, Q3 38 Why, corr. Qx, Q3 : Why. Q1 originally, Q2 40 Who] Who, Q3 41 ranged with 40 in Q2 44 Pris. 2 J W. Cunliffe. Pris. 1. R. H. Shepherd 45 pound] pound, Qq 1, 2 51 miserably,] miserably Q3 chaung'd, chang'd Q3



*Pris. 1.* Alas hee has no hope of life. Hee mortifies himselfe. He dos but linger on, till the Sessions.

*Pris. 2.* O, he has pen'd the best thing, that hee calles his *Repentance*, or his *Last Fare-well*, that euer you heard : ' Hee  
60 is a pretie *Poet*, and for *Prose*—You would wonder how many Prisoners he has help't out, with penning *Petitions* for 'hem, and not take a penny. Looke, this is the Knight, in the rugge Gowne. Stand by.

*Enter Petronel, Bramble, Quicksiluer [, Woolfe]*

*Bram.* Sir, for *Securities Case*, I haue told him ; Say he  
65 should be condemned to be carted, or whipt, for a *Bawde*, or so, why Ile lay an Execution on him o' two hundred pound, let him acknowledge a Iudgement, he shal do it in halfe an  
' howre, they shal not all fetch him out without paying the  
*Execution*, o' my word.

70 *Pet.* But can we not be bayl'd M<aister> Bramble ?

*Bram.* Hardly, there are none of the Iudges in Towne, else you should remoue your selfe (in spight of him) with a *Habeas Corpus*: But if you haue a Friend to deliuer your tale sensibly to some Iustice o'the Towne, that hee may haue  
75 feeling of it, (doe you see ?) you may be bayl'd. For as I vnderstand the Case, tis onely done *In Terrorem*, and you shall haue an Action of *false Imprisonment* against him, when you come out : and perhaps a thousand pound Costes.

*Enter M<aister> Woolfe.*

*Quick.* How now, M<aister> Woolfe ? What newes ?  
80 what returne ?

*Woolfe.* Faith, bad all : yonder will bee no Letters re-  
reuiued. He sayes the *Sessions* shall determine it. Onely, M<aister> *Deputie Golding* commends him to you, and with this token, wishes he could doe you other good.

85 *Quick.* I thanke him. Good M<aister> *Bramble*, trouble our quiet no more ; doe not molest vs in Prison thus, with

\*  
v. iii. 58 *Pris. 1.* J. W. Cunliffe : *Pris. 2.* Qq 62 is the] sthe Q2  
66 o' two] o'two Qq 70 bayl'd] bay'ld Qq 75 see ?] see Qq 76  
done] done, Qq *Terrorem.*] *Terrorem* Q2 77 of] of Qq After 78  
Q1 adds stage-dir. to 78

your winding deuises : Pray you depart. For my part, I  
commit my cause to him that can succour mee, let God  
worke his will. M(aister) Woolfe, I pray you let this be dis-  
tributed, among the Prisoners, and desire 'hem to pray for 90  
vs. <Exit Bramble.>

Woolfe. It shall bee done, M(aister) Francis.

<Exit Quicksiluer.>

Pris. 1. An excellent temper !

Pris. 2. Nowe God send him good-lucke !

Exeunt <the two Prisoners and their Friend>.

Pet. But what said my Father in Lawe, M(aister) Woolfe? 95

Enter Hold<fast>.

Hqld. Here's one would speake with you, Sir.

Woolfe. Ile tell you anon Sir Petronell. <Exit Petronell.>

Who is't ?

Hold. A Gentleman, Sir, that will not be seene.

Enter Gold<ing>.

Woolfe. Where is he? M(aister) Deputie! your wor- 100  
<ship> is wel-come.—

Gold. Peace !

Wolf. Away, S'rah.

<Exit Holdfast.>

Gold. Good faith, M(aister) Woolfe, the estate of these  
• Gentlemen, for whome you were so late and willing a Sutor, 105  
doth much affect mee : and because I am desirous to doe  
them some faire office, and find there is no meanes to make  
my Father relent, so likely, as to bring him to be a Spectator  
of their Miseries ; I haue ventur'd on a deuice, which is, to  
make my selfe your Prisoner : entreating, you will presently 110  
goe report it to my Father, and (fayning an Action, at sute  
of some third person) pray him by this Token, <giuing a ring>

v. iii. 87 part] pat Qr 88 commit] co m m i t or co m m t Qr 94  
-lucke l] -lucke Qq Qq add stage-dir. to 94 95 stage-dir. Enter Hold.]  
Hold. c.w. at l, 94, I verso, Qr. Hold ] hold. Q2 97 Petronell.] Petronell  
Q3 98 Who] who Qq 99 Qq add stage-dir. to 99 (Gould Q3) 108  
rangd with 102 in Qq 108 relent.] relent some copies of Qr 109  
Miseries] Misery Q3 (printing from Q2, in which the -s is almost obliterated)  
109 I haue] Ihaue Qr 110 make] make make Qr 111 fayning]  
fayning, Qq

that he will presently, and with all secrecie, come hether for my Bayle; which trayne, (if any) I know will bring him  
 115 abroad; and then, hauing him here, I doubt not but we shall be all fortunate, in the Euent.

*Woolfe.* Sir, I wil put on my best speede, to effect it. Please you come in.

*Gold.* Yes; And let me rest conceal'd, I pray you.

⟨*Exit.*⟩

120 *Woolfe.* See here a Benefit, truely done; when it is done timely, freely, and to no Ambition. *Exit.*

### ⟨Actus Quintus. Scena Quarta.⟩

*Enter Touchstone, Wife, Daughters, Syn⟨defie⟩, Winifred.*

*Touch-stone.* I will sayle by you, and not heare you, like the wise *Plisses*.

*Mildred.* Deare Father.

*Mistris Touch.* Husband.

5 *Gyr.* Father.

*Win. & Syn.* M⟨aister⟩ *Touchstone.*

*Touc.* Away *Syrens*, I wil inmure my selfe, against your cryes; and locke my selfe vp to your Lamentations.

*Mistris Touch.* Gentle Husband, heare me.

10 *Gyr.* Father, it is I Father; my Lady *Flash*: my sister and I am Friends.

*Mil.* Good Father.

*Win.* Be not hardned, good M⟨aister⟩ *Touchstone.*

*Syn.* I pray you, Sir, be mercifull.

15 *Touch.* I am deafe, I doe not heare you; I haue stopt mine eares, with *Shoomakers waxe*, and drunke *Lethe*, and *Mandragora* to forget you: All you speake to mee, I com- mit to the Ayre.

6 v. iii. 120 See] See, Qq v. iv. Scene IV. Goldsmiths' Row. B 4  
 ranged with 3 in Qq 6 ranged with 5 in Qq 7 Away] away Qq 1, 2  
*Syrens*] *syrens* Q1, 2: *Syrens* Q3 8 your] our some copies of Q1  
 (the spacing showing a dropped letter), Qq 2, 3 9 Husband] Husband  
 Q1 10 it] It Qq 1, 2

Enter Woolfe.

Mil. How now, M(aister) Woolfe?

Woolfe. Where's M(aister) Touchstone? I must speake 20  
with him presently : I haue lost my breath for hast.

Mild. What's the matter Sir ? pray all be well.

Wolfe. Maister Deputy Goulding is arrested vpon an  
execution, and desires him presently to come to him, forth-  
with. 25

Mild. Aye me, doe you heare Father ?

Touch. Tricks, tricks, confederacie, tricks, I haue 'hem  
in my nose, I sent 'hem !

Wolf. Who's that ? maister Touchstone?

Mi. Tou. Why it is M(aister) Wolfe himselfe, husband. 30

Mil. Father.

Touch. I am deafe still, I say : I will neither yeeld to the  
song of the Syren, nor the voice of the Hyena, the teares of  
the Crocodile, nor the howling o'the Wolfe: auoid my habita-  
tion monsters. 35

Wolfe. Why you are not mad Sir ? I pray you looke forth,  
and see the token I haue brought you, Sir.

Touch. Ha ! what token is it ?

Wolf. Do you know it Sir ?

Tou. My sonne Gouldings ring ! Are you in earnest 40  
Mai(ster) Wolfe?

Wolf. I by my faith sir. He is in prison, and requir'd me  
to vse all speed, and secrecie to you.

Touch. My Cloake there (pray you be patient) I am  
plagu'd for my Austeritie ; my Cloake : at whose suite 45  
maister Wolfe?

Wolf. Ile tell you as we goe sir.

Exeunt.

v. iv. After 18] Qq add the stage-direction to 18 21 presently :]  
presently c.w. at 24, 12, Qr 24-5 forthwith] forth with Qs 29  
ranged with 28 in Qq 30 husband] husband Qs 31 ranged with  
30 in Qq 34 Crocodile] Crocodile Qq 2, 3 35 monsters.] monsters,  
Qr 39 ranged with 38 in Qq

〈Actus Quintus. Scene Quinta.〉

*Enter Friend, Prisoners.*

*Frie.* Why, but is his offence such as he cannot hope of life ?

*Pri. 1.* Troth it should seeme so : and 'tis great pity ; for he is exceeding penitent.

5 *Frie.* They say he is charg'd but on suspicion of Felony, yet.

*Pri. 2.* I, but his maister is a shrewd fellow, Heele proue great matter against him.

*Frie.* I'de as liue as any thing, I could see his *Farewell.*

10 *Pri. 1.* O tis rarely written : why *Tobie* may get him to sing it to you, hee's not curious to any body.

*Pri. 2.* O no. He would that all the world should take knowledge of his Repentance, and thinkes he merits in't, the more shame he suffers.

15 *Pri. 1.* Pray thee try, what thou canst doe.

*Pri. 2.* I warrant you, he will not deny it ; if he be not hoarce with the often repeating of it. *Exit.*

*Pri. 1.* You neuer saw a more courteous creature, then he is ; and the Knight too : the poorest Prisoner of the house  
20 may command 'hem. You shall heare a thing, admirably pend.

*Frie.* Is the Knight, any Scholler too ?

*Pri. 1.* No, but he will speake verie well, and discourse admirably of running Horses, and *White-Friers*, and against  
25 *Baudes* : and of Cocks ; and talke as loude as a Hunter, but is none.

*Enter Wolfe and Touchstone.*

*Wolf.* Please you stay here sir, ile cal his worship downe to you. *〈Exit.〉*

*Pri. 1.* See, he has brought him, and the Knight too.

v. v. *Scene V. The Compter.* B *Friend.] Friend.* Qq 3 *Pri.] Pri.*  
Q2 7 I.] I Qq 12 *Pri. 2 Q3 : Pri. 1. Qq 1, 2* 15 *Pri. 1.] Pri.*  
7. Q1 try.] try Qq 2, 3 20 thing.] thing Q3 22 *Knight, any]*  
*Knight any, Q1 : Knight any Qq 2, 3*

*Enter Quick(siluer), Pet(ronel), &c.*

Salute him, I pray. Sir, this Gentleman, vpon our 30  
report, is very desirous to heare some piece of your  
*Repentance.*

*Quic.* Sir, with all my heart, & as I told M(aister) *Tobie*,  
I shall be glad to haue any man a witnesse of it. And the  
more openly I professe it, I hope it will appeare the hartier, 35  
and the more vnfaigned.

*Touch.* Who is this? my man *Francis*? and my Sonne  
in Lawe?

*Quick.* Sir, it is all the Testimonie I shall leaue behind me  
to the World, and my Master, that I haue so offended. 40

*Friend.* Good Sir.

*Qui.* I writ it, when my spirits were opprest.

*Pet.* I, Ile be sworne for you *Francis*.

*Quick.* It is in imitation of *Maningtons*; he that was  
hangd at *Cambridge*, that cut of the Horses head at a blow. 45  
*Frie.* So sir.

*Quick.* To the tune of *I waile in woe, I plunge in paine.*

*Pet.* An excellent Ditty it is, and worthy of a new tune.

*Qui.* *In Cheapside famous for Gold & Plate,*

*Quicksiluer I did dwel of late :* 50

*I had a Master good, and kind,*

*That would have wrought me to his mind.*

*He bad me still, Worke vpon that,*

*But alas I wrought I knew not what.*

*He was a Touchstone black, but true :* 55

*And told me still, what would ensue,*

*Yet, woe is me, I would not learne,*

*I saw, alas, but could not discerne.*

*Frien.* Excellent, excellent well.

*Gould.* O let him alone, Hee is taken already. 60

v. v. 30 him.] him Qq Qq add. stage-dir. to 32 pray.] pray, Qq 1,  
2: pray: Q3 31 report.] report Q3 33 with all] withall Q2  
35 professe it.] professe it Q2 37 Sonne] sonne Qq 40 Master] Maister  
Maister Qq 2, 3 41 Sir.] Sir Qr 42 ranged with 41 in Qq  
opprest.] opprest Qq 2, 3 45 of] off Qq 2, 3 46 ranged  
with 45 in Qq 51 Master] Maister Q3 (so 65) 53 bad] bade Q3  
54 knew] know Q3 59 excellent well] excellent, well Q2

Quic. *I cast my Coat, and Cap away,  
I went in silkes, and sattens gay,  
False Mettall of good manners, I  
Did dayly coine unlawfully.*

65 *I scornd my Master, being drunke.  
I kept my Gelding, and my Punke,  
And with a knight, sir Flash, by name,  
(Who now is sorry for the same.)*

Pet. *I thanke you Francis.*

70 *<Quic.> I thought by Sea to runne away,  
But Thames, and Tempest did me stay.*

Touch. *This cannot be fained sure. Heauen pardon my  
seuerity. The Ragged Colt, may prooue a good Horst.*

*Gould. How he listens! and is transported! He has  
75 forgot me.*

Quic. *Still Eastward hoe was all my word :  
But Westward I had no regard.  
Nor neuer thought, what would come after,  
As did alas his youngest Daughter.*

80 *At last the black Oxe trode o' my foote,  
And I saw then what longd vntoo't.  
Now cry I, Touchstone, touch me stil,  
And make me currant by thy skill.*

Touch. *And I will do it, Francis.*

85 *Wolfe. Stay him M<aister> Deputie, now is the time, we  
shall loose the song else.*

Frie. *I protest it is the best that euer I heard.*

Quick. *How like you it Gentlemen ?*

All. *O admirable, Sir !*

90 *Quic. This Stanze now following, alludes to the story of  
Mannington, from whence I tooke my proiect for my inuen-  
tion.*

Frin. *Pray you goe on sir.*

(v. v. 68 sams.]) sams. Q3 71 But] -But Qq 73 prooue]  
proue Qq 2, 3 74 transported!] transported? Qq 78 after,]  
after Qq 1, 2 79 Daughier.] Daughier, Qq 81 vntoo't.] vntoo't,  
Qq 84 it.] it Q3 Francis.] Francis- Q2 88 Gentlemen ?]  
Gentlemen ; Q2 91 Mannington,] Mannington Qq

*Quic.* O Manington thy stories shew,  
 Thou cutst a Horse-head off at a blow : 95  
 But I confesse, I haue not the force  
 For to cut off the head of a horse,  
 Yet I desire this grace to winne,  
 That I may cut off the Horse-head of Sin,  
 And leaue his body in the dust 100  
 Of sinnes high way and bogges of Lust,  
 Wherby I may take Vertues purse,  
 And liue with her for better, for worse.

*Frin.* Admirable sir, & excellently conceited.

*Quic.* Alas sir. 105

*Touch.* Sonne Goulding & M(aister) Wolfe, I thank you :  
 the deceit is welcome, especially from thee whose charitable  
 soule in this hath shewne a high point of wisdom and  
 honesty. Listen. I am rauished with his Repentance, and  
 could stand here a whole prentiship to heare him. 110

*Frien.* Forth good sir.

*Quick.* This is the last, and the Farewell.  
 Farewel Cheapside, farewel sweet trade  
 Of Goldsmithes all, that neuer shall fade :  
 Farewell, deare fellow Prentises all, 115  
 And be you warned by my fall :  
 Shun Vsurers, Bauds, and dice, and drabs,  
 Auoide them as you would French scabs.  
 Seeke not to goe beyonde your Tether,  
 But cut your Thongs vnto your Lether : 120  
 So shall you thrine by little and little,  
 Scape Tiborne, Counters, & the Spittle.

*Touch.* And scape them shalt thou my penitent, & deare  
*Frances.*

*Quick.* Master ! 125

*Pet.* Father !

v. v. 95 blow.] blow Qq 1, 2 99 Sin.] Sin. Qq 105 ranged with 104.  
 in Qq 109 Repentance] Kepentance Q2 110 him.] him, Qr 111  
 ranged with 110 in Qq 114 fade:] fade Qq 1, 2: fade, Q3 115 all.] all Qq  
 117 drabs.] drabs. Qq 118 scabs] scabs Qq 1, 2 120 Lether:]  
 Lether Qq 1, 2 122 Spittle.] Spittle Qq 1, 2: Spittle. Q3 123 Ang]  
 An Qq 2, 3 124 Frances] Francis Q3 125-6 ranged with 124 in Qr



*Touch.* I can no longer forbear to doe your humility right : Arise, and let me honour your Repentance, with the hearty and ioyfull embraces, of a Father, and Friends love.  
 130 *Quicksiluer*, thou hast eate into my breast, *Quicksiluer*, with the dropps of thy sorrow, and kild the desperate opinion I had of thy reclaime.

*Quick.* O sir, I am not worthy to see your worshipfull face.

*Pet.* Forgiue me Father.

135 *Touch.* Speake no more, all former passages, are forgotten, and here my word shall release you. Thanke this worthy Brother & kind friend, *Francis*.—M(aister) *Wolfe*, I am their Bayle.

*A shoute in the Prison.*

*Secu.* Maister *Touchstone*? Maister *Touchstone*?

140 *Touch.* Who's that ?

*Wolfe.* *Securitie*, Sir.

*Secu.* Pray you Sir, if youle be wonne with a Song, heare my lamentable tune, too :

SONG.

*O Maister Touchstone,*  
*My heart is full of woe ;*  
 145 *Alasse, I am a Cuckold :*  
*And, why should it be so ?*  
*Because I was a Vsurer*  
*And Bawd, as all you know,*  
 150 *For which, again I tell you,*  
*My heart is full of woe.*

*Touch.* Bring him forth, Maister *Wolfe* and release his banda. <Enter *Securitie*.> This day shalbe sacred to *Mercy*, & the mirth of this *Encounter*, in the *Counter*.—See, we are  
 155 encountred with more *Suters*.

*Enter Mist(ress) Touchst(one), Gyr(tred,) Mil(dred,)*

*Synd(efy,) Winnif(red,) &c.*

„Saue your Breath, saue your Breath ; All things haue suc-

v. v. 132 reclaime.] reclaime: Qq 1, 2 138 Bayle.] Bayle; Qr :  
 Bayle ? Qa : Baile. Q3 139 Secu.] Sec. [within.] W. R. Chetwood  
*Touchstone* ? Maister] *Touchstone* Maistre Qa 147 And.] And Q3  
 151 heart] heart Q1 152 forth.] fourth Qq 2, 3

ceeded to your wishes: & we are heartely satisfied in their  
euent.

*Gyr.* Ah Runaway, Runaway! haue I caught you? And,  
how has my poore Knight done all this while? 160

*Pet.* Deare Lady-wife, forgiue me.

*Gert.* As heartely, as I would be forgiuen, Knight. Deare  
Father, giue me your blessing, and forgiue me too; I ha'  
bene proud, and lasciuious, Father; and a Foole, Father;  
and being raisd to the state of a wanton coy thing, calld a 165  
Lady, Father; haue scorn'd you, Father; and my Sister;  
& my Sisters Veluet Cap, too; and would make a mouth at  
the Citty, as I ridde through it; and stop mine eares at  
*Bow-bell*: I haue said your Beard was a Base one, Father;  
and that you look'd like *Twierpipe*, the Taberer; and that, 170  
my Mother was but my Midwife.

*Mi. Tou.* Now God forgi' you, Child Madame.

*Touch.* No more Repetitions. What is else wanting, to  
make our Harmony full?

*Gould.* Only this, sir. That my fellow *Frauncis* make 175  
amends to mistresse *Sindeffe*, with mariage.

*Quic.* With all my heart.

*Gould.* And *Security* giue her a dower, which shall be all  
the restitution he shall make of that huge masse, he hath so  
vnlawfully gotten. 180

*Touch.* Excellently deuisd! a good motion! What sayes  
Maister *Securitie*?

*Secu.* I say any thing sir, what you'll ha me say. Would  
I were no Cuckold.

*Wini.* Cuckold, husband? why, I thinke this wearing of 185  
Yellow has infected you.

*Touch.* Why, Maister *Securitie*, that should rather be a  
comfort to you, then a corasiue. If you be a Cuckold, it's an  
argument you haue a beautifull woman to your wife; then,

v. v. 166 Sister;] Sisters! Q3 169 one,] one Qq 2, 3 170  
look'd] lookt Q3 175 Gould.] Gould Q1 Gol. Qq 2, 3 sir.] sir,  
Qq 2, 3 176 amends] a mends Q3 177 With all] Withall Q2  
179 restitution] reistitu- c.w. 14 in Qr, miscorrected to restitu 181  
motion] motion. Qq 182 Securitie?] Security. Q2: Security? Q3  
183 sir.] sr. Q2 187 Why,] Why Qq 2, 3 189 wife:] wife, Qq 2, 3

190 you shall be much made of ; you shall haue store of friends ;  
 neuer want mony ; you shall be easd of much o' your wed-  
 lock paine ; others will take it for you : Besides, you being  
 a Vsurer, (and likely to goe to Hell) the Deuills will neuer  
 torment you ; They'll take you, for one o' their owne Race.  
 195 Againe, if you be a Cuckold, and know it not, you are an  
*Innocent* ; if you know it, and endure it, a true *Martyr*.

*Secur.* I am resolu'd sir. Come hether *Winny*.

*Touch.* Well then, all are pleasd ; or shall be anone.

Maister *Wolfe*, you looke hungry, me thinkes. Haue you no  
 200 apparell to lend *Frauncis* to shift him ?

*Quic.* No sir, nor I desire none ; but here make it my sute,  
 that I may goe home, through the streetes, in these, as a  
 Spectacle, or rather an Example, to the *Children of Chespe-*  
*side*.

205 *Touch.* Thou hast thy wish. Now London, looke about,  
 And in this morrall, see thy Glasse runne out :  
 Behold the carefull Father, thrifty Sonne,  
 The solemne deedes, which each of us haue done ;  
 The Vsurer punisht, and from Fall so steepe  
 210 The Prodigall child reclaimd, and the lost Sheepe.

[*Exeunt.*]

v. v. 190 friends,] friends, *Qq 2, 3* 191 mony:] money, *Qq 2, 3*  
 192 Besides,] Besides *Q2* 193 a Vsurer] e vsurer *Q2* the] .  
 The *Qq 1, 2* Deuills] Deuils *Q2* Duels *Q3* 194 o'] o *Q1* : of  
*Qq 2, 3* 196 endure] indure *Qq 2, 3* 197 sir] sir, *Q3* Come  
 hether] Com ehither *Q3* 198 anone] anone, *Qq.* 199 *Wolfe,*  
*Wolfe* : *Qq* thinkes.] thinkes. *Q3* 206 morrall,] morrall *Q2* : morall  
*Q3* 207 Father,] Father ; *Q1* : father ; *Qq 2, 3*

## EPILOGVS.

⟨*Quick.*⟩ Stay Sir, I perceiue the multitude are gatherd together, to view our comming out at the *Counter*. See, if the streets and the Fronts of the Houses, be not stucke with People, and the Windowes fild with Ladies, as on the solemne day of the *Pageant*!

5

O may you find in this our *Pageant*, here,  
The same contentment, which you came to seeke ;  
And as that *Shew* but drawes you once a yeare,  
May this attract you, hether, once a weeke.      ⟨*Exeunt.*⟩

## FINIS.

EPILOGVS. *Quick.*] THE EPILOGUE. Spoken by *Quicksilver*.  
*Dodsley*

## CORRECTIONS TO VOLUME III

- p. 96, l. 16. For printed by T. Walkley read printed for T. Walkley.  
 p. 122, l. 97 of text. For If if read If it.  
 p. 193, l. 20. For A<sup>2</sup> read A 2.  
 p. 194, l. 2 For Grahan read Grabau  
 p. 407, l. 29 For device read ornament.  
 p. 568, l. 54 of text. For FYNG read FVNG.

## ADDITIONAL NOTES TO VOLUME III

Page 96, l. 6 The printer of *The Case is Altered* was Nicholas Okes, who began printing in 1600. He used the device of the framed fleur-de-lis with the motto 'In Domino confido' in *Six godlie Treatises necessarie for Christian instruction*, 1608, printed for Leonard Becket; *Taylor his Travels to the Cittie of Prague*, 1620, printed for Henry Gosson; and Camden's *Remaines Concerning Britaine*, 1623, printed for Simon Waterson.

Pages 96-9. The list of variants in the 1609 Quarto of *The Case is Altered* should be revised, as Mr. McIlwraith has pointed out, by grouping the corrections in accordance with the forme.

In the outer forme of B, D represents the uncorrected state. Corrections were made in the other copies, but (1) in 1 ix. 57 (B 4 verso) the error 'sound' was overlooked in G, and (2) in 1 vi 71 (B recto) a final correction 'No?' was made in A this reading should have been placed in the text

In the inner forme of C, A and E are the uncorrected copies. The variant in 1. x. 25, where A, E read 'soule.' is probably due to defective type or uneven inking The reading of G, which is now in America, was not noted when the editor collated it

In the inner forme of D, the reading of B, C, E in 11. iv. 46 (D verso), 'cerimony y', is merely a disturbance of the type during the printing.

In the outer forme of F, the readings of 1v. 1. 67 are incorrectly given. 'Chamount' is the reading of all copies but B, which gives the correction 'Chamont' Throughout this forme A is uncorrected, the other copies are corrected except in the above passage.

